



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

B 1,087,826





Ex Libris.



William Henry Grant.

828  
E935d  
1906





Ex Libris.

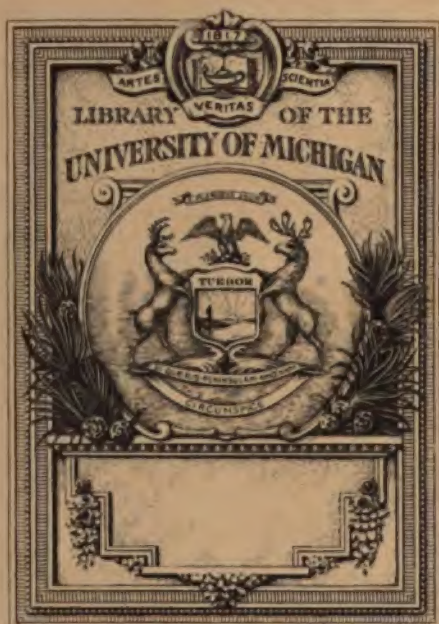


William Henry Grant.

828  
E935  
1906











1

1

DIARY AND CORRESPONDENCE  
OF  
JOHN EVELYN. ESQ.. F.R.S.





*S<sup>r</sup> Edward Nicholas Secret<sup>y</sup>  
of State &c.*

DIARY OF  
JOHN EVELYN

ESQ., F.R.S.

IN THREE VOLUMES. THE SECOND VOLUME  
CONTAINING THE

AND THE PRIVATE CORRESPONDENCE OF  
HIS CHARLES I. AND HIS SON CHARLES II.  
AND SEVERAL

EDWARD VI. AFTERWARDS KING OF ENGLAND  
AND SIR RICHARD BEECHER

DEEDS FROM THE ORIGINAL MSS.

BY WILLIAM EVELYN, F.R.S.

A NEW EDITION BY JOHN EVELYN.

WITH A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR AND A HISTORY OF HIS

BY DENNIS D. WHISTLER, M.A.

WITH A PREFACE BY THE EDITOR, AND  
A HISTORY OF THE MANUSCRIPTS.

WITH NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS.

VOL. IV.

LONDON

BICKERS AND SON

1906



DIARY OF  
**JOHN EVELYN**  
=

ESQ., F.R.S.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED A SELECTION FROM HIS  
FAMILIAR LETTERS

AND THE PRIVATE CORRESPONDENCE BETWEEN  
KING CHARLES I. AND SIR EDWARD NICHOLAS

AND BETWEEN

SIR EDWARD HYDE (AFTERWARDS EARL OF CLARENDON)  
AND SIR RICHARD BROWNE

EDITED FROM THE ORIGINAL MSS.

**BY WILLIAM BRAY, F.S.A.**

A NEW EDITION IN FOUR VOLUMES

WITH A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR AND A NEW PREFACE

**BY HENRY B. WHEATLEY, F.S.A.**

AUTHOR OF 'SAMUEL PEPYS AND THE WORLD HE LIVED IN'  
AND EDITOR OF PEPYS'S DIARY, 1893-9

WITH NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS

VOL. IV.

  
**LONDON**

BICKERS AND SON

1906



20

Original  
Blackwell  
10-8-40  
41553

# ILLUSTRATIONS

TO

## THE FOURTH VOLUME

*Erratum.*

In the List of Illustrations to Vols. I. and II. the Engravings of the Trial and Execution of Earl Strafford and of the Portico of Old St. Paul's should be attributed to Wenceslaus (not William) Hollar.

EDWARD NICHOLAS, SECRETARY OF STATE TO CHARLES I. . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
TON CHURCH, SURREY . . . . .	<i>to face page 49</i>
ICE RUPERT . . . . .	" " 152
<i>From a painting by Vandyke.</i>	
ABETH, QUEEN OF BOHEMIA, SISTER OF CHARLES I. . . . .	" " 208
EDWARD HYDE, EARL OF CLARENDON . . . . .	" " 243
<i>From a painting by Sir P. Lely,</i>	
DINAL MAZARIN . . . . .	" " 342

.

— —

20

24



## CORRESPONDENCE OF JOHN EVELYN.

*To Mr. Evelyn.*

Apr. 7, 1696.

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

I WAS unfortunately out of the way when you did me the honor to send me that admirable & obliging letter concerning Mr. Boyle, & was so fatigued on my return, by my coming home upon a lame horse, that I could not wait upon you a Sunday at Wooton as I intended to do. I cannot sufficiently express my thanks to you for your excellent hints; if my L<sup>d</sup> Archbishop of Canterbury encourages me, & I can get those materials out of Mr. Warre's hands, w<sup>ch</sup> I was speaking of, I will set about it. I suppose you will receive by the penny-post 2 Philos. Transactions, N<sup>o</sup> 219, in which is my abridgement of Sig<sup>r</sup> Scilla's book of Shells. I had brought more down for that purpose, but not being able to compass my designe of waiting upon you at Wooton, I have sent to the bookseller to convey y<sup>m</sup> to you that way. One of y<sup>m</sup> with my humblest thanks I would entreat you to present to S<sup>r</sup> Cyril Wyche, when

you see him. I wish I knew how to express the joy I feel in having my poor projects approved by so great a judge and patron of learning, & its well-wishers. I am, hon<sup>d</sup> S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most obliged servant,  
W. WOTTON.

Ind<sup>d</sup>: Mr. Wotton, &c.  
Of a present made me of a book.

*To Mr. Evelyn.*

Albury, May 24, 1696.

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

Your last obliging letter has put me into greater fears than any thing that ever befell me in my whole life. How I shall possibly answer Mr. Evelyn's expectation I can't conceive, & without the highest vanity I can as little bring myself to think that I shall not fall extreamly short of it. Your naming me at my Lord of Canterbury's upon such an occasion was the highest honour could have ben done a young writer. Next to that was the trustees approving your nomination. I say next to that, for they were ashamed to seem backward to comply with what Mr. Evelyn should think fit to propose. I am now therefore onely to wait for the B<sup>p</sup> of Salisbury's fiat, which, if it is granted, it will be too late for me to recede, tho' I know very well I shall be *impar operi* in every respect. I will study, however, to preserve Mr. Evelyn's reputation as much as ever I can, & I do hereby faithfully assure him, that care & industry shall not be wanting to carry on a work, in which he has generously been pleased to have so distinguishing a share.

As soon as I shall hear of your return to Wotton where your freinds in this countrey ardently expect



you, I shall do my self the honour to tell you more at large, how very much I am, as well as ought to be,

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most obliged & most faithfull humble serv<sup>t</sup>,

W. WOTTON.

*To my Lord Godolphin, one of the L<sup>ds</sup> Justices,  
and first Commiss<sup>r</sup> of the Treasury.*

My Lord,

There are now almost foure yeares elaps'd, since looking over some papers of mine, I found among other things divers notes which I had taken relating to Medals; when reflecting upon the usefullnesse of the historical part of that noble study, and considering that there had ben little, or indeede rather nothing at all written of it among us here in England (whilst other countreyes abounded in many excellent books & authors of greate name on this subject), I began to divert my solitary thoughts by reducing & putting my scatter'd collection into such method as grew at last to a formal treatise. Among other particulars (after I had more at large dispatch'd what concern'd the Greeke & Roman, and those of the Lower Empire) I endeavor'd the gath'ring up all such Medals as I could any where find had ben struck before and since the Conquest (if any such there were) relating to any part of good history. Now tho mony and coines during the severall reignes of almost all our kings, from the British to this present time (as may be seene in what Mr. Walker has added to the late edition of Cambden) be forraine to my subject; and that I could meet with none which deserved the name of Medal 'til the two last centuries; yet I could not well avoyd speaking something of the Mint, where medals were coin'd as well as mony. The copy being thus pre-

par'd for the presse, I two yeares since deliver'd to a bookseller, who after he had wrought off almost 80 pages in folio (emulating what had ben don and publish'd by Jaques de Bie & Mons. Bizot, in their *Histoire Metaliq* of France & Holland) would needes be at the charge of ingraving an hundred stamps to adorne a chapter relating to our English Medals. This requiring time (& far better artists than any I perceive he is like to find) retarding the publication of his book, I thought it might not be either unseasonable or unagreeable to y<sup>r</sup> L<sup>p</sup>, if on this conjuncture of affaires (and when every body is discoursing of these matters) I did present y<sup>r</sup> L<sup>p</sup> with a part of that chapter concerning Mony which (tho' passing thro' the same mechanisme) I distinguish from Medal at the beginning of my first chapter, proceeding in the VII<sup>th</sup> to that of the Mint. It is there that I show (after all the expedients offer'd and pretended, for the recovery & security of this nation from the greate danger it is in by the wicked practices of those who of late have so impudently ruin'd the publiq credit & faith of all mankind among us by clipping, debasing, & all other unrighteous ways of perverting the species) what is it which can possibly put a stop to the evil & mischeife, that it go no farther; if at least it have not ben so long neglected as to be irremediable.

But, my L<sup>d</sup>, this is not all. There are severall other things of exceeding greate importance, which had neede be taken care of, & to be set on foote effectually, for the obviating the growing mischiefs, destructive to the flourishing state of this mercantile nation. Amongst the rest:

There is certainly wanting a Council of Trade, that should not be so call'd onely, but really be in truth what it is call'd; compos'd of a wise, public-spirited, active & noble President, a select number



of Assessors, sober, industrious & dextrous men, & of consummate experience *in rebus agendis*; who should be arm'd with competent force at sea, to protect the greater com'erce & general trade; if not independent of the Admiralty, not without an almost co-ordinate authority, as far as concerns the protection of trade; and to be maintained chiefly by those who, as they adventure most, receive the greatest benefit.

To these should likewise be com'itted the care of the Manufactures of the kingdome, with stock for employment of the poore; by which might be moderated that unreasonable statute for their relief (as now in force) occasioning more idle persons, who charge the publiq without all reamedy, than otherwise there would be, insufferably burdening the parishes, by being made to earne their bread honestly, who now eate it in idleness, & take it out of the mouthes of the truely indigent, much inferior in number, & worthy objects of charity.

It is by such a Council that the swarmes of private traders, who, tho' not appearing in mighty torrents & streames, yet like a confluence of silent, almost indiscernable, but in'umerable riveletts, do evidently draine & exhaust the greater *hydrophylacia* & magazines, nay the very vital blood of trade, where there is no follower to supply those many issues, without which the constitution of the body politic, like the natural, needes must fail for want of nourishment & recruits. But whom this article affects I have spoken in my discourse of Mony.

'Tis likewise to this Assembly, that all proposals of new inventions (pretended for the publiq benefit) should first be brought, & examin'd, encouraged or rejected, without reproch as projectures, or turning the unsuccessful proposer to ridicule, by a barbarity without example, no where countenanc'd but in this nation.

Another no lesse exhaustor, & waster of the publiq treasure, is the progresse & increase of buildings about this already monstrous Citty, wherein one yeare with another are erected about 800 houses, as I am credibly inform'd ; which carrys away such prodigious summs of our best and weightiest mony by the Norway trade for deale-timber onely, but exports nothing hence of moment to balance it, besides sand & gravell to balance their empty ships ; whilst doubtlesse those other more necessary com'odities (were it well encourag'd) might in a short time be brought us in greate measure, and much preferable to their goodnesse, from our owne plantations, which now we fetch from others, for our naval stores.

Truely, my L<sup>d</sup>, I cannot but wonder, & even stand amaz'd, that Parliaments should have sate from time to time, so many hundred yeares, & value their constitution to that degree, as the most sovraigne remedy for the redresse of publiq grievances ; whilst the greatest still remaine unreform'd & untaken away. Witnesse the confus'd, debauch'd, & riotous manner of electing members qualified to become the representatives of a nation, w<sup>th</sup> legislative power to dispose of the fate of kingdomes ; which should & would be compos'd of worthy persons, of known integritie & ability in their respective countries, and still would serve them generously, & as their ancestors have don, but are not able to fling away a son or daughter's portion to bribe the votes of a multitude, more resembling a pagan bacchanalia, than an assembly of Christians & sober men met upon the most solemn occasion that can concerne a people, and stand in competition with some rich scrivener, brewer, banker, or one in some gainfull office, whose face or name, perhaps, they never saw or knew before. How, my L<sup>d</sup>, must this sound abroad ! With what dishonor & shame a home !



To this add the disproportion of the Buroughs capable of electing members, by which the major part of the whole kingdom are frequently out-voted, be the cause never so unjust, if it concerne a party interest.

Will ever those swarmes of *locusts*, lawyers & attorneys, who fill so many seats, vote for a public *Register*, by which men may be secured of their titles & possessions, & an infinity of suits & frauds prevented?

Im'oderate fees, tedious & ruinous delays, & tossings from court to court before an easy cause, which might be determin'd by honest gentlemen & understanding neighbours, can come to any final issue, may be number'd amongst the most vexatious oppressions that call aloud for redresse.

The want of bodys (slaves) for public & laborious works, to which many sorts of criminals might be usefully condemn'd, and some reform'd instead of sending them to the gallows, deserves to be consider'd.

These, & the like are the greate desiderata (as well as the reformation of the coine), which are plainly wanting to the consum'ate felicity of this nation; and divers of them of absolute necessitie to its recovery from the atrophy & consumption it labours under.

The King himselfe should (my L<sup>d</sup>) be acquainted with these particulars, & of the greate importance of them, by such as from their wisdom & integrity, deserve the nearest accesse, and would purchase him the hearts of a free & emancipated people, & a blessing on the government; were he pleas'd uncessantly to recommend them to those, who, from time to time, are call'd together for these ends, & healing of the nation.

And now your Ex<sup>y</sup> will doubtlesse smile at this politiq excursion, & perhaps at the *bischoctum* of the rest; whilst the yeares to which I am by God's greate goodnesse ariv'd, your L<sup>y</sup>s com'ands in a former letter

to me, some conversation with men & the world, as well as books, in so large a tract & variety of events & wonders as this period has brought forth, might justifie one, among such crowds of pretenders to *ragioni di stato*, some of which I daily meete to come abroad with the shell still on their heads, who talke as confidently of these matters as if they were counsellors of state & first ministers, with their sapient, expecting lookes, & whom none must contradict; and no doubt but (as Job said) "they are the people, and wisdom is to die with them." To such I have no more to say, whilst I appeale to y<sup>r</sup> L<sup>p</sup>, whose real & consummate experience, greate prudence & dexterity *in rebus agendis* without noise, were enough to silence a thousand such as I am. I therefore implore y<sup>r</sup> pardon againe, for what I may have written weakely or rashly. In such a tempest & overgrown a sea, every body is concern'd, and whose head is not ready to turne? I am sure, I should myselfe almost despaire of the vessel, if any, save y<sup>r</sup> L<sup>p</sup>, were at the helme. But, whilst your hand is on the staff, & your eye upon the star, I compose myselfe & rest secure.

Surrey Street, 16 June, 1696.

*To Mr. Place (Bookseller).*

Mr. Place,

I have seriously consider'd y<sup>r</sup> Letter concerning y<sup>r</sup> resolution of sparing no cost whereby you may benefit the publiq, as well as recompence your owne charge & industry (which truly is a generous inclination, not so frequently met with amongst most book-sellers), by inquiring how you might possibly supply what is wanting to our Country (now beginning to be somewhat pollish'd in their manner of building, and indeede in the accomplishment of the English language also)



by the publication of whatever may be thought conducive to either. In order to this, you have sometime since acquainted me with y<sup>r</sup> intention of reprinting the "Parallel;" desireing that I would revise it, and consider what improvements may decently be added in relation to y<sup>r</sup> general designe. As for the Parallel, I take it to be so very usefull & perfect in its kind & as far as it pretends to (namely, all that was material in those Ten Masters upon the Orders), that I cannot think of any thing it further needes to render it more intelligible. As for what I have annex'd to it concerning statues, my good friend Mr. Gibbons would be consulted; and for the latter, so much as I conceive is necessary, I will take care to send you w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>r</sup> interfoliated copy. In the meane time, touching that universal work, or cycle, which you would have comprehend and imbrace the intire art of building, together with all its accessories for magnificence & use, without obliging you to the paines in gleaning, when a whole harvest is before you, or the trouble of calling many to y<sup>r</sup> assistance (which would be tedious), I cannot think of a better, more instructive, & judicious an expedient, than by your procuring a good & faithfull translation of that excellent piece which has lately been published by Monsieur D'Aviler; were he made to speak English in the proper termes of that art, by some person conversant in the French, and if neede be, adding to him some assistant, such as you would have recommended to me, if my leasure & present circumstances could have comply'd with my inclinations of promoting so beneficial a designe.

I should here enumerate the particulars he runs thro', in my opinion sufficiently copious, & in as polish'd, & yet as easy & familiar a style as the subject is capable of; in nothing exceeding the capacity of our ordinary workmen, or unworthy the study &



application of the noblest persons who employ them and to whom a more than ordinary & superficial knowledge in architecture is no small accomplishment. I say I should add the contents of his chapters, and the excellent notes he has subjoyn'd to a better version of Vignole, Mic. Angelo, & the rest of our most celebrated modern architects and their works; together with all that is extant of antique, & yet in being, apply'd to use, & worthy knowing, if I thought you had not already heard of the book, since it has now ben 4 or 5 yeares extant, and since reprinted in Holland, as all the best & most vendible books are, to the greate prejudice of the authors, by their not only printing them without any errata, by which the reader might reform them, or (as if they had none at all) correcting the faults themselves: which indeede, that of the Paris edition (faire as it seemes, & is in the elegancy of the character) exceedingly will neede, before it be translated, by whomsoever taken in hand.

But as the letter and its other beauties exceede the Dutch edition, so do likewise the plates, which are don with that accuratnesse & care, as may almost com'ute for the oversights of the presse. I do not say the Holland Sculps are ill perform'd; but tho' they seeme to be pretty well copied, they will yet require a strict examination, and then I think they might be made use of, & a competent number of plates (provided not overmuch worn) procured at a far easier rate out of Holland, than by having them perhaps not so well graven here; for 'tis not the talent of every artist, tho' skill'd in heads & figures (of which we have very few), to trace the architect as he ought. But if they could be obtain'd from Paris, as happily with permission they might, it were much to be preferr'd. I forgot to tell you, that there is a most accurate, learned, & critical Dictionary by the same author, explaining (in a 2<sup>d</sup> part) not onely the termes of archi-

ture, but of all those other arts that waite upon, & are subservient to her, which is very curious.

And now, if what I have said in recommending this work for the full accomplishment of your laudable designe (& which in truth, I think, were abundantly sufficient) induce you to proceede in it, and that you would with it present the publiq with a much more elegant letter than I believe England has ever seene among all our printers; perhaps it were worth your while to render it one of the first productions of that noble presse which my worthy & most learned friend D<sup>r</sup> Bentley (his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Library-keeper at St. James's) is with greate charge & industrie erecting now at Cambridge.

There is another piece of mechanics, and some other very rare & usefull arts agreeable to this of architecture, & incomparably curious, which, if translated & joyn'd to y<sup>e</sup> rest, would (without contradiction) render it a most desireable & perfect work. If when you passe this way, you will visite a lame man (who is oblig'd to stay within at present) I shall endeavour to satisfie you in any thing I may have omitted here, but the teasing you & myselfe with a tedious scribble (upon y<sup>r</sup> late importunity before my leaving this town) which you may wish I had omitted.

Surrey-street, 17 Aug. 1696.

*To Mr. Wotton.*

Worthy Sir,

I should exceedingly mistake the person, and my owne discernment, could I believe M<sup>r</sup> Wotton stood in the least neede of my assistance; but such an expression of your's to one who so well knows his own imperfections as I do mine, ought to be taken for a reproche; since I am sure it cannot proceede from y<sup>r</sup> judgment. But forgiving this fault, I most



heartily thank you for y<sup>e</sup> animadversion on *Sylva*; which, tho' I frequently find it so written for ξυλεια & υλη, wood, timber, wild & forest trees, yet indeede I think it more properly belongs to a promiscuous casting of severall things together, & as I think my L<sup>d</sup> Bacon has us'd it in his "Natural History," without much regard to method. *Deleatur*, therefore, wherever you meete it.

Concerning the gardning and husbandry of the Antients, which is y<sup>e</sup> inquirie (especialy of the first), that it had certainly nothing approaching y<sup>e</sup> elegance of the present age, Rapinus (whom I send you) will abundantly satisfie you. The discourse you will find at the end of Hortorum, lib. 4<sup>o</sup>. capp. 6. 7. What they cal'd their gardens were onely spacious plots of ground planted with platans & other shady trees in walks, & built about with porticos, xisti, & noble ranges of pillars, adorn'd with statues, fountaines, piscariæ, aviaries, &c. But for the flowry parterre, beds of tulips, carnations, auricula, tuberosa, jonquills, ranunculas, & other of our rare coronaries, we heare nothing of, nor that they had such store & variety of exotics, orangeries, myrtles, & other curious greens; nor do I believe they had their orchards in such perfection, nor by far our furniture for the kitchen. Pliny indeede enumerates a world of vulgar plants & olitories, but they fall infinitely short of our physick gardens, books, and herbals, every day augmented by our sedulous botanists, & brought to us from all the quarters of the world. And as for their husbandry & more rural skill, of which the same author has written so many books in his Nat. History, especial lib. 17. 18. &c. you'll soone be judge what it was. They tooke great care indeede of their vines and olives, stercoreations, ingraftings, & were dilligent in observing seasons, the course of y<sup>e</sup> stars, &c. and doubtlesse were very industrious; but when you shall

have read over Cato, Varro, Columella, Palladio, with the Greek Geoponics, I do not think you will have cause to prefer them before the modern agriculture, so exceedingly of late improv'd, for which you may consult & compare our old Tusser, Markham, y<sup>e</sup> *Maison Rustic*, Hartlib, Walter Blith, the Philosophical Transactions, & other books, which you know better than my selfe.

I have turn'd down the page, whère poore Pulissy begins his persisting search. If you can suffer his prolix style, you will now & then light on things not to be despised. With him I send you a short Treatise concerning *Metals*, of S<sup>r</sup> Hugh Platts, which perhaps you have not seene. I am sorry I have no more of those subjects here, having left the rest in my library at Deptford, & know not how to get them hither till I get thither.

S<sup>r</sup>, I am in no hast for the retorne of these, if they may be serviceable to you, but in no little paine for the trouble y<sup>e</sup> civility to mine puts one, who knows so much better how to employ his time, than to mind the impertinence of, S<sup>r</sup>, y<sup>e</sup>, &c.

Wotton, 28 Oct. 1696.

*To Dr. Richard Bentley.*

Worthy D<sup>r</sup>:

You have under your hands something of Mr. Wotton, whilst he has ben so kind as to offer me his help in looking over the typographical and other faults escaped in the last impression of the "*Silva*," which I am most earnestly call'd upon to reprint. The copy which I frankly gave about 30 years since to Allestry, is now in the hands of Chiswell and your namesake Mr. Bentley (Booksellers), who have sold off three impressions, & are now impatient for the fourth: and it having ben no vnprofitable copy to



them, I had promised some considerable improvements to it, vpon condition of letting Ben: Tooke (for whom I have a particular kindnesse) into a share. This, tho' with reluctancy, they at last consented to. I will endeavour to render it with advantage, and have ambition enough to wish, that since it is a folio, & of so popular and usefull a subject as has procured it some reputation, it might have the honor to beare the character of Dr. Bentley's new Imprimerie, which, I presume, the proprietors will be as proud of as my selfe. To the reproch of Place, who made so many difficulties about my booke of architecture as you well know, I have however made very considerable additions to that treatise, as far as concernes my part, & meane to dedicate it to S<sup>r</sup> Christopher Wren, his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Surveyor & Intendent of his Buildings, as I did the other part to S<sup>r</sup> J. Denham his predecessor, but infinitely inferior to his successor. I confesse I am foolishly fond of these & other rustications, which had ben my swete diuersions during the dayes of destruction and devastation both of woods and buildings, whilst the rebellion lasted so long in this nation: and the kind receptions my bookes have found makes me the more willing to give them my last hand: sorry in the meane time for all my other aberrations in pretending to meddle with things beyond my talent *et extra oleo*: but enough of this.

Wotton, 20 Jany 1696-7.

*To Dr. Bentley.*

Worthy Dr:

Tho' I made hast out of town, and had so little time to spend after we parted, I was yet resolv'd not to neglect the province which I undertook, as far as I had any interest in S<sup>r</sup> Ed: Seymour, whom I found at his house, & had full scope of discourse with. I

told him I came not to petition the revival of an old title, or the unsettlement of an estate, so often of late interrupting our late Parliaments, but to fix and settle a publiq benefit<sup>1</sup> that would be of greate & universal good & glory to the whole nation. This (with y<sup>r</sup> paper) he very kindly and obligingly receiv'd, & that he would contribute all the assistance that lay in his power, whenever it should come to the House. To send you notice of this, I thought might be much more acceptable to you than to acquaint you that we are full of company, & already enter'd into a most dissolute course of eating & indulging, according to the mode of antient English hospitality; by which meanes I shall now & then have opportunity of recom'ending the noble designe you are intent upon, & therefore wish I had some more of the printed proposals to disperse. S<sup>r</sup> Cyril Wyche, who accompanied me hither, is altogether transported with it, & thinks the project so discreetly contriv'd, that it cannot miscarry. Here is D<sup>r</sup> Fuller with his spouse. The D<sup>r</sup> gave us a sermon this morning, in an elegant and trim discourse on the 39. Psalm, which I find had ben prepar'd for the court, & fitter for that audience than our poore country churches. After this you will not expect much intelligence from hence, tho' I shall every day long to heare of y<sup>e</sup> progresse you make in this glorious enterprize, to which I augure all successe & prosperity, & am,

Worthy D<sup>r</sup>, y<sup>r</sup> &c.

Wotton, 25 Dec. 1697.

*To Dr. Godolphin, Provost of Eton.*

Wotton, 8 Feb. 1697-8.

Had you ben in towne when my copys [on Medals] were distributed among my friends, the small

<sup>1</sup> The new library to be built in St. James's Park. J. E.



present which I presum'd to send you, had ben brought by y<sup>r</sup> most humble servant with an apology for my boldnesse in obtruding upon the Provost of Eton (who is himselfe so greate a judge of that and all other learned subjects) my meane performance. It were quite to tire you out, should I relate on what occasion I came to be ingaged on a topic on which I could advance so little of my owne to extenuate my presumption: yet give me leave to take hold of this opportunity to discharge a debt owing to yourselfe, and those of your learned relations who condescend to reade my book. 'Tis now neere fifty yeares past since Gabr. Naudæus publish'd directions concerning librarys and their furniture, which I had translated, minding to reprint it, as what I conceiv'd might not be unseasonable whilst auctions were become so frequent among us, and gentlemen every where storing themselves with bookes at those learned marts; & because it was so very thinn a volume, I thought of annexing a sheete or two of Medals, as an appendant not improper. But being persuaded to say something of our modern Medals relating to our country (as France and Holland had of theirs) I found it swell to so incompetent a bulk, as would by no meanes suit with that treatise. Whilst I was about this (and indeed often and long before) I had ben importun'd to make a second edition of my Chalcography (now grown very scarce) and to bring it from 1662, where I left off, to this time, there having since that ben so greate an improvement of Sculpture. This being a task I had no inclination for (having of a long time given over collections of that sort) I thought yet of gratifying them in some manner with an ex-chapter in my Discourse of Medals, where I speake of the effigies of famous persons, and the use which may be deriv'd of such a collection, and that which follows it.—'Tis now a good while ago since first I put it



into the hands of a book-seller, with strict injunction not to work off a sheete 'til it had ben revis'd by abler judgments than my owne; and so remain'd whilst the Medals could be collected that were to be grav'n, which tho' hardly amounting to an hundred, were with difficulty enough procur'd in two yeares time. This slow proceeding, together with my long & frequent excursions att this distance from towne, made me absolutely resolv'd to abandon and think of it no further, but give it up to the book-seller to dispose of it for wast paper, when he would needes perswade me that he had such an accomplish'd supervisor of the presse he imploy'd, as would do me all the right I could expect from an able & learned man; and that now he had ben at such charges for the sculptures, I should extreamly injure him to withdraw my copy, & what I had to annex, as certainly I should [have done] but for that consideration only. So as I had now no remedy left me but by imbarquing the errata to my greater reproch, & it was very slender comfort to me the being told that even the most incomparably learned Spanheim, whose glorious work of medals was not long since reprinted, scap'd not the presse without remarkable and cruel scarrs.

But now I mention'd the noble Spanheim (to whose judgment all deferr) I may haply be censur'd for what I have said concerning *Etiminius*, after what he has objected against that Medal (de præst. Numis : Rep : 647); but if I was, and still am, unwilling to degrade our renowned Citty of her so Metropolitan dignity, whilst I had any to stand by me, I cannot be so deeply concern'd, and indeed asham'd, should any think me so ignorant as not long-since to know that *obryzum* signifys gold of the most exalted purity & test, or, as the ancients express'd, *ad obrussam exactum*, which yet, I know not

how, escap'd me when I was gathering out the errata. [As for CONOB, tho' I ever read it *Constantinople*, the extreame rudenesse of a reverse and metal I had shew'd me of that coine, so perfectly resembling that of *Cuno*, might favour my conjecture.<sup>1</sup>]

There is in margine, p. 207, a mistake of *Rich-borow* for *Regulbium*, which also escap'd me.

But, Sir, there are so many more & greater faults as put me out of countenance, for which & this tedious scribble I heartily beg your pardon, who am, &c.

*Mr. W. Wotton to J. Evelyn.*

Milton, near Newport Pagnell,  
Bucks, Jan. 2, 1697-8.

Hon<sup>d</sup> S<sup>r</sup>,

When I was in town last moneth I did myself the honour to call at your lodgings, but was not so happy as to find you at home. I intended to acquaint you what progress I had made in a design w<sup>ch</sup> owes its birth wholly to your encouragement. After a positive promise from y<sup>e</sup> executors that I should have y<sup>e</sup> use of Mr. Boyle's papers, my Lord Burlington at last insisted upon my giving a bond that I demanded no gratification. I had voluntarily given a note to y<sup>e</sup> same purpose, w<sup>ch</sup> Dr. Bentley sufficiently blamed me for: but I gave no bond, & so left the town (tho' I had come up on purpose about this business) doubtful what further I should doe. But since I came home, my Lord Burlington is come over, so far that

<sup>1</sup> In the following letter to Mr. Henshaw, the latter part of which is almost a transcript of the above, this sentence is thus expressed: "I found the period omitted, p. 22. w<sup>ch</sup> sho<sup>d</sup> have been read, mixt & obrize sort also, which has on it a horse rudely design'd with the letters CON-OB. *Constantinopoli obrizatum*, w<sup>ch</sup> some will have to signify *Constantinople* only—others, some Prince of ours."



he has delivered up my note, & has ordered all y<sup>e</sup> papers to be delivered to my order, with a promise to me of all manner of assistance & encouragement. So that now I intend to dedicate all my spare howrs to this business; & then, S<sup>r</sup>, as you have hitherto prevented my desires, so again I fear I must be importunate in troubling you with new doubts & queries w<sup>ch</sup>, in the progress of the work, will infallibly arise. I am glad to find that we may so soon expect your long-desired work about Medals, from which I propose no small entertainment to myself, as soon as it appears.

I am, hon<sup>d</sup> S<sup>r</sup>,  
Your most obliged & most humble serv<sup>t</sup>,  
W. WOTTON.

Shall I not wish you & your excellent lady many happy new yeares? No body, I am sure, do's it more cordially.

*Mr. W. Wotton to J. Evelyn.*

Milton, Bucks, Jan. 20, 1697-8.

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

Duty & gratitude requiring me to give you a second interruption in a short time, I think I ought to make no apology. Not long since I did myself the honour to acquaint you with y<sup>e</sup> success of my affaire about Mr. Boyle's life. I knew you would be pleased to hear that I had weathered that difficulty, since you had been my first . . . . . to that work. I had just got a box of papers, & was going to digest matters for the forge, when I was agreeably stopp'd by your admirable Numismata, w<sup>ch</sup> the last return of the carrier brought me. I needed no spur to read it; y<sup>e</sup> author, y<sup>e</sup> subject, added wings to my diligence. Dr. Bentley had raised my thirst by the essay he had given me before in conversation.

deservedly we value him here in this country, not only for his profession & successes, but for those other excellent talents w<sup>ch</sup> were ever encourag'd by your free & generous communications. And in this I serve mysef also, by taking the occasion to present the most humble service of a now old acquaintance, begun long since abroad, & cultivated ever since by the continuance of your friendship thro' many revolutions. I frequently call to mind the many bright & happy moments we have pass'd together at Rome and other places, in viewing & contemplating the entertainments of travellers who go not abroad to count steeples, but to improve themselves. I wish I could say of myself so as you did; but whenever I thinke of the agreeable toile we tooke among the ruines & antiquitys, to admire the superb buildings, visite the cabinets & curiositys of the virtuosi, the sweete walkes by the banks of the Tiber, the Via Flaminia, the gardens & villas of that glorious city, I call back the time, & methinks growing yonge againe, the opera we saw at Venice comes into my fansy, and I am ready to sing, *Gioconda Gioretri—memoria sola tû—con ramento m'l fu—spesso spesso vien a rapir mi, e qual che si sia ancor ringiovenir mi.* You remember, Sir, the rest, and we are both neere the conclusion, *hai che non torni, non torni piu—moi—ri—bondo.*

Forgive me, Sir, this transport, & when this gent: takes his leave of you, permit me to beg your pardon also for the presumption I am guilty of, in obtruding a Discourse of Medals on one who is so greate a master & so knowing, and from whose example I sometimes diverted to that study. 'Tis now neere fifty yeares, &c.

[The rest of the letter is nearly the same as the preceding, see p. 18.]



*To Archdeacon Nicolson, Dean of Carlisle.*

10 Nov. 1699.

After thanking him for the tendernesse and civility with which he had mentioned his book on Medals, Mr. Evelyn says :—

“ You recommend the study of our own municipal lawes & home antiquitys, most becoming an Englishman & lover of his country, which you have skilfully deriv'd from the fountaine, & trackt thro' all those windings & meanders w<sup>ch</sup> rendered the study generally deserted as dull & impolite, unlesse by those who, attractted by more sordid considerations, submitted to a fatigue which fill'd indeede their purses for the noyse they made at Westmin<sup>r</sup> Hall, whilst their heads were empty, even of that to which they seem'd to devote themselves. Did our Inns of Court Students come a little better grounded in ethics & with some entrance into the civil law, such an History as you are meditating would leade them on with delight, & inable them to discover & penetrate into the grounds of natural justice & human prudence, & furnish them with matter to adorn their pleadings, before they wholly gave themselves up to learn to wrangle & the arts of illaqueation, & not make such haste to precedents, costomes, & common-places. By reading good history they would come to understand how governments have ben settl'd, by conquest, transplantations, colonys or garrisons thro' all vicissitudes & revolutions, from east to west, from the first monarchy to the last ; how laws have ben establish'd, & for what reasons chang'd & alter'd ; whence our holding by knight's service, & whether feudal laws have ben deriv'd from Saxon or Norman. 'Tis pity young gentlemen should meete with so little of this in the course of their academic studys, at least if it

continue as in my time, when they were brought up to dispute on dry questions which nauceat generous spirits, & to discourse of things before they are furnish'd with mediums & so returne home rather with the learning of a Benedictine Monk (full of scholastic) than of such usefull knowledge as would inable them to a dexterity in solving cases, how intricate soever, by analytics & so much of algebra as teaches to draw consequences & detect paralogisms & fallacies, which were the true use of logic, & which you give hopes our Universitys are now designing. To this I would add the improvement of the more ornate & gracefull manner of speaking upon occasion. The fruit of such an education would not onely grace & furnish the bar with excellent lawyers, but the nation with able persons fit for any honorable employment, to serve & speake in Parliaments & in Councils: give us good magistrates & justices for reference at home in the country: able ambassadors & orators abroad; in a word, qualified patriots & pillars of state, in which this age does not I feare abound. In the meane time what preference may be given to our constitutions I dare not determine, but as I believe ethics & the civile law were the natural mother of all good laws, so I have ben told that the best lawyers of England were heretofore wont to mix their studys together with them, but which are at present so rarely cultivated, that those who passe forsooth for greate sages & oracles therein were not onely shamefully defective, but even in the feudal & our owne.

You are speaking, Sir, of records, but who are they among this multitude even of the coife, who either study or vouchsafe to defile their fingers with any dust, save what is yellow? or know any thing of records save what, upon occasion, they lap out of S<sup>r</sup> Edw. Coke basin, & some few others? The



thirst of gaine takes up their whole man; like our English paynters, who, greedy of getting present money for their work, seldom arive to any farther excellency in the art than face-painting, & have no skill in perspective, sym'etry, the principles of designe, or dare undertake to paint history.

Upon all these considerations then, I cannot but presage the greate advantage your excellent book, and such an history, may produce, when our young gentlemen shall ripen their studys by those excellent methods. At least there will not likely appeare such swarms & legions of obstreperous lawyers as yearly emerge out of our London seminarys, *omnium doctorum indoctissimum genus* (for the most part) as Erasmus truly styles them.

Concerning the Paper Office, I wish those instruments and state arcana had ben as faithfully & constantly transmitted to that usefull magazin as they ought; but tho' S' Jos: Williamson tooke paines to reduce things into some order, so miserably had they ben neglected and rifled during the Rebellion, that at the Restoration of Char. II. such were the defects, that they were as far to seeke for precedents, authentiq & original treatys, negotiations, & other transactions formerly made with Foraine States & Princes, dispatches & instructions to Ambassadors, as if there had never before ben any correspondence abroad. How that office stands at present I know not; but this I do know, that abundance of those dispatches & papers you mention, & which ought to centre there, have ben carried away both by the Secretarys of State themselves (when either dismiss'd or dying, & by Ambass<sup>es</sup> & other Ministers when recall'd,) into the country, & left to their heires as honorable marks of their ancestors employments. Of this sort I had formerly divers considerable bundles concerning transactions of state

during the ministry of the greate Earle of Leycester, all the reigne of Q. Eliz<sup>th</sup>, containing divers original letters from the Q. herselfe, from Mary Q. of Scots, Cha. IX. and Hen. IV. of France, Maximilian the 2d Emp., Duke of Norfolk, Ja: Stewart Regent of Scotland, Marq. of Montrose, S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Throckmorton, Randolfe, S<sup>r</sup> Fra: Walsingham (whom you mention), Sec. Cecill, Mr. Barnaby, Sir J. Hawkins, Drake, Fenton, Matt. Parker Archb. of Cant<sup>y</sup>, Edwyn Bp. of London, the Bp. of Winchester, Bp. Hooper, &c. From abroad: Tremelius and other Protestant Divines, Parquiou, Spinola, Ubaldino, and other com'anders, with divers Italian Princes; and of ladys, the Lady Mary Grey, Cecilia Princesse of Sweden, Ann Countesse of Oldenburgh, the Dutchesse of Somerset, & a world more. But what most of all, & still afflicts me, those letters & papers of the Q. of Scots, originals & written w<sup>th</sup> her own hand to Q. Eliz. & Earle of Leycester, before & during her imprisonment, which I furnish'd to Dr. Burnet, (now Bp. of Salisb.), some of which being printed in his History of the Reformation, those, & others with them, are pretended to have ben lost at the presse, which has bin a quarrell betweene me & his L<sup>p</sup>, who lays the fault on Chiswell,<sup>1</sup> but so as between them I have lost the originals, which had now ben safe records as you will find in that History. The rest I have named I lent to his countryman the late Duke of Lauderdale, who honouring me with his presence in y<sup>e</sup> country, and after dinner discoursing of a Maitland (ancestor of his) of whom I had several letters impaqueted with many others, desired I would trust him with them for a few days; it is now more than a few years past, that being put off from time to time, til the death of his Grace, when his library was selling, my letters & papers could no where be found

<sup>1</sup> Printer or publisher.



or recover'd, so as by this tretchery my collection being broken, I bestowed the remainder on a worthy and curious friend<sup>1</sup> of mine, who is not likely to trust a S—— with any thing he values.

But, S<sup>r</sup>, I quite tire you with a rhapsody of impertinences, beg your pardon, and remain," &c.

Among the errata of the Numismata, but of w<sup>ch</sup> I immediately gave an account in the Philos. Transactions, the following were thus to have been read : p. 22. l. n. 22—*mixt* as well as *obrizd*<sup>2</sup> sort in the margin, for such a metal is mention'd by Aldus (of Valentinian) with *CONOB* : which he reads,—*Constantinopoli Obrizatum*, belonging, he says, to Count Landus : v: Aldus Manut. Notar: Exp'ta, p. 802. Venet. CIO.DC.XCI. & p. 51. l. q. r. *Etiminus* : Spanheime indeed is suspicious of this medal, but I was unwilling to degrade our metropolis of the honor. P. 202 in margin r. *Regulbium* (with innumerable more).

Sir,

I know not whether Sir Jo: Hoskins, Sir R. Southwell, Mr. Waller, and Dr. Harwood (who is concern'd in what I have said of *Taille Douce*) and the rest (on whom I have obtruded books) would have the patience of Mr. Hill, to read my lett<sup>r</sup>, when you meete at y<sup>e</sup> learned Coffee-Club, after they are gon from Gressham.

*W. Wotton to J. Evelyn.*

Jan. 22, 1701-2.

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

The kind notice you have been pleased to take of my poor performances gives me a satisfaction w<sup>ch</sup> few things in the world could have equalled. Few authors,

<sup>1</sup> Qu. Mr. Pepys?

<sup>2</sup> *Obryzum* signifies gold of the most exalted purity. J. E.

I believe, are so entirely disengaged from the world, as to be proof against applause even from com'on readers: but y<sup>e</sup> approbation of great masters is y<sup>e</sup> highest reward any writer ought to look for. I am sure my time has not been mispent since Mr. Evelyn has past so favorable a judgment upon what I have been doing. It encourages me also to go on with Mr. Boyle's Life, for w<sup>ch</sup> I have been so long indebted to y<sup>e</sup> public. I have now all the materials I am to expect, and intend with all convenient speed to digest them into such an order as may make them at hand when I shall use them.

His works having been epitomated by Mr. Bolton after a sort, I am at a losse whether I shall interweave a kind of a system of his philosophy into y<sup>e</sup> Life as I at first designed, or only relate matters of fact. In that matter I shall be guided by my friends; especially your judgment I shall long for, if you will do me the honor to give it me; and then I am sure to make no mistake. The work, I am sure, will please me; if I fall not short of my subject I shall be glad.

I am extreamly sorry y<sup>t</sup> the greediness of some people hath driven you to cutt any part of those charming groves that made Wotton so delicious a seat. What, are those woods behind y<sup>e</sup> house towards Leith-Hill cut down? If they are, the greatest ornament of y<sup>e</sup> finest county in England is gone. But I hope better; and do not know if God spares my life, but I may wait upon you this sum'er at Wotton, and then I shall inform myself.

That God Almighty may long preserve you to your family, and continue to make young Mr. Evelyn what he promises, and you desire, is the hearty praier of,

Honored Sr,  
Your most obliged and most faith<sup>l</sup> serv<sup>t</sup>,  
W. WOTTON.



I beg leave to present my humblest service to your lady. I have the same intelligence concerning Mr. Hare that you have.

*Mr. W. Wotton to J. Evelyn.*

Jan. 23. 1703.

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

When I see two letters of your's before me, and both unanswered, it fills me with confusion. I ought not to be so insensible of y<sup>e</sup> honor you do me by your correspondence; an honor w<sup>ch</sup> I shall never be able sufficiently to acknowledge; tho' I confess it is with the extremest pleasure that I think I shall ere long tell y<sup>e</sup> world that I have had the happiness to be known to so great an ornament of our age and nation as Mr. Evelyn.

Your last papers have cleared some doubts w<sup>ch</sup> I was in concerning Mr. Boyle's family, and some still remain. I want to know whether S<sup>r</sup> Geoffry Fenton was not Secretary of State; I think he was. S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Petty's will I have got a copy of. I have many other things to ask you, of w<sup>ch</sup> you will in a short time have a list. You encourage me, Sir, to come to you; I will labour that you shan't repent.

I received last post two letters out of Surrey, one from D<sup>r</sup> Duncombe, of Shere, y<sup>e</sup> other from Mr. Randyll, of Chilworth, in behalf of one Mr. Banister, Vicar of Wonersh, a small vicarage just by Albury. It seems one Steer, of Nudigate, has left an exhibition for a poor scholar of Trinity College, Cambridge. Now Mr. Banister has with great difficulty bred up a son whom he desygns for y<sup>e</sup> University, and hopes he shall procure this exhibition. But that will be a slender support. I am solicited therefore to desire D<sup>r</sup> Bentley to look favorably upon him if he shall deserve it. There are very many ways by w<sup>ch</sup> a

master of such a house may assist a promising lad whose fortune is narrow. I intend to send a letter to the master by the lad when he goes up, and I take the boldness to say all this to you, because I have reason to think it will be esteemed by Mr. Randyll and Dr. Duncomb (whose family are patrons of that vicarage) as an exceeding great obligation, if you will vouchsafe to interpose with our friend in this lad's behalf. Many a boy who struggles at his first entry into y<sup>e</sup> world proves afterwards a very considerable man. Dr. Duncomb says the child is qualified to go to Cambridge. My wife desires to have her most humble service presented to Mrs. Evelyn. I am,

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,  
Your most obed<sup>t</sup> and faithfull serv<sup>t</sup>,  
W. WOTTON.

For John Evelyn, Esq. at his house in Dover Street,  
near St. James's Street, Westminster.

*W. Wotton to J. Evelyn.*

Milton, Aug. 13, 1703.

Hon<sup>d</sup> S<sup>r</sup>,

It is now so long time since I first mentioned to you my design of giving some account to y<sup>e</sup> world of y<sup>e</sup> life and writings of Mr. Boyle, that I question not but you have long since looked upon it as a vain brag of an impertinent fellow, who when he had once appeared in public, thought he might be always trespassing upon their patience. The discouragements I met with since I undertook it were so many, that I have often wished that I had let it alone or never thought of it. And I was ordered to pursue another scent by y<sup>e</sup> Bishop of Salisbury, w<sup>ch</sup> it pleased God to make unsuccessful. However my design has long been resumed, and every day I do something to it.



Next spring I hope to wait upon you in Dover Street, and shew you what I have done. I am sensible I am a slow and a lazy writer, and since y<sup>e</sup> public can well spare me and what I shall ever do, it is no great harm if I am dilatory. But since you, Sir, were the first *εργοδιωκτης* to me in this affair, and were pleased so far to flatter me, as to make me hope y<sup>e</sup> world would (upon Mr. Boyle's account) pardon what I should say, I must take y<sup>e</sup> freedom to be yet farther troublesome to you. By your letter of March 29, 1696, I am encouraged to trouble you, and for that letter I again must thank you, since notwithstanding the notices w<sup>ch</sup> Mr. Boyle's own papers and y<sup>e</sup> Bp. of Sarum's hints have given me, I found your informations so usefull, that without them my work would be very lame. I beg therefore of you farther,

1. An account of Mr. Hartlib: what countryman: what his employment? in short, a short Eloge of him, and his writings and designs, with an account of the time of his death.

2. The like of y<sup>e</sup> beginnings of S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Petty. Those two were very great with Mr. Boyle before y<sup>e</sup> Restorac'on.

3. Do you know any thing of one Clodius<sup>1</sup> a chymist? Was he (or who was) Mr. Boyle's first master in that art?

4. What was the affinity between your Lady's family and Mr. Boyle? What son of that family was it that lies buried in Deptford Church? and particularly all you can gather of the old Earl of Cork's original. Was S<sup>r</sup> Geoffry Fenton Secretary of State in Ireland; if not, what was his employment? Did not he translate Guicciardini into English?

5. In what year began your acquaintance with Mr. Boyle? I find l<sup>res</sup> of yours to him in 1657. Have you any letters of his; and would you spare

<sup>1</sup> Claudius



me the use of them? they should be returned to you with thousands of thanks.

I think, Sir, you will look upon these as queries enough for one time. It is in your power to make my work perfect, and y<sup>e</sup> obligations I shall have thereby, tho' they can't well add to those you have conferr'd already, yet they will give me a new title to subscribe myself,

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most obedient & most obliged servant,

W. WOTTON.

My wife and I desire our services to be most humbly offered to Mad<sup>m</sup> Evelyn.

Pray was S<sup>r</sup> Maurice Fenton<sup>1</sup> (whose widow S<sup>r</sup> W. Petty married) a descendant of S<sup>r</sup> Geofry's? or what else do you know of him?

In one of your l<sup>res</sup> to Mr. B. you mention a Chymico-Mathematico-Mechanical Schole designed by Dr. Wilkins: what farther do you know about it?

*Copy to Mr. Wotton, in answer to one of his in order to the History of the Life of Mr. Boyle, &c. which I first put him upon.*

Wotton, 12 Sept. 1703.

Worthy Sir,

I had long ere this given you an account of y<sup>rs</sup> of the 13<sup>th</sup> past (which yet came not to me 'til the 20<sup>th</sup>), if a copy of the inscription you mention, and which I had long since among my papers, could it have ben found, upon diligent search; but lost I believe (with other book-notes) upon my remove hither, *cum pan-nis*. To supply which, it is now above ten days past that I sent to Dr. Stanhope (Vicar of Deptford)

<sup>1</sup> A question partly founded on a mistake of names, Evelyn having added, "Felton it should be."

to send me a fresh transcript : but hearing nothing from him hitherto, I believe my letter might not come to his hands, and now a servant of mine (who looks after my little concerns in that place) tells me the D<sup>r</sup> is at Tunbridge drinking the waters ; and perhaps my letter may lie dormant at his house, expecting his returne : upon this accident and interruption, unwilling you should remain any longer in suspense, or think me negligent or indifferent in promoting so desirable a work, I send you this in the meane time.

To the first of your quæries, Mr. Hartlib was, I think, a Lithuanian, who coming for refuge hither to avoid the persecution in his country, with much industry recommended himselfe to many charitable persons, and among the rest to Mr. Boyle, by communicating to them many secrets in chymistry, and improvements of agriculture, and other useful novelties by his general correspondence abroad, of which he has published several Treatises : besides this, he was not unlearned ; zealous, and religious, with so much latitude as easily recommended him to the godly party then governing, among whom (as well as Mr. Boyle and others, who us'd to pity and cherish strangers,) he found no small subsistance during his exile. I had very many letters from him, and often relieved him. Claudius, whom you next inquire after, was his son in law, a profess'd adeptus, who by the same *methodus mendichandi* and pretence of extraordinary arcana, insinuated himselfe into acquaintance of his father-in-law : but when or where either of them died (though I think poor Hartlib's was of the stone), or what became of them I cannot tell ; no more than I can who innitiated Mr. Boyle among the Spagyristes, before I had the honour to know him ; though I conjecture it was whilst he resided at Oxford after his return from travel, where there was



then a famous assemblage of virtuosi : Dr. Bathurst of Trinity, Dickinson of Merton, Wren, now Sir Christopher, Dr. Scarburgh, Seth Ward (afterwards Bishop of Sarum), and especially Dr. Wilkins (since Bishop of Chester) : the head of Wadham Coll : where these and other ingenious persons used to meete to promote the study of the new philosophy, which has since obtained. It was in that Colledge where I think there was an elaboratory, and other instruments mathematical, mechanical, &c. which perhaps might be that you speake of as a schole : and so lasted till the Revolution following. This, Sir, is the best account I can at present render you, having since lost so many of my worthy friends, who might possibly have informed me better.

As to the date of my first acquaintance with this honourable gentleman, it sprung from a courteous visit he made me at my house in Deptford, which as I constantly repayed, so it grew reciprocal and familiar ; divers letters passing between us at first in civilities and the style peculiar to him upon the least sense of obligation : but these compliments lasted no longer than till we became perfectly acquainted, and had discovered our inclination of cultivating the same studies and designes, especially in y<sup>e</sup> search of natural and usefull things ; my selfe then intent on collections of notes in order to an History of Trades and other mechanical furniture, which he earnestly encouraged me to proceed with : so that our intercourse of letter was now only upon y<sup>t</sup> account, and were rather so many receipts and processes, than letters. What I gathered of this nature (and especially for the improvement of planting and gardening ; my Sylva and what else I published on that subject, being but part of that worke, (a plan whereof is mentioned in my late Acetaria,) would astonish you, did you see the bundles and packets, amongst

other things in my *chartaphylacia* here, promiscuously ranged among multitudes of papers, letters, and other matters, divine, political papers, poetry, &c. some as old as the reign of Henry VIII. (my Wife's ancestors having ben Treasurers of y<sup>e</sup> Navy to the reigne of Q. Eliz:) and exceedingly encreased by my late Father in law, S<sup>r</sup> R. Brown's grandfather, who had the first employment under the greate Earl of Leicester, Governor of the Low Countries in the same Queen's reign, and of S<sup>r</sup> Richard Brown's dispatches during his 19 years' residence in the Court of France, whither he was sent by Charles the I. and continued by his successor. But to return from this digression: this design and apparatus on severall other subjects and extravagances growing beyond my forces, was left imperfect upon the Restoration of the banished King, when every body expected a new world, and had other things in view, than what the melancholy dayes of his eclipse suggested to passe away anxious thoughts, by those innocent employments I have mentioned. So as this Revolution and my Father in law's attendance at Court (being eldest Cleark of the Counsel) obliging me to be almost perpetually in London, the intercourse of formal letters (frequent visits, and constant meetings at Gressham Colledge succeeding,) was very seldom necessary; some I have yet by me, but such as can be of no importance to your noble work, one of which excepted, in answer to my returning him my thanks for sending me his Seraphic Love; which is long and full of civility, and so may passe for compliment with the rest, long since mingled among my other packets.

I can never give you so accurate an account of Sir W<sup>m</sup> Petty (which is another of your inquiries) as you'll find in his own will, that famous & extraordinary piece (which I am sure cannot have escaped you), wherein he has omitted nothing concerning his



owne simple birth, life, & wonderful progresse he made to arrive at so prodigious a fortune, as he has left his relations. Or if I could say more of it, I would not deprive you of the pleasure you must needes receive in reading it often.

The only particular I find he has taken no notice of, is the misadventure of his double-bottomed keel, which yet perishing in the tempestuous Bay of Biscay (where his other vessels were lost in the same storm) ought not at all reproach perhaps the best & most usefull mechanist in the world : for such was this *faber fortunæ*, S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Petty. I need not acquaint you with his recovering a certaine criminal young wench, who had ben hanged at Oxon ; & being begg'd for a dissection he recovered to life, & (who) was afterward married, had children, & survived it 15 yeares. These among many other things very extraordinary, made him deservedly famous, & for several engines & inventions, not forgetting the expeditious method by which (getting to be the surveyor of the whole kingdom of Ireland) teaching ignorant soldiers to assist in the admeasurement, & reserving to himselfe the aikers assigned him for his reward : and the dispatch which gained him the favour of impatient soldiers, whose pay & arreres was to be out of the pretended forfeited estates, gave him opportunity to purchase their lots & debentures for little, which he got confirmed after y<sup>e</sup> Restoration. This was the foundation of the vast estate he since enjoyed. I need not tell you of his computations in what was published under the name of Mr. Graunt concerning the Bills of Mortality. And that with all this he was politely learned, a wit & a poet (see his Paraphrase on Psalm 104, &c.) ; & was the most charming and instructing conversation in the world. But all these excellent talents of his, rather hindered than advanced his applications at Court, where the

wretched favourites (some of whom for their virtue one "would not have set with the dogs of the flock," & some who yet sat at the helm) afraid of his abilities, stopt his progress there: nor indeed did he affect it, being to my observation and long acquaintance, a man of sincerity and infinitely industrious. Nothing was too hard for him. I mentioned his poetry, but said nothing of his preaching, which tho rarely and when he was in perfect humour to divert his friends he would hold forth in tone and action; passing from the Court pulpit to the Presbyterian, and then the Independent, Anabaptist, Quaker, Fanatique, Frier, and Jesuit, as entertained the company to admiration, putting on the person of those sectarys with such variety and imitation, that it coming to be told the King, they prevail'd with him to shew his faculty one day at Court, where declaiming upon the vices of it, and miscarriages of the great ones, so verily as he needed not to name them, particularly the misgovernment of Ireland, as (tho' it diverted the King, who bare raillery the best in the world) so touched the Duke of Ormond there present & made him so unruly, as S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> perceiving it, dextrously altered his style into a calmness and composure exceed<sup>y</sup> admirable. One thing more (which possibly you may not have heard of) was his answering a challenge of S<sup>r</sup> Allen Brodrick (in great favour with my Lord Chancellor), and it being the right of the apellant's antagonist to choose the place and name the weapon; he named the lists and field of battle to be in a dust cellar, and the weapon hatchets, himselfe being purblind, and not so skillfull at the rapier; and so it concluded in a feast. But after all this, this poor, rich, and wonderfull man, and an excellent physician also, was suddenly taken away, by a gangrene in his leg, it seems, too long neglected, a few days after we had dined together in cheerful,



company. The coate armor which he chose and allways depicted on his coach, &c. was a mariner's compass, the style pointing to the polar star, the crest a beehive, if I remember well, the *lemma operosa et sedula*, than which nothing could be more apposite. And now I am extremely sensible of my detaining you so long, in giving you rather the history of S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Petty instead of satisfying your inquiry concerning his lady, and who married the widdow of S<sup>r</sup> Maurice *Felton* (not Fenton), a Norfolk family, daughter of that arch rebel S<sup>r</sup> Hardresse Waller, a great commander in Ireland, by whom he had 3 or 4 children, to whom he left vast fortunes. This wife is yet living, a very stately dame, in one of the stateliest palaces of that citty.

But now, asking you pardon againe for this (perhaps impertinent) aberration, I returne to Mr. Boyle, who had besides all we have enumerated, that were his acquaintance and admirers, the Lord Viscount Brouncker, first President of the Royal Society ; that worthy person and honest Scot, Col. W. Murray ; the famous S<sup>r</sup> Kenelm Digby ; Dr. Godard ; and of later date, Dr. Burnet, now Bishop of Sarum, and generally all strangers and learned persons, pretending to chymistry, & other uncommon arts : nor did any Ambassador from abroad think he had seene England till he had visited Mr. Boyle.

As to the affinity and relation of my Wife's family to Mr. Boyle's, take the following account, she received from that most religious and excellent lady, his niece, the late Countess of Clancarty ; who coming down one day to visite my Father-in-law, S<sup>r</sup> R<sup>d</sup> Browne, who lay incommoded with the gout, and sitting by his bed side, upon some casual discourse of her family, and how they allways esteemed him as of kindred, related this pretty passage of a kinsman of S<sup>r</sup> Richard's mother's first husband, whose

name was Geofrey Fenton, who neglecting his study, being designed for a lawyer, so exceedingly displeased his uncle, that he sent him into Ireland, as an abandoned young man, to seek his fortune there. The young student, considering his condition, soone recovered his uncle's favour by so diligently applying himself to that study, as in short time he became one of the most eminent of that profession. Now the first Earl of Cork being then but Mr. Boyle (a Kentish man, &, perhaps I may have told you, a school-master at Maidstone ; but this particular being nothing of the Countess's narrative and a secret betwixt you and I only, and perhaps uncertaine) coming to advise with S<sup>r</sup> Geof: Fenton, now knighted, & finding him engaged with another client, and seeing a pretty child in the nurse's armes, entertained himselfe with them, till S<sup>r</sup> Geofrey came to him, making his excuse for making him waite so long. Mr. Boyle pleasantly told him, he had been courting a young lady for his wife. And so it fortun'd, that sixteene years after it, Mr. Boyle made his addresse in good earnest to her, and married the young lady, from whom has sprung all this numerous family, of earls and lords branching now into the noblest families of England. How many sons and daughters he left I do not remember, only that Roger Boyle was the eldest son, whom his father sent young into England, to be educated under the care of his relation, my grandmother, at Deptford, where was then a famous schole. Thus, Sir, have you the original of the relation you inquire after, and of the kindness which always continued between them. This Roger Boyle is the young gentleman, who dying in S<sup>r</sup> R. Brown's house at Says-Court in Deptford, was interred in that parish church.

I will now endeavour to commute for your patience with a pleasant passage, current with the Boyles:



When King Charles II. newly come to his Crown, and using frequently to saile down the river in his yachts for diversion, and accompanied by all the greate men and courtiers waiting upon him, it was often observed, that when the vessel passed by a certain place opposite to the Church at Deptford, my Lord Burlington constantly pull'd off his hat, with some kind of reverence. This being remarked by some of the Lords standing by him, they desired he would tell them what he meant by it: to which he replied, "Do you see that steeple there? Have I not reason to pay a respect to the place where my elder brother lies buried, by which I enjoy the Earldom of Cork?" Worthy Sir, I remain

Your most humble and obliged serv<sup>t</sup>,

J. EVELYN.

P.S. Where I speak of this family perhaps it may not be amisse to see what S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Dugdale says of it in his Baronage; tho' what the Heralds write is often sorry and mercenary enough. I am able to bring my own Pedigree from one Evelyn, nephew to Androgus, who brought Julius Cæsar into Britain the second time: will you not smile at this? Whilst Onslow, Hatton, and Evelyn came, I suppose, much at the same time out of Shropshire into Surrey and adjacent counties (from places still retaining their names) some time during the Barons Wars.

Methinks you speake of your not being at London till next spring: a long day for *Octogenarius* to hope for that happiness, who have of late seene so few moments I can call so all this past year: I have been much impaired in my health, by a defluxion which fell into one of my legs, caused by a slight scraze on my shin-bone, falling on a stump as I was walking in Brompton Parke to take the fresh air; and might

have been healed with a little Hungary-water in a day or two (for my flesh never rankles); but this neglected, a chirurgion, my Godson, whom almost 40 years since was bound apprentice to that profession, persuading me to apply a miraculous plaster of his; it drew down a sharp humour, which kept me within three months, and that being at last diverted and perfectly cured, it has since tormented me with the hemorhoides, if I may so call tumours that do not bleed (or rather blind piles), which make me exceedingly uneasy. I have yet adventured to pay my duty to my Lord Guernsey, who did me the honour to visit me at Dover Street whilst I was not able to stir, and has lately called often since he came out of Kent.

My young Grandson improves laudably in his studye of both laws, history, chronology, and practical mathematics: 'tis pity he has not a correspondent that might provoke him to write Latin epistles, in which I am told by some able to judge, and that have seen some of them, he is master of an handsome style: he does not forget his Greek, having read Herodotus, Thucydides, and the rest of that class. I do not much encourage his poetry, in which he has yet a pretty veine; my desire being to make him an honest useful man, of which I have great hopes, being so grave, steady, and most virtuously inclyned. He is now gone to see Chichester and Portse-mouth, having already travelled most of the inland counties; and went the last summer before this, as far as the Land's-end in Cornwall. Thus you see I make you part of my concernes, hardly abstaining from the boasts of men of my dotage.<sup>1</sup>

I have payd the visit we lately received from Mr. Hare and his lady, very glad to find them both in so

<sup>1</sup> Doute-age.



good state of health. He longs to see Mr. Wooton, as well as your humble servant,

J. E.

The Master of Trinity was often at St. James's without being so kind as to visit the *Clinic*.

*W. Wotton to J. Evelyn.*

Oct<sup>r</sup> 30, 1703.

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

I am heartily ashamed that I deferred so long to answer your's wherein you sent me so large and so obliging an answer to all my queries. I could say my family has ben indisposed (my wife having been lately brought to bed of a daughter), and that has broke my thoughts. But even that excuse satisfies me not, and so I shall pass it. I onely beg I may not forfeit your favor, and entreate you to accept of my sincere promises of future amendment. Your hand in this last, w<sup>ch</sup> I received last night, seems stronger and healthier than in your former. God grant your health, w<sup>ch</sup> now I hope is perfectly recovered, may long continue to y<sup>e</sup> joy of your family and your friends, and to y<sup>e</sup> satisfaction of all the learned world, to w<sup>ch</sup>, whilst you live, you can'ot but be doing good. Another edition of your *Silva* I should be glad to see. It is a noble work, and y<sup>e</sup> reception it has met with amongst y<sup>e</sup> competent judges, demonstrates it to have bin so esteemed. Another edition of your "Parallel of Architecture" I could rejoice to see done by yourself. I know you have noble materials for another impression by you, which y<sup>e</sup> public greedily longs for.

Before I shut up this paper, I must rejoice with



you for y<sup>e</sup> prospect you have in young Mr. Evelyn.  
 May that good Providence w<sup>ch</sup> has preserved him to  
 you and your admirable lady thus far, give you every  
 day an encrease of satisfaction in him for y<sup>e</sup> future.  
 This is y<sup>e</sup> unfeigned praier of,

Honored S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most obedient and faithful servant,

W. WOTTON.

I should be glad to know when you think of seeing  
 London, and for how long.

For the Honored John Evelyn, Esq.  
 at Wotton Place, neare Dorkinge in Surrey.

*From the MSS. at Wotton.*

*Sayes Court.*

The hithermost Grove I planted about	1656
The other beyond it . . . . .	1660
The lower Grove . . . . .	1662
The holly hedge, even with the Mount hedge below . . . . .	1670

I planted every hedge & tree not onely in the  
 garden, groves, &c. but about all the fields & house  
 since 1653, except those large, old, & hollow elms in  
 the stable court & next the sewer; for it was before,  
 all one pasture field to the very garden of the house,  
 w<sup>ch</sup> was but small; from which time also I repaired  
 the ruined house, & built the whole of the kitchen,  
 the chapel, buttry, my study, above & below, cellars  
 & all the outhouses & walls, still-house, orangerie, &  
 made the gardens, &c. to my great cost, & better had  
 I don to have pulled all down at first, but it was don  
 at several times.

Mr. Evelyn was acquainted with the use and value of Potatoes, which he calls Irish, tasting like an old bean or roasted chesnut, not very pleasant till use have accustomed, yet of good nourishm<sup>t</sup> & excellent use for relief of poor, yea & of one's own household where there are many servants in a dear year.

Prince Rupert invented a Turfing-plough, but without any description of its use.

Dredge is barley & Oats mixed.

Hops cost 20<sup>s</sup> an acre before any considerable profit.

	£	s.	d.
Digging . . . . .	2	10	0
5000 roots . . . . .	2	10	0
1 <sup>st</sup> year, dressing . . . . .	2	10	0
2 <sup>d</sup> year, ditto . . . . .	2	10	0
Poles . . . . .	10	0	0

40 loads of dung on an acre, the produce not above 6<sup>s</sup> an acre.<sup>1</sup>

An acre of Hemp may be worth 8<sup>s</sup>, & after this the land will be proper for barley, wheat, and pease successively.

Orchards improve land f<sup>m</sup> 10<sup>s</sup> an acre, w<sup>ch</sup> is commonly the value of the best sort of tillage, & even of best pasture not above 2<sup>s</sup> to 4<sup>s</sup>.

An acre planted with cherries has been sett at 10<sup>s</sup>, 100 miles f<sup>m</sup> London.

About Sandwich & Deal they hedge & fence their

<sup>1</sup> The following account of expence and produce of Hop-ground at Farnham, in Surrey, about the year 1812, is given in Manning and Bray's History of that County, vol. iii. p. 166.

The average rent of hop-ground about £9. 10s. an acre. The first expence of making and planting an acre, £26. The hops are not in perfection till the third year after planting. The ground is dressed every year with good stable-dung, rags, hair, wool-clippings, lime, &c. Average expence £35 an acre. Ash and withy poles are best, length from 16 to 20 feet, prices from 26 to 40s. per hundred delivered in. Produce very uncertain; but on good ground, the average of three years may be about seven hundred weight from an acre.

corn fields with flax & hemp, but flax chiefly, w<sup>ch</sup> they affirm keep out cattle, being bitter ; they sow it about 20 f deep into the field—sow whole fields of canary-seed—great grounds of hyssop & thime in tufts, for seeds only—the soil light & sandy, but the hyssop in richer ground.





**CHARACTER OF MRS. EVELYN,**

**BY DR. BOHUN.**

**FROM THE ORIGINAL IN HIS HAND-WRITING.**









WOTTON CHURCH, SURREY.

## CHARACTER OF MRS. EVELYN.

BY DR. BOHUN.

On every occasion to review severall letters to  
Mrs. Evelyn of Deptford. After reading  
them I found they were much to be valued, because  
they contained not only a compleat description of  
private events in the family, but publick trans-  
actions of y<sup>e</sup> times, where we were curious and  
usefull things described in an easy and elegant

many forgotten circumstances by this means are  
brought afresh to my memorie: by so full and per-  
fect narration of y<sup>e</sup>, they are again present to my  
thoughts, and I see y<sup>e</sup> re-acted as it were before my  
eyes. This made strong impressions on my mind, so  
I could not rest till I had recollected y<sup>e</sup> substance  
of them, and from thence some generall reflexions there-  
on, and from thence drew a character of y<sup>e</sup> author,  
not only as by plain and natural inferences may

The Rev. Dr. Ralph Bohun, D.C.L. was a scholar at Win-  
chester College, and was elected prolatinary fellow of New Col-  
lege, Oxford, at the early age of 20. In 1671 he wrote a Dissertation  
on the History and Nature of Wind; and in 1685, he completed  
his Masters Degree.





THE GRAND HOTEL

## CHARACTER OF MRS. EVELYN,

BY DR. BOHUN.<sup>1</sup>

I HAD lately occasion to review severall letters to me from Mrs. Evelyn of Deptford. After reading y<sup>m</sup>, I found they were much to be valued, because they contained not only a compleat description of the private events in the family, but publick transactions of y<sup>e</sup> times, where are many curious and memorable things described in an easy and eloquent style.

Many forgotten circumstances by this means are recalled afresh to my memorie; by so full and perfect a narration of y<sup>m</sup>, they are again present to my thoughts, and I see y<sup>m</sup> re-acted as it were before my eyes. This made strong impressions on my mind, so y<sup>t</sup> I could not rest till I had recollected y<sup>e</sup> substance of y<sup>m</sup>, and from thence some generall reflexions thereon, and from thence drew a character of y<sup>e</sup><sup>ir</sup> author, so farr only as by plain and natural inferences may

<sup>1</sup> The Rev. Dr. Ralph Bohun, D.C.L. was a scholar at Winchester College, and was elected probationary fellow of New College, Oxford, at the early age of 19. In 1671 he wrote a Discourse on the History and Nature of Wind; and in 1685, he completed his Doctor's degree.

be gathered from y<sup>eir</sup> contents. This was not perform'd in a manner worthy of y<sup>e</sup> design, but hastily and uncorrectly, w<sup>ch</sup> cost no more time y<sup>n</sup> cou'd be employed at one sitting in an afternoon ; but in this short model, Mrs. Evelyn will appeare to be y<sup>e</sup> best daughter and wife, y<sup>e</sup> most tender mother, and desirable neighbour and friend, in all parts of her life. The historicall account of matters of fact sufficiently set forth her praises, wherein there cou'd be no error or self-conceit ; and declare her to be an exact pattern of many excellent vertues ; but they are concealed in such modest expressions, y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> most envious censurers can't fix upon her y<sup>e</sup> least suspicion of vanity or pride. Tho' she had many advantages of birth and beauty, and wit, yet you may perceive in her writings, an humble indifference to all worldly enjoyments, great charity, and compassion to those y<sup>t</sup> had disobliged her, and no memory of past occurrences, unlesse it were a gratefull acknowledgment of some friendly office ; a vein of good-nature and resignation, and self denial runs through y<sup>m</sup> all. There's nothing so despis'd in many of these letters as the fruitles & empty vanities of y<sup>e</sup> town ; and they seem to pity y<sup>e</sup> misfortune of those who are condemned by y<sup>eir</sup> greater quality or stations to squander away y<sup>eir</sup> precious time in unprofitable diversions, or bestow it in courtly visits & conversations. Where there happens to be any mention of children or friends, there's such an air of sincerity & benevolence for y<sup>e</sup> one, and religious concern for y<sup>e</sup> happines of y<sup>e</sup> other, as if she had no other design to live in y<sup>e</sup> world, y<sup>n</sup> to perform her own duty, and promote y<sup>e</sup> welfare of her relations and acquaintance.

There's another observation to be collected, not less remarkable y<sup>n</sup> y<sup>e</sup> rest, w<sup>ch</sup> is her indefatigable industry in employing herself, and more for the sake of others y<sup>n</sup> her own : This she wrote, not out of vain



glory, or to procure commendation, but to entertain y<sup>m</sup> with whom she had a familiar correspondence by letters, with y<sup>e</sup> relation of such accidents or bysnes wherein she was engag'd for the month, or the week past.

This was a peculiar felicity in her way of writing, y<sup>t</sup> tho she often treated of vulgar and domestic subjects, she never suffer'd her style to languish or flag, but by some new remark or pleasant digression kept it up to its usual pitch.

The reproofs in any of these numerous letters were so softly insinuated, y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> greatest punishment to be inflicted upon any disobligation was only to have y<sup>e</sup> contrary vertue to y<sup>e</sup> fault they had ben guilty of, highly applauded in the next correspondence, w<sup>ch</sup> was ever so manag'd as to pleas and improve.

Scarce an harsh expression, much less any evill surmise or suspicion cou'd be admitted where every line was devoted to charity and goodnes. This is no effect of partiality, but appears in y<sup>e</sup> particular instances, so y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> same judgment must be made by all unprejudiced persons who shall have a sight of y<sup>m</sup>.

Any misfortune or disappointment was not mournfully lamented, but related in such a manner as became a mind y<sup>t</sup> had laid in a sufficient provision of courage & patience before-hand to support it under afflictions. All unfortunate accidents are allaid by some consolatory argument taken from solid principles. No kind of trouble but one seems to interrupt y<sup>e</sup> constant intention to entertain & oblige, but that is dolorously represented in many of y<sup>e</sup> letters, w<sup>ch</sup> is y<sup>e</sup> loss of children or friends. That being an irreparable separation in this world, is deplored with the most affectionat tenderness w<sup>ch</sup> words can express. You may conclude y<sup>t</sup> they who write in such a manner as this, must be suppos'd to have a just sens of religion, becaus there can scarce be assign'd

one act of a beneficent and charitable temper but has many texts of y<sup>e</sup> Gospell to enforce it. So y<sup>e</sup> all good Xtians must be very usefull and excellent neighbours and friends; w<sup>ch</sup> made this lady ever esteemed so. Shee was y<sup>e</sup> delight of all y<sup>e</sup> conversations where she appear'd, she was lov'd and admir'd, yet never envy'd by any, not so much as by y<sup>e</sup> women, who seldom allow y<sup>e</sup> perfections of y<sup>eir</sup> own sex, least they eclips y<sup>eir</sup> own; but as this very manifestly & upon all occasions was her temper, y<sup>e</sup> world was very gratefull to her upon y<sup>e</sup> account. This happines was gain'd and preserved by one wise qualification, for tho' no person living had a closer insight into y<sup>e</sup> humors or characters of persons, or cou'd distinguish y<sup>eir</sup> merits more nicely, yet she never made any despising or censorious reflexions: her great discernment and wit were never abus'd to sully y<sup>e</sup> reputation of others, nor affected any applaus y<sup>e</sup> might be gain'd by satirical jests. Tho' shee was extreamly valu'd, and her friendship priz'd and sought for by y<sup>m</sup> of the highest condition, yet she ever treated those of y<sup>e</sup> lowest with great condescension and humanity. The memory of her vertues and benefits made such deep impression on her neighbors of Deptford and Greenwich, that if any one should bring in another report from this, or what was generally receiv'd among y<sup>m</sup>, they'd condemn as fals, and y<sup>e</sup> effect of a slanderous calumny; either they wou'd never yield y<sup>e</sup> any change shou'd happen to this excellent lady, or they'd impute it to sickness, or time, or chance, or y<sup>e</sup> unavoidable frailtys of human nature. But I have somewhat digress'd from my subject, w<sup>ch</sup> was to describe her person or perfections no otherwise y<sup>n</sup> they may be gather'd from y<sup>e</sup> letters I receiv'd;<sup>1</sup> they contain

<sup>1</sup> Copies of several letters to Dr. Bohun, have been found at Wotton, but not those here referred to. A few of them will follow, as specimens of her manner and great good sense.



historical passages and accounts of any more or less considerable action or accident y<sup>t</sup> came to her knowledge, with diverting or serious reflections as y<sup>e</sup> subject requir'd, but generally in an equall and chaste style, supported by a constant gravity, never descending to affected sallys of ludicrous wit.

It's to be further observ'd, y<sup>t</sup> tho she recites and speaks French exactly, & understands Italian, yet she confines herself with such strictnes to y<sup>e</sup> purity of y<sup>e</sup> English tounge, y<sup>t</sup> she never introduces foreign or adopted words: that ther's a great steadines & equality in her thoughts; and y<sup>t</sup> her sens & expressions have a mutual dependance on each other may be infer'd from hence—you shall never perceive one perplext sentence, or blot, or recalling a word in more y<sup>n</sup> twenty letters.

Many persons with whom she convers'd or were related to her, or had any publick part in y<sup>e</sup> world, were honour'd by very lively characters confer'd on them, always just, and full of discernment, rather inclining to y<sup>e</sup> charitable side, yet no otherwyse y<sup>n</sup> as skillfull masters who paint like, yet know how to give some graces and advantages to y<sup>m</sup> whose pictures they draw. The expressions are clear and unaffected, y<sup>e</sup> sentences frequent & grave, y<sup>e</sup> remarks judicious, y<sup>e</sup> periods flowing & long, after the Ciceronian way, yet tho' they launch out so farr, they are strict to y<sup>e</sup> rules of grammar, and ever come safe home at last without any obscurity or incoherence attending y<sup>m</sup>.

I'll only give one instance of a person who was characteris'd by her in a more favorable manner y<sup>n</sup> he durst presume y<sup>t</sup> he deserved; however, to shew y<sup>e</sup> method of her writing, I shall set it down. "I believe (such an one) to be a person of much wit, great knowledge, judicious and discerning, charitable, well natur'd, obliging in conversation, apt to forget &



forgive injuries, eloquent in y<sup>e</sup> pulpit, living according to known precepts, faithfull to his friend, generous to his enemie, and in every respect accomlisht ; this in our vulgar way is a desirable character, but you'll excuse if I judge unrefinedly who have y<sup>e</sup> care of cakes & stilling, & sweetmeats & such usefull things."

Mrs. Evelyn has been often heard to say concerning y<sup>e</sup> death of her admirable & beloved Daughter, that tho' she had lost her for ever in this world yet she wou'd not but y<sup>t</sup> she had been, becaus many pleasing ideas occur to her thoughts y<sup>t</sup> she had convers'd with her so long, and ben made happy by her for so many years.

Oxon, 1695, Sept. 20.

## LETTERS FROM MRS. EVELYN.

*For Mr. Bohun.*

21 May 1668.

If it be true that wee are generally enclined to covett what wee admire, I can assure you my ambition aspires not to the fame of Balzac, and therefore must not thank you for entitling me to that great name. I do not admire his style, nor emulate the spirit of discontent which runns through all his letters. There is a lucky hitt in reputation which some obtaine by the defect in their judges, rather than from the greatnesse of their merit; the contrary may be instanced in Doctor Donne, who had he not ben really a learned man, a libertine in witt and a courtier, might have been allowed to write well, but I confess in my opinion, with these qualifications he falls short in his letters of the praises some give him.

Voiture seems to excell both in quicknesse of fancy, easinesse of expression, & in a facile way of insinuating that he was not ignorant of letters, an advantage the Court ayre gives persons who converse with the world as books.

I wonder at nothing more than at the ambition of printing letters; since, if the designe be to produce witt and learning, there is too little scope for the one, and the other may be reduced to a lesse compasse than a sheet of gilt paper, unlesse truth were more communicative. Buisinesse, love, accidents, secret displeasure, family intrigues, generally make up the body of letters, and can signifie very little to any besides the persons they are addressed to, and therefore must loose infinitely by being exposed to the uncon-

cerned. Without this declaration I hope I am sufficiently secure never to runne the hazard of being censured that way, since I cannot suspect my friends of so much unkindnesse, nor myselfe of the vanity to wish fame on so doubtfull a foundation as the caprice of mankind. Do not impute my silence to neglect; had you seene me these tenne days continually entertaining persons of different humor, age, and sence, not only at meales, or afternoone, or the time of a civill visit, but from morning till night, you will be assured it was impossible for me to finish these few lines sooner; so often have I set pen to paper and ben taken off againe, that I almost despaired to lett you know my satisfaction that Jack<sup>1</sup> complies so well with your desires, and that I am your friend and servant,

M. EVELYN

*To Mr. Bohun.*

1671.

Sr,

I must believe you are very busy, hearing so seldom from you, and that you are much in the esteeme of Dr. Bathurst,<sup>2</sup> since he judges so favourably of y<sup>r</sup> friends. It cannot be the effect of his discernment which makes him give sentence in my behalfe, being so great a master of reason as he is; but it is certainly a mark of his great kindnesse to you that he deffers to y<sup>r</sup> jugment in opposition to his owne. I should not question y<sup>rs</sup> in other things, but the wisest may be allow'd some grains, and I conclude you no lesse a courtier than a philosopher. Since my last to you I have seene "The Siege of

<sup>1</sup> Her son, then at College under Mr. Bohun's care.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Ralph Bathurst, Dean of Wells, and President of Trinity College, in Oxford, whose *Life and Literary Remains* have been Published by Thomas Warton, Poetry Professor, and Fellow of the same College.



Grenada," a play so full of ideas that the most refined romance I euer read is not to compare with it : love is made so pure, and valor so nice, that one would imagine it designed for an Vtopia rather than our stage. I do not quarrell with the poet, but admire one borne in the decline of morality should be able to feigne such exact virtue : and as poetick fiction has been instructive in former ages, I wish this the same event in ours. As to the strict law of Comedy I dare not pretend to judge : some thinke the division of the story not so well as if it could all haue ben comprehended in the dayes actions : truth of history, exactness of time, possibilities of adventures, are niceties the antient criticks might require ; but those who have outdone them in fine notions may be allowed the liberty to expresse them their owne way, and the present world is so enlightened that the old dramatique must bear no sway. This account perhaps is not enough to do Mr. Driden right, yet is as much as you can expect from the leisure of one who has the care of a nursery.

I am, Sir, &c.

M. EVELYN.

*To Mr. Bohun at Oxford.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

Do not think my silence hitherto has proceeded from being taken up with the diversions of the towne, the eclat of the wedding, mascarades which trebled their number the second night of the wedding [so] that there was great disorder and confusion caused by it, and with which the solemnity ended ; neither can I charge the houswifry of the country after my returne, or treating my neighbours this Christmas, since I never finde any buisnesse or recreation that makes me forget my friends. Should I confesse the reall cause, it is y<sup>r</sup> expectation of extra-

ordinary notions of things wholly out of my way : Women were not borne to reade authors, and censure the learned, to compare lives and judge of virtues, to give rules of morality, and sacrifice to the Muses. We are willing to acknowledge all time borrowed from family duties is misspent ; the care of children's education, observing a husband's comands, assisting the sick, relieving the poore, and being servicable to our friends, are of sufficient weight to employ the most improved capacities amongst us. If sometimes it happens by accident that one of a thousand aspires a little higher, her fate commonly exposes her to wonder, but adds little to esteeme. The distaff will defend our quarrells as well as the sword, and the needle is as instructive as the penne. A heroine is a kinde of prodigy ; the influence of a blasing starre is not more dangerous, or more avoyded. Though I have lived under the roose of the learned, and in the neighbourhood of science, it has had no other effect on such a temper as mine, but that of admiration, and that too but when it is reduced to practice. I confesse I am infinitely delighted to meet with in books the atchievements of the heroes, with the calmnesse of philosophers, and with the eloquence of orators ; but what charms me irresistably is to see perfect resignation in the minds of men let what ever happens adverse to them in their fortune ; that is being knowing and truly wise ; it confirms my beleefe of antiquity, and engages my perswasion of future perfection, without which it were in vaine to live. Hope not for volumes or treatises ; raillery may make me goe beyonde my bounds, but when serious, I esteeme myselfe capable of very little, yet I am, S<sup>r</sup>,

Your friend and servant,

M. E.

Jan. 4, 1672.



*To my Lady Tuke, after the death of  
S<sup>r</sup> Sam. Tuke.*

Madame,

I acknowledge these are trialls which make Christian philosophy usefull, not only by a resignation to the divine decree, but by that hope which encourages us to expect a more lasting happinesse then any this world can give. Without this wee were extreemly wretched, since no felicity here has any duration. Wee are solicitous to obtaine, wee feare whilst wee possesse, and wee are inconsolable when wee loose. The greatest conquerors themselves are subject to this unsteady state of humane nature; lett us not murmure then, for wee offend, and though in compliance to y<sup>r</sup> present sence of things I could joyne with you in greeving, having made as particular a losse as ever any did in a friend, I dare not indulge y<sup>r</sup> sorrows, especially when I consider how prejudiciall it will prove to y<sup>r</sup>selfe and those dear pledges that are left to your care; but I do rather beg of you cease greeving, and owe that to reason and prudence which time will overcome. Were I in so good health that I could quitt my chamber, I would be dayly with you and assure you how really I am concerned for you. You cannot doubt the affection of your, &c.

Jan. 28, 1672.

*To Mr. Bohun.*

Sayes-Court, 29 Jan. 1672.

S<sup>r</sup>,

If a friend be of infinite value living, how much cause have wee to lament him dead! Such a friend was S<sup>r</sup> Sam. Tuke, who retired out of this life on St.



Paul's day [25 Jan.] at midnight, and has changed the scene to him and us, and left occasion to all that knew him to bewaile the losse. You need not to be made sensible by a character of a person you knew so well, and you can enumerate virtues enough to lament and shed some teares justly ; therefore spare me the sorrow of repeating what effect it has wrought on such a minde as mine, who think no misfortune worth regretting besides the losse of those I love. Do not blame me if I beleeeve it almost impossible to meet with a person so worthy in himselfe, and so disposed to esteeme me againe ; and yet that is not the chieftest cause of my affliction. I might wave much of my owne interest, had I not so many partners that will suffer equally. These are the trialls which make Christian philosophy usefull, not only by a resignation to the Divine decree, but by that hope which encourages us to expect a more lasting happinesse then any this world can give, without which wee were extreamly wretched, since no felicity here has any duration. The greatest conquerors themselves are subject to this unsteady state of humane nature, therefore well may I submitt, whose concerns are triviall in respect of others. Yet this I conclude, that wee dye by degrees when our friends go before us. But whilst I discourse thus with you, I should consider what effects melancholy reflections may have on a spleenetic person, one who needes not cherish that temper. I will only add that I am now able to quitt my chamber, which is more then I could do these 14 dayes, and that I am, Sir,

Your servant, M. EVELYN.

*To Mr. Bohun, Fellow of New College, Oxford.*

Sr,

When I have assured you that my usuall indisposition has treated me so severely this winter that I have had little leasure to think of any thing but the meanes of gaineing health and ease, I am perswaded you will excuse me if I have not decided in my thoughts which was the greatest captaine, Cæsar or Pompey ; whether Mr. De Rosny were not a great politician, a brave soldier, and the best servant that ever Prince had for capacity, fidelity and steadinesse, a man strangely disinterested, infinitely fortunate, and every way qualified to serve such a master as was Henry the Great, who notwithstanding humane frailties, was worthy to be faithfully dealt with, since he knew how to judge and to reward. But why do we allwayes look back into times past ? wee may not reproch our owne, since heere is at this present a scene for galantrie and merit, and whilst wee may hope, wee must not condemne. Should I tell you how full of sorrow I have ben for the losse of Dr. Bretton,<sup>1</sup> you only would blame me ; after death flattery ceases, therefore you may beleeve there was some cause to lament when thousands of weeping eyes witnessed the affliction their soules were in ; one would have imagined every one in this parish had lost a father, brother, or husband, so great was the bewailing ; and in earnest it dos appeare there never was a better nor a more worthy man. Such was his temper, prudence, charity, and good conduct, that he gained the weake and preserved the wise. The sudenesse of his death was a surprise only to his friends ; as for himselfe it might be looked upon as a deliverance from paine, the effect of sicknesse, and

<sup>1</sup> Minister of Deptford ; he died in February 1671-2.



I am almost perswaded God snatched him from us, least he might have ben prevailed with by the number of petitions to have left him still amongst us. If you suspect kindness in me makes me speake too much, Doctor Parr<sup>1</sup> is a person against whome you cannot object ; it was he who preached the funerall sermon, and as an effect of truth as well as eloquence he himselfe could not forbear weeping in the pulpit. It was his owne expression that there were 3 for whome he had infinitely greeved, the martyred King, my Lord Primate,<sup>2</sup> and Doctor Bretton ; and as a confirmation of the right that was done him in that oration, there was not a drie eye nor a dissenting person. But of this no more.

M. EVELYN.

Sayes-Court, 2<sup>o</sup> March 1671-2.

*To Lady Tuke.*

April 1685.

How to expresse the sorrow for parting with so deare a child is a difficult task. She was welcome to me from the first moment God gave her, acceptable through the whole course of her life by a thousand endearments, by the gifts of nature, by acquired parts, by the tender love she ever shew'd her father and me : a thred of piety accompanied all her actions, and now proves our greatest consolation. The patience, resignation, humility of her carriage in so severe and fatall a disease, discover'd more than an ordinary assistance of the Divine goodnesse, never expressing feare of death, or a desire to live, but for

<sup>1</sup>hard Parr, D.D. Vicar of Reigate and Camberwell. He

<sup>2</sup>. 1691. The funeral sermon alluded to, was printed

: Manning and Bray's History of Surrey, vol. i.



her friends sake. The seaventh day of her illnesse she discoursed to me in particular as calmly as in health, desir'd to confesse and receive the blessed Sacrament, which she perform'd with great devotion, after which, tho' in her perfect senses to the last, she never signified the least concerne for the world, prayed often, and resigned her soule.—What shall I say ! She was too great a blessing for me, who never deserved any thing, much lesse such a jewell. I am too well assured of y<sup>r</sup> L<sup>ps</sup> kindnesse to doubt the part you take in this losse ; you have ever shewed y<sup>r</sup>selfe a friend in so many instances, that I presume upon y<sup>r</sup> compassion ; nothing but this just occasion could have hindered me from wellcoming you to towne, and rejoyceing with the best friend I have in the world—a friend by merit and inclination, one I must esteeme as the wife of so worthy a relation and so sincere a friend as S<sup>r</sup> Sam: (Tuke) was to me and mine. What is this world, when we recall past things ! what are the charms that keep our minds in suspence ! without the conversation of those we love, what is life worth ! How did I propose happinesse this sum'er in the returne of y<sup>r</sup> L<sup>p</sup> and my deare child—for she was absent almost all this winter !

She had much improved her selfe by the remarks she had made of the world and all its vanities—What shall I add ! I could ever speake of her, and might I be just to her without suspition of partiality, could tell you many things. The papers which are found in her cabinet discover she profited by her readyng—such reflections, collections out of Scripture, confessions, meditations, and pious notions, evidence her time was not spent in the trifling way of most young women. I acknowledge, as a Christain, I ought not to murmur, and I should be infinitely sorry to incur God's further displeasure. There are those yet remaining that challenge my care, and

for their sakes I endeavour to submitt all I can. I thank my poore Cousen a thousand times for her kind concerne, and wishe she may live to be the comfort you deserve in her, that God will continue the blessing to both, and make you happy—which is the prayer of her who is

Y<sup>rs</sup> most affectionately,

M. E.

*Mrs. Evelyn to her Son.*

I haue received y<sup>r</sup> letter, and request for a supply of mony ; but none of those you mention which were bare effects of y<sup>r</sup> duty. If you were so desirous to answer our expectations as you pretend to be, you would give those tutors and overseers you think so exact over you lesse trouble then I feare they have with you. Much is to be wished in yo<sup>r</sup> behalfe : that y<sup>r</sup> temper were humble and tractable, y<sup>r</sup> inclinations virtuous, and that from choice not compulsion you make an honnest man. Whateuer object of vice comes before you, should haue the same effect in y<sup>r</sup> mind of dislike and aversion that drunkenesse had in the youth of Sparta when their slaves were presented to them in that brutish condition, not only from the deformity of such a sight, but from a motive beyond theirs, the hope of a future happinesse, which those rigorous heathens in morall virtue had little prospect of, finding no reward for virtue but in virtue itselfe. You are not too young to know that lying, defrauding, swearing, disobedience to parents and persons in authority, are offences to God and man : that debauchery is injurious to growth, health, life, and indeed to the pleasures of life : therefore now that you are turning from child to man endeavour to follow the best precepts, and chuse such wayes as



may render you worthy of praise and love. You are assured of y<sup>r</sup> Fathers care and my tendernesse : no mark of it shall be wanting at any time to confirme it to you, with this reserve only, that you strive to deserve kindnesse by a sincere honest proceeding, and not flatter y<sup>r</sup> selfe that you are good whilst you only appeare to be so. Fallacies will only passe in schools. When you thoroughly weigh these considerations, I hope you will apply them to your owne advantage, as well as to our infinite satisfaction. I pray dayly God would inspire you with his grace, and blesse you.

I am,  
Y<sup>r</sup> louing mother,  
M. EVELYN.

Mrs. Evelyn (who outlived Mr. Evelyn) by her will, dated 9 Feb. 1708, desired to be buried in a stone coffin near that of "my dear husband, whose love & friendship I was happy in 58 years 9 months, but by Gods Providence left a disconsolate widow the 27 day of February, 1705, in the 71st year of my age. His care of my education was such as might become a father, a lover, a friend, and husband, for instruction, tenderness, affection & fidelity to the last moment of his life ; which obligation I mention with a gratitude to his memory, ever dear to me ; & I must not omit to own the sense I have of my Parents care & goodnesse in placing me in such worthy hands."





**PRIVATE CORRESPONDENCE**

**BETWEEN**

**KING CHARLES I.**

**AND**

**HIS SECRETARY OF STATE, SIR EDWARD NICHOLAS,  
WHILST HIS MAJESTY WAS IN SCOTLAND, 1641,  
AND AT OTHER TIMES DURING THE CIVIL WAR.**





## ORIGINAL LETTERS.

### *The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

NICOLAS, Your aduertisments to me,<sup>1</sup> is so far from displeasing to me, that I comand you to continew it, & that as often as conuenientlie ye may. Deliuer thease incloseds. (I hope ye know by that yesterday that on [one] is to my Wyfe.) So I rest

Your friend,

Eden. 15 Aug. 1641.

CHARLES R.

Aduertise my Wyfe vpon euery dispache, that she may (if she will) wryt; & make one when & as often as she will comand you.

<sup>1</sup> This letter is evidently the first sent by the King to Sir Edward Nicholas, in answer to his first communication respecting the proceedings subsequent to his Majesty's departure from the metropolis to settle affairs in the Scottish Parliament. This journey of the King was by no means agreeable to the English Parliament; for, so late as the 7th of August, the Commons desired the Lords to join with them in an attempt to delay the King's departure for fourteen days. Charles, however, gave his assent on that day to several Bills, both public and private, and then bade the Parliament Farewell! The next day, although Sunday, the Commons actually sat, for the purpose of forming and presenting a petition on the subject. On the 9th, his Majesty again gave the royal assent to four Bills, and took leave a second time, telling the Parliament that he should return before Michaelmas, if possible. At two o'clock he set off, accompanied by the Elector Palatine and the Duke of Richmond. His journey must have been performed with a rapidity nearly equal to that of the present day.

sub<sup>cts</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> North, & att a heavy charge to yo<sup>r</sup> kingdome in England in g<sup>r</sup>all, notwithstanding yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hath from tyme to tyme by frequent speeches to both Houses often called upon them to ease this yo<sup>r</sup> kingdome of that greivous burthen. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> now understanding, that (when by y<sup>e</sup> agreem<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the Scots all the Englishe forces are to be disbanded) y<sup>e</sup> Lo. G<sup>r</sup>all hath advertised y<sup>e</sup> Houses that there wants 140. thousand pounds to finishe that worke, therefore yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> may be pleased to quicken the Parliam<sup>t</sup> here, & to let them know how sensible yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> is of y<sup>e</sup> long sufferings of yo<sup>r</sup> people of England, & to comaund the Houses, (all other matters set apart,) forthwith to apply themselves to free this yo<sup>r</sup> kingdome of soe heavy & dayly a charge. Such a letter would let yo<sup>r</sup> people here see yo<sup>r</sup> care & affec<sup>on</sup> to them, & make appeare cleerely to the world that there is noe intenc<sup>on</sup> on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> p<sup>te</sup> to make use of the army here, as may be otherwise insinuated.

I humbly beg yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> p<sup>don</sup> for this bold & tedious discourse, w<sup>ch</sup> is noe other then an effect of the dutifull affeccion of

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

most humble & most

obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Continew your  
aduertisements  
for w<sup>ch</sup> I  
thanke you.  
C. R.

As I was closing this packet, I receaved one from Edenburgh, wherein was yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> le<sup>r</sup> of the 19th p<sup>esent</sup> : I shall lett my Lo. Keeper understand what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hath comaunded me to deliver to my Lo. Ch. Justice Bankes (who is now in his circuit in Suffolke) touching y<sup>e</sup> 4 Irishe regiments,<sup>1</sup> and desire his Lo<sup>pp</sup> (in y<sup>e</sup> others absence) to acquaint y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>des</sup> House therewith. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> le<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 19<sup>th</sup> p<sup>esent</sup> I have sent to y<sup>e</sup> Queene.

Westminster, 23<sup>o</sup> Aug. 1641.

Under this date, in the King's writing, "Eden. 28."

Indorsed, "For yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>." And signed by the King, "Yours apostyled."

Likewise indorsed by Sir E. N. "My le<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> King of y<sup>e</sup> 23 Aug. 1641.

Apostyled y<sup>e</sup> 28th."

<sup>1</sup> When the Irish regiments were on the point of being disbanded, the Ambassadors of France and Spain made an application to the Parliament on the 14th of August for leave to hire several regiments for foreign service ; but their application was refused.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas, I thanke you for the account you haue giuen me by yours of the 14, comanding you still to continew the same course, as lykewais that in my name ye tell the same to my Lord Cheefe justice Bankes<sup>1</sup> also : So I rest

Your frend,

Eden: 19 Aug: 1641.

CHARLES R.

You must tell my L. Cheefe justice Bankes from me that I am so far now engaged to the Spanish Embassador<sup>2</sup> for fower regiment, that I cannot now goe backe, for it was asseured me before I cam from London that bothe Houses were content, onlie it wanted the formalitie of voting : whereupon I gaue an absolute order for the leauing & transporting of those men, but also reiterated my promises to the Embassador : wherefor he must tell the Houses from me that thease leauiers must not be stoped. C. R.

Addressed : " For your selfe."

Indorsed by Sir E. N. " 19<sup>th</sup> Aug : 1641 : R. 23<sup>o</sup>. His Ma<sup>ty</sup> let<sup>r</sup> to me."

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>ty</sup>,

This morning about 6 o'clock I receaved by y<sup>e</sup> hands of Mr. Murray yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> of the 22<sup>th</sup>, & have acquainted my Lo. Keeper,<sup>3</sup> that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> is well satisfyed w<sup>th</sup> his lett<sup>r</sup>, whereof his Lo<sup>pp</sup> is very glad, & acknowledgeth yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> great goodnes to him in it.

Before my receipt of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> last letter I had acquainted my Lo. Keeper (in y<sup>e</sup> absence of my Lo. Ch. Justice Bankes) w<sup>h</sup> what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> commanded me, touching yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> engagem<sup>t</sup> for transportac'on of 4 regiments of Irishe for y<sup>e</sup> service of the Spanishe

I see your discretion may bee trusted in greater matters

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Banks, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas.

<sup>2</sup> Don Alonzo de Cardenas. This is noticed in the preceding letter.

<sup>3</sup> This was Lord Lyttelton, who succeeded Finch, and of whom it was justly said that he was a good Englishman, a good subject, and learned in the laws ; but not having the same dexterity that his predecessor had, he was not so fitly qualified for his important trust in such perilous and critical times.



King, & w<sup>h</sup> y<sup>e</sup> reasons of it, & his Lo<sup>pp</sup> having that morning made y<sup>e</sup> same knowne to the Lo<sup>des</sup>, they thereupon had y<sup>e</sup> next day a conference w<sup>h</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Comons House, the result of w<sup>ch</sup> conference is not as yet reported to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>des</sup> House, but I am tould, that the Comons<sup>1</sup> are very much against these 4 regiments going for Spayne, in regard it crosseth w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> Houses Declaration against y<sup>e</sup> Spanyard on behalf of y<sup>e</sup> Prince Elector; <sup>2</sup> & therefore my Lo. Keeper thinkes not fitt to hasten y<sup>e</sup> report of that conference: As soone as there shal be any order or resolucon in it by y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>, I shall advertise it to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>. I sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> letter to Sir Ph. Maynewaring <sup>3</sup> by an expresse messenger into Northamptonsh: whither S<sup>r</sup> Phillip was gone 2 dayes before my receipt of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to him.

Since Satterday last there hath beene noe business done in Parliam<sup>t</sup> of any publike nature <sup>4</sup> that I can heare of; but only the order made by the Lo<sup>des</sup> touching y<sup>e</sup> election of y<sup>e</sup> present Sheriffs of London, whereof I gave advisem<sup>t</sup> to Mr. Thre<sup>r</sup> by myne of y<sup>e</sup> 23<sup>th</sup>. <sup>5</sup> This day y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mayor was att the Upper House to get an

<sup>1</sup> On the 28th of August, when the House of Commons again took this affair into consideration, Sir Benjamin Rudyard spoke loudly against it, founding his objections, principally, upon the points here stated by Sir Edward Nicholas. The Commons then refused assent to the measure, in which the Lords agreed with them; and a letter, expressing their refusal, was sent to the King.

<sup>2</sup> Elector of Bavaria, Prince Palatine of the Rhine, and nephew to Charles I. being the son of his sister Elizabeth, Queen of Bohemia.

<sup>3</sup> He was of Over Peover, in Cheshire, and father to the first Baronet of that name, so created after the Restoration. He was Sheriff of Cheshire in 1639, and Captain in the Cheshire light horse. Collins does not mention his knighthood.

<sup>4</sup> This is curious; for it appears, by the Records of Parliament, that on the 25th of August the Lords sequestrated the temporalities of Dr. Roger Manwaring, Bishop of St. David's, for his contumacy to an order of the House; and on the day on which Sir Edward wrote his letter both Houses had a conference respecting a proposed recess of Parliament.

<sup>5</sup> This evidently relates to the dispute then existing between the Lord Mayor and the Commons of London; the former laying claim to the choice of one of the Sheriffs, by a prescription of three hundred years. The Livery refusing to abide by this, the Court of Aldermen petitioned the King to decide upon the affair; but the King referred it to the House of Lords, who, after some delay, ordered that the Commonalty should proceed to the choice of the two Sheriffs, at the same time recommending that they would have those who had already been nominated by the Mayor. The Sheriffs chosen were George

alteration of that their Lo<sup>ps</sup> order, but the House would not recede from it in any p'ticular, whereat y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mayor & cheif cittizens seeme to be much troubled.

There is here great expectation what recepcon yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will give to y<sup>e</sup> Comittees sent hence. I wishe yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> could have soe tymely expedited yo<sup>r</sup> affaires there, as that you might have bene reddey to come away before their arrivall there.

They came  
heere yester-  
night.

Yesterday y<sup>e</sup> Comons ordered<sup>1</sup> that y<sup>e</sup> pay of Coll. Willmot, Ashbournham, & y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> soldiers (that are questioned in P<sup>liam</sup>t), shalbe sequestred untill their busines shalbe heard & adjudged. And upon occasion of y<sup>e</sup> discourse of that busines, Mr. Selden did then in that house deliver his opinion with much confidence, that by y<sup>e</sup> ACT OF OBLIVION Mr. Percy and Mr. Jermyn,<sup>2</sup> & all y<sup>e</sup> rest that are questioned with them, are freed and pardoned, w<sup>ch</sup> he argued so strongly out of the very words of that Act, as y<sup>e</sup> sages of that house, who oppugned his opinion, did not (in y<sup>e</sup> iudgem<sup>t</sup> of able men) give any reasonable or satisfactory answer to it : the House seemed to be much amazed att this slipp in that Act, & were not well pleased with him who delivered this opinion : some said that it was not in y<sup>e</sup> intencon of y<sup>e</sup> House to pardon them, whereupon it was replied that lawes are to be understood according to the words in y<sup>e</sup> Act, & not according to the intencon of y<sup>e</sup> makers, further than y<sup>e</sup> words will beare.

This day the House of Peers have comitted to prison y<sup>e</sup> man that printed the scandalous ballet concerning the Qu. Mother's going away, & will consider of further punishm<sup>t</sup> for him, and they have ordered that these ballets shalbe burnt by y<sup>e</sup> hand of y<sup>e</sup> hangman.

Garret and George Clark. Sir William Acton, Bart. was the then Lord Mayor ; but he was superseded by the Parliament, and replaced by Sir Edmund Wright.

<sup>1</sup> Not recorded in the Parliamentary Debates.

<sup>2</sup> Jermyn had been especially implicated in this affair, by the confession of Colonel Goring, made on his examination concerning what was called a "Conspiracie against the State." Goring asserted that he, himself, had refused concurrence with the proposals to put the army into a posture to serve the King, to send a Declaration to Parliament that Episcopacy should not be infringed upon, and that the King's revenue should be established ; for he said that he thought it belonged to an army to maintain, not to contrive acts of state. At the same time he confessed that his own object, in joining in the proposed measures, was to solicit "a redresse for the miseries of the souldiers."



Thanke him in  
my Name for  
his account.

The inclosed from my Lo. Marshall<sup>1</sup> will give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> an account of y<sup>e</sup> cause of y<sup>e</sup> Qu. Mother's stay att Dover.

Indeed ye  
haue it in a  
full measure.

Albeit this employ<sup>t</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath bene pleased to honour me w<sup>th</sup>all, hath drawne much envy vpon me, & (as I heare) set some on worke to pry into my accons past & present, yet since I enioy y<sup>e</sup> comfort of y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> grac'ous opinion & acceptaunce of my poore & honnest endeavours, I shall not vallue any mans mallice, but rather smile att their ignoraunce, that conceave there is any other felicity in this employ<sup>t</sup>, then to deserve to be accounted an honest man, &

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

I receaued this  
yesterday.

The Queene sent me word she had written lately to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, & would not write by this dispatche.

Westminster, 26<sup>o</sup> Aug.

Written by the King, "Eden. 31, 1641."

Indorsed, "For yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>."

Written by the King, "Yours apostyled."

Further indorsement in the hand-writing of Sir E. N.: "26 Aug. 1641.

Myne to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> apostiled 31<sup>o</sup> Aug."

### *The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas, I haue nothing to answer to yours of the 20: (w<sup>ch</sup> I receaued yesterday in the euening), save onlie to thanke for your advertisments: but heering from good hand, that the House of Comons meanes to refuse my General Pardon,<sup>2</sup> I haue thought fitt to comand you, to comand my L. Keeper to thinke of a Declaration to be put fourth in my name (in case my Pardon be refused) to make my fauorable intentions knowen to all my English subjects, how I consulted it with the best lawers, to make

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Howard, Earl of Arundel and Surrey.

<sup>2</sup> This will be found fully explained in a subsequent letter. It seems as if the King wished to secure Percy, Wilmot, Ashburnham, and the others engaged with them, from the malice of the Parliament, but was unwilling to pardon them expressly by name, and therefore issued this General Pardon in order to include them, without appearing to confirm the charges brought against them as acting under his privity and directions.



it of most aduantadge that might bee for all my said people. This being the summe, for the forme & the penning, I leave it to bee consulted there : to w<sup>ch</sup> end, I com'and you first to goe to my Wyfe, to receaue her directions in it (for she knowes my mynde fully in this particular) and according to what she shall direct you, to com'and my Lo. Keeper for the drawing of it, fitt for my hand, with all speede, & so I rest

Your frend,

CHARLES R.

Eden. 25 Aug: 1641.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excell<sup>nt</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> of the 25th of this moneth founde me at Oatlands on Sunday last, as I was attending the Queenes com'aunds, where I p<sup>e</sup>sently p<sup>e</sup>sented to her Royall hand yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> le<sup>r</sup>, & acquainted her Ma<sup>tie</sup> what you had written to me concerning a Declarac'on ; her Ma<sup>tie</sup> saith that she now vnderstands that y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons will not suddainly refuse yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Pardon ; but howsoever she com'aunded me to speake w<sup>th</sup> my Lo. Keeper about it according to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> le<sup>ter</sup>, & to wishe him to consider of a fitting Declarac'on agreeable to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> direcc'ons, that it may be reddey in case the G<sup>ral</sup> Pardon shal be refused, & this to be donne w<sup>th</sup> all possible secrecy. My Lo. Keeper promiseth to p<sup>e</sup>pare such a Declarac'on against too-morrow, & hath wished me then to attend his Lo<sup>pp</sup> to Oatlands, there to shew it to her Ma<sup>tie</sup>, & as soon as it shal be perfected to send it for yo<sup>r</sup> royal approbac'on. The busines will well beare this delay, for that y<sup>e</sup> Peers have this day adiourned their House till Munday next ; and y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons (I heare) intend to adiourne too-morrow, also till Munday ; & it is resolv'd that both Houses shall adiourne on Wensday se'night till y<sup>e</sup> 26th of Octob<sup>r</sup>. I humbly desire to know yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure whether when this Declarc'on shall be printed, it may not be fit to shew y<sup>e</sup> same to my Lo. Banks or Mr. Attorney,<sup>1</sup> or both, before it be engrossed for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hand. I have bene tould that some take excep<sup>ns</sup> to

I am satisfied  
with this  
account.

Show it to  
both.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edward Herbert, Knt.

I am of your mynd ; for their petition to mee was to have it as neer to that of 21 Jacobi as might bee.

I com'and you to speake with the L. Keeper, my L. Bankes, and mylearned Councell, to see whatcourse is best to be taken to stop theas insolencies in tyme to cum.

I willinglie grant your desyre.

yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Pardon, for that it excepts all matters of eccl<sup>l</sup>all cognisance, albeit y<sup>e</sup> same exception is in y<sup>e</sup> Pardon of 21<sup>o</sup> Jacobi, but I beleve that this except<sup>o</sup>n of theirs is but a pretence, & that y<sup>e</sup> mayne thing that they dislike in it is, that Mr. Percy & y<sup>e</sup> rest of his company are comprehended in it. Both Houses have had a conference upon yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> answer and reasons sent by Mr. Nichols<sup>1</sup> touching y<sup>e</sup> com<sup>is</sup>sion, and I heare, though many would have bene better pleased that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> had signed y<sup>e</sup> com<sup>is</sup>sion for their co<sup>mi</sup>tee, yet they doe not much dislike yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> answer, since by yo<sup>r</sup> grac<sup>o</sup>us permission their com<sup>mi</sup>tee have leave to come to Edenburg to doe the busines they are principally sent for.<sup>2</sup> I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> substance of 2 messages delivered yesterday from y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>o</sup>ns to y<sup>e</sup> Peers. The ordinance therein menc<sup>o</sup>ned touching ye disarming of Recusants is this day ordered to be printed (as I heare). There hath bene some of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> deer killed in Windsor Forrest neer Egham by y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of that towne & of y<sup>e</sup> parishes adioyning, who hunted in y<sup>e</sup> day tyme by 80 & 100 in a company : S<sup>r</sup> Ar. Maynwaring<sup>3</sup> hath bene amongst them, and w<sup>th</sup> good words & promises hath made them forbear for y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>se</sup>nt. When both Houses shal be adiourned till Octob<sup>r</sup> I beleve here wil be little or noe busines in this towne, where y<sup>e</sup> sicknes & small pox increaseth, and therefore if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> please to give me leave, I humbly desire to reside att Oatlands or

<sup>1</sup> This was Mr. Anthony Nichols, Member for Bodmyn, whom the Commons, on the 18th August, had ordered to be their messenger to carry the Petition, Commission, and Instructions to Edinburgh for the King's approbation. It is stated in the Parliamentary Records, that the sum of £1000 was then ordered for the "Commissioner's Charges."

<sup>2</sup> The King's answer was read to both Houses on the 30th, in which he said that he did not find it necessary to sign any such Commission ; but was "graciously pleased to give leave to the said Members to come and attend us here in Scotland, to see the ratification of the said Treaty, and what else belongs thereunto."

The Parliamentary Debates say, that "these reasons seemingly contented both Houses, for we hear no more of the matter from either of the Journals," but Sir Edward Nicholas explains the business with more probability.

<sup>3</sup> He had property in Chertsey, in the vicinity ; and on the 17th of September was appointed, along with many others, to hold an inquest in the bounds of Windsor Forest, within the bailiwick of Surrey. The people had been enraged by the proceedings of the Justice in Eyre, the Earl of Holland. Manning and Bray's Hist. Surrey, vol. i. Introduction, pp. xii. xiii.



att my house att Thorpe (w<sup>ch</sup> is but 3 myles from Oatlands), whether I can take order that all packets shall w<sup>th</sup>out any delay or p<sup>e</sup>iudice be brought to me. I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> I would not p<sup>e</sup>sume to crave this favour, if I could imagine that any inconvenience or delay might thereby happen to y<sup>e</sup> services yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath bene pleased to comitt to y<sup>e</sup> care of,

Y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 31<sup>o</sup> Aug. 1641. Apostyled 7<sup>o</sup> 7<sup>mo</sup>.

Eden, 5 Sep.

Indorsed, "For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>."

And by the King, "Yours apostyled."

I receaved  
yours of the 2  
the 6 of this  
monthe, vpon  
w<sup>ch</sup>, & other  
reasons, to  
stay this dis-  
pache untill  
the 8: euen  
now I receaved  
your of the 4:  
w<sup>ch</sup> requyres  
no answer.  
Eden. 8 Sept.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Since my let<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 26th of this moneth it hath bene here ordered by both Houses of Parliam<sup>t</sup>, that out of y<sup>e</sup> monny accruing to y<sup>e</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by vertue of y<sup>e</sup> last Act of Tonnage & Poundage,<sup>1</sup> there shal be paid for the use of the Navy 10 m. lb. for this moneth of Aug: & 15 m. for each of y<sup>e</sup> other 3 monethes to y<sup>e</sup> first of Decemb<sup>r</sup> next, amounting in all to 55 m. lb. and upon a message sent by y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ission<sup>rs</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Treasury, they have given warraunt accordingly.

There hath bene a conference between y<sup>e</sup> 2 Houses about some course to be taken for preserving of the myne of saltpeetre, but there is noe order as yet settled for it.

The sentence whereby London Derry was adiudged forfeited to y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, is by y<sup>e</sup> House of Com<sup>'</sup>ons (as I heare) declared

You must co-  
mand my  
learned Coun-

<sup>1</sup> This was taken into consideration by the House of Commons on the 26th of August, in consequence of long arrears due to naval officers, as well as from the provisions in the magazines being decayed. Part of the money was also to be expended in fitting out ten men of war and ten merchant ships for the defence of the narrow seas; the charge of which would amount to £57,000, but only £1200 as yet appropriated out of the tonnage and poundage. The farmers of the Customs were ordered to make good the deficiency, to the amount of £15,000 per month.



cell, in my  
name, that  
they doe what  
they may that  
the same vote  
passe not the  
Higher House.

Nul, & that land thought fit to be restored backe to y<sup>e</sup> City of London.<sup>1</sup>

The Parliam<sup>t</sup> here (upon a conference of both Houses) hath resolved to make a recess on wensday y<sup>e</sup> 8th of Sep<sup>ber</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> 26th of Octob<sup>r</sup> next, unlesse before that day there shal hapen some emergent busines, w<sup>ch</sup> it is thought wil be as y<sup>e</sup> intelligence from Scotland shall please us here.

The Qu. Mother<sup>2</sup> remaines still att Dover, expecting (as my Lo. Marshall writes to me this morning) y<sup>e</sup> returne of a messenger from Flanders, soe as tuesday next wil be y<sup>e</sup> soonest that her Ma<sup>tie</sup> wil embarque.

All things are like to be now very still here, every mans expectac'on being fixed upon yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> & the Parliaments proceedings there, w<sup>ch</sup> I beseech God to direct & governe, as may be most for y<sup>e</sup> honor & prosperity of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> & of your royall posterity & all yo<sup>r</sup> kingdomes, and this shall ever be y<sup>e</sup> dayly prayers of,

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

As I was making up this packet I receaved an order of the

<sup>1</sup> This refers to the proceedings of the Star Chamber against the City for non-performance of conditions in the charter granted to them by James the First. Vide Rushworth, vol. iv. p. 376.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. the Queen Dowager of France. See what Mr. Evelyn says of her in his Journal.

The departure of the Queen Mother from England, where she had arrived in 1638, was palatable to the Parliament party, whose scribes at that period vomited forth the harshest vituperatives against her. In a curious astrological reprint of Grebner's book, accompanied by observations on the life and death of Charles, it is said that on her coming, "all men were against her, for it was observed that wherever or unto whatever Country this miserable old Queen came, there followed immediately after her either the plague, war, famine, or one misfortune or another."—Yet the same writer, when speaking of her departure, says, "a sad spectacle it was, and produced tears from mine eyes and many other beholders, to see an aged leane decrepit poore Queen, ready for her grave, necessitated to depart hence, having no place of residence in this world left her, but where the curtesie of her hard fortune assigned it. She had beene the onely statelie and magnificent woman in Europe."—She had, whilst in England, an allowance of £100 per day; and the Parliament gave her £10,000 or travelling expences when going away.

<sup>3</sup> The King's confidence and indulgence towards Vane, upon all occasions, though so badly requited, was extremely remarkable. Sir Philip Warwick, in

You may assure every one, that now all difficulties arased heere, as I have co'manded Vane to tell you more at large.<sup>3</sup>

Upper House of Parliam<sup>t</sup> to Sir Jo. Penington<sup>1</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> stay of ships bound for Ireland, a copy whereof I send inclosed, but whether there be any such ships in y<sup>e</sup> Downes, I cannot learne y<sup>e</sup> certeynty. The Queenes Ma<sup>tie</sup> tells me she will not wryte till Munday by Mr. Murray.

Westminster, 28<sup>o</sup> Aug. 1641.

Eden. 3 Sep.

*The King to Sir John Finch, Lord Keeper.*

My Lo. Keeper,

Y<sup>e</sup> answer that I can giue to yours of 31. of Aug. is only, that I am very well satisfied w<sup>th</sup> it : wherefore y<sup>e</sup> cheefe subiect of this is, that hauing understood, that y<sup>e</sup> Lower House, in passing y<sup>e</sup> Bill of Tunnage & Poundage, forgot to reserue that aduantage to y<sup>e</sup> merchant in diuers comodities w<sup>ch</sup> I haue usually granted, therefore I co'maund you tell y<sup>e</sup> Citty in my name, that though the their owne burgesses forgot them in P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup>, yet I meane to supply that defect out of my affecc<sup>on</sup> to them, soe that they may see that they need noe mediators to me, but my owne good thoughts ; for as yet I assure you that I have not bene sued to in this particular by any on their behalfe. Soe I rest

Your assured frend,

Eden. 7 Sep. 1641.

C. R.

I have com<sup>and</sup>ed Nicholas to speake to you concerning the insolencies com<sup>it</sup>ted in y<sup>e</sup> forest.

The above is in Sir E. N.'s hand-writing, and is thus indorsed :

" 7<sup>o</sup> 7<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Coppy of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> let<sup>r</sup> to my Lo. Keeper, to be communicated to the Citty."

his Memoirs, states a curious instance of it ; where, speaking of the economy of Charles's Court, he says that " besides the women who attended on his beloved Queen and Consort, he scarce admitted any great officer to have his wife in the family. Sir Henry Vane was the first, that I knew in that kind, who having a good diet as Comptroller of the Household, and a tenuity of fortune, was winked at ; so as the Court was filled, not crammed."

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Pennington was a distinguished naval officer of that period, and was appointed by the King, a few months afterwards, to the command of the fleet ; against this, the Parliament remonstrated in favour of the Earl of Warwick, and Sir John was obliged to resign. There was another Pennington,



This dispache  
I receaved this  
morning, but  
tell my Wyfe  
that I haue  
found falte  
with you, be-  
cause none of  
hers was with-  
in it.

Tell him, that  
I am satisfied  
with his letter,  
as indeed I am  
with you for  
the continuall  
accounts ye  
giue mee of my  
businesses.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

In the King's hand :  
Monday 20 Sep.

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I have by my Lo. Carr receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds of y<sup>e</sup> 8th of this moneth, apostiled upon my let<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 31th of Aug. last, & have presented y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to my Lo. Keeper, whoe hath alreddy com'unicated to my Lo. Mayor the effect of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> grac'ous intenc'on towards y<sup>e</sup> merchants that were not provided for by y<sup>e</sup> Act of Tonnage & Poundage, w<sup>ch</sup> was most dutifully & gratefully receaved by y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mayor, who will make known yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> great goodnes to all y<sup>e</sup> merchants of this City. My Lo. Keeper hath appointed my Lo. Bankes, Mr. Attorney, S<sup>r</sup> Art. Maynewaring & myself, to attend his Lo<sup>pp</sup> att his house in y<sup>e</sup> country on Munday next, to consider of y<sup>e</sup> ryot com'itted in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> forrest of Windsor, & of some fitting course to prevent y<sup>e</sup> killing of any more deere there.

I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a list of y<sup>e</sup> names of y<sup>e</sup> Com'ittees of y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House, & y<sup>e</sup> instrucc'ons given to them, w<sup>ch</sup> I have gotten w<sup>th</sup> some difficulty.

The Com'ittees of y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>da</sup> met yesterday in y<sup>e</sup> afternoone in y<sup>e</sup> Painted Chamber, & those of y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons in y<sup>e</sup> Excheq<sup>r</sup> Chamber apart by themselves, & afterwards iointly. All their busines was to peruse and annswere le<sup>rs</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> they receaved from my Lo. G<sup>r</sup>all,<sup>1</sup> & their Comittees in Scotland, & to take order for monnyes for paym<sup>t</sup> of the army, trayne of artillery, and garrisons.<sup>2</sup> They have given order to my Lo. Adm<sup>ll</sup> to send shippes to y<sup>e</sup> Holy Island<sup>3</sup> to fetch thence ordinance and amunic'on, &c. as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> order inclosed may perceave. I heare that these Com'ittees have

at that period, extremely active ; but his name was Isaac, and he is very harshly spoken of by the loyal writers of that time, as a man who had enriched himself most flagitiously in the service, or rather through the influence and power of the Parliament. He was a merchant in the City.

<sup>1</sup> Earl of Essex.

<sup>2</sup> The Lord General stated in his letters that it was the intention of the Scottish Parliament to keep 5000 in array, until the whole of the English army was disbanded, and the "fortifications at Berwick and Carlisle slighted."

<sup>3</sup> On the coast of Northumberland.



advertise yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> of any parliament busines. I hope yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will now hasten for England, to put yo<sup>r</sup> affaires here in good order, the armies being all disbanded but 4 regim<sup>ts</sup>. I humbly beg yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pardon for this tedious discourse from,

Be confident I  
will assoone as  
I may.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

It was almost nine o'clock at night before y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons did adiourne; but y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> adiourned at 3 in y<sup>e</sup> afternoone.

Westminster, 9<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

Eden. 13.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ty</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

In Sir E. N.'s handwriting: 9<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1641. apostil. 13<sup>o</sup>.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

The le<sup>r</sup> inclosed from my Lo. Marshall will give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> an accompt of y<sup>e</sup> Q. Mothers landing & recepc'on in y<sup>e</sup> Low Countries, by y<sup>e</sup> care of y<sup>e</sup> Prince of Orange. The Houses of Parliam<sup>t</sup> here begin to be att some difference one w<sup>th</sup> another; the Peers take it not well that y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons comanded to be printed an order for abolishing of innovac'ons, &c.<sup>1</sup> w<sup>th</sup>out their approbac'on, and thereupon their Lo<sup>pps</sup> caused to be printed a former order made for observing y<sup>e</sup> Booke of Com'on Prayer, whereupon (I heare) y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons made (on thursday night a little before their adiournem<sup>t</sup>) a Declarac'on<sup>2</sup> against y<sup>e</sup> Lords said former order, & some of y<sup>e</sup> L<sup>ds</sup> have also made a protestac'on against y<sup>e</sup> same & entred it in their house, as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> may perceave by y<sup>e</sup> protestacc'on herewith sent, & by the Declarac'on of y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House, w<sup>ch</sup> (I am tould) is sent to Mr. Th'rer by his sonne, but I cannot here pro-

I am not much  
sorie for it.

<sup>1</sup> This is the order formerly alluded to. Previous to adjournment, on the 9th, the Lords desired a conference on the subject of orders respecting Divine Service: but the Commons, without noticing that desire, instantly passed a resolution "that this House doth not consent to these orders, or to any of them." The Lords who signed this protest were, Bedford, Warwick, Clare, Newport, Wharton, and Kimbolton.

<sup>2</sup> Copies of these Declarations may be found in Rushworth's Collections; also in Nalson's.

cure a copy it. I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a copy of an ordinance of both Houses concerning y<sup>e</sup> raysing & transporting of forces out of England & Irland. By a le<sup>r</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> is sent in this packet from S<sup>r</sup> John Colepeper<sup>1</sup> to Marq. Hamilton, & by another sent by young S<sup>r</sup> H. Vane to his father,<sup>2</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> (if you call for y<sup>e</sup> same) may see all the passages of y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ons House since Munday morning, w<sup>ch</sup> have beene soe various & dissonant, as may be worthy yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> observac<sup>'</sup>on & informac<sup>'</sup>on.

I am glad of that.  
You may now say confidently in my name that they ar.

*On the opposite page, in the King's handwriting:*

I co<sup>'</sup>mand you to draw up anie such warrant, as my Wyfe shall direct you, for the disposing of the great Collar of Rubies<sup>3</sup> that is in Holland, & tell her how I have directed you to wait her co<sup>'</sup>mands in this; & that I am confident of your secrecie in this, & anie thing else, that I shall trust you with. C.R.

There hath beene nothing spoken hitherto in Parliament concerning yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Generall Pardon. If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> overcome all difficulties there, & make firme to you yo<sup>r</sup> good people of that kingdome, I beleieve it will not be difficult for you to put all things here in good order att y<sup>e</sup> next recesse, by carrying a stedy and moderate hand upon yo<sup>r</sup> affaires.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will I hope pardon the tedious and empty le<sup>tra</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> you receive from,

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 10 Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden: 16:

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled." 10 7<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost. 16<sup>o</sup>.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I cannot add any thing of advertisem<sup>t</sup> worthy yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> notice since my last of y<sup>e</sup> 10th of this present, only I can tell yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> that y<sup>e</sup> Declarac<sup>'</sup>on of y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ons (whereof I could not then pro-

<sup>1</sup> He was Chancellor of the Exchequer.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Henry Vane, sen. held his situation only until the 26th of November, when he was succeeded by Lord Falkland, immediately after the King's return.

<sup>3</sup> This, though a delicate affair, was not so dangerous as two years afterwards, when the Parliament, understanding that the Queen had pawned the crown jewels in Holland, ordered that whoever had, or should pay, lend, send, or bring, any money or specie into the kingdom, for or upon those jewels, or accept of any bill hereafter, should be considered an enemy to the state.



cure a copy) is now printed, as y<sup>e</sup> Duke of Richmond<sup>1</sup> can shew yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, to whome I have sent one from y<sup>e</sup> Ea. of Portland.<sup>2</sup> Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er's l<sup>er</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 7<sup>th</sup> present, puts y<sup>e</sup> Queene in expectac'on every howre of l<sup>rs</sup> from yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Carr.

Besides y<sup>e</sup> Queenes l<sup>rs</sup>, yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will herein receive one from my Lo. Keeper, who humbly prays yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure for a new Sheriff for Nottinghamsheire, as Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er will acquaint yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>. I find alreddy that I shall not (now y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> is adiourned) have much occasion to trouble yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> w<sup>th</sup> l<sup>rs</sup>, but I shalbe never the lesse vigilant & industrious in my care to ap-  
proove myself

I have dispatched this as is desyred, & tell the Keeper that I expect a speedie account of this letter I send him.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 13<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden. 17.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I receaved yesterday yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> of the 13<sup>th</sup> of this moneth by Mr. ffrisoll, & in it a l<sup>et</sup> to the Queene, w<sup>ch</sup> I instantly presented to her Royall hands, & acquainted her w<sup>th</sup> what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> commaunded me. Her Ma<sup>tie</sup> tells me she wrote lately by my Lo. Carr,<sup>3</sup> & intends to write againe to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> on Munday next by Mr. Wm. Murrey, & therefore forbears to send by this packet, w<sup>ch</sup> I

<sup>1</sup> De Larrey, in his characters, describes the Duke as. at the head of the royalist Lords, not only from his near relationship to the King, but also on account of his personal qualities. At the early age of twenty-one he had been made a Privy Councillor, and married to the Duke of Buckingham's daughter. — "His wit, his courage, and his affection for the King, made him worthy the esteem and favour of the Court. But two qualities which he had, prevented his being serviceable to the King, who loved him: the one was, his too great diffidence of himself; and the other (quite opposite) too great a haughtiness in point of honour. By the first he rendered himself too dependent; and by the latter, too obnoxious."

<sup>2</sup> Jerome Weston, second Earl to that title; a family now extinct.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Ker of Cesford; son to the Earl of Roxburgh, Lord Privy Seal of Scotland, the first peer of the family, and ancestor of the Dukes of Roxburgh.



And this lyke-  
wais is meerlie  
for the convey-  
ance of thease  
two inclosed.

Ye had reason.  
Eden: 23 Sept.  
1641.

now dispatch for conveyance of the inclosed from my Lo<sup>d</sup> Keep<sup>r</sup>. I had sent the 2 let<sup>rs</sup> (w<sup>ch</sup> were directed to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>) under yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> owne cover, but that I founde it was divulged by Withering's deputy, that there were such let<sup>rs</sup> came to his hands, and by him sent to me, soe that it had beene a vayne thing for me to have concealed y<sup>e</sup> same from Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er, who I was sure had advertisem<sup>t</sup> of them by another hand. All things here are in a great still, every one being busy in listening after the proceedings of the Parliam<sup>t</sup> in Scotland, where Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er writes the people are stiffe, & seeme to be resolute not to recede from their proposic<sup>ions</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> in my poore iudgem<sup>t</sup> is bad newes, and of very ill example to us here.

I humbly thanke yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup> gracious leave granted me to reside at my house att Thorpe, for y<sup>e</sup> sickness & small pox continyes very rife in London and Westminster. I am now once a day, or att least once in 2 dayes, att Oatlands, and intended to be att Westminster every tuesday & wensday, to attend what shalbe donne there by the Committees, having nothing in my affecc<sup>on</sup> or ambition soe much, as by anexact dilligence & fidelity to approve myself

Y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Thorpe, 18<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excel<sup>t</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Yesterday I sent by packet a le<sup>r</sup> to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> from the Lo. Keeper, & should not now have troubled yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, but that the oportunity of safe conveyance by this gent. doth prompt me humbly to minde yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> of some things in my poore opinion worthy yo<sup>r</sup> Royall considerac<sup>on</sup>.

I am confident yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> doth by this time cleerly perceave, how it is here insinuated upon all occasions, that Popery (w<sup>ch</sup> is generally exceeding distastefull to yo<sup>r</sup> su<sup>bs</sup> of this kingdome) is too much favoured by yo<sup>r</sup> clergy here, & in yo<sup>r</sup> owne Court, &

that this opinion (how vniustly soever laid by Brownists<sup>1</sup> on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> governm<sup>t</sup>) hath & doth (more than any thing) preiudice yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> esteeme & affecc<sup>on</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> people, whose love I humbly conceave to be soe much yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> interest, as that it ought to be preserved & reteyned by yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> by all possible meanes : wherefore I humbly offer to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> considerac<sup>on</sup> whether it be not requisite, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> should now (during this recesse) give some publique assuraunce to the contrary : w<sup>ch</sup> I humbly conceave may be donne by yo<sup>r</sup> p<sup>esent</sup> conferring of such Bp<sup>rickes</sup> and eccles<sup>call</sup> dignities as are now voyde vpon persons, of whome there is not the least suspic<sup>on</sup> of favouring the Popish partie, such as may be<sup>2</sup> Dr. Prideaux, Bromwich, Gouge, Mr. Shute, & y<sup>e</sup> like, if they will in these tymes accept of such p<sup>erferm<sup>ts</sup></sup>, for I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> I am vnknowne to all and every one of them. Such men thus p<sup>erferred</sup>, would not only give assurance of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> firme resoluc<sup>on</sup> to maynteyne the Protestant religion here professed, but by filling vpp of y<sup>e</sup> vacant Bp<sup>rickes</sup> w<sup>th</sup> such persons, yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> would gayne not only their votes for Episcopacy, &c. but many more, who seeing such divines p<sup>erferred</sup>, would rest confident that there is noe intenc<sup>on</sup> to introduce or connive at Popery.

Also concerning the booke of Co'mon Prayer, (to partes whereof y<sup>e</sup> late Declarac<sup>on</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Co'mons House shewes there is some excep<sup>on</sup>), yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> having constituted such B<sup>pps</sup>, may be pleased to declare yo<sup>r</sup> reddines to reforme what shalbe thought amisse in it by yo<sup>r</sup> clergy & Parliam<sup>t</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> will prevent those that (in a zeale w<sup>thout</sup> knowledge) seek to overthrow y<sup>e</sup> good government & order wisely established in this Church : & thus by yo<sup>r</sup>

I thanke you fore putting me in mynd of the vacancie of Bishobrikes, therefore Ico'mand you to direct the B. of London to send me a list of all the vacant Bishobrikes, & those notes w<sup>ch</sup> he & I made concerning the filling of those places.

Brownrigg.

<sup>1</sup> It is unnecessary, with respect to these schismatics, to notice their peculiar tenets, any further than to remind the reader that they were as inimical to the Church of England as they professed to be to Popery. Their schism, also, began as early as the time of Elizabeth ; and perhaps the love of persecution might have been as clearly manifested in power, as it was evident in adversity ; for their founder boasted on his death-bed that he had been in thirty-two prisons during his religious warfare with the established authorities.

<sup>2</sup> Prideaux was Canon of Christ Church, Oxford ; he was made Bishop of Worcester in 1641, and died in 1650. Dr. Ralph Brownrigg, Master of Catherine Hall, Cambridge, and Prebendary of Durham, was made Bishop of Exeter in 1641. Gouge and Shute were two principal leaders of the dissenting persuasion, and always abided by their old congregations.



Mat<sup>ties</sup> tymely moderac'on, you will put a bitt in their mouthes, who (vpon a popular pretence of y<sup>e</sup> reliques of Popery) cry downe all that is of good order or decency in the Church.

Hitherto, I lyke your opinion well, but concerning the rest, I know not what to say, if it be not to aduer-tice my Wyfe of the Parla-ments inten-tion concern-ing hir Capu-chins, & so first to heare what she will say.

On the con-trair I thanke you for this honnest free-dome.

And for a further assuraunce of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> integrity in this reformac'on, I humbly offer it to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> considerac'on whether it may not be necessary (before y<sup>e</sup> next meeting in P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>) to send away all the Capucins <sup>1</sup> & dissolve their cloyster, for if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> doe it not yo<sup>r</sup>self, I am misinformed if y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup> fall not vpon them when they come againe together; & it would be much more for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hon<sup>r</sup>, & more acceptable to yo<sup>r</sup> people, & (it may be) safer for y<sup>e</sup> Capucins, if in that particular yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pre-vented the P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>.

And now I humbly beg yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pardon for my presumc'on in tendering to yo<sup>r</sup> great wisdome these my vndigested thoughts, w<sup>ch</sup> I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> have beene communicated to noe other per-son in the world, but are (w<sup>th</sup>out any p<sup>'</sup>tic<sup>'</sup>lar designe) meerely the yssues of my weake iudgem<sup>t</sup> & indulgent care of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> honor, p<sup>'</sup>servac'on & service, w<sup>ch</sup> I preferre before any thing in this world that can concerne

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Thorpe, 19 Sep<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

Eden. 26.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

Superscribed by Sir E. N. "19<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apostl. 26<sup>o</sup>. his Ma<sup>ties</sup> thanks me for his le<sup>t</sup> and my freedome in it.

It was sent by Mr. W<sup>m</sup>. Murrey."

<sup>1</sup> This order had been introduced on the marriage of Charles with Henrietta Maria, and had been allowed to make an establishment here.



*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent M<sup>t</sup>ie,

Yesterday S<sup>r</sup> Job Harby,<sup>1</sup> & I attended the Queene about yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ies collar of rubies, vpon w<sup>ch</sup> he saith there is alreddy 25<sup>mo</sup>. Her Ma<sup>t</sup>ie hath let him vnderstand yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ies pleasure concerning y<sup>e</sup> disposing of it, whereupon he hath promised that he and S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Nulls (who hath bene formerly imployed in the pawning of it) will forthw<sup>th</sup> write to y<sup>e</sup> partie in Holland w<sup>th</sup> whome it lyes engaged, to see what more monny may be had vpon it, and if that man will not lend any further considerable som'e, then S<sup>r</sup> Job promiseth to doe his best to procure elsewhere as much more vpon it as he can, & therew<sup>th</sup> redeeme it out of the hands where it now lyes, & get y<sup>e</sup> overplus for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ie, & he assures the Queene, that he will doe this w<sup>th</sup> secrecy, and all possible diligence.

This inclosed from my Lo. Keeper was brought to me the last night to be conveyed to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ie, & will I hope give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ie an account of yo<sup>r</sup> last let<sup>r</sup> to his Lo<sup>pp</sup>. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ie may be pleased to procure from y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>li</sup>ament there some further reiterac'on of their declarac'on, that what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ie hath consented vnto concerning y<sup>e</sup> election of Officers there may not be drawne into example to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ies preiudice here, for if I am not misinformed there wilbe some attempt to procure the like Act heere concerning Officers before y<sup>e</sup> Act of Tonnage & Poundage wilbe passed to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ie for lief.

I heare that y<sup>e</sup> Committee of the Com'ons hath appointed to take into considerac'on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>t</sup>ies Revenue y<sup>e</sup> next weeke, and that they will then set at least twice a weeke.<sup>2</sup> I am vnwilling to give

<sup>1</sup> He was of an ancient Northamptonshire family, the Harbys of Adston. His sister Emma was married to Robert Charlton, of Whitton, Esq. who suffered much for his loyalty in the cause of Charles the Second. Their son Sir Job was a Judge in the Common Pleas, and created a Baronet.

<sup>2</sup> This seems to be the same person afterwards engaged, in 1643, in the plan to seize the city of London for the King; in which Edmund Waller was a party, according to Rushworth's account; though Clarendon considers their plans as completely distinct.

<sup>3</sup> The power given to these Committees, during the recess, was of a most unprecedented nature, almost equal to that of the three estates of the legisla-

I wonder of this, for he or Crispe,<sup>3</sup> assured me before my parting from London that it would be absolutlie free, before Bartholemtyde, therefore know the cause of this mistaking housocuer I lyke the cource now taken by my Wyfe in this.

It is so, & lykes me well.

I lyke your proposition, and shall gett as much as I may, howeuer I thanke you for your aduertisement.

I pray God, it be to good purpose, & that there be no knavery in it.

I command  
you to send, in  
my name to all  
those Lords  
that my Wyfe  
shall tell you  
of, that they  
faile not to at-  
tend at the  
downe sitting  
of the Parlia-  
ment.

yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> in yo<sup>r</sup> great affaires there too long an interruption with  
the tedious lynes of,

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Thorpe, 24<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Being yesterday at Oatlands to attend the Queenes com'aunds,  
her Ma<sup>tie</sup> gaue me this paper inclos'd, w<sup>th</sup> comaund to send it this  
day to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>: it was brought to y<sup>e</sup> Queene by y<sup>e</sup> Lady Carlile,<sup>1</sup>  
who saith she had it from y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mandeville.<sup>2</sup> I confesse it were  
not amise to have it published, but I had rather it should be  
donne by any other hand then yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> or y<sup>e</sup> Queenes, &  
therefore I could wishe yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> would conceale it for a day  
or 2, by w<sup>ch</sup> tyme I know there wilbe other coppies of it sent into  
Scotland.

I shall.

The late crosse orders, & vnusuall passages in P'liam't a little  
before y<sup>e</sup> Recess, are so distastfull to y<sup>e</sup> wiser sorte, as it hath  
taken off y<sup>e</sup> edge of their confidence in parliamentary proceedings,  
& I verily beleeeve, that if y<sup>e</sup> Houses (when they next meete) shall  
approve of what was then done, it will loose them ye reverence  
that hath bene heretofore paid to Parliam<sup>ts</sup>.

ture. In vol. ix. of the Parliamentary History, page 537, a copy of them is  
inserted.

<sup>1</sup> This was the Dowager Carlisle, Lady Lucy Percy, second wife, and, at  
this date, relict of James Hay, first Earl of Carlisle; a lady of great note in her  
time, celebrated by Waller, and an intimate acquaintance of Pym, and several  
of his party. Clarendon accuses her of perplexing the King's affairs. She  
was old enough to give up love for politics, being then upwards of forty.

<sup>2</sup> Son to the first Earl of Manchester of the Montague family, and formerly a  
personal friend of the King, having accompanied him on his romantic journey  
to Spain. The nature of the paper here alluded to, may be surmised from  
the fact that Lord Mandeville was an active member of the party which, at that  
period, was anxious to prevent a civil war by the removal of arbitrary minis-  
ters from the Ro<sup>yal</sup>. In the preceding year he had been one of  
the Com<sup>missioners</sup> uses of dispute with Scotland. He was



I heare there are divers meetings att Chelsey att y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mandevilles house & elsewhere by Pym<sup>1</sup> and others, to consult what is best to be donne at their next meeting in P<sup>l</sup>iam<sup>t</sup>: & I beleeeve they will in y<sup>e</sup> first place fall on some plausible thing, that may reintegrate them in y<sup>e</sup> people's good opinion, w<sup>ch</sup> is their anchor-hold & only interest; & (if I am not much misinformed) that wilbe either vpon Papists, or vpon some Act for expunging of Officers and Counsellors here according to y<sup>e</sup> Scottish p<sup>re</sup>cedent, or on both together, & therefore it will import yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, by some serious and faithfull advise, to doe some thing to anticipate or prevent them before their next meeting.

Yesterday at Oatlands I understood that S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Berkeley & Capt. O'Neale<sup>2</sup> were come over, & that they had bene the day before privately at Waybridge: I was bould then to deliver my opinion to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, that I did beleeeve if they continued in England they would be arrested (thoughe y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>l</sup>iam<sup>t</sup> sit not) by vertue of y<sup>e</sup> warrant, that was given att first to y<sup>e</sup> Sarjant at Armes (attending y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>o</sup>ns House) to attache them. Her Ma<sup>tie</sup> seemed (when I tould it to her) to app<sup>re</sup>hend noe lesse, & will I believe take order that notice may be given to them of y<sup>e</sup> danger of it, but her Ma<sup>tie</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>re</sup>sent said she knew not where they were.

best known, however, as the Lord Kimbolton, having at this period been called to the Upper House for his father's barony, though retaining the title of Viscount Mandeville by courtesy. Vide Collins's Peerage, vol. ii. p. 93, for further particulars. His brother, Walter Montague, was a bigoted Catholic priest, Abbot of Pontoise in France, and Confessor to the Queen after the death of Father Philips: he is further noticed in subsequent letters.

<sup>1</sup> This was a very short time previous to the tumults of the London apprentices, of which Pym, with several others, were strongly suspected of being instigators. Subsequently the City found it necessary to check those riots, and Venn, one of their members, having exerted himself to keep the peace, a party pamphlet observed that the rioters would have proceeded to the Mansion House, "but by the providence of God, and the great wisdom of Captain Ven, they were prevented."

<sup>2</sup> O'Neale was deeply implicated in what was called the plot for bringing up the English army against the Parliament, in which Percy, Goring, Ashburnham, and several others were said to have been engaged. May, in his History of the Parliament, p. 65, (Mason's Edition,) calls O'Neale an Irishman and a Papist; and states that he was committed to the Tower, but escaped before trial.

Berkeley was an officer of high rank, always active in the King's service, and is repeatedly mentioned by Clarendon, particularly as Governor of Exeter, which he was obliged to surrender to the Parliamentary forces.

It were not amiss that some of my seruaunts met lykewais to countermynd ther Plots, to w<sup>ch</sup> end speake w<sup>th</sup> my Wyfe & receaue her directions.



I wonder at  
this, for all  
this last Month  
every thurd  
day at furthest  
I have written  
to her.

The Queene being now every day in expectac'on of le<sup>r</sup> from yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> (having receaved non since tuesday last) doth forbear to write by this dispatch.

Wee know not y<sup>e</sup> importance of y<sup>e</sup> affaires there that deteyne yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> soe long, but it is by those that wishe best to yo<sup>r</sup> service here, thought very necessary that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> should hasten to be here as soone as may be possible before y<sup>e</sup> 20th of 8<sup>ber</sup>; and if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> leave behinde you some Councillors that you carryed hence it is thought yo<sup>r</sup> Councells here will not prosper the worse, nor be the lesse secreat, only it may be yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> may thereby deprive some menc'oned in y<sup>e</sup> paper inclosed of their wonted intelligence. I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to vouchsafe to advertise me whether this come safe to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hands, & to burne it, that it may never rise in iudgement against,

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>  
Most humble & obedient servaunt,  
EDW. NICHOLAS.

Thorpe, 27 Sep<sup>b</sup> \* 1641.  
Eden. 2 Oct.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Tell her that  
this dole  
amends is  
abondant  
satisfaction.

I had noe sooner sent away my packet on Munday last but I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 20<sup>th</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sent, & w<sup>th</sup> it a le<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, w<sup>ch</sup> I forthw<sup>th</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sented to her royall hand, & yesterday I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 23<sup>th</sup> of this moneth, & instantly sent away yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> let<sup>r</sup> to the Queene & that to my Lo. Keeper. I tould y<sup>e</sup> Queene that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> had blamed me, that in severall of my dispatches there was no le<sup>r</sup> from her Ma<sup>tie</sup>, for w<sup>ch</sup> she hath now made a recompence by sending me two l<sup>rs</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall herein receive.

The Com<sup>'</sup>itees of y<sup>e</sup> Peers met not yesterday, but will tuesday next.<sup>1</sup> The Com<sup>'</sup>ons Committees met, & had before them S<sup>r</sup> Jo.

<sup>1</sup> The Report of these Committees was made to the Parliament, on their

Berkley & Capt. O'Neale, who coming over lately, were (as I heare) yesterday apprehended by y<sup>e</sup> servaunt of y<sup>e</sup> Serjant att Armes (attending y<sup>e</sup> House of Com'ons) vpon y<sup>e</sup> first warraunt that was issued for taking of them, & y<sup>e</sup> Com'ittees would not bayle them, though they tendred it, alleaging they had not power to doe it.

I hope some day they may repent there seueritie.

Yesterday y<sup>e</sup> Remembrancer of the Citty of London came to me from the Lo. Mayor & Court of Aldermen, & desired me to present to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> the humble & dutifull thankes of the Citty for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> great grace & goodnes in y<sup>e</sup> busines of Tonnage & Poudage. I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> that yo<sup>r</sup> grac'ous le<sup>r</sup> concerning that matter hath wrought much vpon y<sup>e</sup> affecc'ons, not only of y<sup>e</sup> merchaunts, but of diverse others of this Citty.

The Remembrancer tould me further, that y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>d</sup> Mayor & Aldermen desired him to enquire of y<sup>e</sup> day when yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wilbe here, to y<sup>e</sup> end that, according to their dutifull affecc'ons, they might meete yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, to attend yo<sup>r</sup> royall person into this Citty, thoughe he said y<sup>e</sup> Citty (being become poore) were not able to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> any p<sup>re</sup>sent according to their custom. I have promised to let them know when yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wilbe here as soone as I shall know y<sup>e</sup> certeynty of it. Of all w<sup>ch</sup> I thought it my duty to advertise yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, that I may therein doe nothing but what may be agreeable to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> good pleasure; notw<sup>th</sup>standing I humbly conceive it imports yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to cherish y<sup>e</sup> affecc'ons & goodwill of this Citty.

When ye shall see littell Will: Murray then ye shall know certainlie not onlie of my returne, but also how all will end heer.

By let<sup>rs</sup> to partic'lar p'sons (w<sup>ch</sup> I have seene) dated 25<sup>o</sup> 7<sup>bris</sup>, it is advertised from Edenb. that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath nominated y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Lodian to be Chancellor. Whatsoever y<sup>e</sup> newes be that is come hither amongst y<sup>e</sup> partie of y<sup>e</sup> Protesters, they are observed to be here of late very iocund & cheerefull, & it is conceived to arise from some advertisements out of Scotland, from whose acc'ons & successes they intend (as I heare) to take a patterne for their proceeding here att their next meeting. I hartely pray for yo<sup>r</sup>

It is Loudun not.

I believe before all be done that they will not haue such great cause of joy.

meeting, by Mr. Pym. A copy of it is inserted in vol. x. of the Parliamentary History, p. 1.

Pym, in this report, says that Berkeley and O'Neale came voluntarily to his lodgings, for the purpose of submitting to the orders of the House; after which the deputy serjeant attached them on the first order.



Mat<sup>ties</sup> speedy & happy returne, as being (of all men) most obliged to be

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Mat<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 29<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden. 5 Oct.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

29<sup>o</sup> 7<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost. 5 8<sup>bris</sup>.

This day I received yours of the 1: Oct.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

Máy it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excell<sup>nt</sup> Mat<sup>ie</sup>,

These inclosed from y<sup>e</sup> Queene & my Lo. Keeper were brought to me y<sup>e</sup> last night late to be sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ie</sup>. I have not as yet received from the B<sup>pp</sup> of London<sup>1</sup> a list of the vacant Bp<sup>ricks</sup>: I beleve his Lo<sup>p</sup> hath not finished the notes yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ie</sup> & his Lo<sup>pp</sup> made concerning that busines, w<sup>ch</sup> he tould me were very imperfect.

I dout not but in this to give good satisfaction.

I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ie</sup> to give me leave to put you in minde that there is noe one thing that you can now doe, that will better rectify y<sup>e</sup> ielousies of yo<sup>r</sup> good people, more satisfie their mindes, & settle their affecc<sup>ions</sup> to yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ie</sup>, then y<sup>e</sup> good choyce you make of such as yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ie</sup> shall now appoint to be B<sup>pps</sup>; & as it wilbe much for yo<sup>r</sup> service that y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>pps</sup> be plausible persons, & beyond except<sup>on</sup>, soe there would be a great care had that noe B<sup>pp</sup> be removed, of whome there is any suspic<sup>on</sup> of being any wayes popishly affected, or otherwise much disliked.

Ye may see by this that all ther desynes hit not, & I hope before all be done that they shall miss of more.

The partie here, who we say hath y<sup>e</sup> best intelligence from Scotland (w<sup>ch</sup> is Mr. Pym & young S<sup>r</sup> Hen. Vane), report that y<sup>e</sup> Ea. of Arguile<sup>2</sup> is Chauncellor of that Kingdome; it seemes it was soe designed.

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Juxon, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.

<sup>2</sup> This report was false, as the King observes. Argyle was not Chancellor of Scotland. But Charles granted him a Marquisate; yet he was afterwards beheaded for high treason, the year after the Restoration. It is remarkable, however, that in 1651 he actually put the crown upon the head of Charles the Second at Edinburgh.



I hear Mr. Th'rer is still at Raby,<sup>1</sup> & that he will not returne to Scotl. before yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> coming thence, w<sup>ch</sup> makes me humbly to craue yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aund whether I shall contynue the addresse of all packets still to him, or to whome else.

Adresse them  
to the Duke  
of Richemont.

I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> it is here resolved (if my intelligence doth not much deceaue me) to presse yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, at y<sup>e</sup> next meeting in P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> like Act touching y<sup>e</sup> elecc'on of officers and Councillors here, as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath graunted to y<sup>e</sup> Scots; & in this I believe yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will find a more generall concurrency & accord, then hath bene in any one thing this P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup>; for many here say, that otherwise all y<sup>e</sup> great offices and places of councillors here, wilbe filled upp w<sup>th</sup> Scotsmen. I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to vouchsafe to consider well of this particular, and be pleased to conceale that you have y<sup>e</sup> aduertisem<sup>t</sup> of it from me.

You shall doe  
well to aduise  
with some of  
my best ser-  
uants there  
how this may  
be preuented,  
for I asseur  
you, that I  
doe not meane  
to grant it.

I beseech God to direct & assist yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> and yo<sup>r</sup> Councillors soe as you may returne w<sup>th</sup> honour, w<sup>ch</sup> shall ever be y<sup>e</sup> prayer of

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>,

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Thorpe, 3 Octobr. 1641.

Eden. 9.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excell<sup>nt</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Yesterday I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'ands by an apostile vpon my le<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 24<sup>th</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> last moneth, & forthw<sup>th</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sented yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, and sent that to my Lo. Keeper; & w<sup>th</sup> this yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will receave 2 let<sup>trs</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> Queene, & one from my Lo. Keeper.

It hath bene here confidently said, by those that holde correspondency w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Engl. Comittees in Scotland, that y<sup>e</sup> Ea. of Arguile shalbe at length Chauncellor, & that y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>d</sup> Amont<sup>2</sup> shall not be

<sup>1</sup> His own country seat.

<sup>2</sup> This was Levingston, Lord Almont, who had the first command under Lesley in the Scottish army, and was afterwards created Earl of Callendar. Charles certainly intended to give him the office of Lord Treasurer, but was forced to put it into commission, naming the Earls of Argyle, Glencairn, Lothian, and Lindsey, as Commissioners.

Though<sup>1</sup> I cannot returne so soone as I could wishe, yet I am confident that you will fynde ther was necessitie for it, & I hope that manie will miss of there ends.

This may be trew that you say, but I am sure that I miss somewhat in point of honnor, if they all be not releued before I goe hence.

Th'rer ; & if I am not much misinform'd, they are here as peremptorily resolved to presse & put upon yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a Lo. Th'rer & some other officers before they will settle yo<sup>r</sup> returne, & nothing can brake their designes here but yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> presence ; & if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> do not hasten to be here some dayes before y<sup>e</sup> next meeting in Parliam<sup>t</sup>, I doubt there wilbe few that will dare to appeare here to oppose y<sup>e</sup> party that now swayeth ; & I pray God there be not some designe in deteyning yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> there till yo<sup>r</sup> affaires here be reduced to the same state they there are in. I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> opinion of wise men here is, that to have what officers you desire in that kingdome cannot make soe much for your service there, as yo<sup>r</sup> absence hence at this tyme will preiudice you in businesses of more importaunce here : and as for the Lo. Montrosse<sup>2</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> rest, some here (that pretend to understand y<sup>e</sup> condic'on of their case) are of opinion, that ther innocency is such, as they will not fare y<sup>e</sup> worse for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> leaving them to y<sup>e</sup> ordinary course of justice there.

I am credibly assured, that y<sup>e</sup> Citty of London growes very weary of y<sup>e</sup> insolent carriage of y<sup>e</sup> Schismaticks, finding their way of governm<sup>t</sup> to be wholly arbitrary. Alderman Gourney [Gurney] (according to his right and place) is elected Lo. Mayor notwithstanding y<sup>e</sup> opposic'on of y<sup>e</sup> factious party, throughe y<sup>e</sup> stoutnes and good affecc'on of one of y<sup>e</sup> new Sheriffs (called Clerck), who while y<sup>e</sup> factious persons were making a noyse, & would not proceede to y<sup>e</sup> elecc'on, proposed Ald'man Gourney (who I heare is very well affected & stout), & carry'd it, & y<sup>e</sup> Schismaticks (who cryed noe elecc'on) were silenced w<sup>th</sup> hisses, & thereupon y<sup>e</sup> Sheriff dismiss y<sup>e</sup> Court.<sup>3</sup>

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will herew<sup>th</sup> receive from my Lo. of London y<sup>e</sup> notes yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> sent for to him ; his Lo<sup>pp</sup> is soe lame in his hand &

<sup>1</sup> That the King should find any difficulty in settling his Scottish affairs, seemed very extraordinary to some of the politicians of that time ; Old Grebner, or rather his Editor, says, " The Devill was in the crags of the Scots, if he left them not contented, who gave them whatever they required." Bulstrode, also, in his Memoirs, confirms that fact ; but says, in a more respectful manner, " parted a contented King from a contented people."

<sup>2</sup> Montrose had very recently quitted the Covenanting party, and joined the King. Vide Guthrie's History of Scotland, vol. ix. p. 328.

<sup>3</sup> This is a curious piece of civic history, not to be found in any of their records.



shoulder, as he was not able to write to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, for w<sup>ch</sup> he beggeth yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pardon. His Lo<sup>p</sup> desired me to signify that he hath sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> same individuall papers & notes w<sup>ch</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath formerly seene, because yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> is best acquainted w<sup>th</sup> them: & he saith that y<sup>e</sup> Bp<sup>rick</sup>s that are voyde have a cipher set before them; his Lo<sup>p</sup> alsoe entreated me to acquaint yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> that y<sup>e</sup> party whome you had in yo<sup>r</sup> thoughts for y<sup>e</sup> Bp<sup>rick</sup> of Chichester desires to be spared for that place, if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> soe please, & at yo<sup>r</sup> returne he will acquaint yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>e</sup> reason of it.

I have tould y<sup>e</sup> Queene what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wrote to me touching y<sup>e</sup> Collar of rubies, & by her Ma<sup>ties</sup> co'maund I have sent to speake w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Job Harby about that busines, whereof by my next I shall give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a further accompt. I shall have a care to send in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> name to all such Lo<sup>ds</sup> (as y<sup>e</sup> Queene shall direct) not to faile to attend y<sup>e</sup> downe sitting of y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>liam</sup>'t.

The Committees of both Houses met this afternoone att a conference, they were all bare-headed during y<sup>e</sup> conference, both Lo<sup>ds</sup> & Co'mons by a privatt intimac'on, but if y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> should have put on their hatts, y<sup>e</sup> Co'mons were resolved to have donne soe likewise. Their conference was concerning some troopers, who flock to y<sup>e</sup> Committees in soe great numbers, as they have agreed vpon an order to be fortw<sup>th</sup> printed for sending them away, a copy of w<sup>ch</sup> order is herew<sup>th</sup> sent. Vpon let<sup>trs</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Howard, and y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>itees (advertising that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will not come from Scotl. this moneth at soonest) they have

<sup>1</sup> The new-made Bishops were:

BRISTOL.	Thomas Westfield, Archdeacon of St. Alban's, of Jesus College, Cambridge.
CHICHESTER.	Henry King, Dean of Rochester, of Christ Church College, Oxford.
EXETER.	Ralph Brownrigg, Prebendary of Durham, Scholar and Fellow of Pembroke Hall, and Master of Catherine Hall, Cambridge.
NORWICH.	Joseph Hall, Bishop of Exeter.
SALISBURY.	Brian Duppa, of Christ Church, Oxford, Bishop of Chichester, Tutor to the Prince, translated to Winchester.
WORCESTER.	John Prideaux, Rector of Exeter College, Oxford, and Canon of Christ Church, died 1650.
YORK.	John Williams, Bishop of Lincoln, Lord Keeper, died 1650.
CARLISLE.	James Usher, Archbishop of Armagh, ob. 1655.

I returne heerewith to the B. of London, not onlie his coats, but also how all the voide Bish: <sup>1</sup> ar to bee filled in a noate aparte, all w<sup>th</sup> my owen hand; wherein you ar to obserue two things to him; first, that I haue tered somewhat frome my former thoughts, to satisfie the tymes, & yet I hope, that I haue not disserued my selfe, in my elections: secondly, that in filling the Bish: I haue voided 3 Deaneries, to witt Westminster, St. Paules, & Ro-



cester, w<sup>ch</sup> I  
haue not  
thought fitt to  
fill, untill my  
returne, be-  
cause I am not  
yet well re-  
solued in anie  
of them; onlie  
I intend (if the  
tymes will  
suffer it) to  
giue that of  
Westminster<sup>1</sup>  
to him that I  
intend it  
should have  
been B. of  
Chichester.

leave to come home as they desire, w<sup>th</sup> power to leave any of their company behinde them if they shall see cause. The Committee of y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons here, upon pretence that some of their let<sup>ters</sup> have mis-carried, doe now send an expresse messenger w<sup>th</sup> their let<sup>ters</sup> to their Comittees, & I am privatly tould that that messenger carries let<sup>ters</sup> that advertise all their secret designes from y<sup>e</sup> close counsell that have beene held here: & that he sets not forth from hence till too-morrow noone at soonest, soe as this will be w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> before him. I beseech God to send yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> a speedy, safe, & ho<sup>ble</sup> returne, & soe will euer pray,

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

Westminster, 5: 8<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden. 12.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> Sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

In the King's writing:

"Yours apostyled."

5<sup>a</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apostil<sup>d</sup> 12<sup>o</sup>. By S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Balletine.

### *The Queen to Sir E. Nicholas.*

Maistre Nicholas, I send you the names of the Lords that I thinke fit to be send for. You must to aduertice the Bishops to be heer, so hauing no more to say I reste

Your assured frend,

HENRIETTE MARIE R.

Cumberland, huntintong, bath, Northampton, Deeuonchier, bristoll, Newcastle, Pawlett, Couentry, Seymer, Cotintong.<sup>2</sup>

If you wood writt to bridgeman<sup>3</sup> to com and to speake to all is frends in that contray is in Lencachier and so to as manie

<sup>1</sup> Westminster was at present vacant in consequence of John Williams, Bishop of Lincoln, afterwards Archbishop of York, having been suspended by the Court of Star Chamber. John Earl was the next holder of the Deanery.

<sup>2</sup> The preceding Peers may be easily understood, notwithstanding her Majesty's royal grant of new names; and this, which is the most Gallicised, is evidently intended for the Lord Cottington.

<sup>3</sup> This most probably was the famous Sir Orlando Bridgeman, then Master of the Court of Wards, and Attorney to the Prince of Wales; or else one of his brothers, sons of the Bishop, two of whom were married into Lancashire families.

as ar your friends: for mene others I haue spokne my selfe to them already.

“ For Maistre Nicholas.”

Indorsed, “ R. 5<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641, the Queenes let<sup>r</sup> to me.”

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Since my last of y<sup>e</sup> 7th present, I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> comaunds apostiled y<sup>e</sup> 2<sup>nd</sup> of this moneth, & have presented yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> let<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, whereof I have here<sup>wth</sup> sent an aunswere from her Ma<sup>tie</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> came this day to my hands. I have acquainted her Ma<sup>tie</sup> (as you were pleased to comaund) that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wished that some of yo<sup>r</sup> servaunts here would meete to countermyne y<sup>e</sup> plots here, but y<sup>e</sup> Queene saith, that cannot be done in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> absence. I have written let<sup>rs</sup> to all such Lo<sup>ds</sup>, as I have had direc<sup>ons</sup> to send unto, to attend att ye downe sitting of y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>. Touching yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Collar of Rubies, y<sup>e</sup> Queene wishes that nothing be donne in it till y<sup>e</sup> next weeke, when S<sup>r</sup> Job Harby saith he shall receive aunswere to his let<sup>rs</sup> sent into y<sup>e</sup> Low Countries, & in y<sup>e</sup> meane tyme I am privatly to informe myself by what warrant that iewell was put into S<sup>r</sup> Job Harbyes or any other hands.

I confesse not so well, but yet so much as may doe much good, therefore be diligent in it.

You shall doe well to doe so.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will herew<sup>th</sup> receive a let<sup>r</sup> from my Lo: Lieutenant of Ireland.<sup>1</sup> The insolency & disorders of y<sup>e</sup> disbanded souldiers in & neer this towne is soe great, as y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Councell (who met this day at Whitehall) have thought fit that some course should be forthw<sup>th</sup> taken to disperse & send them away, & to that purpose their Lo<sup>pps</sup> humbly desire to know yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure whether a proclamac<sup>on</sup> shal be issued by y<sup>e</sup> L<sup>ds</sup> Com<sup>issioners</sup> (whome yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> did authorise to set forth proclamac<sup>ons</sup> upon certeyne occasions in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> absence) to y<sup>e</sup> effect of y<sup>e</sup> inclosed printed order of y<sup>e</sup> Co<sup>m</sup>ittees of both Houses, (whereof yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> had formerly a copy sent); but this their Lo<sup>pps</sup> intend should be without taking any notice of that order, unlesse yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall

I thinke it most fitt.

by anie means.

<sup>1</sup> The Earl of Leicester—but he never went over to take possession of his Government.



expressly direct that menc'on be made of it ; in this partic'lar their Lo<sup>ps</sup> pray yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> speedy resoluc'on & order.

The principall cause y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> meeting this day in Councell was to consider of some let<sup>rs</sup> from Irland concerning London Derry,<sup>1</sup> whereupon they have sent to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> Justices for further informac'on before they can doe any thing in it. I pray for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> happy dispatch of yo<sup>r</sup> great affaires there, & safe returne for England, as being

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

Westminster 9<sup>o</sup> Octo<sup>b<sup>re</sup></sup> 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden. 13.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I receaved (by young S<sup>r</sup> Rob: Pye<sup>2</sup>) on Satterday last yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds by apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 5<sup>th</sup> p<sup>re</sup>sent, & am much ioyed, that there is hope of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne sooner then is generally reported here, where it is confidently said (amongst y<sup>e</sup> most authenticke intelligencers in Scottish affaires), that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will not be here till Christmas, & I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> they give forth, as if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> were likely to receaue but an ill harvest of all y<sup>e</sup> paynes yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath taken: But I hope y<sup>e</sup> happy conclusion of yo<sup>r</sup> businesses there, shall now very shortly, by good effects, contradict and falsify their stories.

I humbly conceaue that it may be for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> honour & advantage, that y<sup>e</sup> Lo: Mayor of London wayte on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> att yo<sup>r</sup> returne, that you may have thereby opportunity to shew yo<sup>r</sup>self gra'cous to yo<sup>r</sup> people, by speaking a short word now & then to them as you passe amongst them, to cheere & encourage them in their dutifull affecc'ons to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall person ; & therefore I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, that by yo<sup>r</sup> next I may receive yo<sup>r</sup> pleasure, whither I shall intimat to y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mayor, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will ex-

<sup>1</sup> The historians of the day are silent with respect to any circumstances connected with the City, except those already alluded to.

<sup>2</sup> Of Lockhamsted, Bucks, Baronet ; but now extinct.



pect that he & his brethren attend yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> accordingly : And I humbly desire to know to whome I shall addresse let<sup>rs</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, when you shalbe on yo<sup>r</sup> journey hither, for that I beleeeve Mr. Thre<sup>r</sup> will not ride soe fast as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>. The occasion of this dispatch is y<sup>e</sup> inclosed from my Lo<sup>r</sup> Keeper.

I doe lyke  
well, that you  
should doe so.  
To the Duke  
of Riche :  
(Richmond.)

The Queene sent me word even now that she shall not write by this packet. We hope yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> next l<sup>rs</sup> will satisfy yo<sup>r</sup> good servaunts expectac<sup>on</sup> here w<sup>th</sup> the desired newes of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> happy & speedy returne, w<sup>ch</sup> is y<sup>e</sup> earnest prayer of

Yo<sup>r</sup> Sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

Thorpe : Munday 11<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>br</sup>s 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden : 18

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Yesterday I sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> in myne a let<sup>r</sup> from my Lo<sup>d</sup> Keeper by packet : and this is to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> advisem<sup>t</sup>, that y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>dis</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Privy Councell met here this morning, to consider of some Irishe businesses, when they agreed upon a let<sup>r</sup> to be forthw<sup>th</sup> sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> w<sup>th</sup> their Lo<sup>ps</sup> advise, for divers reasons expressed in their said let<sup>r</sup> (a copy whereof for better expedic<sup>on</sup> is here inclosed), to giue order to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Justices in Irland to prorogue y<sup>e</sup> parliam<sup>t</sup> there (w<sup>ch</sup> is to meete y<sup>e</sup> 9<sup>th</sup> of No<sup>ber</sup>) till ffebruary next : the originall under y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>dis</sup> hands shalbe sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> as soone as it can be got signed, if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall approve of their Lo<sup>ps</sup> advise, you may be pleased for better expedic<sup>on</sup> to send one let<sup>r</sup> under yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hand immediatly from Edenburg into Irland by an expresse messenger to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>dis</sup> Justices, forthw<sup>th</sup> to set forth a proclamac<sup>on</sup> to that purpose : & another by the way of West Chester or thereabouts, least y<sup>e</sup> former should miscarry or receave delay. The Lo<sup>dis</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Privy Councell here have also this day giuen order to the Justices of Peace (in & neere London) to take a course, that a more effectuall and strict order be taken for present sending away all y<sup>e</sup> disbanded souldiers (w<sup>ch</sup> still pester this city) ; & for shutting up of all houses infected, for that y<sup>e</sup> sicknes disperseth very much & dangerously hereabouts.

I have done  
this alreddie.

There was this day nothing donne by the Comittees of either House worthy yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> notice. There is a strong report (spred by persons of best credditt here for intelligence & knowledge of y<sup>e</sup> proceedings in Scotl :) that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> will not be here these 2 moneths, but what ground they have for it, I cannot learne.

I would not have that intention hindered, Cambridge would be best.

For this, I would haue you consult with the Keeper & others of my seruants what to doe in it, leaving it to your discretions to doe as you shall see cause, but I would haue the adjournment furthered by anie means.

As I haue bene sufficientlie slandered heere, in some respects, so there also I heere that I haue not mist those good offices, though in an other kynde, as being resolved, at my retorne, to alter the forme of the Church government in England to this heere: therefor I com<sup>mand</sup> and you to assure all my seruants there that I am constant for the Doctrine & Discipline of

There is a whispering here, as if yo<sup>r</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> (when it meetes) would adiourne for some moneths, or to some other place: I tould my Lo: Keeper this day that if y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>arliament</sup> should adiourne to a further day, (thoughe but for a moneth or two) before they passed y<sup>e</sup> Bill of Tonnage & Poundage to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>, (the same being graunted only to y<sup>e</sup> first of Decem: next,) it would put yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to a great streight for want of monny to uphold yo<sup>r</sup> house, & for divers other occasions: and I humbly offer it to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> considerac'on, whether it may not be fitt for you to let my Lo: Keeper, & some other of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> best affected servaunts of either House of P<sup>arliament</sup> know, what you would have them to insist upon in case there should be any moc'on for a further adiournem<sup>t</sup>, before yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne, by reason of y<sup>e</sup> sicknes, w<sup>ch</sup> growes soe rife & dangerous, as will make such a moc'on willingly hearkened unto. My humble & earnest prayers shalbe still for a prosperous dispatch of yo<sup>r</sup> affaires there, & for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> speedy & safe returne, there being noe man so much obliged to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup> grac'ous favour, as

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

Westminster, 12<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden: 18:

Superscribed "for yo<sup>r</sup> Sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

Written by the King; "Yours apostyled."

Written on the back by Sir E. N.: "Sent by Mr. Mungo Murrey, and rec<sup>d</sup> back by <sup>the</sup> post boy of Barbican the 23<sup>th</sup> at West<sup>r</sup> at 9 at nyg<sup>ht</sup>. His Ma<sup>ties</sup> is constant in y<sup>e</sup> doctrine & discipline of y<sup>e</sup> Church."

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>ties</sup>,

I receaved yesterday yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 9<sup>th</sup> p<sup>re</sup>sented by Mr. Barkley, & have (according to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com<sup>mand</sup>) addressed this



packet to y<sup>e</sup> Duke of Richmond, & shall soe contynue my addresses, untill I shall understand of Mr. Th'ers returne to Court. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> com'aunds me to advise w<sup>th</sup> some of yo<sup>r</sup> best servants here, how to p<sup>e</sup>vent the intenc'ons of some here to presse yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> at y<sup>e</sup> next meeting in P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> like Act touching y<sup>e</sup> elecc'on of officers & councellors here, as you have graunted in Scotland. I (w<sup>th</sup> all humility) assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>, that I conceive it no lesse difficult for me (now in yo<sup>r</sup> absence when y<sup>e</sup> awe of the Parliam<sup>t</sup> is upon all in generall) to discern who are yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>'s best servants here, then it is almost impossible for such yo<sup>r</sup> servants, to know what to doe or advise, to p<sup>e</sup>vent soe plausible a designe, w<sup>ch</sup> in my poor opinion nothing can soe well divert, as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>'s speedy returne: but of this intend forthw<sup>th</sup> to speake w<sup>th</sup> the Queene.

This inclosed is y<sup>e</sup> let<sup>r</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>'s Privy Counsell, whereof in my last by Mr. Mungo Murrey<sup>1</sup> I sent a copy: their Lo<sup>ps</sup>, as soon as they rose from Councell, (& before y<sup>e</sup> let<sup>r</sup> was drawne) dispersed themselves to their severall homes in y<sup>e</sup> country, w<sup>ch</sup> is y<sup>e</sup> cause (as I am tould), that it was this day before it was brought signed to me for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>. The more secrecy and expedic'on there is used in dispatch of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>'s let<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> Justices (if you shall approve of their Lo<sup>ps</sup>'s advise) y<sup>e</sup> better, & that made me p<sup>e</sup>sume to hasten to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> y<sup>e</sup> copy, before y<sup>e</sup> let<sup>r</sup> itself was signed. I finde that y<sup>e</sup> Com'tees of both Houses (by reason of y<sup>e</sup> contynuaunce of y<sup>e</sup> sicknes) incline to be very earnest, when y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> meets next, to perswade a further adiournem<sup>t</sup> for a tyme, but Mr. Pym, & those of his party, will not heare that y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> shalbe held any where but in London or Westminster: I hope yo<sup>r</sup>

the Church of England as it was established by Queene Elis. & my Father, & resolves, (by the grace of God) to live & dey in the maintenance of it.

If your owen observation doe not sufficiently tell you, lett my Wyfes direction guide you.

It will be well done.

I have given sufficient order in all this alreddy.

<sup>1</sup> Murrey (Mungo) was a confidential servant and gentleman of the bed-chamber to the King, who often entrusted him with private correspondence, an anecdote respecting which deserves notice. In February 1646, whilst the King was in the power of the English Commissioners at Newcastle, Murrey, having obtained leave of absence on pretence of visiting Scotland, was admitted to his Majesty's presence before witnesses for the purpose of kissing his hand. The Commissioners, however, were so suspicious and watchful, that they observed something put into his hand by the King; and having followed him, when out of the presence, they searched him, and found a letter in cypher directed to Montreuil the French agent. The letter was immediately sent up to the Parliament, and Murrey committed to prison, but admitted to bail after two days confinement.



I haue syned  
it, & therefor  
see that it be  
imediatic sent  
ouer, for tell  
my Wyfe that  
I shall loose  
no tyme in  
sending to Sr  
Will: Boswell  
as she desyres.

I haue told  
you in my for-  
mer Dis-  
patches.  
I shall doe  
this.

Ma<sup>tie</sup> (if you shall stay there past y<sup>e</sup> 18th present) will send some direcc'ons to yo<sup>r</sup> seruaunts here how to apply their endeavours in P<sup>r</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>, in case there shalbe any debate touching an adiournem<sup>t</sup>.

I have herew<sup>th</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> Queenes com'aund sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> draught of a warrant for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hand for y<sup>e</sup> delivery of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Collar of Rubies to S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Boswell fo<sup>r</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> use: I tould S<sup>r</sup> Job Harby, that S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> was to kepe it till yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> should send for it. The Queene tould me yesterday, that she would write to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to be pleased w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> owne hand to give S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Boswell order what to doe w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> said Collar, for it is apparent, that these merchaunts dare not have a hand in the engaging of it, but they say they will take order that, upon receipt of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> warraunt, it shalbe safely delivered accordingly.

If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall stay long from hence<sup>2</sup>, I humbly pray yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wilbe pleased to let me understand w<sup>h</sup> whome you would have me to advise concerning yo<sup>r</sup> affaires here, & that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> would vouchsafe to let them know, how farre yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> would have them to confide in me in any yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> services, that I may have y<sup>e</sup> more credit w<sup>th</sup> them, when I shall have occasion to attend them, & be y<sup>e</sup> better able to annswere yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> expectac'on. I haue not bene att Oatlands since Mr. Berkley came, but am this morning going to wayte on y<sup>e</sup> Queene, to know if her Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath any com'aunds for

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & obedient seruaunt,

Thorpe; 15 8<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden: 20:

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>." By the King: "Yours apostyled."

15<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost: 20. R. 25<sup>o</sup> at 9. at night.

<sup>1</sup> Boswell seems to have been an old confidential servant of the King, who mentions him as his agent in 1634, in a letter to the Queen of Bohemia. Vide Bromley's Letters, p. 67. He was also in the confidence of the Palatine Princes about the same time. Vide Bromley, p. 79. He was at this period, the British Resident at the Hague, but afterwards fell into disgrace, as appears by a subsequent letter of the Queen of Bohemia.

<sup>2</sup> On this day the King wrote a letter to the Lord Keeper, desiring him to inform the Parliament that he was unavoidably detained, but that he would make all diligence to return. This was read to the Lords on the 26th. Vide Parliamentary Debates.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> sent by Sr W<sup>m</sup> Ballatine<sup>1</sup> were delivered here y<sup>e</sup> 18<sup>th</sup> of this moneth by 4 in y<sup>e</sup> afternoone.

Upon let<sup>rs</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> Englishe Com<sup>it</sup>tees now in Scotl: to y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>it</sup>tee here, relating y<sup>e</sup> newes of Mar: Hamiltons, the Ea: of Arguiles, and Ea: of Lannericks abandoning y<sup>e</sup> Court & Parliam<sup>t</sup> there,<sup>2</sup> our Com<sup>it</sup>tee here was yesterday in a great fright, & (declaring that they conceived the same to be a plot of y<sup>e</sup> Papists there, & of some Lo<sup>lds</sup> & others here,) sent p<sup>re</sup>sent order to y<sup>e</sup> Lo; Mayor &c. to dubble y<sup>e</sup> gardes & watches of this Citty & Suborbs, & it is thought that this busines will this day in Parliament be declared to be a greater plot against the Kingdomes and Parliam<sup>t</sup> in Eng: & Scotl: then hath bene discovered at all. There have bene some well-affected parliam<sup>t</sup>-men here w<sup>th</sup> me this morning to know whether I had any relac<sup>on</sup> of that busines, but finding I had none, but only a few words from Mr. Sec<sup>re</sup>ie Vane, w<sup>ch</sup> I shewed to them, they seemed much troubled, as not knowing what to say to it: I hasten this of purpose to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> notice here-of, & to pray yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, that there may be sent hither w<sup>th</sup> all

<sup>1</sup> Afterwards Lord Ballenden, the first Peer of that name. In 1640 he appears, by Bromley's Royal Letters, pp. 115, 116, to have been attached as Minister at the Palatine Court. He was much in the confidence of all the branches of the Royal Family; and obtained the peerage from Charles the Second for his very useful and active services during the Usurpation.

<sup>2</sup> This is the affair which, in the history of that time, went by the name of "The Incident." Lord Lanerick's relation of it may be seen in Hardwicke's State Papers, vol. ii., p. 299, wherein he asserts that there was a plan laid, by the opposite party, to cut the throats of himself and the two Lords mentioned in this letter; and he adds, that their "abandoning the Court and Parliament" was literally nothing more than quitting Edinburgh in order to save their lives.

There is an hiatus in the Hardwicke Papers from 1641 to 1685. His Lordship, in a note on Lord Lanerick's relation, laments that very little is known respecting a dark affair "which nobody understood at the time," particularly as the Hamilton Collection seems very defective at that period. These present Letters, however, may avail the future historian in clearing up difficulties and in prosecuting research.

The affair is particularly noticed in Pym's Report of the Committees, on the re-opening of Parliament, which may be referred to in vol. x. of the Parliamentary History, page 5.

I was the lesse carfull to send a perfect relation of this business, because I sent one of whose discretion & knowledg I was & am so confident, that I thought his discourse of the business as having bene an ey witness would have satisfied more then anie written relation, therefore I desyre you to call on him in my name to satisfie well affected persons, of the treuth of that w<sup>ch</sup> passed while he was heere; &, for what hath passed since, I have directed the D: of Rich: to give you such an account as there is.



It is now under examination, w<sup>ch</sup> as soone as it (is) ended you shall be sure to haue.

possible dilligence a full & p<sup>fect</sup> relac'on of y<sup>e</sup> present disturbance there, & the cause & grounds thereof, & what upon exa'iac'on it appeares to that parliam<sup>t</sup> to be: all w<sup>ch</sup>, I humbly wishe may be certefyed hither in as authentique a way,<sup>1</sup> & from as vnsuspected a hand as may be.

If Mr. Secr<sup>ie</sup> Vane had written to me, or any of his friends here, a true narrac'on of that busines, it would have given much satisfac'on here, and stopped the causles alarmes that are taken vpon y<sup>e</sup> noyse of it, that busines being now by y<sup>e</sup> relac'on of diuerse Scots-men here made much worse, then I beleeeve it will prooue in y<sup>e</sup> end.

The Queene tould me yesterday that she will wryte to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> this night or too morrow, but I thought it not fitt to deferre this packet now for her Ma<sup>ties</sup> let<sup>r</sup>, which shalbe hastened away as soone as I shall receave it. The inclosed from S<sup>r</sup> Art: Hopton,<sup>2</sup> I receaved from my Lo: Cottington w<sup>th</sup> direcc'on to send it to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will I hope pardon this hasty expression of the humble diligence of

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

As I was closing this, I receaved for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> this le<sup>tr</sup> from my Lo: Marshall.

Written by the King :

"Those of yours, w<sup>th</sup> I retorne not to you apostyled, I alwais burne."

Westminster, 20: 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden. 24.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

20, 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost. 24<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup>.

R. 30 at 7 at night at Thorpe. Rec. of Capt. Smith.

<sup>1</sup> The Parliament met this day ; the first time after the recess.

<sup>2</sup> He was uncle to Sir Ralph Hopton, the famous Royalist General ; and, when the latter was created Lord Hopton, Sir Arthur was named heir in remainder, in default of issue male ; but dying before his nephew, he never enjoyed those honours. He was of a Somersetshire family, the Hoptons of Wytham.



*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I hope my le<sup>t</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> I hastily wrote to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> yesterday by packet, wilbe come to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hands before this, & that wee shall speedily receaue a relac'on of this busines concerning the Marquis & y<sup>e</sup> rest, w<sup>ch</sup> all y<sup>r</sup> servaunts here call for very earnestly.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> le<sup>t</sup> to my Lo: Keeper was carefully delivered to his owne hands yesterday before y<sup>e</sup> sitting of y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>, but his Lo<sup>pp</sup> tells me, that y<sup>e</sup> effect of it was knowne here some dayes before he receaved it: w<sup>ch</sup> is an infinite p<sup>r</sup>judice to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> affaires here; such anticipation of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> direcc'ons in businesses of importance renders y<sup>e</sup> same impossible, or extreame difficult, to be effected: And I observe that y<sup>e</sup> perfect intelligence, that is here of all yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> resoluc'ons & proceedings there, puts lief and spiritt into some here, who w<sup>th</sup>out that encouragem<sup>t</sup> & light, would (I beleeve) pay more reverence to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> councells and acc'ons.

When yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath made stay y<sup>e</sup> disbanding of 5 companies remayning in Barwick,<sup>1</sup> it is here thought fit not to make any order to y<sup>e</sup> contrary, but it is declared (as I heare) that from y<sup>e</sup> 15th of this moneth (w<sup>ch</sup> was y<sup>e</sup> tyme appoynted by y<sup>e</sup> Houses for disbanding all that garrison) those companies shall have no further pay from y<sup>e</sup> Comonwealth as it is called, and concerning this, there is to be speedily a conference w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>dds</sup>, w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> issue whereof I shall acquaint yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by my next.

Sir Jo. Berkley was yesterday com'itted to y<sup>e</sup> Tower, & Capt. O'Neale to y<sup>e</sup> Gatehouse by y<sup>e</sup> House of Co'mons vpon y<sup>e</sup> old business.<sup>2</sup> Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will herew<sup>th</sup> receave a copy of y<sup>e</sup> le<sup>t</sup> sent hither by y<sup>e</sup> Com'ittees in Scotland, and of y<sup>e</sup> order made there-upon y<sup>e</sup> day before y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>r</sup>liam<sup>t</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> Com'ittees here. I have p<sup>r</sup>esented yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> le<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> B<sup>pp</sup> of London, who hath promised to use all possible expedic'on in p<sup>r</sup>formaunce of y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> comaunds therein.

<sup>1</sup> The jealousy of the Parliament about Berwick was so very great, that when the Scottish Army upon their return in August, wished to march through that garrison, a wooden bridge was actually ordered to be built over the Tweed, at some distance from the town.

<sup>2</sup> It was also ordered, the Lords should be desired to examine those gentlemen respecting the charges brought against them.

Of this I much wonder, for on my credit I acquainted nobodie with the contents thereof, & am verie confident that none heere knew whether I writt to him or not: therefore I thinke it fit that you should try as much as may be how this is come, & whether it be an intelligence or conjectur.

Before this, that is satisfied.

I remember that I had some discourse w<sup>th</sup> the Eng: Par: men about Prorogation, but I'm confident that it was after my Lett: was written, if it were serious, all others wer in consequence of the Plague at randome.

For diversion  
of this & other  
mischeefes, I  
would ye  
should put  
Bristo in  
mynde to re-  
new that dis-  
pute berwixt  
the two  
Houses, con-  
cerning the  
Parlament  
Protestation  
w<sup>ch</sup> South-  
ampton was so  
fearse upon.

In this, I hope,  
this dispatche  
will satisfie  
your longins,  
but I belive,  
not some of  
your expecta-  
tions.

The Lo<sup>ds</sup> Commissioners have given order for p<sup>r</sup>paring a Proclamac<sup>o</sup>n for p<sup>r</sup>sent dispersing & sending away of y<sup>e</sup> disbanded souldiers,<sup>1</sup> as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> directed by yo<sup>r</sup> apostile of the 13<sup>th</sup> of this moneth. My Lo: Keeper delivered me this morning to be sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> this paper, w<sup>ch</sup> was p<sup>r</sup>esented to his Lo<sup>p</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> nature of a protestac<sup>o</sup>n by y<sup>e</sup> persons the reinvdernamed: his Lo<sup>pp</sup> tells me he hath formerly acquainted yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> w<sup>th</sup> that busines. My Lo of Bristoll<sup>2</sup> tould me this day, that he heares from severall hands that there is an intenc<sup>o</sup>n to question his Lo<sup>p</sup>, & his sonne y<sup>e</sup> Lo Digby, but he knowes not for what, & he tells me that nothing shall deterre him from p<sup>r</sup>formaunce of his duty. This day there was twice read in y<sup>e</sup> Co'mons House a Bill for taking away the Votes of B<sup>pps</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> Vpper House, and that Bill is comitted, and it is said it will passe both Houses w<sup>th</sup>in two dayes. The disobedience against y<sup>e</sup> order of y<sup>e</sup> House of Co'mons concerning innovac<sup>o</sup>ns was this day questioned in that House, & after a long debate, there was no way found or resolved on, to punishe those that disobeyed y<sup>e</sup> same, for that that order was conceived by most in y<sup>e</sup> House not to be iustifyable by lawe, & therefore not binding.<sup>3</sup>

I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> some notes of y<sup>e</sup> effect of y<sup>e</sup> conference this day betweene y<sup>e</sup> 2 Houses. I beseech God amongst those great distracc<sup>o</sup>ns to p<sup>r</sup>serve y<sup>e</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> in safety: & I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> to give me leave once more to put you in minde to hasten hither a true relac<sup>o</sup>n of y<sup>e</sup> vnhappy interrupc<sup>o</sup>n of yo<sup>r</sup> affaires there, for I find, that yo<sup>r</sup> servaunts here are much disheartened that they are kept soe long in darknes in a busines soe highly importing yo<sup>r</sup> hon<sup>r</sup>, & yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>'s owne person. I expected a let<sup>r</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> Queene for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> this day, but I beleeve her Ma<sup>ty</sup> pu<sup>r</sup>poses

<sup>1</sup> May, in his History of the Parliament, says that both the armies, English and Scotch, "quietly departed, conducted to their owne homes by order from Justices of Peace through the several counties."

<sup>2</sup> The Earl of Bristol had mingled much in party politics previous to this date. He had been Ambassador to Spain in proposing Charles's marriage with the Infanta; and afterwards impeached in Parliament respecting the treaty and its failure; but he had such influence with the House of Commons as to bring about a counter impeachment against the Duke of Buckingham. This may account for his hostility to Charles's friend, Lord Strafford, though the prospect of rebellion now induced him to support the Royal Cause. Vide Bulstrode, page 14.

<sup>3</sup> None of these circumstances are stated in the Parliamentary History; yet they are important with respect to the annals of those times.



to sent her let<sup>rs</sup> by an expresse ; for that there are none come from her Ma<sup>tie</sup> as yet to be conveyed by

Y<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most

obedient servaunt,

Westminster, 21<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden: 28:

“ For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

“ Yours apostyled.”

Apost: 28 8<sup>bris</sup>,—R. 1<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup>, at 5 at night, by Mr. Wm. Murray.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I receaved Saterdag night last yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 18<sup>th</sup> p<sup>esent</sup>, & have safely delivered yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene & my Lo : Keeper : the messenger that was sent w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> said l<sup>ter</sup>, (bruysing himself w<sup>th</sup> a fall from his horse soe as he was not able to ride) sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to me single by y<sup>e</sup> ordinary post, w<sup>ch</sup> made me suspect that it had bene intercepted, but it came very safe. I have alreddy made known to diverse Lo<sup>lds</sup> & others yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pious resoluc<sup>on</sup> to mainteyne constantly y<sup>e</sup> doctrine & discypline of y<sup>e</sup> Church of England, & have by their advise delivered extracts (of what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath written) to diverse of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> servaunts, that yo<sup>r</sup> piety therein may be vnderstood by yo<sup>r</sup> good people here.

The Queene sent S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Ballatine from hence on Friday last, & he going im<sup>edi</sup>atly from Oatlands w<sup>th</sup>out calling here, I lost y<sup>e</sup> opportunity of sending by him, but I p<sup>ep</sup>ared my l<sup>ter</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 23<sup>th</sup> reddey for him, w<sup>ch</sup> I have now sent by this gent. Mr. Tho. Elliot.

Wee here begin to app<sup>h</sup>end that in y<sup>e</sup> great troubles there, some of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> packets may miscarry, & therefore I held it my duty to let yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> vnderstand, that since myne of y<sup>e</sup> 12<sup>th</sup> (w<sup>ch</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath return<sup>d</sup>) I have sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> let<sup>rs</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 15<sup>th</sup> & 18<sup>th</sup>, both w<sup>ch</sup> were addressed in packets to y<sup>e</sup> D. of Richmond, & afterwards 2 other packets of y<sup>e</sup> 20<sup>th</sup> & 21<sup>th</sup> directed to Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er.

I haue receaved them all

& thease also.

As concerning y<sup>e</sup> adiournem<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> here, my Lo : Keeper tells me, that he hath, by his l<sup>ter</sup> sent in myne of y<sup>e</sup> 21<sup>th</sup> fully acquainted yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> how y<sup>e</sup> expectac<sup>on</sup> was here frustrated. The

It is trew.



Bid my servants make as much vse of this objection as may bee.

Vpper House did Satterday last reade y<sup>e</sup> Bill transmitted to them by y<sup>e</sup> Comons, for taking away y<sup>e</sup> votes of B<sup>p</sup>s, & intend (as I heare) to speede it as fast as may be, notw<sup>th</sup>standing it is said to be against y<sup>e</sup> auntient order of P<sup>r</sup>liam<sup>t</sup> to bring in a Bill againe the same Sessions, that it was reiected.<sup>1</sup> Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> best servaunts here remayne still in greate payne, that in all this tyme they have not receaved any p<sup>e</sup>fect relac<sup>o</sup>n of y<sup>e</sup> late disorders at Edinb: concerning Mar: Hamilton & y<sup>e</sup> rest, & they are the more impatient, in regarde they heare that some of y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>o</sup>ns house have coppinges of y<sup>e</sup> examinac<sup>o</sup>ns taken in that busines, & other aduertisem<sup>ts</sup> touching y<sup>e</sup> same. I beseech God to send yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> forth of that laberinth of troubles there, & a safe & ho<sup>bl</sup>e returne for Engl: w<sup>ch</sup> willbe most welcome to all honnest men here, and to none more then to

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 25<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden. 30.

Written by the King:

"I hope this ill newes of Ireland<sup>2</sup> may hinder some of theas follies in England."

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

25<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost. 30 8<sup>bris</sup>.

Rec. 4<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> morning.

<sup>1</sup> The Lords, however, did not proceed so far, until, on the 22d of October, the House of Commons sent up Mr. Holles "to put them in mind of their complaint exhibited against the thirteen Bishops who made the last new Canons, and to pray a speedy proceeding therein."

<sup>2</sup> This is a verification of the old proverb, that "Ill news travels fast"; for the Irish Rebellion broke out on the 25th of October, and the King's memorandum, or apostyle, is dated the 30th. The return of the letter to Sir Edward, on the 4th of November, is a further proof of the rapidity of travelling at that period between Edinburgh and London.

The King's opinion respecting the interference of Parliament in Irish affairs, may be drawn from an anecdote preserved in an old tract in the British Museum; when in conversation with the Earl of Pembroke, in March 1641, His Majesty said, "The businesse of Ireland will never be done in the way that you are in; four hundred will never do that work; it must be put in the hands of one. If I were trusted with it, I would pawn my head to end that work. And though I am a beggar myself, yet (speaking with a strong asseveration) I can find moneye for that."

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> 25th of this p<sup>e</sup>sent 2. let<sup>rs</sup> by Mr. Elliot,<sup>1</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> same night I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 20<sup>th</sup>, and p<sup>e</sup>sently sent away yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, & delivered that to my Lo: Keeper. I shall forthw<sup>th</sup> deliver yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> warr<sup>t</sup> to S<sup>r</sup> Job Harby, & hasten y<sup>e</sup> dispatch of that busines.

I have herein sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a copy of an order made by the Peers concerning y<sup>e</sup> jurisdic<sup>n</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Archb<sup>p</sup>. of Cant. In this packet there is sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by my Lo<sup>d</sup>. of London severall Bills for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> signature for y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>p</sup>s, w<sup>th</sup> a l<sup>tr</sup> from his Lo<sup>p</sup> touching that busines.

Hen. Vane  
will returne all  
those syned by  
mee w<sup>th</sup> this  
Packe to my  
L: of Lon:

There is still kept here a strict garde & watch about y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> houses of 100. of y<sup>e</sup> trayned bands, besides diverse other watchmen: y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>e</sup>tence is an app<sup>e</sup>hension of some conspiracy of y<sup>e</sup> Papists against y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> here, answerable to that against some Lo<sup>d</sup>s in Scotl: & y<sup>e</sup> alarme of popishe plots amuse and fright y<sup>e</sup> people here, more then any thing, & therefore that is y<sup>e</sup> drum that is soe frequently beaten uppon all occasions; & y<sup>e</sup> noyse of an intenc<sup>n</sup> to introduce Popery was that w<sup>ch</sup> first brought into dislike w<sup>th</sup> the people y<sup>e</sup> governement both of y<sup>e</sup> Church and Comonwealth. I have not bene sparing to make knowne yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pious resoluc<sup>n</sup> to mainteyne y<sup>e</sup> doctrine & disciplyne of the Church of Engl: w<sup>ch</sup> I perceave gives very good satisfac<sup>n</sup>.

My Lo: Keeper having occasion to wayte on y<sup>e</sup> Queene this day, did yesterday move y<sup>e</sup> House for leave, & tould their Lo<sup>p</sup>s that my Lo: Bankes had a co<sup>m</sup>misson dormant to be Speaker in his absence, but y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>is</sup> said they would chuse their owne Speaker, & soe named y<sup>e</sup> Lo. P. Seale,<sup>2</sup> whereupon my Lo. Keeper said he would (to avoide all question) rather stay, but y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>is</sup> pressed him not to forbear his journey, least y<sup>e</sup> Queene might take it ill, & soe

I comand you  
to speake with  
the Keeper &  
my L: Bankes  
to see if it can  
bee warranted  
by anie reule  
or president  
that the Vpper  
House may

<sup>1</sup> This is the same person to whom, in 1642, the Lord Keeper Lyttelton delivered the Great Seal, when the King sent him for it. Lyttelton, terrified at what he had done, fled immediately afterwards to join the King at York. May states him to have been "a young gentleman, and Groom of the Privy Chamber to his Majesty.

<sup>2</sup> Henry Earl of Manchester.



chuse there  
Speaker.

his Lo<sup>p</sup> goes this day to Oatlands, & y<sup>e</sup> Lo. P. Seale is to be Speaker in his absence.

You shall doe  
well to put the  
B. of Lincolne  
in mynde con-  
cerning the  
pardon I  
though fitt  
those 13 Bps.  
should haue  
for a premu-  
nure, that you  
may giue order  
to the Atur:  
for it in my  
name if he  
shall thinke it  
fitt.

Judge Berkley<sup>1</sup> was yesterday att y<sup>e</sup> bar in y<sup>e</sup> Vpper House, & there heard his charge read, to w<sup>ch</sup> he pleaded not guilty, & made a prudent answere; whereupon tyme is given him till Tuesday next to produce witnesses concerning soe much of his charge as relates to misdemeanors. The House of Com'ons did yesterday by vote declare, that y<sup>e</sup> 13 Bishops,<sup>2</sup> (who are questioned for making y<sup>e</sup> new cannons,) ought not to haue vote in y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> House in any busines: & they are this day to have a conference w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> thereupon, & also touching y<sup>e</sup> excluding of all y<sup>e</sup> B<sup>ps</sup> from voting in y<sup>e</sup> Bill (w<sup>ch</sup> is passed y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House) to take away totally ye B<sup>ps</sup> votes.<sup>3</sup> All yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> best servaunts here pray for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> speedy & happy dispatch of affaires there, conceaving yo<sup>r</sup> p<sup>s</sup>ence would be of very much advantage to yo<sup>r</sup> services here, & this is also y<sup>e</sup> earnest prayer of

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

Westminster, 27<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden: 2: No:

By the King:

"I co'mande you to direct my L: Keeper in my name to issew out a Proclamation co'manding all Parlament Men to attend on the Parlament.

"Thanke Southampton in my name, for stopping the Bill against the Bishops: &, that at my co'ming, I will doe it myselfe."

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

27 8<sup>bris</sup> Apost. 2<sup>o</sup>. 9<sup>bris</sup>.—R. 6<sup>o</sup> 9<sup>bris</sup> 1641 at 6. at night. by Mr. Bruncker.

<sup>1</sup> He was Justice of the King's Bench; was committed to the Tower by the Lords on a charge of high treason, and afterwards fined in the sum of £20,000, besides being declared incapable of all further administration of justice.

<sup>2</sup> These were Walter Carle, Bishop of Winchester; Robert Wright, B. Coventry and Lichfield; Godfrey Goodman, B. Gloucester; Joseph Hall, B. Exeter; John Owen, B. St. Asaph; William Piers, B. Bath and Wells; George Cook, B. Hereford; Matthew Wren, B. Ely; William Roberts, B. Bangor; Robert Skinner, B. Bristol; John Warner, B. Rochester; John Towers, B. Peterborough; Morgan Owen, B. Landaff.

<sup>3</sup> The Bill went further than Sir Edward reports, for it included "Bishops and other persons in holy orders." It was to shut them not only out of Parliament, but also from the Privy Council, the Commission of the Peace, "or execute any temporal authority, by virtue of any commission."

Even the vulgar wit of the day was brought forward in contempt of the



*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

My last to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> was of y<sup>e</sup> 27<sup>th</sup> p<sup>re</sup>sent, w<sup>ch</sup> I sent by packet addressed to Mr. Th<sup>er</sup>er. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> long absence encourages some to talke in Parliam<sup>t</sup> of highe matters. It was yesterday in debate in y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>ons</sup> House, that y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> may have the approbation of all officers, councellors, amb<sup>d</sup>dors, and ministers, and yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> nominac<sup>on</sup>.<sup>1</sup> The reasons alleaged for it were, first that it had bene soe heretofore, & soe is conceaved to be an auntient right: 2<sup>ly</sup> that y<sup>e</sup> ill effects that hath bene by y<sup>e</sup> councells & acc<sup>ons</sup> of olde officers, councellors, &c. & y<sup>e</sup> seares that there may be y<sup>e</sup> like by the new; will make all that hath bene hitherto donne nothing, if this may not be graunted to secure them, whereby the kingdome may be as well p<sup>re</sup>served as purged. 3<sup>ly</sup> that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> did heare partic<sup>lar</sup> & privat mens advise in y<sup>e</sup> choyce of yo<sup>r</sup> offi<sup>rs</sup>, councellors, &c. & therefore it can be noe derogac<sup>on</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to take therein y<sup>e</sup> advise of y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>li</sup>ament. Some said that untill such things as these shalbe granted they cannot w<sup>th</sup> a good consyence supply yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> necessities: after a long debate this busines was at length referred to a Select Com<sup>itte</sup>e to p<sup>re</sup>pare forthw<sup>th</sup> heads for a pet<sup>on</sup> to be p<sup>re</sup>sented to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to receave the P<sup>li</sup>am<sup>ts</sup> approbation of such officers, councellors, &c. as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall choose, for better p<sup>re</sup>ven<sup>on</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> great & many mischeifs that may befall y<sup>e</sup> Comonwealth by y<sup>e</sup> choyce of ill councellors, officers, amb<sup>d</sup>dors & ministers of state, w<sup>ch</sup> pet<sup>on</sup> is to be

Church; and a pamphlet was industriously disseminated, under the title of, "Lord Bishops none of the Lord's Bishops."

<sup>1</sup> A most extraordinary speech was made on this occasion by "Master Smith, of the Inner Temple," which he has done posterity the favour to publish. In one part he observes: "Prerogative and Liberty are both necessary to this kingdom; and, like the sun and moon, give a lustre to this benighted nation, so long as they walk at equal distances; but when one of them shall venture into the other's orb, like those planets in conjunction, they then cause a deeper eclipse." He then concludes a string of uncouth metaphors by assuring the House that it was necessary "so to provide that the Mæcenæ's of the times may not, like great jacks in a pool, devour their inferiors, and make poverty a pavement for themselves to trample on."

I co'mande  
you to doe it  
in my name,  
telling them  
that I will doe  
it my selfe at  
my returne.

On the con-  
traire I com-  
mand you to  
take order  
that these  
Billes bee ex-  
pedited that  
they may with  
all possible  
diligence at-  
tend the Par-  
lement.

ripened w<sup>th</sup> all speede & to be p<sup>e</sup>sented to y<sup>e</sup> House : there appeared soe many in y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House against this busines, that some conceave that there wilbe noe further proceeding in it, but I doubt it : howsoever I may not forbear to let yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> know, that the Lo: flalkland, S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Strangwishe,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Waller, Mr. Ed. Hide, & Mr. Holborne, & diverse others stood as Champions in maynten'ce of yo<sup>r</sup> Prerogative, and shewed for it unaunswerable reason & undenyable p<sup>e</sup>sedents, whereof yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall doe well to take some notice (as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall thinke best) for their encouragm<sup>t</sup>.

The Com'ons House having gotten notice of y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>pp</sup><sup>s</sup> that are now making, some did mervale that any man should move yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> for making of B<sup>pp</sup> in these tymes, when it is well knowne how great complaints are against them in generall, & some would have had a pet<sup>on</sup> or message to be sent to pray yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to be pleased to stay y<sup>e</sup> constituting of any more B<sup>pp</sup> till ye busines concerning Episcopacy shalbe determynd : but this moc'on was not resented in y<sup>e</sup> House, & soe y<sup>e</sup> discourse thereof fell.<sup>2</sup>

There was yesterday a great debate in y<sup>e</sup> Upper House about y<sup>e</sup> Bill for taking away y<sup>e</sup> B<sup>pp</sup> votes, & it was very doubtfull, after a long dispute, w<sup>ch</sup> side was likeliest to carry itt, but att length both sides agreed to put off y<sup>e</sup> further debate thereof till y<sup>e</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> of Nov<sup>r</sup> next, before w<sup>ch</sup> tyme it wilbe tryed, of what vallidity y<sup>e</sup> impeachm<sup>t</sup> against y<sup>e</sup> 13 B<sup>pp</sup> will proove to be.

The considerac'on of these partic'lar passages may be sufficyent

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Strangeways, knt. of Melbury Sampford, Dorsetshire.

<sup>2</sup> The superstitious feeling respecting political events at that period is curiously exemplified by a contemporary Writer, speaking of the occurrences immediately after Charles's return :

"It happened one day, as some of the ruder sort of citizens came by Whitehall, one busie citizen must needs cry, 'No Bishops !' Some of the gentlemen issued out of Whitehall, either to correct the sauciness of the fool in words, if they would serve, else, it seemes, with blowes ; what passed on either side in words none but themselves knew ; the citizen, being more tongue than souldier, was wounded, and I have heard dyed of his wounds receaved at that tyme ; it hath been affirmed by very many, that in or near unto that place where this fellow was hurt and wounded, the late King's head was cut off, the Scaffold standing just over that place."

<sup>3</sup> The Parliamentary History asserts that the motion for a conference with the Lords, for the purpose of drawing up a petition on this subject, was carried, on a division, by 71 to 53.



to move yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to hasten yo<sup>r</sup> returne, & I shall take y<sup>e</sup> boldnes to ad to it one more, w<sup>ch</sup> I observed at y<sup>e</sup> Councell Borde, when Marq: Hertford<sup>1</sup> moved y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>dis</sup> (upon occasion of these words in Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>ers let<sup>tr</sup> to me, viz. that he did hope y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> of Engl would interpose & hasten yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne) to consider whether it might not be fit to move y<sup>e</sup> P<sup>liam</sup><sup>t</sup> here to that purpose; most of y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>dis</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Councelle declyned it, in regarde y<sup>e</sup> le<sup>r</sup> was not written to y<sup>e</sup> Boorde but to me, & that Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er left it to my choyce whether to acquaint them w<sup>th</sup> it or noe; whereby I observe that every one of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Pr. Councelle is not fond of yo<sup>r</sup> speedy returne hither. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> can best make iudgm<sup>t</sup> by there carriages how much it imports you to hasten hither.

I have delivered yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> warraunt concerning yo<sup>r</sup> Collar of Rubies, and am promised that this weeke order shalbe sent into y<sup>e</sup> Low Countries for delivery of y<sup>e</sup> same accordingly w<sup>th</sup> all dilligence possible. The Queene toulde me on Wensday last, that she would send an expresse to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> w<sup>th</sup>in a few dayes, w<sup>ch</sup> I beleeve she hath donne by this tyme. This from my Lo. Keeper was delivered to me for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> this afternoone.

I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> I have bene warn'd by some of my best friends to be wary what I wryte to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, for that there are many eyes upon me both here & in Scotl. & that l'trs that come to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hands doe after oft miscarry & come to others view: I shall. I receaued this on Wednesday last. When ye deliver this inclosed to my Wyfe, desyre her not to open it but when she is alone.

albeit this shall not deterre me from p<sup>r</sup>formaunce of my duty in advertising yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> of all things that shall occurre to my knowledge of certeynty, importing yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> service, yet I humbly beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to vouchsafe to keepe to yo<sup>r</sup>self what I take y<sup>e</sup> freedome to imparte, least, in these tymes, that may be rendred to be treason in me, w<sup>ch</sup> I humbly conceave to be y<sup>e</sup> duty of,

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 29<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden. 6 Nov.

Apost. 6<sup>o</sup> 9<sup>bris</sup>.—Re<sup>d</sup> 11<sup>o</sup> 9<sup>bris</sup> by Mr. Tho. Killegrew.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Hertford, at this period, was Governor to the Prince of Wales. This branch of the Seymours became extinct in 1675.

<sup>2</sup> This is a gentleman of facetious memory, who is generally known only as



*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excell<sup>t</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

The 29<sup>th</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> last moneth I sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a lt<sup>r</sup> in a packet adressed to Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er, & on Satterday last about 7 at night I receaved by Capt. Smith <sup>1</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> co'maunds apostiled 24<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup>, & according to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> co'maunds I gave him yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> lt<sup>r</sup> to p<sup>e</sup>sent it to y<sup>e</sup> Queene. The relac'ons w<sup>ch</sup> are here made by any that come from thence, are (for y<sup>e</sup> most p<sup>te</sup>) varied & reported afterward by others according to y<sup>e</sup> sence and affec'on of each several auditor<sup>s</sup>, & soe become very uncertaine, & some are apt to credit & report y<sup>e</sup> worst of businesses, & to silence what they like not, wherefore I humbly conceive, that a relac'on written by a good & unsuspected hand, would not only gayne best beliefe, but be lesse subiect to mistakes & misreports: & I hope when y<sup>e</sup> examinac'ons of y<sup>e</sup> late disturbances there shalbe published, y<sup>e</sup> same will cleere all doubts, & giue honnest men full satisfac'on. I have shewen y<sup>e</sup> Queene & some Lo<sup>ds</sup> the copy of Marq: Hamiltons 2. and 3d lt<sup>rs</sup> to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, whereby he begs yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pardon, w<sup>ch</sup> argues he is not soe faultlesse, & innocent, as we would here render him. I humbly thanke yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> that you have bene soe carefull of yo<sup>r</sup> faithfull servaunt, as to burne all such of my l<sup>rs</sup>,

the Court buffoon of the succeeding reign, but who had other claims, not generally understood, upon the Royal notice.—At this period he was, or had been, page to Charles the First; and was afterwards an attendant upon Charles the Second during his exile. Some allusions are made to him in subsequent letters; particularly where the Queen of Bohemia solicits a commission for him. His family was also, in some degree, connected with the Royal family, by the marriage of Mary, daughter of Sir William Killebrew, with Frederic of Zulestein, an illegitimate son of Henry Prince of Orange.

<sup>1</sup> This Captain Smith displayed great courage, as well as loyalty, in the King's service. In the battle of Edgehill, on the 22nd of October, 1642, when Sir Edward Verney, the Royal Standard Bearer, was killed, and the standard taken, Smith rushed amidst the enemy and retook it, for which he was instantly made a knight banneret, and receive soon after a large gold medal, "with the King's picture on the one side, and the banner on the other, which he always wore to his dying day, in a large green watered ribband, cross his shoulders." He fell, two years afterwards, at Cheriton fight, sometimes called the battle of Alresford.

as you returne not to me apostiled, w<sup>ch</sup> soe much concernes my safety, as I assure your Ma<sup>tie</sup>, I have bene warned by some of my best friends both there and here, to be wary in my advertisem<sup>ts</sup>, least being too good a servaunt (these are their very words) doe me hurt.

I have, inclosed, sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> copy of an order<sup>1</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> concerning their abundant care of y<sup>e</sup> Princes highnes safety and education, the reasons thereof were delivered at Oatlands by my Lo. of Holland<sup>2</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, who (I heare) gave a very wise and discreete answeare to y<sup>e</sup> same, as (I beleeve) her owne pen will very speedily acquaint yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>.

It is said there is a new designe discovered of a later intenc'on

<sup>1</sup> A conference took place on this subject between the two Houses, wherein it was urged that the Prince had recently been often at the Queen's residence at Oatlands; and though the Commons did not doubt the motherly affection and care of her Majesty towards him, yet there were some dangerous persons at Oatlands, Jesuits and others, and therefore it was desired that the Marquis of Hertford should be enjoined to take the Prince into his custody and charge, attending upon him in person, and also that the Prince would make his ordinary abode and residence at his own house at Richmond. To this it was added, that Lord Hertford should place some person about the Prince to be answerable to both Houses; so that, in fact, the Prince would have been a complete prisoner! When the message was sent to the Queen she answered, that the Prince was celebrating his Sister's birthday.

<sup>2</sup> Henry Rich, first Earl of Holland (and second son of the Earl of Warwick), so created by James the First, in 1624. He is recorded in the "Loyal Martyrologie" by Winstanley, as a special favourite of Charles in the early part of his reign, being then Governor of Windsor Castle: yet, after that date, says Winstanley, "When the Long Parliament began to sit, and religion became the bone of contention, he sided with them; but afterwards perceiving that they made religion only a cloak to cover their rebellion, he deserted them, and took up armes for the Royal interest." Being defeated and taken prisoner, he suffered on the same scaffold with the Duke of Hamilton and Lord Capel, on the 9th of March, 1648. In the charge of his siding with the Parliament, Winstanley goes further than Dugdale, and those writers who copy from him; the latter asserting only that the favours heaped on Holland by Charles, made that Earl so fearful of the Parliament's enmity as to induce him not only to stand neutral himself, but also to persuade the Earl of Essex, his near kinsman, and Lord Chamberlain, to desert his Royal Master when forced to fly from Whitehall. De Larrey, a French historian, says of him that he possessed greater genius than his brother, Lord Warwick, who was "a person of an agreeable wit, perhaps a little too much libertine, but knew very well how to dissemble, and imposed on the people by an affected devotion, and going regularly to sermons."



Doe you it in  
my name.

I have synded  
it, but I will  
not haue you  
to make use of  
it but as my  
Wyf shall  
direc you.

then Mr. Percy<sup>1</sup> to have debauched y<sup>e</sup> late Army, but what it is I cannot learne. My Lo. Keeper sent to me this day to acquaint yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, that y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sent new Lo. Mayor lately sworne (named Rich. Gurney), being not in y<sup>e</sup> com<sup>'</sup>ission of Lieutenn<sup>'</sup>cy for London & liberties, it wilbe necessary that y<sup>t</sup> comiss<sup>'</sup>on be renewed & his Lo<sup>p</sup> put into it, w<sup>ch</sup> may soone be donne, if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> please to signify yo<sup>r</sup> pleasure to my Lo. Keeper to that purpose. The B<sup>p</sup> of Chichester humbly desires yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> licence to be absent from P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>, for w<sup>ch</sup> pu<sup>'</sup>pose I have (at his Lo<sup>p</sup>s request) herein sent a warr<sup>t</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> signature, if you shall think fitt to signe it. It was ordered on Friday last by y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ons that there should be heads p<sup>e</sup>pared for a conference concerning a pet<sup>'</sup>on to be sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to stay y<sup>e</sup> making of y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>p</sup>s, but this hath not hitherto beene proceeded in any further, and some thinke it wilbe let fall.

There is newes come to my Lo. Lieutenn<sup>'</sup>t of Ireland of a rebellion in y<sup>e</sup> north of that kingdome, rayseed (as it is said) by Papistes, whereof one Macguire<sup>2</sup> is one of y<sup>e</sup> chiefest; I have not seene y<sup>e</sup> l<sup>e</sup>ter concerning it, but y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Privy Councell sate yesterday (when I was at Oatlands) in close Councell about it, & this day they were w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> House of Com<sup>'</sup>ons to advise concerning it as I heare: I believe yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath before this receaved advertisem<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> certeynty of this busines out of Ireland, & I doubt not but y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Privy Councell here, or my Lo. Lieutenant, will forthw<sup>th</sup> give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> an account, what they have advised upon herein: if their Lo<sup>p</sup>s doe it not speedily, I shall write further of it, as soone as I may see y<sup>e</sup> l<sup>e</sup>ter or know some certeynty of it, being unwilling to trouble yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> in an affayre of that nature, but upon good grounds, & knowledge of p<sup>'</sup>tic<sup>'</sup>lars.

If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> could settle yo<sup>r</sup> affaires well there, soe as yo<sup>u</sup> might be here y<sup>e</sup> next weeke, yo<sup>r</sup> best servaunts here conceave it would then be in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> power, by yo<sup>r</sup> presence, to bring this P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>

I hope this  
next weeke  
will put an end  
to this Parla-  
ment, so that  
ye may expect  
me by the 20:  
of this month.

<sup>1</sup> This passage shews clearly that there were two distinct plots, or so called conspiracies; though some writers have asserted the contrary, respecting the accusations brought forward against Percy, Waller, O'Neale, &c.

<sup>2</sup> He was brother to the Lord Macguire, who was afterwards tried by order of the Parliament, and hanged, drawn, and quartered, notwithstanding he pleaded his Irish Peerage.



to a reasonable good conclusion, w<sup>ch</sup> that it may be soe, is & shalbe ever y<sup>e</sup> earnest prayer of,

Y<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, Munday 1<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden : Satterday : 6.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

Apost : 6 : 9<sup>bris</sup>. — Rec<sup>d</sup> 11<sup>o</sup> 9<sup>bris</sup>. by Mr. Tho : Killegrew.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excell<sup>nt</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Since my lt<sup>r</sup> sent yesterday by Mr. Barclay, I have receaved by Mr. W<sup>m</sup> Murray yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds by apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 28th of Octob<sup>r</sup> & have delivered yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to my Lo. Keeper, together w<sup>th</sup> a packet from Mr. Th<sup>r</sup>er, conteyning y<sup>e</sup> exa<sup>i</sup>ac'ons of y<sup>e</sup> busines touching Marq. Hamilton, &c. All w<sup>ch</sup> were this morning read at y<sup>e</sup> Councell Boorde, whereupon their Lo<sup>ps</sup> resolved for y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sent to make knowne in the generall, that they had receaved a faire dispatch concerning that busines, & that it was like to have a speedy, & quyet conclusion ; & their Lo<sup>ps</sup>, being then to goe to y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> House about y<sup>e</sup> Irishe busines, sealed upp y<sup>e</sup> examinac'ons, & appointed too morrow in the afternoone to consider further of y<sup>e</sup> same, & to advise in what manner to acquaint y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> therew<sup>th</sup>. I heare that my Lo. Lieuten<sup>t</sup> of Ireland hath by a dispatch this morning sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> an accompt of all y<sup>e</sup> partic<sup>l</sup>ars touching y<sup>e</sup> Rebellion in that kingdome,<sup>1</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> here takes to hart, & there is a Com<sup>i</sup>ttée of 12 Lo<sup>ds</sup> together w<sup>th</sup> some of y<sup>e</sup> House of Com<sup>o</sup>ns appointed this evening to goe into London to treate w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Mayor, Aldermen & Com<sup>o</sup>n Councell to borrow 50 m<sup>l</sup>. to be forthw<sup>th</sup> sent into Irland, to pay & encourage y<sup>e</sup> old Army & alsoe such new souldiers as are there lately taken up to make head to y<sup>e</sup> Rebels, for w<sup>ch</sup> somes y<sup>e</sup> Citty is to be secured by Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup>, both for principall & interest.

<sup>1</sup> In vol. vi. of Somers' Tracts, page 378, is the Report of the Lord Keeper to the House of Commons on the 1st of November, 1641 ; drawn up from the dispatches of the Lords Justices to the Lord Deputy, who was then in England.

the 20: yet now I fynde that it will be the 24 before I can cum, but bee assured that I shall differ no longer, for by the grace of God, I shall sett out from hence on the 18: without faile: & for warning my Lo. Maior, take directions from my Wyfe, when to doe it, for though she knowes when I shall meete her, yet I haue left to her the choice of the place, & when I shall cum to London.

when yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> intends to be here, but in generall that it wilbe shortly, I thought it my duty to put yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> in minde, that ye Lo. Mayor & Cittizens here doe much desire to have tymely notice what day yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will come to this towne, that they may have y<sup>e</sup> hono<sup>r</sup> to waite on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>. There came l<sup>trs</sup> yesterday from Irland w<sup>ch</sup> confirme y<sup>e</sup> newes of y<sup>e</sup> Rebellion there, & say that the Rebels are come w<sup>thin</sup> 20 miles of Dublin, & are very cruell to y<sup>e</sup> Englishe Protestants, and have donne much mischeif alreddy in y<sup>e</sup> country:—There is order here for sending p<sup>es</sup>ently 2000 foote & 500 horse from hence into Irland: and S<sup>r</sup> Ja. Ashley,<sup>1</sup> & Seriant Maior Merrick and other Officers are forthw<sup>th</sup> to goe away for that kingdome. The hast of this bearer, (who came even now to me from y<sup>e</sup> Queene for a post warrant) will not give me tyme to write more to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> att p<sup>es</sup>ent, but that I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> presence here is now extreame necessary,<sup>2</sup> as well for yo<sup>r</sup> affaires here, as in Irland: & I beseech God to send yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a speedy & safe returne, w<sup>ch</sup> none desires more then

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 3<sup>o</sup> No<sup>brs</sup> 1641, att 9. at night.

Eden. 9.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I wrote to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a few lynes yesterday by an expresse sent by y<sup>e</sup> Queene, & this morning I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds by

<sup>1</sup> Sir Jacob Astley was Serjeant Major General of the King's Army-royal; he distinguished himself much during the Civil Wars, and was created Lord Astley of Reading. Merrick was afterwards knighted by the King; yet he joined the Parliament forces, was made Serjeant Major General by the Earl of Essex, and afterwards, at the siege of Reading, was appointed General of the Ordnance, being superseded in his former office by the famous Skippon, by order of the Parliament.

<sup>2</sup> It is a curious fact that the leading party in the House of Commons were as anxious for the King's coming back, as his friends could be; for on this day it was ordered by the House that a letter should be sent to the King, pressing his return.



apostile of ye 30<sup>th</sup> of 8<sup>ber</sup>. I have herewi<sup>th</sup> sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a let<sup>r</sup> from my Lo. Keeper (& to Mr. Th'rer a Bill) for new Sheriffs for this next yeare, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> may be pleased to prick them there if you soe thinke fitt ; My. Lo. Keeper desir'd me w<sup>th</sup>all to send to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> informac'on inclos'd, w<sup>ch</sup> his Lo<sup>p</sup> receaved (for sparing of some vpon that Bill) since y<sup>e</sup> same was made vp, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> may be pleased to take them into considerac'on.

The Lo<sup>ds</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Privy Councell here have heard read all y<sup>e</sup> exa'iac'ons concerning Mar: Hamiltons, and y<sup>e</sup> Earles of Arguile & Lannerick absenting themselves, & since they receaved noe direcc'ons to com'unicate those exa'iac'ons to any other then to yo<sup>r</sup> Privy Councell, they thinke not fitt to publishe y<sup>e</sup> same, otherwise then by declaring (to such as they shall have occasion to speake w<sup>th</sup> about that business), that they finde nothing in all those exa'iac'ons, that in any sorte reflects vpon yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hono<sup>r</sup>. The exa'iac'ons themselves are by their Lo<sup>ps</sup> left in my hands vnsealed, that any of y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Privy Counsell may see & reade them, but I am to give noe coppies of y<sup>e</sup> same, & y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> willed me to signify to Mr. Th'rer, that if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> please that there shalbe any further publication thereof, they expect further direcc'ons therein. I have com'unicated to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup>, & given them coppies of Mar: Hamiltons 3<sup>d</sup> le<sup>tr</sup> to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> doth give great satisfacc'on here to all men, that nothing in that vnhappy business doth in y<sup>e</sup> least manner reflect on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hono<sup>r</sup>.

The Parliam<sup>t</sup> here takes to hart y<sup>e</sup> Rebellion in Ireland, & hath expressed a great affecc'on to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> service in that partic'lar. They have resolved (as my Lo. Keeper desired me to signify to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>) to send thither 6000 foote and 2000 horse ; whereof 2000 foote and 500 horse presently ; & they are borrowing of y<sup>e</sup> Citty 50 m<sup>l</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> they hope wilbe sent, & in confidence, that they shall have y<sup>e</sup> same to supply other paym<sup>ts</sup>, they are now sending away 20 m<sup>l</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> they have reddy in cashe, & was designed for other affaires. My Lo. Keeper saith he hath sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> l<sup>trs</sup> touching

The Keeper will fynd by this inclosed to him that I meane not to pricke the Bill of Sherifs vntill my cuming home, so that for the present there is no neede of his information.

They neede to doe no more, but as they haue & resolute to doe.

There neede no more.

<sup>1</sup> Bulstrode, alluding to this Parliament, afterwards called the Long Parliament, observes that it was convened to meet on the 3rd November 1641, "a most ominous day ! for the Parliament met that day, in 20 Hen. VIII. which began with the fall of Cardinal Wolsey." Indeed the superstition of men's minds, at that period, seems to have both hastened and aggravated the political confusion : but the date is wrong ; it ought to have been 1640.



I shall not  
faile to protect  
you according  
to my Power,  
& (according  
to the owld  
Englishe com-  
pliment) I  
would it were  
better for your  
sake.

y<sup>e</sup> Irishe rebellion to the Com<sup>it</sup>tee of both Houses appointed to consider of & take care for all things that concerne that business, and will himself speedily give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> an accompt of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> comaunds, w<sup>ch</sup> he receaved this day in y<sup>e</sup> packet of y<sup>e</sup> 30<sup>th</sup> of 8<sup>ber</sup>. I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> I find that it is noe easie matter in these mallevolent tymes, for an honnest man (that hath any thing to doe in affaires) to p<sup>e</sup>serve himself & his reputac<sup>o</sup>n : but I hope yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will protect yo<sup>r</sup> faithfull servaunts, that shall w<sup>th</sup> integrity & dilligence endeavour to serve you, as will ever

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDWARD NICHOLAS.

There is an Act passing for pressing of soldiours for Irland, w<sup>ch</sup> hath bene twice read, and is now in y<sup>e</sup> Comittees hands.

Westminster, 4<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden : 9.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

Apost. 9<sup>o</sup> 9<sup>bris</sup>.—Rec<sup>d</sup> 15<sup>o</sup> November by Mr. Arthur Berkley.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I wrote to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by packet y<sup>e</sup> 4<sup>th</sup> of this No<sup>ber</sup>, & this now is to convey y<sup>e</sup> inclosed from my Lo. Keeper : I hope it will meete yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> on y<sup>e</sup> way, for that I heare it said, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will set forth on Munday next, but because I am not certeyne of it, I haue directed this packet to Mr. Thr<sup>er</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> otherwise I should haue addressed (according to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aund) to my Lo<sup>d</sup> Duke.<sup>1</sup> If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> doe not hasten hither, I doubt y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>e</sup>parations for Irland will goe on but slowly,<sup>2</sup> & soe may come too late to p<sup>e</sup>vent great mischiefs there, notw<sup>th</sup>standing y<sup>e</sup> care of our Parliam<sup>t</sup>. Here are besides (I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>) other affaires that highly import yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> hast hither : If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> please to give leave to my Lo. Mayor & y<sup>e</sup> Cittizens here to wayte on you into this towne, I be-

I onlie now re-  
peate what in  
a former I  
sayd, that you  
receave order  
from my Wyfe  
for this, what  
day it shall be ;  
with this addi-

<sup>1</sup> Duke of Richmond.

<sup>2</sup> Yet the Parliament seems to have been very busy upon this subject ; for not only was there a Declaration framed on the 4<sup>th</sup>, but letters were also sent to the Lords Justices, pressing the most energetic measures of defence.

seech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to com'aund that timely notice may be given of y<sup>e</sup> day, that they may provide for it, for y<sup>e</sup> best of y<sup>e</sup> Cittizens expresse a great desire to shew their affec'on therein to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> I humbly conceive it will not be convenient to declyne.

I humbly pray for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> happy and speedy returne, as being

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>  
Most humble & obedient servaunt,  
EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 6<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden: 13:

Written on the reverse of the last Letter.

Since I wrote the other let<sup>er</sup> to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, happening w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> opportunity of this messenger (who I hope will deliver my let<sup>r</sup> safe to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hands), I thought it my duty to make this addic'on to my former let<sup>r</sup>, that yesterday in y<sup>e</sup> Comons House, it was moved to send instruc'cons of y<sup>e</sup> Englishe Com'ittees, to let yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> know, that y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> here finds that ill counsellors have bene y<sup>e</sup> cause of all these troubles in Irland, and that vnlesse yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wilbe pleased to discharge y<sup>e</sup> ill Councillors that are about you & to take such as y<sup>e</sup> kingdome can confide in, the Parliam<sup>t</sup> doth hold itself absolvd from giving assistance for y<sup>e</sup> busines in Irland: Some that found fault w<sup>th</sup> this expression were chequed, but there was noe p'fect resoluc'on in this, but y<sup>e</sup> further considerac'on thereof was put off to a further day.<sup>2</sup>

I write this that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> may see how extreameley necessary it is for you to hasten hither. I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to keepe to yo<sup>r</sup>self this addic'on, & to burne this let<sup>r</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> is now sent you from

Y<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>  
Most humble & most obedient servaunt,  
EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 6<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641,

a<sup>tt</sup> 12 a clock at noone.

<sup>1</sup> It is difficult to ascertain why the King expresses himself thus. Essex possessed this office until 1642, when he was superseded by Edward, Earl of Dorset.

<sup>2</sup> This is a very curious fact, illustrative of the private history of that time. It is not stated in the Parliamentary History, nor in the usual records for

tion, that you direct my Lord Chamberlaine<sup>s</sup> (I meane Essex) to wait on my Wyfe, who will giue him directions what Howses he shall prepare for my vse against my returne.



*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Since myne of y<sup>e</sup> 6<sup>th</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sent sent by Mr. Greene a servant of y<sup>e</sup> D: of Richmonds, I receaved y<sup>e</sup> same night here at Oatlands yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> apostile of y<sup>e</sup> 2<sup>d</sup>, and have sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> l<sup>r</sup>e to y<sup>e</sup> B<sup>pp</sup> of London together w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Bills signed for y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>pp</sup>s. I shall carefully p<sup>r</sup>forme all yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds by yo<sup>r</sup> last, & render yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a speedy account of y<sup>e</sup> same. My Lo: Keeper sent me this evening this let<sup>r</sup> to be conveyed to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> w<sup>th</sup> all dilligence, w<sup>ch</sup> is y<sup>e</sup> principall cause of this dispatch. I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to be pleased to burne or returne to me all my lett<sup>rs</sup>, for I perceave by y<sup>e</sup> strict enquiry after the writer of Mr. Webbs let<sup>r</sup>, that there is a vigilant & prying eye after all that is written hence, & I would not willingly, that y<sup>e</sup> Lyons should be made iudges of my eares. Wee hope yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will set forth for these partes too morrow senight at farthest. I can say noe more to move yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to hasten hither then hath bene advertised. I pray God to send yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a speedy and safe returne. I am confident yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> was never more welcome to y<sup>e</sup> better sorte of Londoners than you will now be, & I beleeeve y<sup>e</sup> whole kingdome will reioyce to heare of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> happy returne, w<sup>ch</sup> wilbe y<sup>e</sup> best newes that hath this yeare come to y<sup>e</sup> eares of

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Oatlands, 7<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden. 13.

*The Queen to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Maistre Nicholas havinge reseaued a leter from London to nitgh (night): that there is many of the Lords that ar gone of in the contree, and thatt he ar a fraid the shall want some for the bussi-  
historical research. It is remarkable that Sir E. N. does not take any notice of the apology sent to the Lords on this day by the Queen, excusing Father Phillips, and praying forgiveness for him, "if it shall appear unto you that he hath not maliciously done anything against the State, if, for my sake, you will pass by this present offence," &c. The Lords would have admitted him to bail, but the Commons refused.

I returne this  
onlie to show  
you that I am  
careful to doe  
what you de-  
syre.



nesse of the bishops : having heard that Carnaruen<sup>1</sup> is in is owne hous some twentie milles of I belive very fit you should writt to him from the King to have him come to London for that time this bearer will carry your letter to him and having nothing to say more I rest,

Your assured friend

HENRIETTE MARIE R.

"For Maistre Nicholas."

R. 8<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bre</sup> 1641. The Queene to me.

This Letter, and the following ones up to the 10th of November, serve to fill up an hiatus in the Parliamentary History of this period.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

Yesterday I sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a l<sup>tr</sup> from my Lo. Keeper by packet addressed to Mr. Th<sup>rer</sup>. This day the Com<sup>'ons</sup> House considered of y<sup>e</sup> heads of y<sup>e</sup> instrucc<sup>'ons</sup> to be sent to y<sup>e</sup> Englishe Com<sup>'ittees</sup>, & after a long debate, they voted y<sup>e</sup> same in y<sup>e</sup> House, w<sup>ch</sup> was thereupon divided, & there were (as I heare) 110. votes against, & 151. for those instrucc<sup>'ons</sup>, amongst w<sup>ch</sup> there is one head to y<sup>e</sup> effect, (but a little quallified,) of what I wrote in my postscript by Mr. Greene. Those instrucc<sup>'ons</sup> (I am tould) are to be transmitted to y<sup>e</sup> Lords.

You must see to cross this in the Lords House if it be possible.

It is here reported by those who have y<sup>e</sup> speediest & certeynest advisem<sup>ts</sup> from Edinburg, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will not be here till Christmas : what reason they have for it I know not. The warr<sup>ts</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>ps</sup> are passing as fast as may be : I this day put y<sup>e</sup> Signet to those for Yorke & Lincolne.<sup>2</sup>

By the grace of God those will prove false Prophets.

I have signified yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure to my Lo. Keeper to issue a

<sup>1</sup> Robert Dormer, Earl of Carnarvon ; slain in 1643 at the battle of Newbury. His Countess was niece to Sir Richard Browne, as it is stated in Bromley's Royal Letters ; but how does not appear, for she was daughter of the Earl of Pembroke. When this nobleman was expiring in the field, he was asked if he had any suit to the King ? He replied, that " he would not die with a suit in his mouth, to any King, but the King of Heaven ! "

<sup>2</sup> These appointments did not take place.

You must  
needs speake  
with such of  
my servants  
that you may  
best trust, in  
my name, that  
by all meanes  
possible this  
may bee  
stoped.

I shall most  
carefully.

Proclamac'on that all Parliam<sup>t</sup> men attend in P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>, but his Lo<sup>pp</sup> saith a Proclamac'on must issue in y<sup>e</sup> ordinary way, and be first signed by yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, wherefore I have by his Lo<sup>pp</sup> advise this day sent a warr<sup>t</sup> accordingly to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Attorney, to p<sup>e</sup>pare a Proclamac'on for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> signature, w<sup>ch</sup> as soone as I can get from him shalbe speedily sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>. The Ea. of South<sup>ton</sup><sup>1</sup> hath bene in North<sup>ton</sup><sup>sh</sup>: this senight, but wilbe here Wensday next, when I shall not fayle to acquaint his Lo<sup>p</sup> w<sup>th</sup> what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath commaunded me. I heare there was this afternoone brought into y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House, and there read, a Declarac'on of y<sup>e</sup> state of y<sup>e</sup> affaires of this kingdome, w<sup>ch</sup> relates all y<sup>e</sup> misgovernmen<sup>t</sup> and vnpleasing things that have bene donne by ill Counsells (as they call it) since 3<sup>o</sup> of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> raigne to this p<sup>e</sup>sent, and it reflects soe much to y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>e</sup>iudice of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> government, as if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> come not instantly away, I trouble to thinke what wilbe y<sup>e</sup> issue of it : for surely if there had bene in this nothing but an intenc'on to have iustefyed the proceedings of this P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>, they would not have begun soe high as 3<sup>o</sup>. The further considerac'on of this Declarac'on is to be had too morrow in y<sup>e</sup> House of Com'ons. If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall not be pleased to keepe to yo<sup>r</sup>self what I have written, and to burne this let<sup>r</sup>, I may be lost. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> cannot so much p<sup>e</sup>iudice yo<sup>r</sup>self, (if you come away & leave all things there vnfinished,) as you may now by delaying yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne one day : I pray God there be not a designe to deteyne you there against the wishes & advise of all yo<sup>r</sup> best servaunts here : God send yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a safe & speedy returne, so prayeth alwayes

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Eden. 13.

Westminster, 8. No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

8<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost. 13<sup>o</sup>. 9<sup>bris</sup>. Rec. 18. 9<sup>bris</sup>.

Sent by Sir H. Hungate.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton. He died in 1667, without issue.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Philip Hungate, of Saxton, in Yorkshire, was the first Baronet, so



*The Queen to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Maister Nicholas, I am vere sory that my lettre did not come time enouf to go. I haue reseaued yours, and I haue writt to the King to hasten is coming. I send you the letter and if little Will Murray is well enouf I would haue him go backe againe : to scotland without comin yer for a would haue him go to marow morning : tel him from me : but if he wher not well then you must prouide some bodie that will be sure for my letter must not be lost : and I would not trusted to and ordinaire poste : I am so ill prouided whitt personnes that I dare truste that at this instant I haue no living creature that I dare send : pray doe whatt you can to helpe me if little Vill Murray can not go to send this letter, and so I rest,

Your assured friend,

HENRIETTE MARIE R.

"For your selfe."

R. 10<sup>e</sup> Nov<sup>bris</sup> 1641. The Q: that I should send an expr: M<sup>re</sup> w: her let<sup>r</sup>.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

My last was by S<sup>r</sup> Hen: Hungate, w<sup>ch</sup> I hope will come safe to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hands ; & I now send this expresse by y<sup>e</sup> Queene's com'aund to convey her Ma<sup>ties</sup> l<sup>tr</sup>, for her Ma<sup>tie</sup> saith she hath alreddy sent all those she can trust, w<sup>th</sup> expresses to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> ; Wee hope that some of them will shortly bring y<sup>e</sup> much desired newes of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne.

I have spoken w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> B<sup>p</sup> of Lincolne about yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pardon of y<sup>e</sup> 13 B<sup>p</sup>s for y<sup>e</sup> Premunire, & his Lo<sup>p</sup> saith he wisheth that y<sup>e</sup> pardon to them may be generall for all things else aswell as for y<sup>e</sup> Premunire, whereof his Lo<sup>p</sup> will consider better, & then I shall give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a further accompt of that partic<sup>lar</sup>. My Lo. Keeper tells me that there are many precedents, that y<sup>e</sup> Peers in P<sup>liam</sup>t have chosen their owne Speaker, & that vntill y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Burleighes created by Charles the First. No name of Henry appears in the Baronetage ; therefore the person alluded to must have been one of the numerous Knights Bachelors of that reign.

With all my hart.



Com'and the  
Keeper in my  
name that he  
warne all my  
seruants to op-  
pose it in the  
Lords House.

This bearer  
will fully sa-  
tisfie you in  
that.

later tyme, there is scarce any Record, that y<sup>e</sup> King hath by l<sup>tr</sup>s pattents appointed a Speaker for that House. Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> (I beleeeve) hath heard that both Houses of Parliam<sup>t</sup> made an Ordinance Satterday last, that y<sup>e</sup> Lo. Lieutenant of Irland shall forthw<sup>th</sup> rayse Volontiers here in Engl. to be transported for suppressing y<sup>e</sup> Rebellion in Irland: yesterday his Lo<sup>pp</sup> acquainting some Parliam<sup>t</sup> men, that he doubted whether he might rayse men w<sup>th</sup>out warr<sup>t</sup> vnder y<sup>e</sup> Great Seale, his Lo<sup>ps</sup> doubt was made knowne in y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House, and thereupon it was in that House declared, that an Ordinance of both Houses was a sufficyent warr<sup>t</sup> for his Lo<sup>ps</sup> levying of Volontiers by beating of the drum &c. & an entry of such their Declarac'on was accordingly made in the Register of that House. I heare that it is written from Irland, that y<sup>e</sup> Rebels there giue forth, that they expect yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> every day at Don Luce,<sup>1</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> is a calumny raysed by them much to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> dishonor & disadvantage, only to iustify their Rebellion, & were fitt to be vindicated. The Declarac'on remo'strating y<sup>e</sup> effects of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> ill Councells, was yesterday by y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House taken againe into considerac'on, & a 4<sup>th</sup> parte thereof gonne thorow w<sup>th</sup>all & voted there, & y<sup>e</sup> rest of it wilbe passed there, as fast as may be, & then it is to be transmitted to y<sup>e</sup> L<sup>d</sup>s. There was yesterday a considerac'on in y<sup>e</sup> Upper House concerning excluding y<sup>e</sup> Papists Lo<sup>d</sup>s, & after a long debate that business was let fall, only there was an Order made that y<sup>e</sup> lawes against Recusants should forthw<sup>th</sup> be put in execuc'on. Mr. Attorney<sup>2</sup> (according yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure signified to him) hath drawne a Proclamac'on, to comaund all Parliam<sup>t</sup> men to attend in Parliam<sup>t</sup>, & having shewed it to my Lo. Keeper, his Lo<sup>p</sup> (as Mr. Attorney tells me) likes y<sup>e</sup> draught, but saith he conceaveth it not fitt to issue any such Proclamac'on, & that he will shortly satisfie yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> therein. I beseech God to send yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> a speedy & happy returne, wherein all yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> best servaunts here ioin in prayer w<sup>th</sup>

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,  
EDW. NICHOLAS.

<sup>1</sup> Dunluce Castle, near the Giant's Causeway, in the county of Antrim, the seat of the Earls of Antrim; but now in ruins.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Edward Herbert, Knt.

The cause concerning y<sup>e</sup> 13 B<sup>ps</sup>, and the Bill touching B<sup>pps</sup>, is to be considered of, Friday next.

Westminster: 10<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641, at 12: at noone.

Eden: 15.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

10: 9<sup>bris</sup> 1641. Apost. 15<sup>o</sup>. Ret. by Sir H. Hungate,

20<sup>o</sup> at one o'clock afternoone.

This was sent by Smith the Messenger.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

By the Queenes com'aund I sent yesterday one Smith expressly w<sup>th</sup> her Ma<sup>ties</sup> ler, w<sup>ch</sup> I hope he will p<sup>e</sup>sent safe, & w<sup>th</sup> dilligence to your Royall hands. Wensday last there was a very greate debate in y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>des</sup> House, touching instrucc'ons p<sup>e</sup>pared by y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons to be sent to y<sup>e</sup> Englishe Com'itees att Edenburg; six of those instrucc'ons concerne y<sup>e</sup> Rebellion in Irland, w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>des</sup> passed & approved of, the 7<sup>th</sup> was concerning ill Councillors & Councells,<sup>1</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> held a very long debate, wherein I may not forbear to advertise yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>: that y<sup>e</sup> Ea: of Bristoll & his sonne y<sup>e</sup> (Lo: Digby) did argue w<sup>th</sup> soe much reason<sup>2</sup> and iudgem't, as they got y<sup>e</sup> 7<sup>th</sup> instrucc'on to be fairely laid aside, & yesterday att a conference of both Houses, the Lo<sup>des</sup> tould y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons, that they agreed to 6 of y<sup>e</sup> said instrucc'ons, but y<sup>e</sup> seventh was of soe great consequence, as they thought fit to leave it to a further tyme: Yo<sup>r</sup>

Thanke the  
from me.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Prynne undertook to enlighten the Lords upon the subject of Evil Counsellors. His reasoning was founded upon the anatomy of the human body. He also prophesied great advantages from a change, particularly if the King should not be permitted to select any servants except those approved by Parliament. Vide Parliamentary History, vol. x. p. 33 et seq.

<sup>2</sup> Yet Lord Digby had been an active enemy of Lord Strafford; but in a speech made to the House of Commons on the 21st of April, 1641, he recanted his former opinions respecting that Earl, so far as to refuse his signature to an official document, even whilst describing Strafford as "a dangerous and insupportable minister to free subjects." The whole speech is a most curious specimen of special pleading! His apparent objects, however, were to preserve his own consistency, and yet to save Lord Strafford's life; his speech closing with a solemn protestation against any sentence of death: "and I do, with a clear conscience, wash my hands of this man's blood."



By the grace  
of God I will  
doe it shortlie  
myselfe.

Mat<sup>tie</sup> may be pleased to take notice of y<sup>e</sup> singular good service that was in that busines donne by those 2 noblemen, & especially by the sonne, who (I heare) did beyond admirac'on.

My Lo: Keeper & Mr. Attor: Gen'rall have deferred the issuing of y<sup>e</sup> Proclamac'on to require all Parliament-mens attendaunce, as conceaving it to be vnseasonable att this tyme, & my Lo: Keeper hath promised that he will give yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>tie</sup> satisfacc'on therein.

It is a poore  
one.

I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>tie</sup> a speech published here in the name of Mar: Hamilton, that yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>tie</sup> may see what artifice is here vsed by his friends to insinuate into y<sup>e</sup> people a good opinion of his Lo<sup>ps</sup> piety and integrity. The House of Com'ons was yesterday soe employed about Irishe affaires, as they meddled not w<sup>th</sup> their Declarac'on, remonstrating y<sup>e</sup> ill effects of bad Councillers. It is advertised out of Irland that y<sup>e</sup> rebels are 30. thousand strong, in severall places of that kingdome, & that they approche towards Tredaw,<sup>1</sup> for defence whereof, y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> Justices have sent 1000 foote, and 2 troopes of horse: if y<sup>e</sup> rebells shall defeate those forces, it is thought they wilbe soone for Dublin. The Lo<sup>ds</sup> Justices write, that vnlesse there be p<sup>re</sup>sently sent over 10,000 men, & 100 m<sup>l</sup>, in monny, that kingdom wilbe lost: whereupon y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> hath ordered to increase y<sup>e</sup> 6,000 foote (formerly directed to be raised) to 10,000: & they intend forthw<sup>th</sup> to passe an Act for raying of 200 m<sup>l</sup> for the service of Irland: And where they formerly desired to have only 1000 Scots, now they will desire to have 10,000 Scots to be sent into Irland in such numbers as y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> shall give direcc'ons.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>tie</sup> may by these relac'ons perceave of what extreame necessity & importaunce yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ties</sup> speedy returne is, w<sup>ch</sup> I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>tie</sup> by all meanes to hasten, for notw<sup>th</sup>standing all the discourses in Parliam<sup>t</sup>, I see nothing put into acc'on. That yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>tie</sup> may have a speedy, safe, & hon<sup>ble</sup> returne shalbe ever y<sup>e</sup> earnest prayers of

Yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble and most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

The last night att 10. a clock, after I had closed this let<sup>r</sup>, I received by Mr. Tho: Killegrew yo<sup>r</sup> Mat<sup>ties</sup> commands by 2 apostiles,

<sup>1</sup> Tredagh—the Irish name for Drogheda.



& am now going to Oatlands w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> let<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Queene, having sent that to my Lo: Keeper: I shalbe carefull to p<sup>r</sup>forme what yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by that dispatch hath comaunded me. All honnest men will reioyce at y<sup>e</sup> welcome newes of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne.

Westminster, 12<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup>, 1641.

Edin. 18.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

12<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup>. Apost. 18<sup>o</sup>. Ret: by Mr. Proger<sup>1</sup> 22<sup>o</sup> at 9. morning.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I sent a let<sup>r</sup> this morning to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> by Mr. Jo: Digby,<sup>2</sup> since my wrighting whereof I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> by Mr. Killegrew, & shall carefully obey y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> comaunds. This is only to conuey to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hands a Pardon for y<sup>e</sup> 13 B<sup>pps</sup>,<sup>3</sup> p<sup>e</sup>pared by y<sup>e</sup> Bp of Lincolne, who (it seemes) thought not fitt to trust any of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> learned Councell w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> drawing of it; his Lo<sup>p</sup> sent me word that I should hasten it to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> (albeit you might be on yo<sup>r</sup> way home) as I tendred y<sup>e</sup> good of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> service, w<sup>ch</sup> made me send it now, notw<sup>th</sup>standing my owne humble opinion is, that since y<sup>e</sup> hearing of y<sup>e</sup> busines against these 13 B<sup>pps</sup> was appointed to be this day, & in all likelihoode will not be put off to a day much farther, that it were better to deferre y<sup>e</sup> passing of this Pardon till it shalbe seene what wilbe determyned concerning them, for if they shalbe sentenced by y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>, this pardon coming afterwards, and not menc<sup>o</sup>ning their being sentenced, will not be sufficyent, & if they shalbe quitted it wilbe needlesse; Nay if it shall not

He cam yesterday.

The returning of w<sup>ch</sup> is the onlie cause of apostyling this.

But if [it] bee dated before (& therefor I haue not filled the eate) I suppose it may doe some good.

<sup>1</sup> Some notice of this Mr. Proger may be seen in "Les Memoires de Grammont," where he is spoken of as about the person of Charles the Second, and said to be "confident de ses menues plaisirs."

<sup>2</sup> Son to the Earl of Bristol.

<sup>3</sup> In a subsequent letter, Sir E. N. again refers to the case of the Bishops, and to the fact of their demurring to the impeachment before the Lords, with the exception of Godfrey Goodman, Bishop of Gloucester, who pleaded "Not Guilty." This was notified to the Commons by a message from the Lords on the 12th.

So I haue.

Doe you that  
in my name.

be kept very secreat, it may be to their p<sup>a</sup>iudice ; but yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> com'aunding me in this busines to pursue y<sup>e</sup> direcc'ons of that able & experienced B<sup>pp</sup>, I held it my duty to obey w<sup>th</sup>out disputing : If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall thinke fitt to passe this pardon att this tyme, you may be pleased to signe it, as well on y<sup>e</sup> back, that it may passe by imediat warr<sup>t</sup> as on y<sup>e</sup> fore part of it, & to send it sealed up, w<sup>th</sup> an expresse com'aund to my Lo. Keeper to seale, who will otherwise I beleeeve make some scruple to put y<sup>e</sup> Great Seale to it.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 6<sup>th</sup> of this moneth giues me good hope that this packet will meete yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> on y<sup>e</sup> way, & therefore I have addressed it (as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> comanded) to y<sup>e</sup> D. of Richmonde. God of his mercy p<sup>e</sup>serve & protect yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, & send you a safe and happy returne, w<sup>ch</sup> is y<sup>e</sup> prayer of all yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> best affected seruaunts, as well as of

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient seruaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

As I was closing this let<sup>r</sup> my Lo: of Bristoll sent me word that his sonne Mr. Jo: Digby goes not for Scotland, and therefore I have sent that let<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> this to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>.

Westminster, 12<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

Eden: 17:

*The Queen to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Maistre Nicholas, I have receaued your lettre. I am sory you ar not well for I would haue ben glad to speake to you but it is of no haste therefore donat hastend your selfe for feare of being sick ; I send you a lettre for Milord Keeper that the King ded send to me to deliuer it if I though it fit. the subject of it is to make a Derclaration against the ordres of Parliamant which ar made without the King. If you beleue a fit time giue it him if not you may keepet till I see you.

the King will bee here sertaineleye the 20 of this monthe therefore you may aduertice the Maior of London. Your lettre that



you did writt to Carnaruen is comme bak to mee and I burnt it. he was not at is hows it should be vere nessessairie that you should inquaire where (he) is and writt to him and send to milord Cotinton for is proxies for I heer he as to (two) and is owne. and send to milord Southampton and Dunsemoure<sup>1</sup> to send their proxies till the comme them selues; the are in Warwicshier. hauing no more to say I reeste this 12 Novembre

Your assured friend

HENRIETTE MARIE R.

"For your selfe."

12<sup>th</sup> Nov<sup>r</sup> 1641. The Queene to me.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

This is y<sup>e</sup> first day since my falling sick, that I have bene able to sit vp to write: & albeit I shall doe it w<sup>th</sup> some difficulty, yet my duty will not suffer me to forbear any longer to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> an accompt, that by Mr. Barkley I receaved on Sunday night last yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> comaunds in 3 apostiles dated y<sup>e</sup> 9<sup>th</sup> of this moneth: All w<sup>ch</sup> I have alreddy p<sup>r</sup>form'd, excepting that concerning giving notice to my Lord Mayor of y<sup>e</sup> day of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> entring into London, whereof (I beleeeve) I shall this afternoone have certeynty from the Queene.

Herew<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will receave a proclamac'on for y<sup>e</sup> attendance of y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> men, w<sup>ch</sup> my Lo: Keeper & Mr. Attorney conceaved would have bene better to have bene forborne to be published till yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne, w<sup>ch</sup> is now so neere in expectac'on. The House of Com'ons hastens by all meanes y<sup>e</sup> finishing of y<sup>e</sup> Declarac'on or Remonstrance, & for y<sup>e</sup> more speedy expediting of it, they have att y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>it</sup>tee passed by many p<sup>r</sup>ticlars to avoide y<sup>e</sup> delay of long debate.

The order of y<sup>e</sup> House of Com'ons for y<sup>e</sup> number of Scots to be sent into Irland, was altered from 1000. to 5000. vpon Saturday last in y<sup>e</sup> afternoone, & thoughe (wee heare) that y<sup>e</sup> employm<sup>t</sup> of

<sup>1</sup> Francis Leigh, Lord Dunsmore; afterwards Earl of Chichester.



soe many Scots wilbe very acceptable to that nac'on, yet it is here apprehended by wise men, that y<sup>e</sup> same will exasperate y<sup>e</sup> Irishe, & make them buckle more resolutely to a warre of rebellion, then otherwise they would doe. Since y<sup>e</sup> plot in delivering to Mr. Pym<sup>1</sup> a let<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> a plaster and a threatening in it, there was on Munday last in y<sup>e</sup> evening, another as desperate and dangerous a conspiracy against him, & diverse members of both Houses, discovered by a poore zealous taylor, who, being in y<sup>e</sup> fields mending y<sup>e</sup> notes he had taken of a sermon, there happened to come (as he relates it) 2. souldier-like men, soe neere him, as he overheard them telling each other, how many of their acquaintance were to be forthw<sup>th</sup> employed to murder diverse members both of y<sup>e</sup> Upper and Lower House, & this taylor<sup>2</sup> had y<sup>e</sup> oportunity to take from those 2. mens mouthes y<sup>e</sup> names both of y<sup>e</sup> murtherers, & of y<sup>e</sup> p'sons to be murthered: the reward to him that kil'd a member of y<sup>e</sup> Lower House was to be 40s. & to him that murthered one of y<sup>e</sup> Upper House £10. This discovery makes a great noyse in & about y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> House, & (however many wise men give no credditt at all to it, yet) it hath produced severall orders for securing of y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>, & Parliament-men, the coppies of some of w<sup>ch</sup> I have here inclosed sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>. The order of y<sup>e</sup> 16<sup>th</sup> p'sent,<sup>3</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> requires that y<sup>e</sup> rigour of y<sup>e</sup> law be put in excuc'on against all Papists, that shalbe founde in London or Westminster after this night, is not (I heare) thought by some of y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons to be severe enoughe,

<sup>1</sup> The "History of the King-Killers" says of Pym, that "he was a rank Puritan, and the more dangerous, because he would outwardly appear zealous for the Church of England. Thus, like a subtle rebel, he was a great pretender to religion and reformation, ever finding faults, and inveighing against such as he called innovations and corruptions; yet with such counterfeit shews of respect as made him the more regarded, and his words the more pernicious." When the riots of the London Apprentices took place, soon after this date, the Lords sent a message to the Commons demanding their concurrence in appeasing the tumult, and punishing the authors of it; but Pym opposed the measure, exclaiming, "God forbid that we should stifle the voice of liberty, and oppose the just desires of the people!" A pamphlet of that period, alluding to the plot, is entitled "A damnable treason by a contagious plaster of a plague sore, sent to Mr. Pym," &c.

<sup>2</sup> His name was Beale. In fact the House could procure no further intelligence upon the subject; and it seems to have been either a piece of folly or of roguery on the part of the informer.

<sup>3</sup> Not recorded in the Parliamentary History.

soe as it is conceaved there wilbe some more sharpnes added to that order this day : all y<sup>e</sup> Papists Lo<sup>d</sup>es are alreddy removing out of this Towne vpon this order. ffriday last (w<sup>ch</sup> was y<sup>e</sup> first day of my falling into extremity) the Venetian Amb'dor complained att y<sup>e</sup> Councell Boorde, that his l<sup>r</sup>s had bene opened by y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ittees of Parliam<sup>t</sup>, & he was soe much incensed at it, as he there made his protest, & declared, that he would treate no further, & there-upon w<sup>th</sup>drew himselfe (as I heare) to Greenew<sup>ch</sup>, till such tyme as he shall advertise that Republique w<sup>th</sup> that affront as he termed it. The agent of y<sup>e</sup> D. of Florence is as highly distasted w<sup>th</sup> some violence that hath been vsed in serching his house by some officers or warr<sup>nt</sup> of Parliam<sup>t</sup> : these distasts given to those Ministers will (it is thought) light very heavy on y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>s su<sup>b</sup>ia trading [to] those partes, & will proove a very great p<sup>r</sup>judice & interrup<sup>'</sup>on to y<sup>e</sup> trade of this yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> kingdome.

I heare from a very good hand, that there are diverse principall gen<sup>t</sup> of Hertfordsh: who are desirous to tender their duty to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> att Ware, & to wayte on you into that towne if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall make any stop there, & they will bring w<sup>th</sup> them diverse of their neighbours & friends, who are desirous to shew how welcome yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> returne is into that country, whereof I thought good to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> this tymely notice, for that I humbly conceaue it would not be amisse for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> in these tymes to accept grac<sup>'</sup>ously y<sup>e</sup> affecc<sup>'</sup>ons of yo<sup>r</sup> su<sup>b</sup>ia in that kinde, whereby you will have opportunity to shew yourself grac<sup>'</sup>ous to yo<sup>r</sup> people as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> passeth, & to speake a few good words to them, w<sup>ch</sup> will gaine y<sup>e</sup> aff<sup>'</sup>ons (especially of y<sup>e</sup> vulgar) more then any thing that hath bene donne for them this Parliam<sup>t</sup>. This day y<sup>e</sup> examinac<sup>'</sup>ons against O'Neale were read in y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ons House, wherein were menc<sup>'</sup>oned some l<sup>r</sup>s & papers signed C. R., the effect of one of w<sup>ch</sup> (sent to Capt: Leg<sup>1</sup>) was (as I heare), that he should speake with S<sup>r</sup> Ja: Ashley according to instruct<sup>'</sup>ons w<sup>ch</sup> he had from yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, & let none see that let<sup>r</sup> but only S<sup>r</sup> Ja: Ashley, who, together w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Conyers<sup>2</sup> (as I am tould, but I beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> to take

<sup>1</sup> Captain Leg, otherwise Colonel; but better known as "honest Will Leg;" and ancestor of the Earls of Dartmouth.

<sup>2</sup> This Conyers was afterwards, in 1643, nominated by the Parliament to the Lieutenancy of the Tower, after their forcing the King to dismiss Sir John Byron from that situation.



noe notice thereof from me) have bene very large & partic'lar in their examinac'ons, w<sup>ch</sup> (I heare) reflect vpon yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> person : it is thought that y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> will condempne O'Neale, but they are not yet resolved where or how to trye him : they doubt y<sup>e</sup> testimony against him will not be soe full, as in a legall way to condempne him at the King's Bench barre, & they resolve not (as yet) whether it wilbe fit to doe it by a Bill, according to their legislative power.

I have (as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'anded) given war<sup>t</sup> to my Lo: Keeper to renew y<sup>e</sup> Com'ission of Lieutenn'cy for London, & to put in y<sup>e</sup> new Lo: Mayor, who is a very well aff<sup>ted</sup> servaunt of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>.

There is a Com'ttee of both Houses appointed to p<sup>re</sup>pare instruct'ons for y<sup>e</sup> Lo: Lieutenant of Irland, wherew<sup>th</sup> they are now in hand. The 13 B<sup>pps</sup> did demurre to y<sup>e</sup> busines ag<sup>t</sup> them, but y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons have in their House overruled y<sup>e</sup> demurrer & voted that those B<sup>ps</sup> shall answere in cheif. I dispatch y<sup>e</sup> Bills for y<sup>e</sup> new B<sup>ps</sup> w<sup>th</sup> all expedic'on, & that busines is now in as good forwardnes as may be. I hope by that tyme yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> shall returne hither, to be able to goe abroade, in y<sup>e</sup> meane tyme, I will to y<sup>e</sup> best of my strength & abillity p<sup>er</sup>forme y<sup>e</sup> duty of

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Westminster, 18: No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>ties</sup>,

Yesterday I wrote to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>, & addressed it by packet to y<sup>e</sup> D. of Richmond, as yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> co'manded me when you should be on yo<sup>r</sup> returne : since that, I have receaved from ye Queene 3 of my l<sup>trs</sup>, all of them apostiled by yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> y<sup>e</sup> 13<sup>th</sup> of this moneth, & I humbly acknowledge myself infinitely obliged to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> for yo<sup>r</sup> gracious goodnes in returning and burning my l<sup>trs</sup>. I shall carefully obey all yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds in those l<sup>trs</sup>. I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> signature a draught for yo<sup>r</sup> Royall assent



for y<sup>e</sup> B<sup>pp</sup> of Lincoln<sup>1</sup> to be Arch<sup>bp</sup> of Yorke: this was brought to me this day, & there is noe returne as yet made vpon y<sup>e</sup> *Congé d'estlives* for any of y<sup>e</sup> other B<sup>pps</sup>. I have herew<sup>th</sup> alsoe sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a Bill conteyning a Com<sup>'</sup>ission to appoint y<sup>e</sup> Ea. of Holland to be Lo: G<sup>'</sup>rall of all yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> forces beyonde the Trent, w<sup>ch</sup> com<sup>'</sup>ission yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> gave order for, before yo<sup>r</sup> journey into Scotland, but it seemes by Mr. Attorney (who now brought me this by direc<sup>'</sup>on from y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> to be sent w<sup>th</sup> speede to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>) that vpon y<sup>e</sup> mistake of some name in y<sup>e</sup> former draught it passed not y<sup>e</sup> Greate Seale: I tould Mr. Attorney I did beleeeve yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> would not thinke fitt to signe it now before yo<sup>r</sup> returne; but howsoever he wished me to send it away to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> first, because he had promised soe much to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> in P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup>: this is all I know of this busines, & yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> wisdome can best direct you what to doe in it.

The business against O'Neale is referred to a select Com<sup>'</sup>ittee to be p<sup>'</sup>pared reddey for y<sup>e</sup> House against Munday next, & some thinke it wilbe hardly heard then, for albeit y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ons haue a very good minde to proceede roundly against him, yet (I heare) y<sup>e</sup> proofes are soe broken, as they will not make a full & cleere evidence: the worst in all that busines is, that it reflects on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, as if you had giuen some instrucc<sup>'</sup>ons concerning y<sup>e</sup> stirring up y<sup>e</sup> army to pet<sup>'</sup>on y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup>: I hope it will appeare that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> intenc<sup>'</sup>ons were only to reteyne y<sup>e</sup> army in their duty & dependance on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>. The House of Com<sup>'</sup>ons hath pressed y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> very earnestly for removall of y<sup>e</sup> Ea: of Portland from his gov<sup>'</sup>ment of y<sup>e</sup> Isle of Weight, but y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>des</sup> yesterday, upon his Lo<sup>'</sup>s profession to liue & dye in y<sup>e</sup> Protestant religion, let fall that busines as by y<sup>e</sup> inclosed yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> will perceave. There hath bene nothing donne these 2. dayes by y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>'</sup>ons touching y<sup>e</sup> Declarac<sup>'</sup>on remonstrating y<sup>e</sup> bad effects of ill counsellors, but it is thought that y<sup>e</sup> same wilbe finished this weeke: there are diverse well aff<sup>'</sup>ed servants of yo<sup>r</sup> M<sup>ties</sup> in that House, that oppose that remonstrance w<sup>th</sup> vnanswerable argum<sup>'</sup>ts, but it is veryly thought that it will passe notwithstanding,<sup>2</sup> & that it wilbe ordered to be printed w<sup>th</sup>out transmis-

<sup>1</sup> John Williams, D.D. Dean of Westminster, and formerly Lord Keeper. To this draught the royal signature was given.

<sup>2</sup> The motion was carried by 159 to 148, on the 22nd of this month.

yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> as farre as Theobalds, & if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> thinke not that convenient, they will wayte on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> only a mile or two out of Ware, & soe receive yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> grac'ous dismission. I am y<sup>e</sup> more dilligent to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> this advertisem<sup>t</sup>, because I know those gent: will not fayle in this manner to shew their affecc'ons & duty to you, & that county being soe neere a neighbour to London, it wilbe a good encouragem<sup>t</sup> & comfort to yo<sup>r</sup> well affected people here, to vnderstand, that they have neighbours that have y<sup>e</sup> like dutifull affecc'ons to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> person and governm<sup>t</sup>, as these Cittizens here, who are constantly resolved to giue yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a magnificent recepc'on, notw<sup>th</sup>standing (I heare) there have bene some practises vnderhand to divert them from that their settled pu'pose.

By y<sup>e</sup> Queenes direcc'ons I signified to my Lo: Chamb'layne on Satterday last, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> intends to lye at Theobalds Wensday next, to dyne Thursday att y<sup>e</sup> Guildhall, & that night to lye att Whitehall, & Friday to goe to Hampton Court. Coll. Goring gaue y<sup>e</sup> House of Com'ons good satisfac'con Satterday last touching his fidellity & good affec'cons, and was thereupon dismissed:<sup>1</sup> The Com'ons have bene in debate about their Declarac'on touching y<sup>e</sup> ill effects of bad counsell euer since 12 at noone, & are at it still, it being now neere 12 at midnight.<sup>2</sup> I staid this dispatch in hope to have sent yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> y<sup>e</sup> result of that debate, but it is soe late, as I dare not (after my sicknes) adventure to watch any longer to see y<sup>e</sup> issue of it; only I assure yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> there are diverse in y<sup>e</sup> Com'ons House, that are resolved to stand very stiff for reiecting that

<sup>1</sup> Goring, in some subsequent transactions, is accused of acting a double part with the King and Parliament. When the troubles broke out, Goring, as Governor of Portsmouth, declared for the King: but that town being unable to sustain a siege, was soon lost to the Royal Cause. Goring then went to France, as Bulstrodesays, "with the money he had received on both sides, without making good his promises to either." That Author adds that, "if his conscience and integrity had equalled his wit and courage, he had been one of the most eminent men of the age he lived in; but he could not resist temptations, and was a man without scruple, and loved no man so well, but he would cozen him, and afterwards laugh at him." Goring's high command in the Army, and subsequent rise to the Peerage, are supposed to have been occasioned, in a great measure, by the very active assistance which he afforded to the Queen, whilst in France, in procuring both money and arms.

<sup>2</sup> The debate was not over until three the next morning. Sir Benjamin Rudyard said, that "it looked like the verdict of a starved jury."



*The Queen to Sir E. Nicholas.*

Maistre Nicholas, I did desire you not to acquainte mi lord of essex of what the King commanded you touching is commin : now you may doe it and tell him that the King will be at Tibols vendnesday and shall lye there and upond thursday he shall dine at my lord Maiors and lye at Whitthall onlye for one nitgh and upon friday will goe to hampton-court where he maenes to stay this vinter : the King commanded me to tell this to my lord of essex but you may doe it, for there Lords ships are to great prinsees now to re-ceaued anye direction from mee : beeng all that I haue to say I shall rest

Your assured frand,

HENRIETTE MARIE R.

"For Maistre Nicholas."

R. 20<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1641.

The Q: for me to signify to Lo: Chamb'lan.

*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I receaved yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> com'aunds yesterday by Sr Hen: Hungate,<sup>1</sup> & this day by Mr. Proger, & shalbe carefull to observe y<sup>e</sup> same, as I hope I shalbe able on Wensday next to give yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> an accompt att Theobalds.

I have now againe receaved assurance, that (as I formerly acquainted yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>) y<sup>e</sup> Gent: & diverse of y<sup>e</sup> best of y<sup>e</sup> freeholders of Hertfordshire will wayte on yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> a myle before you come to Ware, & if yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> please to make a little stop in that towne, that y<sup>e</sup> better sorte may there kisse yo<sup>r</sup> Royall hand, & y<sup>e</sup> rest be spoken to by yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>, it will give them very great contentm<sup>t</sup>. If yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> please to come softly from Ware, y<sup>e</sup> most of those will wayte on

<sup>1</sup> See before, Letter 8th November, p. 131.



much upon formalities w<sup>th</sup> those whose helpe I need, therefore I must rest satisfied w<sup>th</sup> what the mentioned letter wants thereof, in hopes it will be supplied w<sup>th</sup> reallity when it comes to the push.

I thanke you also for y<sup>r</sup> good advertisements to Pawel, & am very glad to find by y<sup>r</sup> last concerning Mad<sup>lle</sup> de Rohan,<sup>1</sup> the care w<sup>th</sup> the King my gracious Vncle hath of those that doe him acceptable service. And soe desiring the continuance of yo<sup>r</sup> good offices in w<sup>ht</sup> still further concerne the good of my interests, I assure you that I shall euer remaine

Y<sup>r</sup> most affectionnate frend,

CHARLES.

Haghe the 7<sup>th</sup> of Sept: 1643.

For Mr. Browne,<sup>2</sup> Resid<sup>t</sup> to the King of Gr: Britt: att Paris."

Indorsed,

From Pr: El: Palatine 7: Sept. 1643.

### *The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Oxford, 30 Jan: 1644.<sup>3</sup>

Nicholas, I shall ad nothing to the seuerall good newes you will receaue by your fellow Secretairs letter, but the surpryse of Comp-

<sup>1</sup> This Lady was only daughter of the Duke de Rohan, one of the great leaders of the Hugonot Party in France; and who signalized himself in the affairs at Rochelle and Isle du Rhe. In Hardwicke's State Papers there is a letter from Sir Henry de Vic to Lord Conway, dated from the Coast of France in 1627, in which she is said to be on the point of marriage with the Count de Soissons; a match which the Duke of Buckingham also describes as most desirable for the Protestant Cause. Vide pages 34, 38, Hardwicke's State Papers.

It was at one time intended by Charles the First that Prince Rupert should marry Mademoiselle de Rohan: and in the Harleian Collection, vol. iii. 6988. 86. there is a letter from the King to Prince Maurice in favour of the match.

The Elector Palatine, the writer of this Letter, returned, soon after this date, into England, where he had long been a pensioner. His Brothers were true to the Royal Cause; but he actually joined the Parliament, and sat in the Assembly of Divines.

<sup>2</sup> Afterwards Sir Richard.

<sup>3</sup> There is a long hiatus here in the Correspondence; evidently arising from the King's return. Nicholas seems to have been constantly attached to his Majesty's person, until his appointment as one of the Commissioners pending

ton House by Sr W. Compton:<sup>1</sup> & to bid you tell your fellow Comissioners,<sup>2</sup> that if there be any Treaty proposed concerning Scotland (of w<sup>ch</sup> I forgott to speake to them at parting) theire answer must be, to demand a passeport for a gentleman to goe from me to see what stat the Marquis of Muntrose<sup>3</sup> is in, there being no reason, that I should treate blyndefolde in so important a business, nor without the knowledg of him whom I haue now cheefly employed in that Kingdome & who hath undertaken my seruice there, with so much galantry, when no boddy else would: so I rest

Your assured frend,

CHARLES R.

R 31<sup>o</sup> Jan<sup>r</sup>. 1644.

His Ma<sup>ties</sup> let<sup>r</sup> to me by Mr. Skipw<sup>th</sup><sup>4</sup> concerning Scotland during y<sup>e</sup> Treaty at Uxbridge.

this well-known Treaty. The "good news" to which his Majesty refers, may have been the entrance of the Scottish army into England, which took place on the 16th.

<sup>1</sup> Sir William Compton was third son of the Earl of Northampton. His two elder brothers were also active in the King's service.

<sup>2</sup> These were, Duke of Richmond, Marquis of Hertford, Earls of Southampton, Kingston, Chichester; Lords Capel, Seymour, Hatton, Culpepper; Sirs Edward Nicholas, Edward Hyde, Richard Lane, Thomas Gardiner, Orlando Bridgman; Messrs John Ashburnham, Jeffery Palmer, and Dr. Stewart.

<sup>3</sup> Montrose had long been faithful to the King's Cause, though the King had been kept ignorant of it by the artifices of the Marquis of Hamilton; for though in the beginning of the troubles in Scotland, as far back as 1641, Montrose had joined the Covenanters, yet seeing reason to change his politics, and trusting to the weight of his family alliances, he came to England with the loyal intention of rendering all the service in his power to the King. On his arrival at the English Court, Hamilton, so generally accused of deceiving Charles with respect to Scottish affairs, contrived so artfully to throw slights upon Montrose, that the latter returned to the Covenanters; with whom being again disgusted, he wrote to the King, expressing his loyalty and desire of serving him in the strongest terms; but it is asserted that Hamilton took the letter out of his Majesty's pocket, in the night, and sent it to the Covenanters in order to destroy Montrose's character in every quarter.

<sup>4</sup> Perhaps Fulmar Skipwith, of Newbold Hall, afterwards created a Baronet by Charles II.



*Sir Edward Nicholas to the King.*

Oxford 6 Feb.

Heerafter you shall doe well to marke their orders to saue us the labor to fynde out, w<sup>ch</sup> answers w<sup>ch</sup>, as wel as to send the Papers themselves.

You have done well, but they, barbarusly.

Settle the Weekly dispatches for France with the Portugall Agent, & send me word how. I haue.

No Bragges must stager, much less alter you in the way

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>,

I have herew<sup>th</sup> sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> coppies <sup>1</sup> of such papers as passed betweene yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Comission<sup>rs</sup> here yesterday, & y<sup>e</sup> Londoners touching y<sup>e</sup> Militia, w<sup>ch</sup> this afternoone yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup>ission<sup>rs</sup> are to make appeare to be a power most naturally & legally in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>; this morning wee are to observe y<sup>e</sup> fast according to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Proclamac<sup>on</sup>,<sup>2</sup> but it must be donne here in y<sup>e</sup> Inne, for wee cannot be permitted to have y<sup>e</sup> Booke of Com<sup>on</sup> Prayer read in y<sup>e</sup> church here, & wee resolve not to goe to any church where the Divine service established by law may not be celebrated.

I have made reddy the dispatch to y<sup>e</sup> King of Portugall, w<sup>ch</sup> wilbe tendred to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> under my hand. I hope yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> upon y<sup>e</sup> advertisem<sup>t</sup> I sent to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> & P. Rupert yesterday, hath before this taken order to p<sup>e</sup>vent that Woodstock be not garrison'd as those of London have com<sup>a</sup>unded. The Comission<sup>rs</sup> from London say, that S<sup>r</sup> W<sup>m</sup> Waller <sup>3</sup> is marching westward as farre as Winchester, & those partes, w<sup>th</sup> 6000 men; and that there is an army of about 26,000 Scots to come into England att the opening of y<sup>e</sup> spring: They vapour much att London, but I heare they are much devided amongst themselves. 276. 352. 574. 662.

<sup>1</sup> The King's military affairs at this moment were beginning to decline; for both the armies of Essex and Waller had now been augmented by recruits from the Metropolis and its vicinity, as well as from other associated Counties. Thus reinforced, these two Parliamentary Generals carried every thing before them, and advanced into Oxfordshire, where they hovered about the King's head-quarters, and kept the Royal Army in constant alarm.

<sup>2</sup> This fast was appointed by the King, for a blessing on the Treaty then pending at Uxbridge. In the *Mercurius Rusticus* is a copy of the prayer ordered for the occasion; but as it spoke of the "unnatural War," and prayed the Almighty to "let the truth clearly appear, who those are, which under pretence of the public good do pursue their own private ends," it is not surprizing that obstacles were thrown in the way of its celebration.

<sup>3</sup> Waller was not a very fortunate General; but he was one of the "Self-denying Ordinance" men. Walker says of him, in the *History of Independency*, "that he lost two armies, yet was a gainer by the employment."



hath 123. 63. 21. 25. 290. 657. 116. 276. 352. 225. 276. 428. offering 163. 300. since 173. 276. 340. 225. 276. Militia, soe as 276. 10. 26. 198. 166. satisfac'on. 278. 225. 626. but I know not y<sup>e</sup> p'ticlars, having not had tyme to speake w<sup>th</sup> them concerning their discourse, & when I know it, I shall not rely much upon it. God preserve yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> person & prosper yo<sup>r</sup> designes, soe prays

Yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>

Most humble & most obedient servaunt,

EDW. NICHOLAS.

Uxbridge 5<sup>o</sup> febr: 1644.

In the King's hand at the bottom of this Letter :

"I should thinke, if in your priuat discourses, (I nowais meane in your publique meetings,) with the London Commissioners, you would put them in mynde that they were arrant Rebelles & that their end must be damnation, ruine, and infamy, except they repented, & founde some way to free themselves from the damnable way they are in (this Treaty being the aptest) it might doe good ; & cheefly, if Hertford or Southampton would doe it, though I belieue it will haue the owen operation by any of you, well strenthened with arguments : but the more of you that speakes in this dialect the better : This is written not as your Maister but your Frend,

C. R.

Owld Vulpone is not of my opinion, therfor I am not confident concerning this postcrip, but refer my selfe to your  
the Sh. of the Exche: Office.

353 : 116 : 276 : 352 : 225 : 276 : 428 : 560.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> sacred Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

"Yours apostyled."

5<sup>o</sup> febr. 1644.

My Le<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> King apostyled concerning o<sup>r</sup> proceedings in y<sup>e</sup> Treaty at Uxbridge.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Oxford 8. Feb: 1644.<sup>1</sup>

Nicholas, as I haue hitherto approued of your proceedings, so I will nott now censure them : since, upon the place, you may

<sup>1</sup> The points referred to in this Letter require no historical illustration ; but the Letter itself is a most remarkable document with respect to the private history of the Negotiations at Uxbridge.

you ar, in constantly adhering to Conscience, Justice, & Honor.

In this, free dealing is the best. Conscience is not to be sould at any rate ; but if they will helpe me in the Militia to purpose, I will assist them for their Arears.

have founde such reasons as you haue not fully expressed to me : but, to deale freely, I could haue wished, that ye had used more reseruatiō concerning the Militia : for though I could be content to buy Peace at the rate ye haue sett downe, yet ye might haue reserued something to haue beene drawn on by degrees upon debates, w<sup>ch</sup> me thinkes is a more popular way, then coming at first to the height of your concessions, to leaue your selves nothing but negatiues, in case they should make any approaches to you : And for the tyme, I should thinke a much shorter tyme then three years were sufficient, to secure the performance of conditions, whereas one cannot tell how any men may be tempted, being so long settled in a manner in the Regall Power, to fynde excuses & delays for the parting with it, besydes the people being once inewred to that way of gouernement may not be so willing to returne to the owld way, as beliuing it of less subjection then Monarchicall : So I rest

Your asseured frend,

CHARLES R.

If you be pressed to giue a positie answer concerning Scotland, remember to follow the directions I gaue you in that particular.

Indorsed, R. 9<sup>o</sup> febr. 1644.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Oxford 11 Feb. 1644.

Nicholas, the directions I gaue you concerning sending to Muntrose, I meane only should extend to those things w<sup>ch</sup> meerly concerne Scotland, so if that wer the only case, it would be no hinderance to you for what concernes the Militia : but I doe not yet conceaue, how I can giue way, that ether of my Kingdomes should haue a hand in the gouernement of the other, without breache of trust to eather : yet in this I doe not so restraîne you (so that ye still keepe the number, that I shall nominat, at least equall to the other, & enlarge upon no other points) but leaue it to your discretions what to doe, in case you shall fynde a Peace may be

gotten by it : But as for those things w<sup>ch</sup> meerly concerne Scotland, I sticke close to my former order of sending to Muntrose, not being ashamed to auow that I shall be much guyded by what I shall heare from him, & should be much more ashamed to treat in those things, without at least communicating with him, who hath hazarded so freely and generously for me,

Your asseured friend,

CHARLES R.

Indorsed,

11<sup>o</sup> febr. 1644. R. 12.

His Ma<sup>ties</sup> concern'g Scotland.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas, concerning the answers to the King of Denmarke & D: of Courland, Digby shall giue you my directions. As for the draught of the paper for Mondayes conference, I lyke it well, & for the critesisme I haue made upon it for the change of the tence, is only that ye should seeme to agree concerning the Militia of Scotland, before that of England were settled: lyking so well what ye haue alreddy done touching that article, that I com'and you not to vary a jott from the substance of it, unlesse it (be) to enlarge my power, or shorten the tyme: as concerning a safe-conduct for a messenger to Scotland, I meerly intend it for those things, w<sup>ch</sup> only concernes that kingdome: to w<sup>ch</sup> I am still constant, leauing you to your Christian Liberty, to what shall reciprocally concerne bothe; but, by your fauors, I understand not, how any demand can breake off a treaty, indeed insisting upon some, may doe prittely that way. At this tyme I haue no more to say: but, goe not a title lesse concerning Religion & Churche-gouernement, & soe I rest

Your asseured friend,

CHARLES R.

Oxford 15 febr: 1644.

Indorsed,

R: 16<sup>o</sup> febr. 1644.

The King concerning the Scots being  
of England.

for the Militia



## (A FRAGMENT.)

Oxford 17 Feb. 1644.

Memorall for Se: Nicholas concerning the Treaty at Vxbridge.

1. First for Religion & Church Government, I will not goe one jott further, than what is offered by you alreddy.

2. And so for the Militia, more then what ye haue allowed by me: but, euen in that, ye must obserue, that I must haue free nomination of the full halfe; as, if the totall number Scots and all, bee Thirty, I name Fiueeteene; yet if they (I meane the Englishe Rebelles) will be so base as to admitt of Ten Scots, to Twenty Englishe, I am content to name Fiue Scots and Tenn Englishe: and so proportionably to any number that shall be agreede on.

3. As for gaining of particular Persons: besydes Securitie, I giue you power, to promis them Rewards for performed seruices, not sparing to egage (engage) for places, so they be not of great trust, or to be taken away from honnest men in possession: but as much profit as you will: with this last, you ar only to acquaint Richemond, Southampton, Culpeper, & Hyde.

Indorsed, "R. 17<sup>th</sup> febr: 1644. The Kings Memorall concerning Religion and Militia during y<sup>e</sup> Treaty at Uxbridge."

*The King to Prince Rupert.*

Nepueu,

Ticknill<sup>1</sup> 14 June 1644.

First I must congratulate with you, for yo<sup>r</sup> good successes, assuring you, that the things themselues ar no more welcom to

<sup>1</sup> Tickenhall, near Bewdley. Whilst Charles was here, he paid a formal visit to Bewdley, previous to which the Corporation met to determine upon the mode of receiving the Royal visit. The charges are entered upon the Town Books; and it appears that the sum of two shillings was expended in repairing the Corporation Pew in the Church, and sixpence for sweeping out that sacred edifice; making in all, the grand total of two shillings and sixpence sterling!

In a very minute account of the King's affairs at this period, written by Sir



400  
405  
410





PRINCE RUPERT.



me, then that you are the meanes. I know the importance of supplying you with powder, for w<sup>ch</sup> I haue taken all possible wayes, having sent both to Ireland & Bristoll. As from Oxford this bearer is well satisfyd that it is impossible to haue at present, but if he tell you that I may spare them from hence, I leaue you to iudge, hauing but 36 left : but what I can gett from Bristoll (of w<sup>ch</sup> there is not much certainty, it being threatned to be besieged) you shall haue.

Edward Walker, Garter King at Arms, and preserved in the Harleian Collection, No. 4229, it is stated that the King arrived at Bewdley on the 12th ; after having made that very arduous and judicious retreat from Oxfordshire, in which he evaded the pursuit of both Essex and Waller, by forced marches over the country between Witney and Worcester, along what is now the Cheltenham road. The march upon Bewdley is said, by Sir Edward, to have been made with the intent of saving Worcester from a siege, of drawing Waller further from London, and also of enticing him into a difficult country, where the King's army, then without artillery or heavy baggage, might have considerable advantages over him. Waller, however, avoided the western side of the Severn, and fixed his head-quarters at Bromsgrove, contenting himself with advancing a small body of horse to Kidderminster, the "Foreign" of which town, as it is called, reaches to the eastern end of Bewdley Bridge. The King's foot were all in Bewdley on the 14th, and the horse quartered along the Severn towards Bridgenorth.

The King was so much aware of the delicacy of his situation at this moment, that on the day preceding the date of this letter, he had formed a Council of War, directing them to meet every day and report their proceedings in respect to forming a plan of retreat, either into Wales or upon Shrewsbury ; and on this day the Council and King determined to retreat back to Worcester, and so on to Evesham. He was closely followed by Waller ; but, immediately after this date, eluded him so far as to reach Daventry before him, and finally defeated Waller at Cropredy Bridge on the 29th of June.

At the date of this letter the King had got intelligence that York was besieged by the Scottish army (just before the battle of Marston Moor), which was also joined by Fairfax and Lord Manchester ; this explains the military orders here given, which are in perfect consonance with the existing accounts of Prince Rupert's conduct previous to that battle. It may be remarked, however, that Bulstrode, as well as others, brings an accusation against Rupert for fighting the Rebel forces after raising the siege ; but the express words of the King imply a desire not only for the relief of York, but also for a battle with the enemy, else why did he allude to "beating the Rebel armies" as a means of enabling him to spin out time ? This is a most important fact in the history of the Civil Wars ; for the Marquis of Newcastle, and other General Officers, were so disgusted with the Prince for fighting, against or without orders as they supposed, that they left England immediately, going to Hamburg, and thereby the whole of the north and loyal Yorkshire were lost to the Royal Cause !



Whereupon his Ma<sup>tie</sup> declaring openly at y<sup>e</sup> Board, that since such was their Lo<sup>p</sup>s opinion, that hee did therefore and (*eo animo*) consent thereunto. And accordingly his Ma<sup>tie</sup> desired his Highnesse Prince Rupert, as his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Generall, to retorne this answer :

“My Lord,

I am commanded by his Ma<sup>tie</sup> to desire of yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup> a safe-conduct for the Duke of Richmond and the Ea: of South'ton w<sup>th</sup> their attendants, coaches and horses, and other accomodac'ons for their journey in their coming to London, during their stay, and in their returne when they shall thinke fit from y<sup>e</sup> Lords and Com'ons assembled in y<sup>e</sup> Parliament of England at Westminster, to bring to y<sup>e</sup> Lords and Commons assembled in y<sup>e</sup> Parliament of England and y<sup>e</sup> Commission<sup>rs</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Parliament of Scotland now at London an answer to y<sup>e</sup> propositions presented to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> for a safe and well-grounded peace. Resting

Yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup>s Servant,

Oxon. 5<sup>th</sup> Decemb<sup>r</sup> 1644.

RUPERT.”

Which said answer was accordingly sent to London by a Trumpeter.

EDW. NICHOLAS.

The following is in the hand-writing of Sir E. N.

Memorandum: that the King and myself of all the Councell Boorde were the only persons that concurred not in opinion; that it was fitt to call those sitting at Westm<sup>r</sup> a Parliam<sup>t</sup>. P. Rupert thought he were p<sup>s</sup>ent did not vote, because he was to execute what should be resolved on by this Councell; but by the orderr & practice of the Councell Boorde, if the maior part agree to any act or order, all the Councellors that were p<sup>s</sup>ent att the debate, albeit they dissented are involved, and are to be named as if they consented.—E. N.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hemly Hall,<sup>1</sup> 16 May, 1645.

Nicholas, I haue receaued, & thanke you for your seuerall dis-

<sup>1</sup> In Staffordshire, the seat of Lord Dudley.



PRINCE RUPERT.

out of Wallops :<sup>1</sup> for newes I refer you to your fellow Secretair & friend, the generall being, that we are (God be thanked) all well & in hart, the Rebelles hauing twyce offered to beate up some of our quarters, but w<sup>th</sup> losse to themselues : I desyre to know how you goe on in your recuting [recruiting] & fortifications, as well as you haue satisfied me concerning your prouisions : So desyring you to send thease inclosed to 454 : I rest

Your most asseured frend,

CHARLES R.

(Address) "for your selfe."

Indorsed ; 18<sup>o</sup> Maij. 1645. R. 21<sup>o</sup>. The King to me.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Wiston,<sup>2</sup> 4 June 1645.

Nicholas, I haue receaued yours, of the 30 : May, this morning, none of yours hauing yet miscarried : but I would not answer any

untill I were marching towards  
of them myselfe 292 : 287 : 177 : 307 : 222 : 182 : 273 : 36 :  
you without any  
10 : 33 : 20 : 53 : 73 : 313 : 75 : 298 : 232 : thinking of 92 :  
thing else before I haue  
285 : 74 : 44 : 4 : 54 : 45 : 76 : 105 : 134 : 46 : 77 : 177 :  
ed you yet I must  
157 : reliu 133 : 78 : 313 : 312 : 177 : 212 : deale 376 :  
freely w<sup>th</sup> you that my army  
203 : 79 : 298 : 313 : 283 : 17 : 84 : 83 : 325 : is so weake  
being not 4000 foote & sca  
(105 : 182 : 226 : 70 : 80 : 143 : 497 : 375 : 93 : 81 : 55 :  
rce horse as I  
112 : 53 : 45 : 82 : 3500 : 174 : 73 : ) 95 : 177 : 74 : 54 :  
shall vn to relieue  
14 : 11 : 4 : 6 : 73 : 292 : willingly hazard 273 : 33 : 46 :

Jack Barclay, I do not remember that I gave thee any hope of making him Master of the Wards ; for Cottington had it long before thou went hence, and I intended it to Secr. Nich. if he then would haue received it ; and I am deceived if I did not tell thee of it."

<sup>1</sup> Evidently in reference to the sequestrations inflicted upon that gallant and loyal nobleman.

<sup>2</sup> There are several places of this name ; but it seems probable that the Wiston here meant is in Nottinghamshire.



Oxon before Lo. Goring<sup>1</sup> or  
 5 : 23 : 60 : 57 : 436 : 105 : 134 : 382 : 234 : 75 : 7 : 12 :  
 Garrarde be joyned to me  
 34 : 33 : 44 : 105 : 76 : 184 : 31 : 45 : 21 : 273 : 221 :  
 an absolute  
 except such 13 : 32 : 77 : 10 : 50 : 53 : 40 : 4 : 61 : 70 :  
 necessity that  
 46 : 78 : 32 : 57 : 1 : 44 : 54 : 55 : 45 : 71 : 85 : 283 :  
 Oxon wilbe lost if not  
 436 : 305 : 105 : 79 : 4 : 42 : 53 : 72 : 183 : 226 : 70 :  
 by such a day, wherfore as you  
 78 : reliued 106 : 267 : 11 : 123 : 302 : 134 : 97 : 313 : 5 :  
 love my p<sup>s</sup>ervation  
 43 : 63 : 44 : 80 : 18 : 86 : 81 : 243 : 54 : 45 : 33 :  
 use  
 62 : 11 : 70 : 185 : 82 : 291 : 46 : 83 : all possible meanes  
 of prolonging yo<sup>r</sup> provisions though it  
 233 : 244 : 196 : 182 : 314 : 448 : 55 : 77 : 286 : 178 :  
 be by chasing out all  
 105 : 106 : 78 : 2 : 14 : 13 : 54 : 182 : 232 : 90 : unneces-  
 people who haue not  
 sary 47 : 44 : 40 : 48 : 6 : 45 : 304 : 157 : 226 : 71 : 79 :  
 prouision for themselves & stin  
 448 : 134 : 281 : 19 : 53 : 46 : 5 : 57 : 54 : 74 : 93 : 75 :  
 ting D. of  
 55 : 70 : 24 : 30 : 71 : 182 : euery one (117 : 233 : 512 :  
 Yorke not ed to a small  
 226 : 72 : except 133) 273 : 73 : 10 : 74 : 53 : 17 : 11 : 4 :  
 proportion of meate  
 44 : 77 : 244 : 47 : 40 : 33 : 70 : 185 : 78 : 233 : 221 :  
 euery day & doe  
 12 : 71 : 45 : 79 : 129 : 86 : 80 : 123 : 93 : 118 : 45 :  
 not me to you w<sup>th</sup>out very  
 226 : 72 : 81 : hasten 221 : 273 : 313 : 298 : 232 : 294 :  
 very necessity  
 74 : 60 : 44 : 33 : 84 : 74 : absolute 30 : 46 : 3 : 45 : 53 :  
 for upon the faith  
 55 : 23 : 70 : 85 : 83 : 73 : 134 : 293 : 235 : 281 : 137 : 233 :

<sup>1</sup> Goring at this period was engaged in the siege of Taunton, and had been ordered, as Bulstrode asserts, by letters from the King, to quit that place and join his Majesty, who was afraid, just before the battle of Naseby, that the enemy might be too powerful for him. Bulstrode says that he wrote the General's reply, in which Charles was urged to act upon the defensive until Taunton should be taken; but this writer hints some strong suspicions of Goring being actuated by sinister views. The whole passage is curious. Vide Bulstrode's Memoirs, p. 124. Edit. 1721.

of a Christian noe  
 75 : 10 : 76 : 1 : 14 : 33 : 23 : 53 : 70 : 24 : 11 : 30 : 77 :  
 tyme be lost for yo<sup>r</sup>  
 226 : 498 : shall 105 : 78 : 5 : 40 : 54 : 72 : 134 : 314 :  
 succour how soone it may  
 488 : 78 : 16 : 41 : 36 : 266 : 235 : 45 : 79 : 178 : 209 :  
 be donne w<sup>h</sup> any of not  
 105 : 121 : 298 : 92 : probability 233 : 226 : 71 : 73 : 16 :  
 hazarding like  
 12 : 56 : 13 : 34 : 20 : 182 : 199 : 77 : mad men ; which  
 I stay at Harborow  
 177 : shall 55 : 72 : 10 : 86 : 94 : 74 : 15 : 11 : 34 : 50 : 43 :  
 (w<sup>ch</sup> is my morrows march)  
 35 : 39 : (299 : 178 : 17 : 84 : 216 : 41 : 38 : 55 : 222 : )  
 some tyme to gather up &  
 262 : 498 : 273 : 75 : 8 : 12 : 281 : 34 : 293 : straglers 93 :  
 to make provision to supply you for this service  
 273 : 219 : 448 : 273 : 486 : 313 : 134 : 90 : 282 : 318 : &  
 march faster or  
 then wee shall 222 : 76 : 64 : 11 : 53 : 70 : 44 : 33 : 234 : 77 :  
 slower  
 54 : 5 : 42 : 307 : according to intelligence. So I rest  
 Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

Indorsed, 4<sup>o</sup> Junij 1645, "the K<sup>e</sup> to me."

\*. \* The decyphering is in the hand-writing of Sir Edward Nicholas.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas,

Daintry, 9 June 1645.

I have receaued so many letters from you, that I beliuue none of them ar miscaried,<sup>1</sup> & this morning one from you of the 7. & w<sup>th</sup> it one of the same date from all my Comissioners except Southampton and Dorset by w<sup>ch</sup> I perceauue they were not so much stressed by the siege as the rest : but the cheefe end of this is, by you to seed this inclosed to 454 : tell 394 : that I have

<sup>1</sup> The fact is, however, that Charles's general correspondence was, at this time, much interrupted ; for the letter of Goring, already alluded to, was intercepted by Fairfax, and induced the Rebel Commanders to bring the King to action at Naseby, before he could be joined by the army from the West.

his  
receaued 165 of the 1<sup>st</sup> of May but would not stay this messenger  
untill it was desyfered: I will say no more now, but if we peri-  
patetiques get no more mischances then you Oxfordians<sup>1</sup> ar lyke  
to haue this somer, we may all expect probably a merry winter.  
So I rest

Your most asseured frend,

CHARLES R.

"For your selfe."

9<sup>o</sup> Junij. 1645. R. 10<sup>o</sup>. His Ma<sup>ty</sup> 1<sup>st</sup> to me.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas,

Daintry, 11 June 1645.

As I thanke you for aduerticing me, so I much wonder 94 :  
the letter & message w<sup>ch</sup> the  
281 : 204 : 93 : 221 : 53 : 55 : 10 : 7 : 44 : 73 : 299 : 281 :  
Lords brought me,  
406 : 54 : 74 : 50 : 33 : 40 : 60 : 8 : 14 : 70 : 75 : 221 : for  
that the Councell was neuer  
you know 283 : 281 : 351 : 76 : 36 : 11 : 53 : 77 : 30 : 129 :  
wont to debate  
78 : 37 : 40 : 31 : 71 : 79 : 273 : 80 : 20 : 45 : 51 : 12 :  
not propounded  
23 : 72 : 46 : upon any matter : 226 : 70 : 81 : 244 : 249 :  
to them by King it  
133 : 273 : 281 : 17 : 82 : 106 : y<sup>e</sup> 398 : & certainly 178 :  
were thing if my marching Army  
307 : a strange 285 : 183 : 83 : 18 : 84 : 222 : 182 : 325 :  
at the head of them  
(espetially I being 94 : 281 : 173 : 233 : 281 : 19 : and) should  
by my sitting  
be gouerned 106 : 73 : 17 : 85 : 74 : 53 : 24 : 70 : 122 :

<sup>1</sup> A letter written by his Majesty, on this day, to the Queen, was intercepted by the emissaries of the Parliament. In it he assured her that the Rebels had been forced to raise the siege of Oxford, in consequence of his march after the taking of Leicester; and that quarrels were then very frequent between Fairfax's and Cromwell's soldiers. He also observed that his affairs never were in so hopeful and so fair a way; adding, in the tenderest manner, that all he wished for, in case of eventual success, was the undisturbed enjoyment of her society!





Land Abay

morrow.<sup>1</sup> I marche to 4 : 10 : 30 : 20 : 11 : 50 : 12 : 84 :  
Melton  
 82 : after that to 17 : 44 : 5 : 70 : 40 : 31 : & so to 51 : 45 :  
 Belvoir  
 6 : 60 : 42 : 23 : 33 : but I assure you that I shall looke before  
North  
 I leape farther 32 : 43 : 34 : 72 : 14 : 73 : but I am going to  
 supper, so I rest

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R

Woluerhampton 17 June.

This was written befor the Bataile.

“For your selfe.”

17<sup>o</sup> Junii 1645. The King to me before y<sup>e</sup> Battaile of Naisby.

### *The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.<sup>2</sup>*

Nicholas, I thanke you for the freedom you haue used in your  
the ill intelligence betwixt  
 letters to me, & as for 281 : 23 : 4 : 6 : 395 : 105 : 70 : 36 : 24 :  
my Soldiers  
 87 : 71 : 73 : 17 : 84 : 484 : 53 : I believe I haue found the bottom  
 of it, & haue put such a remedy to it, as hope heereafter to haue  
 little troble that way : and am confident, that there is 226 : 288 :

<sup>1</sup> The “inclosed” Letter is not in the possession of the Editor ; but, on a comparison of dates and facts, it appears to have contained the news of the capture of Leicester. It was at midnight, after this Letter was written, that a Council was held in the King’s tent, and a resolution taken to give battle to the enemy ; but it also appears by this Letter, that when Charles retired to rest on that night, he had no intention of adopting those measures which, recommended by a *midnight Council*, proved the entire ruin of his affairs.

<sup>2</sup> This Letter is without date of place ; but it, and several of the subsequent ones, mark the King’s route between the battle of Naseby and his arrival at Newark ; a space of time during which Bulstrode describes him as “flying from place to place, not well knowing which way to turn himself.” It is evident, however, that he had specific plans in view ; on account of which he visited Wales, Shropshire, and afterwards Huntingdon and Yorkshire, before he proceeded to Newark.

113 : 233 : 487 : with 10 : 153 : 55 : 72 : 382 : 93 : 414 :  
fancies

104 : 477 : 165 : 295 : 76 : 64 : 11 : 30 : 1 : 26 : 44 : 54 :  
for this I haue very good ground ; but now I desyre to know who  
ar the melancolly men amongst you, that is to say if any dispare  
of our business, (for we heere thinke that we had so much the  
better, as we might spare them thus much & yet be upon equall

Southampton

termes,) & in particular what 478 : 421 : 385 : 93 : 406 : 54 :  
45 : 18 : 46 : 34 : thinkes of my present affaires : I haue so  
good hopes of my Welshe leauiers that I dout not but (by the grace  
of God) to be in the head of a greater Army within this two  
monthes, then any I haue seene this yere, & so I rest

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

This is in my owld cyfer to show I haue not lost it ; send this  
inclosed where you use to doe.

"For your selfe."

R: 8<sup>o</sup> July 1645. The K<sup>r</sup> to me.

*Prince Rupert to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Sir,

I sent you word by Col<sup>l</sup> Terringham that I had receaved your  
letter by this woman, so alsoe the unfortunat losse of brige Watter,  
sence w<sup>ch</sup> I heare noe sertay'ty of the Enemy's motions. there is  
a shippe landed at dartmouth laden w<sup>th</sup> 200 bar<sup>l</sup> of powder and

If Fairfax advance speedily  
store of arms. 209 : 474 : 53 : 76 : 33 : 99 : 10 : 40 : 343 :

to us Wee shall bee  
40 : 225 : 347 : 363 : 369 : 28 : 87 : 97 : 110 : forced 76 :

to quit Bath want of men and  
347 : 308 : 437 : for 13 : 54 : 81 : 50 : 278 : 248 : 100 :

victualls hee give us  
616 : 30 : 527 : but if 604 : 91 : 183 : 174 : 363 : 20 :

time wee doe well  
51 : 17 : 38 : 43 : 369 shall 125 : 373 : 273 : 158 : —I heare



Prince Charles is at Pendennis  
 but little from G<sup>l</sup> Goring.<sup>1</sup> 544 : 280 : 207 : 101 : 4 : 140 :  
 Castle that S<sup>r</sup> Jo: Berkly  
 40 : 79 : 207 : 96 : 452 : it is reported 354. 431. 190. 174.  
 hath given five hundred to some I know for to stop  
 81. 153. 204. 158. 347. 328. body 205. 218.—148. 347. 30. 50.  
 Prince Charles<sup>2</sup> from coming to Exeter.  
 27. 6. 40. 544. 160. 119. 208. 66. 347. 470. I doubt we shall  
 Sir R. Grenville<sup>3</sup> y<sup>e</sup> only souldier in  
 shortly see the mistery of this.<sup>3</sup> 482. 353. 282. 225. 594. 208.  
 the West is & is at  
 353. 371. 207. 76. discontented 78. 40. 77. 90. 100. 207. 101.  
 his owne house y<sup>e</sup>  
 184. 284. 85. 24. 33. 28. 43. w<sup>ch</sup> he will defend. What 499.  
 King will doe I know not. Lo: Digby s word (part erased) I shall  
 371. 125. 205. 218. 267. 456. send. 28. 13. 76. 40. or 205. 30.  
 as on as some s  
 85. 97. 108. 102. so 2. 82. 90. 102. 328. speculation 30. 20. 31.

<sup>1</sup> Goring had been defeated by Fairfax, on the 10th of this month, at Sutton-field, near Bridgewater, which town surrendered to the Parliament on the 23d. Colonel Windham, the Governor, made a gallant defence, for he had been educated in principles of rational loyalty. Some years afterwards, when he assisted Charles the Second in his escape, he told the King, that Sir Thomas, his father, in the year 1636, a few days before his death, called to him his five sons: "My children," said he, "we have hitherto seen serene and quiet times under our three last Sovereigns; but I must now warn you to prepare for clouds and storms. Factions arise on every side, and threaten the tranquillity of your native country. But whatever happen, *do you faithfully honour and obey your Prince, and adhere to the Crown.* I charge you *never to forsake the Crown, though it should hang upon a bush.*" Hume's England, vol. vii. p. 199, edit. 1812.

<sup>2</sup> Charles (the Prince) had first been under the tuition of the Marquis of Newcastle, afterwards of the Marquis of Hertford; also of Dr. Duppa, Bishop of Salisbury. His education, latterly, was at Oxford, of which University the Marquis of Hertford was Chancellor.

<sup>3</sup> Berkeley was high in the Prince of Wales's confidence about the time of this "mystery"—for when Goring complained of the proceedings of the Prince's Council, Berkeley was sent, along with Sir Hugh Pollard and Colonel Ashburnham, to hold a private conference with him on the subject.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Richard Grenville was soon after proposed to command the foot in the Army of the West, when the insubordination of the troops, through the misconduct of Lord Wentworth, rendered some new arrangements absolutely necessary. But Grenville, contrary to expectation, refused to act; and he was therefore sent prisoner to the Castle in Mount's Bay, where he remained until the successes of the Parliament Army in that quarter induced the Prince, lest he should fall into their hands, to permit him to transport himself to the Continent.

are brought to proiection  
 98. 71. 44. 24. 36. 66. 87. 50. 20. 347. 301. 16. 40. 10. 50.  
 211. 604. 341. Pray god this prove well. Just as I am writing  
 the Scots Army is past betweene  
 I heare that 280. 353. 592. 427. 207. 4. 102. 50. 20. 110. 50.  
 Monmouth & Abergainy  
 369. 80. 40. 37. 24. 81. 39. 27. 36. 51. 87. 90. 97. 53. 61. 44.  
 177. 41. 94. 31. this inclosed is conserning the commissioners of  
 asseise, whoe are soe bond up by the members att Oxford that  
 noe thing canbe issued w<sup>th</sup>out their consent ; if they were but soe  
 farr trusted as that, in such case as now we are in, (when we need  
 powder and provisions) monys might be issued from thence to such  
 uses as shall be most necessary for his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service in the guari-  
 son, I shall be accountable that none shall be desired by me w<sup>th</sup>out  
 there be a great necessity. I pray lett me have a speedy answer,  
 w<sup>ch</sup> will infenety oblige

Your most faithfull frend,

RUPERT.

Bristol 27 of July.

27<sup>o</sup> July 1645. Rec. 31. Pr<sup>e</sup> Rupert to me.

*Prince Rupert to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Sir,

As I told you our resolution in my last by the woman<sup>we</sup> 369 :  
 are ced to quit Bath. The King for designe :  
 98. for-138. 347. 308. 437. 499. intends 148. 592. a fine 459.  
 you may be sure that I have hand in it, for I have this from others :  
 this is alle our news : pray write often to us ; I have receaved but  
 one expresse from you, the rest were by messengers of my owne.  
 So I rest

Yo<sup>r</sup> most faithfull frend,

RUPERT.

Bristoll 29<sup>th</sup> of July.



*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Cardife 4 Aug. 1645.

Nicholas, hauing comanded your fellow Secretary<sup>1</sup> to giue you a full accout as well of our proceedings heere, as resolutions; I will nether trouble you nor my selfe with repetitions: only for my selfe I must desyre you to lett euery one know, that no distresse of fortune whatsoeuer shall euer make me (by the grace of God) in any thing receade from those grounds I layed doune to you, who were my Comissioners at Uxbridge; & w<sup>ch</sup> (I thanke them) the Rebelles haue published in print: & though I could haue wished that paines had beene spaired, yet I will nether deny that those things ar myne, w<sup>ch</sup> they haue sett out in my name, (only some words heere and there mistaken, & some com'as misplaced, but not much materiall) nor, as a good Protestant, or honnest man, blushe for any of those papers; indeed, as a discreet man, I will not justefy my selfe: & yet I would faine know him, who would be willing that the freedome of all his priuat letters were publicly seene, as myne haue now beene; howsoeuer, so that one clause be rightly understood, I care not much though the rest take their fortunes; it is, concerning the Mungrill Parliament: the trewth is, that Sussex<sup>2</sup> factiousness, at that tyme, put me somewhat out of patience, w<sup>ch</sup> made me freely vent my displeasure against those of his party to my Wyfe, & the intention of that phrase was, that his faction did what they could to make it come to that, by their raising and fomenting of basse propositions: this is cleerely euident by my following excuse to her for suffring those people to trouble her, the reason being, to eschew those greater inconueniences w<sup>ch</sup> they had & wer more lykly to cause heere, then there. I am going to supper, so I rest

Your most asseured frend,

CHARLES R.

I have reaued (received) your new cyfer as for example, <sup>my</sup> 224 :

Lord Digby.

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Lord Saville, recently created Earl of Sussex.



(erased) in that  
 302 : 181 : 176 : 276 : 14 : 54 : 11 : 308 : 216 : 17 : 1 :  
 181 : 72 : 232 : 18 : 35 : 2 : 50 : 151 : 51 : 60 : 316 : 110 :  
 168 : Husbands 346 : 398 : 316 : 98 : 290 : 295 : 86 : 70 : ac-  
 cording 290 : 277 : 225 : 19 : 43 : 3 : 37 : 80 : 231 : 277 :  
 thing  
 280 :

Indorsed, Cardiff 4<sup>o</sup> Aug: 1645. R. 10. The King to me concerning the  
 Mungrill P<sup>l</sup>iam't.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Bridgenorthe, 9 Aug: 1645.

Nicholas, this morning I receaved yours of the 30<sup>o</sup> July,  
 w<sup>ch</sup> requyres no answer but thanks for your often aduertis-  
 ments: & particularly for those w<sup>ch</sup> ar of most freedome,  
 in answer to w<sup>ch</sup> I shall desyre you, (with the like freeness) to

Digby's friends make not most  
 take heed that 358 : 51 : 376 : 53 : 210 : 229 : 17 : 50 : 220 :  
 of suspicion (erased) for I cannot con  
 231 : 277 : 511 : against 401 : 147 : 174 : 111 : 229 : 18 : 115 :  
 from you that Digby (erased)  
 ceale : 148 : 316 : 276 : 358 : 39 : 31 : 19 : 35 : 53 : perfectly  
 and all that are beleaved to be his  
 453 : 96 : 94 : 276 : 98 : 104 : 202 : 83 : 290 : 104 : 170 : par-  
 friends that there is no  
 ticular 376 : 52 : & I asseur you 276 : 277 : 1 : 36 : 60 : 181 :  
 dispatch yet come to me from  
 229 : 124 : 72 : 32 : 17 : 61 : 41 : 315 : 116 : 290 : 213 : 148 :

401 : For newes, I refer you to your frends, only I must tell you  
 Lichfield & soe to New  
 that to morrow I intend to march to 403 : 96 : 266 : 290 : 437 :  
 arke y<sup>e</sup> next day; but if y<sup>e</sup> Irish be  
 277 : 227 : 524 : 109 : 175 : 277 : 78 : 2 : 79 : 51 : 42 : 104 :  
 come then I turne to  
 116 : of w<sup>ch</sup> I haue good hope 277 : 27 : 174 : shall 17 : 43 : 3 :

<sup>1</sup> These figures are decyphered by Sir Edward Nicholas, but erased with a  
 pen; yet may in part be restored.

Chester

28 : 37 : 290 : 340. My last was from Cardife, w<sup>ch</sup> was written in such haste that I forgot to bid you send me word (w<sup>ch</sup> now I earnestly desyre you not to forget to doe) how my printed letters ar, & haue been, sensured at Oxford, by the seuerall sorts of people, according to their dyuerse humors ; this is all at this tyme from

Your most asseured frend,

CHARLES R.

In the voide place of your last cyfer at the end of the W<sup>s</sup> of the hindermost alfabet I haue filled it, with the word *want* : lykewais the two others at the end of the Y<sup>s</sup> with *yesternight* & *yonder*.

9<sup>o</sup> Aug: 1645. R. 16<sup>o</sup>. The King to me from Bridgenorth.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Doncaster, 18 Aug : 1645.

Nicholas, I haue sent this bearer expressly to giue you a particular account of my present condition, w<sup>ch</sup> considering what it was at the beginning of this monthe, is now (I thanke God) miraculously good ; and indeed the gentlemen in thease partes shoves themselves really affectionat & harty in my service : acting cherfully (without any grumbling) what I desyre. Now I expect, not only that (lyke ants) you haue plentifully prouyded your selves for winter, but lykewais that you so recrute your selves in men & armes, that it may be a lusty stocke for a next years army : So I rest,

Your asseured frend,

CHARLES R.

As I haue com'aded my Sone to comend me to all the Laydis, so you must to all the Lords my frends, & particularly to Vulpone, & tell the Gouvernor that he has forgotten that he sent me a cyfer.

Doncaster 18<sup>o</sup> Aug. 1645. R. 23. The King to me.

unanswered in your two letters I refer you to your fellow Secretary, & rest

Your most assured friend,

CHARLES R.

R. 24<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1645. His Ma<sup>ties</sup> let to me that y<sup>e</sup> Rebells have not printed  
some l<sup>rs</sup> of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> Queens w<sup>ch</sup> justifie their Ma<sup>ties</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> busenes concerng  
Ireland.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Bridgenorthe 1 Oct. 1645.

Nicholas, none of your letres haue hitherto miscarried, this day having receaued the 12<sup>t</sup> by Wytefoord, & shall at this tyme, more insist upon telling you of my desynes & giuing you directions, then in answers, hauing comanded your fellow Secretary to supply that : first then, (that you may know whither to send to me) I intend my

Newarke

course towards 437; where I shall take further resolutions accord-

ing to occasion : Understanding that 224 : 173 : 293 : 83 : 36 :

Goring

beaten

OF

3 : 380 : is lykely to be eather 14 : 37 : 32 : 17 : 38 : 27 :

starved

where

they

242 : 53 : 19 : 32 : 2 : 43 : 36 : 84 : 307 : 277 : 47 : 20 :

are

him

0

break

through

98 : I haue com'and 169 : 290 : 14 : 2 : 36 : 33 : 62 : 37 :

to me

passé

0

neere

60 : 283 : 290 : 213 : now they must 238 : 110 : 232 : 226 :

Охон

to

443 : wherfor my plasure is, that you take that oportunity 290 :

send D. of Yorke to me

264 : 125 : 231 : 541 : 290 : 213 : for since it is the fashion

yeelde

LOWNDS

basely 1

to 314 : 17 : 54 : 68 : 27 : 35 : 52 : 70 : 4 : 33 : 52 :

venture

my

36 : 207 : none can blame me to 43 : 35 : 27 : 19 : 44 : 3 :

children

in

n army

224 : 59 : 39 : 79 : 4 : 84 : 2 : 36 : 27 : 176 : 95 : 323 :

<sup>1</sup> This evidently refers to the King's displeasure against Prince Rupert for the loss of Bristol.



rather then to be  
 47 : 90 : 2 : 33 : 277 : 3 : 18 : 39 : 36 : 27 : 290 : 104 :  
 besieged  
 60 : 16 : 36 : 52 : 38 : 78 : 24 : 127 : I haue no more to  
 say but that I approue of all your aduyses in your last, & meanes  
 the Queene of England  
 to follow them : one of thease inclosed is for 247 : 231 : 363 :  
 the other speakes it selfe. So I rest

Your most asseured friend,

CHARLES R.

"For your selfe."

1<sup>o</sup> Octobr 1645. His Ma<sup>ty</sup> to me concerning sending y<sup>e</sup> D. of Yorke to him  
 by Lo: Goring.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas,

When you shall have considered the strange and most inexcusable deliverye vpp of the Castle and Fort of Bristoll,<sup>1</sup> and compared it with those many precedinge aduertisments w<sup>ch</sup> have been giuen mee, I make noe doubt, but you and all my Counsell there will conclude that I could doe noe lesse, then what you will finde heere inclosed, in my care of the preservation of my Sonne, of all you my faithfull servaunts there, and of that importaunt place, my City of Oxford. In the first place you will finde a copy of my letter to my nephew; secondly, a reuocation of his commission of Generall; thirdly, a warrant to Lieutenant Coll Hamilton to exercise the charge of Lieutenant Gouvernor of Oxford in Sir Thomas Glemhams<sup>2</sup> absence; fourthly, a warrant to the sayd Lieutenant Colonell Hamilton to apprehend the person of Will: Legge<sup>3</sup> present Gouvernour of Oxford; and lastly, a warrant

<sup>1</sup> Alluded to in the preceding letter.

<sup>2</sup> The King appears to have reposed great confidence in Sir Thomas Glemham, notwithstanding his surrender of Carlisle on the 28th of June preceding, but not till after a long siege, and finally despairing of succour. Indeed, he had distinguished himself, from the first, in the Royal Cause; having been second in command in Yorkshire, under the Earl of Cumberland.

<sup>3</sup> This is a piece of private history not noticed in the Peerage; but it is incumbent to record that the King's suspicions of his old and faithful friend, the ancestor of the present noble family of Dartmouth, were eventually ascertained to be without the slightest foundation.

to be directed to what person shall bee thought fittest for the apprehending my Nephew Rupert, in case of such extremitie as shall bee hereafter specifyed, and not otherwise. As for the circumstances and the timinge of the execution of all these particulars, as farr forth as they may admitt of some howres delay more or lesse, I must referr it to my Lord Treasurers<sup>1</sup> care and yours to aduise of, vpon the place, how it may be done with most securitye, and accordinglye to direct the manner of proceedinge. But yett I shall tell you my opinion as farr forth as I can judge at this distance, w<sup>ch</sup> is, that you should beginne with securing the person of Will: Legge, before any thing be declared concerninge my Nephew. But that once done, then the sooner you declare to the Lords both the revokinge of my Nephews commission, and my makinge Sr Thomas Glemham Gouvernour of Oxford, the better. As for the deliuey of my letter to my Nepheu, if hee bee at Oxford, I take the proper time for that to be as soone as possiblye may bee after the securinge of Will: Legge. But if my Nepheu be not there, I would then haue you hasten my letter unto him, and in the meane time putt the rest in execution.

The warrant for my Nephews commitment is onlye that you may haue the power to doe it, if in stead of submitinge to, and obeyinge my commaunds in goinge beyond sea, you shall finde that hee practise the raysinge of mutinye or any other disturbance in that place, or any other, in w<sup>ch</sup> case the sayd warrant for his committment is to bee deliuered unto whome you and my Lord Treasurer shall thinke fittest for it to be directed unto, and by that person to be putt in execution. Lastlye I enjoyne you the care to lett all the Lords know, that whateuer is done in this kinde, is out of my tender regard of their safetye and preservation, and that they shall speedilye receiue for their satisfaction a particular account of the reasons of this necessarye proceedinge. I rest

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

Hereford, Sept: 14<sup>th</sup> 1645.

Tell my Sone that I shall lesse greeue to heere that he is knoked in the head then that he should doe soe meane an action

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Culpepper.



as is the rendring of Bristoll Castell & Fort<sup>1</sup> upon the termes it was. C.R.

R: 17<sup>th</sup> 7<sup>bris</sup> 1645, by Mr. North. The King to me.

Copie of Pr: RUPERTS &c. Petition deliuered at Newarke.<sup>2</sup>

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> most excellent Ma<sup>ty</sup>,

Whereas in all humility wee came to present our selues this day unto your Ma<sup>ty</sup>, to make our seuerall greevances knowne, Wee find we haue drawne upon us some misconstruction by the manner of that, by reason your Ma<sup>ty</sup> thought that appeared as a mutiny, Wee shall therefore with all humblenes and carefulnes present unto your Ma<sup>ty</sup>, that wee, the persons subscribed, whom from the beginning of this unhappy warre haue giuen such testimony to your Ma<sup>ty</sup> and the world of our fidelity and zeale to your Ma<sup>ty</sup>s person and cause, doe thinke our selves unhappy to lye under that censure; and as wee know in our consciences our selues innocent and free from that, wee doe in all humility therefore (least wee should hazard our selues upon a second misinterpre-

<sup>1</sup> The King's anger at the surrender of Bristol is not surprising, when it is recollected that Prince Rupert actually possessed 140 pieces of mounted cannon, 100 barrels of powder, with 2500 foot, 1000 horse, and 1000 trained bands and auxiliaries; but then he had not more than sixteen days' provisions for such a force. Indeed the King's feelings at this precise period must have been very bitter; since the immediate and consequent loss of Devizes, Winchester, Basing House, Berkeley Castle, and Chepstowe, reduced his affairs to a situation almost desperate.

<sup>2</sup> The affair that gave rise to this Petition deserves notice; for the King having at this moment gone to Newark, as a place of the best security, some differences of opinion arose amongst his confidential officers respecting the defeat of Lord Digby at Sherborne, which General Gerard asserted to be the result of treason. Digby's character, however, was supported by Bellasis, the Governor, and several others; but the Princes, Rupert and Maurice, sided with Gerard. At length swords were drawn, and the King rushed in to part them; but when it was found that his opinion was in favour of Digby, Prince Rupert, and 400 of that party, actually threw up their commissions, as Burton declares in his *Civil Wars*, though this Petition seems to imply positively that their commissions were taken from them.

There appears a strange inconsistency in the accounts given of those affairs by the various contemporary writers of that period. The curious reader will find much amusement in referring to Bulstrode's *Memoirs*, page 127, et seq.; also to Clarendon, &c. &c.



tation) present these reasons of our humblest desires unto your sacred Ma<sup>tie</sup>, rather in writing than personally, which are these :

That many of us trusted in high commands in your Ma<sup>ties</sup> service, haue not only our com'ission taken away without any reason or cause expressed, whereby our honors are blemished to the world, our fortunes ruined, and wee rendred incapable of trust or command from any forraigne Prince ; but many others (as we haue cause to feare) designed to suffer in the same manner.

Our intention in our addressing our selues to your Ma<sup>tie</sup>, and our submissiue desires, now are : that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> wilbee graciously pleased that such of us as now labour under the opinion of unworthinesse and incapacity to serue your Ma<sup>tie</sup>, may at a Councell of Warre, receiue knowledge of the cause of your Ma<sup>ties</sup> displeasure, and haue the justice and libertie of our defence against what can be alleaged against us, and in particular concerning this Government ; and if upon the severest examinac'on our integrity and loyaltie to your Ma<sup>tie</sup> shall appeare, that then your Ma<sup>tie</sup> be graciously pleased to grant us, either reparation in honour, against the of our ennemys, or libertie to passe into other partes, which are the humblest desires of

Your Ma<sup>ties</sup>

most obedient and loyall subjects and servants.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Newarke 10 Oct: 1645.

Nicholas,

none of yours haue yet miscarried, haueing yesternight receaued your 14<sup>th</sup> letter : before this, I hope S<sup>r</sup> Tho: Glemham will be come to you, whom I haue com'anded to take particular care of purging Oxford of mutinus & disaffected persons ; & least he should not be bould anufe, hauing yet but a verball com'and, I thinke fitt now, that you should show him this, under my hand, that my pleasure heerein be dewly executed, whomsoever it may concerne : As for your Ticket of Accommodation, that I may understand it the better (for it yet seemes to me but an insignificant peece) I com'and you to send me the two Colonels Fox &

Murray;<sup>1</sup> being possible that it may receaue such illumination, by the illustration of circumstances, as what hitherto seemes but a darke chaos, may breake forth into a *lactea via*, leading to peace :

Will: Legge no suspicion of but

For what concernes 401 : I haue 229 : 511 : 231 : 109 : 305 :  
what Lo: Digby informed

358 : 96 : 316 : 166 : 176 : 147 : 213 : 83 : me, w<sup>ch</sup> satisfies me

what I have done but not him  
as to 305 : 174 : 166 : 122 : 109 : 229 : 17 : believe 169 :

guilty of trickery more  
24 : 43 : 78 : 4 : 18 : 79 : 35 : 231 : 521 : before I see 221 :

particular proofs<sup>2</sup>

467 : 72 : 1 : 54 : 57 : 7 : 51 : Our Northerne newes<sup>3</sup> we hope  
to be as good as your Westernne, though yet not so fully ratified,

but in confidence thereof I  
109 : 176 : 350 : 29 : 58 : 35 : 277 : 2 : 231 : 174 : thinke

fit to advance a daye or  
143 : 290 : 87 : 43 : 31 : 27 : 61 : 36 : 10 : 32 : 20 : 118 : 51 :

two's march and if Montrose be in that part

232 : 568 : 212 : 60 : 96 : 175 : 417 : 104 : 176 : 276 : 113 :  
as I hope he is there I intend

99 : 174 : 172 : 167 : 181 : 30 : 277 : 28 : and : 174 : 176 :  
to joyne w<sup>th</sup>

19 : 38 : 27 : 85 : 10 : 290 : 179 : 28 : 37 : 30 : 303 : 169 :

So hoping shortly to send you more certanty of our good newes,  
& how I shall dispose of my selfe, then yet I can, I rest

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

my wyfe

This inclosed is for 224 : 68 : 47 : 7 : 35.

"For your selfe."

10<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1645. R: 17. 1645. His Ma<sup>ties</sup> to me concerning Coll: Will: Murray. The 17<sup>th</sup> of 8<sup>bris</sup> Col: W. Murrey was sent for by the Lo<sup>ds</sup>, & his Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure signified to him to attend y<sup>e</sup> King accordingly.

<sup>1</sup> The whole of this affair is curious, and is very little noticed in the history of that time.

<sup>2</sup> It is a certain fact, of which the King was afterwards well assured, that the insinuations against Legge's loyalty were founded on falsehood.

<sup>3</sup> Alluding evidently to the victory gained by Montrose at Kilsythe in Scotland; but the King's hopes were soon after quashed, when Leslie defeated Montrose at Philiphaugh.



*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Newarke 16 Oct. 1645.

Nicholas,

I haue receaued 17 letters from you, for w<sup>ch</sup> I hartely thanke you, wee being very much cheered by your frequent dispatches, wherfor I dout not but you will continew in so doeing : I wrote

to you upon Fryday last, wherin there was a letter for <sup>my wyfe</sup> 224 : 68 : 49 : 7 : 35 : 30 : 300 : and lykewise in that dispatche (I will not say that all was in myne) you were answerd concerning the Gouvernor of the Deuyses, & all others in his predicament, as lykewais the L: Hatton : so that now I haue but fower particulars to answer :

the Earle of Norwich<sup>1</sup>

I begin with 277 : 126 : 231 : 431 : about whome I embrace and thanke you for your motion, & comand you to send him word accordingly ; secondly for Mr. Atturney,<sup>2</sup> tell him if the Rebelles neuer did but justice or what they had lawfull power to doe, then his answer good, otherwais it is not worthe a button ; wherfor if he confesse my power, lett him accept my offer, otherwais I shall know what I haue to doe ; as for Rainsford, let the Judges pro-

the Duke of York

ceede : lastly concerning 200 : 277 : 125 : 231 : 541 : 300 : if (as I hope) 380 : haue 156 : 271 : 176 : 277 : 525 : then 276 : 440 : concerning 169 : 302 : 27 : 54 : 17 : 10 : 163 : 72 : 35 : 28 : 20 : 109 : 175 : 380 : 104 : 374 : 83 : 30 : 290 : 250 : 277 : 525 : 96 : 116 : 290 : 213 : 303 : 170 : 173 : in that case it wer a folly in 213 : 290 : 194 : 224 : 266 : 29 : 36 : 40 : 101 : 443 : in the meane tyme 115 : 58 : 37 : 31 : 4 : 38 : 50 : 305 : I haue written in this 293 : 17 : 78 : 5 : 6 : 60 : 279 : 447 : 79 : 18 : 47 : 136 : 236 : as I haue sayed 109 : 277 : 27 : 70 : 83 : 38 : 59 : 6 : 98 : 35 : 90 : 224 : 302 : 167 : 36 : 1 : 176 : first 290 : 412 : 383 : (174 : 177 : 169 : 276 : 540 : 231 : cyfer 211 : 36 : 10 : 213 : 229 : 18 : 20 : 71 : 2 : 48 : 19 : 30 : 279 : 290 : 169 :) 277 : 27 : 40 : 290 : 277 : 50 : 3 : 37 : 51 : 19 : 90 : this is all, so I rest

Your most asseured frend,

CHARLES R

<sup>1</sup> Previously spoken of as General Goring.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Edward Herbert, Knt.



settle an intelligence  
 Methinks you might 51 : 35 : 17 : 4 : 36 : 10 : 31 : 27 :  
 to y<sup>r</sup> next by London  
 391 : 290 : 277 : 525 : 110 : 400 : 300 :

I send you heerewith the trew coppy of an intelligence from  
 neere Ferrebriges, from one who hath the report of a discreet  
 honnest man : by the Army he meanes Digby and Landale,<sup>1</sup> w<sup>ch</sup>  
 part I believe trew ; but for the former, I know the particular of  
 my Wyfe, false : & for the rest, I leaue you to judge, not yet  
 knowing what to say.

341 : 209 : 266 : 27 : 10 : 390 : 51 : 20 : 290 : 151 : 436 :  
 391 : 148 : 400 : 307 : 147 : 174 : 1 : 35 : 58 : 54 : 75 : 77 : 36 :  
 28 : 83 : 37 : 169 : 290 : 316 :

16<sup>th</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1645. R. 22<sup>o</sup>. The King to me concerning making y<sup>e</sup> Earl of  
 Norw'ch Capt: of the Garde, & the Atto<sup>r</sup> Herberts remouall.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

my intenc'ons are by God's  
 Nicolas, : 224 : 176 : 289 : 17 : 180 : 53 : 20 : 98 : (110 : 157 :  
 helpe to breake  
 29 : 60 : 39 : 36 : 4 : 74 : 37 :) 290 : 14 : 3 : 37 : 34 : 64 :  
 throughe y<sup>e</sup> Rebelles forces and get to Oxon<sup>2</sup>  
 38 : 283 : 277 : 475 : 18 : 374 : 53 : 600 : 96 : 152 : 290 : 443 :  
 to w<sup>ch</sup> end my passage may  
 290 : 308 : 128 : and that 224 : 238 : 52 : 33 : 26 : 37 : 209 :  
 be w<sup>th</sup> more ease & security  
 104 : 303 : 221 : 38 : 32 : 52 : 35 : 40 : 96 : 70 : 53 : 37 :  
 59 : 43 : 3 : 79 : 29 : 49 : I would haue you acquaint the  
 send all  
 Gouvernor with these commands from me ; that he 264 : 86 :

<sup>1</sup> Sir Marmaduke Langdale.

<sup>2</sup> To this plan, Bulstrode tells us, the King was led by the circumstance of  
 the rebel army being now in force on the North side of the Trent. The whole  
 of the letter being in cypher is an evidence of the King's great desire for  
 secrecy, and in consonance with the recorded fact, that he imparted his resolu-  
 tion to none, except to two or three of the nearest trust about him.

the horse that may be spared  
 277 : 173 : 276 : 209 : possibly 104 : 53 : 74 : 34 : 3 : 38 : 84 :  
 from Oxon to Banbury on Sunday next directions  
 148 : 443 : 290 : 329 : 233 : 554 : 227 : with these 83 : 78 : 2 :  
 to the Comander  
 36 : 59 : 19 : 79 : 233 : 53 : 290 : 277 : 346 : 36 : 3 :  
 in Cheif keepe scouts  
 176 : 59 : 39 : 36 : 82 : 7 : 38 : that he 183 : 53 : 59 : 56 :  
 to wards Daventry  
 44 : 19 : 52 : 290 : 68 : 33 : 2 : 83 : 53 : 70 : 84 : 37 : 43 :  
 & Harburrow  
 38 : 27 : 17 : 3 : 47 : 90 : 96 : 300 : 39 : 34 : 3 : 14 : 46 : 1 :  
 & diligently  
 2 : 56 : 46 : 26 : 42 : 200 : 96 : 83 : 79 : 6 : 82 : 24 : 37 :  
 hould intelligence with the Gov'nor  
 29 : 19 : 207 : 42 : 57 : 43 : 4 : 84 : 391 : 303 : 277 : 379 :  
 of Belvoir, of what forces  
 232 : 231 : 16 : 36 : 4 : 46 : 57 : 79 : 3 : 231 : 305 : 374 :  
 ly in partes my resolution  
 53 : 207 : 176 : those 239 : 53 : 224 : 3 : 37 : 266 : 4 :  
 to goe that way  
 46 : 19 : 180 : being 290 : 24 : 56 : 38 : 276 : 69 : 34 : 47 :  
 if w<sup>th</sup> any reasonable hazard I  
 175 : 303 : 97 : 254 : 88 : 70 : 39 : 34 : 2 : 85 : 174 :  
 may passe : but if findes I come  
 209 : 238 : 109 : 175 : S<sup>r</sup> Thom: Glemham<sup>1</sup> 144 : 174 : 116 :  
 not to Banbury by Thursday next come senight  
 229 : 17 : 290 : 329 : 110 : 551 : 227 : 116 : 263 : 27 :  
 then he may draw  
 78 : 24 : 42 : 19 : 277 : 29 : 167 : 209 : 83 : 3 : 34 : 69 :  
 back the horse  
 20 : 16 : 32 : 59 : 64 : 277 : 173 : you must remember that  
 secrecy in this particular  
 53 : 37 : 58 : 1 : 38 : 61 : 49 : 176 : 279 : 239 : 79 : 59 :  
 must be your cheifest  
 43 : 4 : 34 : 3 : 215 : 104 : 317 : 59 : 39 : 37 : 78 : 7 :  
 care tell the Gouvernor  
 38 53 : 19 : 112 : I will only allow you to 274 : 277 : 379 :  
 of it who must be discretion  
 232 : 231 : 182 : 320 : 215 : 104 : answerable for the 124 : 59 :  
 & dilligence  
 3 : 38 : 17 : 180 : 96 : 80 : 84 : 78 : 207 : 24 : 38 : 27 :  
 of the person that  
 58 : 38 : 231 : 277 : 73 : 37 : 3 : 53 : 233 : 276 : 52 : 39 :

<sup>1</sup> Then Governor of Oxford.

shall comand those

horse in cheif

94 : 346 : 17 : 39 : 54 : 53 : 38 : 173 : 176 : 58 : 39 :

37 : 78 : 7 : 38 : so I rest

Your most assured friend,

CHARLES R.

Newarke 29 Oct: 1645.

Give me an account of this:

29 8<sup>ble</sup> 1645. The King to me by Parsons.

*Copy of a Letter from Sir Edward Nicholas to Sir Henry Vane the Younger.<sup>1</sup>*

ST.

You cannot suppose the work is donn, though God should suffer you to destroy the King : the miseries which will ineuitably follow are soe plaine in view, that it is more then necessary some speedy expedient be found for their preuention. Is it not cleere to you (to me it is) that Spaine and ffance will instantly conclude a peace : and that ffance makes great preparations to ioine with the Scotts (when the breach betweene you and them shall happen) whilst Spaine labours to be Protector of Ireland, and will vndoubtedly carry itt. Consider well, whether the season is not proper for this designe, when the wealth of this nation is already so exhausted, and the sufferings of the people soe great, that they are no longer to be supported. This is reason, tis not to cast a bone amongst you : The only remedye is (and it is a safe and honourable one for you) that you sett your selfe, the gentleman that was quartered with you, and all his and your freinds to preuaile, that the King may come to London vpon the termes he hath offered ; where, if Presbitery shall be soe strongly insisted vpon as that there can be noe peace without itt, you shall certainly haue all the power my master cann make to ioine with you in rooting out of this kingdome that tyrannicall Gouernment ; with this condition, that my master may not haue his conscience

<sup>1</sup> This letter is highly deserving the attention of the historian and statesman, and forms a remarkable illustration of the events of that period.



disturbed (yours being free) when that easy worke is finished. Loose not this faire oportunity, the like was never offered, nor euer will be ; for itt brings all things of benifitt and aduantage imaginable, both to the generall and to your particular ; to him that was quartered with you, and to his & you freinds : and shall be honestly made good. Trust to me for the performance of itt ; waigh itt sadly, and againe relye upon me. Bee confident, that neither he that carryes this, nor he that deliuers it to you, knowes any thing of itt. (*Not signed.*)

Written at the bottom by the King.

"This is a trew Coppie of what was sent to Sir Hen. Vane the Younger by my comand. C. R." <sup>1</sup> March 2, 1645-6.

Indorsed,

2<sup>o</sup> Martij 1645. By his Ma<sup>ties</sup> comaund these are to S. H. Vane sign'd w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Kings owne hand.

*Copy of another Letter from the King to Sir Henry  
Vane the Younger.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I shall only add this word to what was said in my last : that you hasten my business all that possibly you cann ; the occasion lately giuen being fairer than euer, and donn on purpose. Be very confident that all things shall be performed according to my promise. By all that is good, I coniure you, to dispatch that curtoysye for me with all speed, or it will be too late, I shall perish before I receiue the fruits of itt. I may not tell you my necessityes, but if it were necessary soe to doe, I am sure you would lay all other considerations aside, and fulfill my desires. This is all : trust me, I will repay your fauour to the full. I have donn. If I haue not an answeare within foure dayes after the receipt of this, I shall be

<sup>1</sup> How little effect was produced by this remonstrance, may be easily imagined, when addressed to a man whom De Larrey characterises as "more rigid, more a Presbyterian, and more a Parliamentarian in his sentiments than either Pym, Hampden, St. John, Fiennes, or Hollis !"

necessitated to finde some other expedient. God direct you, I haue discharged my dutye. (*Not signed.*)

Written at the bottom of this letter by the King.

"This is a true Copie of what was sent by Jack Ashburnham & my comand to Sir Henry Vane the younger. C. R."

*The King's promise to Mons. de Montreuil concerning those that should come with him to the Scots Army.*

I do promise to Mounsieur de Montreuil, that none shall come with me to the Scots army, or meet me there, who are excepted by those att London, but only my two nepheues, and Jack Ashburnham.<sup>1</sup> Notwithstanding, the said Montreuil is to receaue this my protestation, that all my seruants, and all others who doe adheare to me, shalbe saued from ruine, or any publique dishonour; which is a condition that my wife writt to me that not only she, but likewise Cardinall Mazarine,<sup>2</sup> were absolutely of opinion that I was sooner to dye, than not to haue. As for Church Gouvernement, as

<sup>1</sup> The King's confidence in Ashburnham was very great at this crisis. In fact it was a very short time before, that his Majesty was obliged, by the approach of Fairfax, to escape from Oxford in disguise; and this he did as the servant of Ashburnham: after which he joined the Scottish army before Newark. Yet Ashburnham is suspected, with great appearance of truth, of having misled the King when he was taken prisoner in 1648, either through treachery or folly. Bulstrode in his Memoirs, asserts that when the King arrived in great privacy at the house of Lady Southampton, and that Ashburnham went up stairs to his Majesty's bed-chamber and told the King that Colonel Hammond was below at supper, and had given assurance for his Majesty's safety, but not of liberty for his person, the King instantly, with much emotion, struck his hand upon his breast, exclaiming, "And is this all! Then I am betrayed!"

<sup>2</sup> Mazarine had recently become Prime Minister of France, in consequence of the death of Richelieu. The latter bore an implacable malice and hatred to England for her interference respecting the French Protestants, particularly in the affairs of the Isle du Rhe, and Rochelle. It is curious to compare this opinion of Mazarine with the well authenticated fact that, notwithstanding his outward appearance of friendship, he was actually tampering with the Parliament and keeping up a good correspondence with them, through the medium of Don Alonzo de Cardenas, the Spanish Ambassador!



I haue already, soe I now againe promise, that as soone as I come into the Scotts army, I shall be very willing to be instructed concerning the presbiteriall gouernement : whereupon they shall see, that I shall striue to content them in any thing, that shall not be against my conscience.

CHARLES R.

Indorsed by Sir Edward Nicholas.

"The King's promise to Monsieur de Montreuil<sup>1</sup> concerning those that should come w<sup>th</sup> him to y<sup>e</sup> Scots army: w<sup>th</sup> promise was written by Mr. Jo: Ashbournham, and signed by the King; but w<sup>th</sup>out date."

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

New Castle 16 Maij 1646.

Nicholas, since my last I had neither sufficient tyme nor matter to write to you, but now I haue enough of either, yet I shall to ease both our paynes, contract my thoughts, meerely to what is (for the present) necessary for you att Oxford.<sup>2</sup> ffor directions then, know that you are not to expect releefe, so that I giue you leaue to treate for good condic'ons. Let those of Exeter be your example: the additions must be the taking care particularly of the University, and to trye if you can gett the Duke of Yorke to be sent hither to me, as alsoe all myseruaunts who wilbe willing to come

<sup>1</sup> Montreuil, or Montreville, seems in this affair to have been the tool of Mazarine in deceiving the King; for all the contemporary writers, Warwick, Bulstrode, &c. assert, that he promised, in the name of the King of France, that Charles should be secure under the protection of the Scottish army.

<sup>2</sup> Oxford was at this moment nearly reduced; so that Sir Thomas Glemham, the Governor, in answer to a summons, asked permission to send a messenger to the King for orders. This, however, was refused by Fairfax, as several historians declare, and the City was delivered up, but not until after a treaty of some weeks' continuance, as the City did not surrender until this 24th of June. The facts contained in the indorsements possess considerable interest for the future historian.

When this letter was written the King was with the Scottish army, who had retreated thus far after the surrender of Newark to the Parliament army.

In "Memoirs of the Two last Years of Charles the First," by Herbert, there is an allusion to the King's consent, through the Lords of the Privy Council then at Oxford.



(of w<sup>ch</sup> number I am sure you are one) but feare you will not get leaue, and those goods w<sup>ch</sup> I haue there.

These directions I would haue you keepe very secreat, that you may make better conditions : ffor the number and choyce, I leave to the Lordes discrec'ons (the gouernor being one), but you must give out that releefe will come. Jack Ashburnham is this day gonne for ffraunce. I haue no more to say, so I rest

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

Indorsed,

" 16<sup>o</sup> Majj 1646. R. 10<sup>o</sup> Junii & y<sup>e</sup> next day read to y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup>.

The King to me from New Castle giving leave to treat, &c.

This lt<sup>r</sup> & that of y<sup>e</sup> 2<sup>d</sup> of June were read to all y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>ds</sup> and gent. about this towne (Oxford) on Sunday y<sup>e</sup> 20<sup>th</sup> of June 1646."

This letter was written in cyfer, but the figures are for the most part blotted or run through with the pen, but are decyphered and filled up by Sir Edward Nicholas.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

New Castell 2 June 1646.

Nicholas, since I saw you, I receaued but one letter from you, w<sup>ch</sup> was of the 5<sup>th</sup> of May ; & this is but the 3<sup>rd</sup> that I haue written unto you, hauing sent a duplicatt of my last about 9 dayes agoe. For direc'cons, I shall in substance repeate what I last sent you, w<sup>ch</sup> is that, because you are to expect noe releef, I giue you leaue to treat for good condic'ons. Let those of Exeter be your guide, w<sup>ch</sup> I believe wilbe graunted you, hauing a particular care that my sonne and two nephues haue permission to com to me wheresoeuer I shalbe : as lykewais that the freedome of y<sup>e</sup> University be pre-served, & that all my seruants, who ar willing, may come to me with the few goods that I haue there. I omitt news att this tyme, because it will doe little good to you, & troble me ; soe comanding you to assure all my frends, that no change of place shall (make) me alter my affection to them ; I rest

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

I advise excepted persons to agree for Exeter conditions, & for noe better.

When my goods ar sent, forget not all the bookes w<sup>ch</sup> I left in my bedchamber.

Indorsed,

2<sup>o</sup> Junii 1646. R: 11<sup>o</sup>, read to y<sup>e</sup> L<sup>des</sup> y<sup>e</sup> next day. The King gives leave to treate.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

New Castell 24 June 1646.

Nicholas,

I haue receaued yours of the 6: & 9: of this monthe w<sup>ch</sup> requyres no other answer but thanke you for your intelligence & to comend you for your resolution ; only I thinke you needed not to burne my cypher ; but howsoeuer lett me heare from you as often as you can, & assure all my frends that I am constant to all them who will not forsake themselves, of w<sup>ch</sup> I know you ar none, so that I am

Your most assured constant frend,

CHARLES R.

I desire

In hope my cypher is not sacrificed 209 : 141 : 56 : 63 : 17 :  
 you to send me word where my  
 67 : 429 : 360 : 341 : 250 : 78 : 31 : 18 : 81 : 412 : 351 :  
 Jewells were w<sup>ch</sup> I. H. had, and if my  
 in : no : 418 : 56 : 111 : 413 : 449 : 197 : 112 : 213 : 251 :  
 Cabinet<sup>1</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> I left w<sup>th</sup> you  
 90 : or 27 : 40 : 7 : 67 : p : 413 : 209 : 234 : 409 : 429 :  
 be burned or not.  
 121 : at : ad : 19 : if : 147 : 281 : 270 :

24<sup>o</sup> Junii 1646. The K. to me.

<sup>1</sup> The King's anxiety about his Cabinet is not surprizing, if we recollect the very unhandsome use which had formerly been made of letters seized by the Parliamentary forces ; when even the common expressions of conjugal confidence and tenderness were tortured into political crimes, or made the jests of the lowest revolutionary ruffians.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

New Castell 16 Aug:

Nicholas, I receaved yours by the last post, whereby I understand what course you intend to take, w<sup>ch</sup> I approue of, yet I

thinke it not necessay [necessary] to write to Marq: H.  
 nor Earl of Southampton for  
 269 : 17 : 503 : 280 : 356 : 84 : 107 : 43 : 282 : 162 :  
 hauing [erased]  
 200 : 216 : 258 : 133 : 280 : 366 : selves there 365 : 280 :  
 251 : 84 : 282 : 7 : 281 : 122 : 431 : 216 : 383 : 251 : 56 :  
 67 : 46 : 75 : 70 : 59 : 112 : 57 : 78 : 281 : 81 : 360 :  
 361 : 319 : 27 : 148 : 58 :

Com'end me to all my Friends, & asseure them of my constancy; and I asseure you that I haue sent where you ar goeing, being confident that you will be very well receaved there, so I rest

Your most asseured friend,

CHARLES R.

This inclosed is for 14 : 47 : he : 68 : 21 : 35 : 6 :

16<sup>th</sup> Aug. 1646. The King to me.<sup>1</sup>*In the hand-writing of Sir Edward Nicholas.*

The Reasons why his Ma<sup>tie</sup> thought good to send his Proposition of y<sup>e</sup> . . . of December, 1645, to London, were, for that

His Ma<sup>tie</sup> hath noe Army att all, nor any forces but what are in his garrisons.

Noe meanes or monny either to satisfy or keepe together his officers, or to supply or pay his garrisons, but the contribuc'ons of the country, w<sup>ch</sup> being wasted by y<sup>e</sup> souldiours of both sides, & extremly disaffected, are redly every day to rise ag<sup>t</sup> his Ma<sup>ties</sup> garrisons, as being not able any longer to undergoe the heavy pres-

<sup>1</sup> This part of the correspondence is important, as it took place about the period when the Scottish army were engaged in the negociations for his delivery to the English Rebels. In a Glasgow publication of *Original Letters* (1766) there is one from a Scottish Commissioner, who observes, "many of the King's greatest friends think his obstinacy judicial, as if in God's justice he were destroying himself." This letter was written on the 7th of August, 1646, at the period when Charles refused to agree to the Scottish propositions.



suress<sup>wh</sup> y<sup>e</sup> necessitys of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> souldiors & y<sup>e</sup> absence of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Governm<sup>t</sup> dayly put upon them.

That his Ma<sup>ty</sup> having lost Bristoll, hath no meanes to be supplied from forraigne partes w<sup>th</sup> armes or munition, or materialls for making of either, of w<sup>ch</sup> he begins alreddy to be in want.

There is noe meanes to raise any considerable forces for an army ag<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> next Spring : for that all Wales was lost p<sup>e</sup>sently after y<sup>e</sup> losse of Bristoll, and since that, Munmouth & Hereford.

Chester is in imminent danger to be likewise lost : Newark & Belvoir Castle<sup>1</sup> are besieged & in danger.

In y<sup>e</sup> west there are about 5 or 6000 horse & foote, but there are there soe great divisions amongst the cheif officers, and the Councill that attend y<sup>e</sup> Prince, as for want of condvct these forces are disunited, and y<sup>e</sup> country soe disaffected to them by reason of the soldiors rapine and oppression, as y<sup>e</sup> country rises against them whensoever they come into any place not in a body, and the country is soe wasted, as it cannot feede them when they lye together in a body. Besides, the Cornishe will not be drawne further than Devonsh<sup>e</sup>.

Exeter is soe close besieged, as very little or noe p<sup>r</sup>visions can passe into it, & it is not supplied for many monthes.<sup>2</sup> . . . . is possessed by Sr Tho. ffairfax forces, & the King hath in Devon now noe poste but Dartmouth, & there are likewise forces marched thither to blocke it upp.

The Seige of Plymouth is soe weekly prosecuted for want of force as they have lately releueed themselves and burnt some of our quarter neere it.

<sup>1</sup> The Earl of Rutland had sided with the Parliament, but Belvoir was garrisoned by the King's forces.

<sup>2</sup> It has been said by contemporary writers that the King, being now in distress, had no hopes from a proposition to Parliament, but merely complied with the earnest entreaties of his confidential friends. The message, which he sent, was filled with tender expressions respecting the miseries of the nation, of which it manifested a very deep sense, in consequence of the existing civil distractions. It conjured the Parliament, as they would answer it to Almighty God, for all blood spilt, or yet to be shed, and as they tendred the preservation of their religion calling upon them also by all the bonds of duty and allegiance to their King, of compassion for their bleeding country, or charity to themselves, that they would dispose their hearts and judgments towards a just and speedy settlement of affairs ; but it answered no other purpose than to draw forth demands even more imperious than those during the Treaty of Uxbridge.

S<sup>r</sup> Tho. Fairfax & Crumwell haue lately sent into these p<sup>t</sup>es neere 1500 of their best horse, w<sup>ch</sup> shewes that they are much too strong for his Ma<sup>ties</sup> forces in those partes.

These Western horse are drawing towards Oxon & are to ioyn w<sup>th</sup> other forces w<sup>ch</sup> are to come from London under Coll: Ringing-borrow, & all that can be spared from Coventry, Warwick, Gloucester, & Northampton, & out of Buckinghamshire (w<sup>ch</sup> it is beleueed will in all make noe less than 8000 foote and 4000 horse & dragoons) & ar designd p<sup>e</sup>sently to block upp Oxon att a distance.

Denington Castle is blockt upp by forces that lye in Newberry & the Country thereabouts.

This being his Ma<sup>ties</sup> p<sup>e</sup>sent condition in England, & there being noe peace concluded in Ireland, nor any considerable forces possible to be drawne from that Kingdom in any tyme to assist his Ma<sup>ties</sup>:

The Mar: of Muntrosse being still in y<sup>e</sup> highlands, or noe neerer then Glascoe, & in what condition his Ma<sup>ties</sup> is not certeynly assured, soe as there is little hope of tymely ayde from him :

From Fra. or Holland there was nothing but faire & fruitless p<sup>r</sup>misses, they having not in all this tyme afforded his Ma<sup>ties</sup> any considerable assistance, nor soe much as publicly declared ag<sup>t</sup> those att London :

Upon these considerations his Ma<sup>ties</sup> resolved to send to London y<sup>e</sup> . . . . P<sup>r</sup>positions, w<sup>ch</sup> being as low as he can goe w<sup>th</sup> p<sup>e</sup>serving of his conscience and hon<sup>r</sup> he doubts not but God will give a blessing to y<sup>t</sup> his intentions ; And that if his s<sup>ts</sup> doe not harken to y<sup>e</sup> reason he offers, his Allies will consider how farre his interest may worke theirs.

Indorsed, Reasons why his Ma<sup>ties</sup> sent his Proposic<sup>o</sup>ns to London, dated Dec<sup>r</sup> 1646.

*The King to the Speaker of the House of Peers.*

Holmby [Holdenby], 6 Martij. 1646-7.

C. R.

It being now 17 dayes since I wrote to you from hence, & not yet receiuing any answer to what I then desired, I cannot but now again renew the same unto you ; and indeed concerning any thing but the necessary duty of a Christian, I would not at this time



trouble you with any of my desires. But my being attended by some of my Chaplains,<sup>1</sup> whom I esteem & reuerence, is that w<sup>ch</sup> is so necessary for me (euen considering my present condic'on, whither it be in relation to my conscience, or a happy settlem<sup>t</sup> of the present distracc'ons in Religion) that I will slight diuers kinds of censures, rather then not obtain what I demand. Nor shall I doe you the wrong, as in this to doubt the obtaining of my wish, it being groundd upon reason. For I desire you to consider (not thinking it needfull to menc'on) the diuers reasons w<sup>ch</sup> no Christian can be ignorant of, for the point of conscience. I must assure you that I cannot as I ought take into consideration those alterac'ons in Religion w<sup>ch</sup> haue, & wilbe offred unto me, w<sup>th</sup>out such helps as I desire, because I can neuer iudge rightly of, or be altdred in any thing of my opinion, so long as any ordinary way of finding out the truth is denyed me. But when this is granted me, I promise you faithfully not to striue for victory in argum<sup>t</sup>, but to seeke to submit to truth, according to that judgem<sup>t</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> God hath giuen me; always holding it my best & greatest conquest, to giue contentm<sup>t</sup> to my two Houses of Parl<sup>t</sup> in all things w<sup>ch</sup> I conceiue not to be against my conscience or hon<sup>r</sup>. Not doubting likewise, but that you wilbe ready to satisfy me in reasonable things, as I hope to find in this particular concerning the attendance of my Chaplains upon me.

To the Speaker<sup>s</sup> of the House of Peers, *pro tempore*, to be communicated to the Lo: & Co'mons in the Parl<sup>t</sup> assembled at Westm'r.

Indorsed,

6<sup>o</sup> Mar: 1641. Coppy of y<sup>e</sup> King's 2d l<sup>r</sup> for some of his Chaplaines.

<sup>1</sup> The sentiments contained in this letter are so completely in unison with those in "Eikon Basilike" (art. 23, 24, pp. 201 to 218, edit. 1648), as to afford proof, if proof were necessary, of the authenticity of that work from the royal pen.

The letter itself was written about two months after the King had been given up to the Parliament, and about three months previous to his seizure by Cornet Joyce, on the part of Cromwell and the army.

A very minute and interesting account of these transactions will be found in Sir Thomas Herbert's Memoirs of the "Two last years" of the unhappy monarch.

There is a remarkable passage, alluding to those circumstances, in a letter from the Earl of Panmure to Lord Wariston, dated 23d January 1647; where he says, "His Majesty is so well resolved now for his going to Holmby as ever I saw him for anything. He thinks that the Scots have sold him at too cheap a rate. If our posterity find not the smart thereof, it is well."

<sup>2</sup> Lenthall.



*A Memorandum in King Charles the First's own  
handwriting :*

Freedome in Conscience & Honnor and Security for all those that shall come with me, & in case I shall not agree with them, that I may be set doune at such of my Garisons as I shall name to them : w<sup>ch</sup> condition I hope not to put them to, for I shall no<sup>t</sup> differ with them about Ecclesiasticall businesses, w<sup>ch</sup> they shall make apeare to me not to be against my conscience ; & for other matters, I expect no difference, & in case there be, I am content to be judged by the two Queenes. And befor I take my jurny I must send to the Marquis of Montrose to aduertice him upon what conditions I come to the Scots Army, that he may be admitted forth-with into our conjunction, & instantly march up to us.

Indorsed by Sir E. Nicholas.

"A Note written with y<sup>e</sup> King's owne pen concerning his going to y<sup>e</sup> Scotts."

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Oatlands, 19 Aug. 1647.<sup>2</sup>

Nicholas, to ease my paines, I haue comanded Oudart<sup>3</sup> to answer some particulars in your last letter : this being only to thanke you for your aduertisements & freedome : desyring you still to continue the same, asseuring you that I haue a particular care of you, w<sup>ch</sup> I hope shortly shall be visible to all the world : so I rest

Your most asseured constant frend,

CHARLES R.

Oatlands  $\frac{9}{10}$  Aug. 1646.

His Ma<sup>ties</sup> lt<sup>e</sup> to me.

<sup>1</sup> This memorandum throws considerable light upon what may well be considered as the obscurest part of Charles's history during the Civil War.

<sup>2</sup> It was on the 3d of June that the King was seized by Joyce, and after a desultory progress arrived at Oatlands on the 14th of August ; and soon after he removed to Hampton Court.

<sup>3</sup> Oudart was afterwards one of the King's Commissioners in the Conferences at Newport with the Parliamentary agents. In such confidence was he with the King as to be employed during that treaty in writing his private dispatches to the Prince of Wales. Vide Warwick's Memoirs, p. 325.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Nicholas,

Yo<sup>r</sup> fidelity & industry in our service & eminent affect'ons to our person, haue made in us too great an impression to be forgotten ; on the contrary you must continue in this confidence, that we very highly retaine you in our value & remembrance, as you will finde if it please God to restore us to a condic'con for it. As an earnest whereof at present you will receive herewith a direction to our dearest Sonn the Prince on your behalfe, whom as we know you will serue with the same duety and zeale as you haue serued us, so will he assuredly giue you that reception & admission to his confidence w<sup>ch</sup> you haue had with us. We thanck you for yo<sup>r</sup> severall letters & aduises, and are very tenderly sensible of yo<sup>r</sup> pressures, and if you could gett them removed by the help of friends, we thinck you would do well not to neglect so doing in respect of yo<sup>r</sup> family, there being no certainty yet what successe will follow this Treaty. That Providence w<sup>ch</sup> permits these afflictions to lye upon Us, We trust will yet in good time take them off. Doe you continue yo<sup>r</sup> affections towards Us, not doubting of the constant fauor to you & yo<sup>rs</sup> of

Your most asseured Frend,

CHARLES R.

From Newport in y<sup>e</sup> Isle of Wight 24 Novemb: 1648.<sup>1</sup>

To Secr: Nich'as.

*His Ma<sup>ties</sup> Farewell Speech unto y<sup>e</sup> Lords Com'ssioners  
at Newport in y<sup>e</sup> Isle of Wight.<sup>2</sup>*

"My Lords,

You are come to take your leaue of mee, and I beleeeue wee shall scarce euer see each other againe :—but Gods will be done.

<sup>1</sup> The several historical facts, to which this letter refers, are too well known to require commentary ; but the letter itself is of consequence to Sir Edward Nicholas's claim on the patronage of Charles II. alluded to in a subsequent letter to the Monarch respecting the office of Secretary ; and illustrates the political character of that Monarch.

<sup>2</sup> The Commissioners were the Earls of Northumberland, Pembroke, Salis-



I thank God I haue made my peace w<sup>th</sup> him, & shall w<sup>th</sup>out feare undergoe what he shall please to suffer men to doe unto mee.

My Lords, you cannot but knowe that in my fall and ruine you see yo<sup>r</sup> owne, and that alsoe neere to you. I pray God send you better frends then I haue found.

I am fully informed of y<sup>e</sup> whole carriage of y<sup>e</sup> plott against me & myne, and nothing soe much afflicts mee as the sense and feelinge I haue of y<sup>e</sup> sufferings of my subjects, and y<sup>e</sup> mischief that hangs ouer my three Kingdomes, drawne upon them by those who (upon pretences of good) violently pursue their owne interestes and ends."

These words his Ma<sup>ty</sup> deliuered w<sup>th</sup> much alacrity and cheerefullnes, w<sup>th</sup> a serene countenance, & carriage free from all disturbance.

Thus he parted w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Lords leauing many tender impressions (if not in them) yet in y<sup>e</sup> other hearers.<sup>1</sup>

His Ma<sup>ty</sup>s farewell Speech to the Lo<sup>ds</sup> at Newport 1<sup>o</sup> Dec. 1648.

Sir,

Paris,<sup>2</sup> Nov. 6, 1649. St. No.

To giue you an account of the vastnesse of this packett, give me leaue to tell you, that together with this booke w<sup>ch</sup> I send you, there

bury, and Middlesex; Viscount Say and Sele; Lord Wenman; Messrs. Pierpoint, Hollis, Crew, Bulkeley; Sirs Henry Vane, jun., Harbottle Grimstone, and John Potts; Serjeants Glynne and Browne, and some others.

<sup>1</sup> This conference took place almost immediately before the King's being put to death, an event so pointedly referred to in a work recently published in the United States, that an extract from it cannot fail to be interesting. The author, the Reverend Doctor Stiles, President of Yale College, in his *History of Three of the Judges of Charles II.* first published in 1794, remarks, in allusion also to the French Revolution—"The era is now arrived, when tribunals for the trial of delinquent Majesty, of Kings and Sovereign Rulers, will be provided for, in the future politics and constitutions of Sovereignties, Empires, and *Republics*: when the heroic and high example of doing justice to criminal royalty, of the adjudication of a King, will be recurred to and contemplated with justice and impartiality. And, however it has been overwhelmed with infamy for a century and a half, will hereafter be approved, admired, and imitated; and the memoirs of those suffering exiles will be immortalized with honour."—Dr. Stiles was not half so good a conjurer as old Grebner!

<sup>2</sup> Charles, at the period of his father's murder, was at the Hague with his brother in law, the Prince of Orange; after which he went to France to join his



came in half a score persons of consideration, who with very much passion desired me to represent to Jersey, the high indignity by this base edition<sup>1</sup> offered to our blessed Master, and the great injury rendered to his Majesty that now is.

You will finde a preface to this Booke, w<sup>ch</sup> tends to proue that our blessed Master might be, nay perhaps was, a Papist in his heart, notwithstanding this Booke. That what instructions & com'ands were giuen to his Sonne for his firmenesse to the Protestant religion, were giuen out of politique considerations meerely, and many other particulars, w<sup>ch</sup> I hope will bring it to the hands of the common-hangman.

This Marsys is one who is setting out the tryall of the late King, and y<sup>e</sup> manner of his murther, stiles himselfe "Interprete et Maistre pour la langue Françoisse du Roy d'Angleterre regnant à present et de son Altesse Royale le Duc d'Yorke son frere," in w<sup>ch</sup> Booke he stiles Queene Elizabeth (of euer blessed memory) Jezabell. He settis downe a false and faigned speech of the King's at y<sup>e</sup> time of his being murthered; & being charged with it, he said he thought fitt to make that speech as spoken by him, since the speech he did make was poore and below a King. He hath sett forth diuers other things, an extract whereof I shall shortly send you, the least of w<sup>ch</sup> would deserve a whipping in England in good times to speake

afflicted mother; but having been proclaimed King throughout Ireland, with the exception of Dublin and Londonderry, he would have proceeded there, had he not been forewarned that such a procedure would produce much alarm among the Protestant friends to his cause. He therefore went no farther than Jersey, where he was proclaimed King, a short time previous to the date of this Remonstrance.

<sup>1</sup> If it were necessary to enter upon the controversy respecting the authenticity of "Eikon Basilike," this letter might be adduced as a proof against Bishop Gauden's claim to that work. The wish here expressed was not fulfilled specifically; though afterwards in some measure gratified by the publication of "Eikon Aklastos" in 1651, as a vindication of the original work against the attacks of "Eikonoklastes."

This letter was written by Sir Edward Nicholas during his retreat from England, after the death of his royal master. He appears to have then been resident with his son in law, Sir Richard Browne, who still remained Chargé d'Affaires at the French Court.

The inquisitive reader will find some interest in comparing this letter with the very copious and impartial essay on this subject by Mr. Nichols, in "Literary Anecdotes," vol. i. p. 522.

moderately. I p<sup>e</sup>sume you will giue this busines a thorough sifting there in councell, and send some directions to S<sup>r</sup> Rich: Browne how to proceede here ; that it may appeare who sett him on worke here, and who giues him these exact coppies, w<sup>th</sup> he pretends to haue under y<sup>e</sup> King's owne hand, and those other peeces of the King's, w<sup>th</sup> he so braggs of, and promises he will bring them to light, so soone as he obtaines leaue to publish them. I hope some course wilbe taken that he may be discharged of his titles of relation to the King, and that his Ma<sup>ty</sup> will hereupon giue order, that a true copy may be printed in french of his Father's Booke, declared by him to be authentique, waving both the editions either of Huguenot or Papist, and that this command be grounded upon the ill editions of both these persons and partys.

Indorsed, " 6<sup>o</sup> Novemb: 1649. Concerning Marseis his transla<sup>c</sup>'on of the King's booke."

*Sir Edward Nicholas to King Charles the Second.*

May it please yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup>,<sup>1</sup>

I come to yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> out of duty to serve you if I could, not out of designe to gaine preferment, & thoughe I understood well, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Privy Councell here was neither of number or weight equall to y<sup>e</sup> importaunce of yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> affaires, yet yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> being then resolved to goe for Irland (where I conceived there would be an addition of Councillors answerable to y<sup>e</sup> weight of yo<sup>r</sup> aff<sup>res</sup>) I did y<sup>e</sup> more willingly tender my humble services here.

But since its not now counsellable for yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>tie</sup> upon y<sup>r</sup> change of yo<sup>r</sup> busines in Irla: to goe thither, I held it my duty humbly to advise you, that I find yo<sup>r</sup> aff<sup>res</sup> of soe great importaunce, & of such a nature, as (in my poore iudgem<sup>t</sup>) it will not be possible for you to man<sup>'</sup>age y<sup>e</sup> same w<sup>th</sup>out a steddy, settled, & more full Councell of able, graue & experienced p<sup>'</sup>sons of unblemished integrity, whose honor, esteeme, fidellity, & prudence may raise y<sup>e</sup> reputa<sup>c</sup>'on of yo<sup>r</sup> Councell from that greate contempt it lyes under both at home and abroad ; & whereby forraigne Pr<sup>'</sup> may be encou-

D. Richmond  
Ea: Arundell  
Ea: Derby  
Ea: Norwich  
E. South<sup>'</sup>ton  
Sir Art. Hop-  
ton.  
Mr. Cha: Exch.  
L<sup>'</sup>d Hatton.

Written by Sir Edward Nicholas, and alluded to in a former note.



raged to assist yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>, & yo<sup>r</sup> Royall party in Engl: to appeare more vigorously for you.

If for want of such a settled & ho<sup>ble</sup> Privy Councell, yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> shalbe necessitated (as lately) to call (upon every important occasion) such to Councell who are not sworne, it will not much satisfy yo<sup>r</sup> party in Engla: nor advantage yo<sup>r</sup> aff<sup>res</sup>. Besides yo<sup>r</sup> Privy Councell wilbe att a great disadvantage, when they are to give their advise upon oath, & are by y<sup>e</sup> same obliged to be secreat, & y<sup>e</sup> others shalbe att liberty & under noe tye att all.

My humble advise therefore is, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> forthw<sup>th</sup> endeavour by all meanes possible to get a Councell composed of a convenient number of such ho<sup>ble</sup>, experienced, & faithfull p<sup>sons</sup>, as may be equall to y<sup>e</sup> great importaunce of yo<sup>r</sup> p<sup>sent</sup> aff<sup>res</sup>, & above y<sup>e</sup> contempt that yo<sup>r</sup> now Councell lyes under, aswell in yo<sup>r</sup> owne Court, as abroade, w<sup>th</sup>out w<sup>ch</sup> it will not be possible for you to goe throughe yo<sup>r</sup> greate businesses.

As for my owne particular,<sup>1</sup>

I humbly beseech yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> to give me leave to put you in minde, that att St Germaines y<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> comaunded me to wayte on you in this place, where you were pleased to tell me you should have occasion to make use of my service as Secre<sup>tie</sup>, & to that end yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> comaunded me to gett prepared a signet, and other provisions fitting, w<sup>ch</sup> accordingly I p<sup>vided</sup> att my owne cost. I was there further tould from yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup>, that when I came to Jersey, I should be sworne Sec<sup>rie</sup>. And since I came hither, yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> tould me I should be sworne, as soon as I came into Irla: Now since yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> goes not for Irla: I humbly desire that I may be sworne before yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ty</sup> dep<sup>ture</sup> from hence :

1. Because, I know y<sup>e</sup> busines belonging to a Sec<sup>rie</sup> of State ought not to be p<sup>formed</sup> by one that is not sworne in y<sup>e</sup> place.

<sup>1</sup> De Larrey, a French historian of those times, says of Sir Edward Nicholas, that he had much better qualities and more zeal for the late Monarch, than the preceding Secretary of State, Windebank. He adds, that he was truly devoted to the Church of England ; and having, besides, as much integrity as ability, he was as faithful to the son as to the father. "Charles II. recompensed his fidelity, and restored him, in 1658, to the post that his father had given him ; if this employment was honourable to him, all the profit redounded to the King, who conferred it on him not till he left France, and when he was a wanderer from Court to Court, and from country to country." But this was precisely agreeable to the Royal promise ; as appears from Charles's reply.



2. For that y<sup>e</sup> busines I shall doe (not being sworne), will not have that creddit & esteeme, as is requisitt for y<sup>e</sup> advantage of affaires of that nature.

3. That it wilbe a great disrepute for me (who have had the honor to serve yo<sup>r</sup> Royale father 7 yeares in that office) to execute any considerable p'te thereof, & not be established in it by oath, w<sup>ch</sup> only can make a man capable of p'formaunce of the duty of that place, as it ought to be.

Yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> obiection, that if you sweare me, you must doe y<sup>e</sup> like for Mr. Long,<sup>1</sup> is rather a discouragement then satisfac'con to me, who did hope my soe long faithfull service to yo<sup>r</sup> Royall father would have mov'd yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> to make more difference betweene us, since I have hitherto (I thanke God) carryed a cleere reputac'on in all my wayes.

Wherefore its my most humble suyte, that yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> wilbe pleased either to give order that I may be sworne yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> Sec'rie (whereby I may be enabled to doe you service), or else that I may have leave w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> gracious favour, to retire untill my faithfull & disinterested service may be of more use in yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> affaires.

"For yo<sup>r</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup>."

Indorsed, "Je lis ce papier au Roy a Jersey 31 de Janvier. St. V<sup>x</sup> 1649."

### *The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Charles R.

In regard of our many great & weighty businesses, Wee are resolved & promise w<sup>th</sup> all convenient speede to increase the number of Our English Privy Councillors in a considerable propor'con answerable to y<sup>e</sup> importaunce of our affaires.

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Long was only engaged by Charles in a private capacity, and during the interregnum; his name is not entered upon any of the lists of office.

The King seems to have had a personal attachment towards Mr. Long. It is, perhaps, not irrelevant also to observe, that if the handwriting of the two rival Secretaries had been allowed any weight in the discussion of the question, Mr. Long would have been a successful opponent of Sir Edward; his mode of writing being nearly equal to copper-plate printing, whilst that of the latter is often scarcely intelligible.

Wee are alsoe resolved principally to make use of & rely on, the faithfull advise of our sworne Privy Councell in y<sup>e</sup> managem<sup>t</sup> and determinac'on of our important affaires.

Wee likewise resolve & promise, to sweare and establishe S<sup>r</sup> Edw: Nicholas in y<sup>e</sup> office and place of one of our principall Secretaries of State, the first man Wee admit to or constitute in that office, and as soone as Wee shall dismissee Rob<sup>t</sup> Long from our service. Given at our Court att Castle Elizabeth in our Island of Jersey the 14-24th of febr: 1649-50.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

St. Johnstons: Sept. 3, 1650.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Secr: Nicholas, I haue giuen this bearer his dispatch, and haue signed all the Commissions, with 53 blankes w<sup>th</sup> I desire you to fill up as you shall haue occasion, there are two com'issions for Marq: Hertford

445 : 388 : that if one should miscarey the other might serue. I haue sent you here inclosed a letter of credance to the Prince of Orange,<sup>2</sup> that if you should haue occasion of his assistance you may use it ; but pray have a care that you doe not press him about money, for I haue had so much from him allready that it were a shame to seeke more of him. This bearer will acquaint you with my condition much better than I can doe in a letter, I shall only say this to you, that you cannot imaien <sup>the vilaney of the</sup> 245 x3 : 160 : m8 : 8 : (illegible) & their party 191 : w5 : 175 : m9 : t6 : p : 64 : 49 : v6 : 104 : 47 : 213 : 7 : indeed it has done me a greate deale of good, for nothing could

<sup>1</sup> Written during Charles's visit to Scotland, when he was crowned King. It was on this day that the Scots were defeated at Dunbar. Charles went to Scotland in June ; and towards the latter end of July Cromwell took the command of the English Army in that Kingdom.

Charles sailed from Schevling in Holland, in the preceding June, and landed at Spey, in Scotland, soon after. On the 15th of July he was proclaimed at Edinburgh Cross ; and afterwards proceeded to St. Johnstone's, which place had been appointed for the meeting of the Scottish States.

<sup>2</sup> Father of William the Third.



have confirmed me more to the  
 138 : 81 : 109 : 14 : 12 : 2 : 170 : 13 : 220 : 242 : 245 :  
 Church of England here  
 bb : 254 : 73 : n8 : 349 : 153 : then being x9 : 26 : 139 :  
 seing their hippocrisy<sup>1</sup>  
 69 : t3 : 151 : w5 : s3 : c4 : 20 : q6 : 75 : h : 8 : v2 :  
 the D: of Yorke's Lo: Gerard's  
 I shall send 245 : 575 comission and 374 : 49 : by Oudart,  
 who I will dispatch within this 2 or 3 days. I had allmost forgot a  
 bussines of great importance, it is to speke to the Pr: of Orange to  
 a smack or a herring  
 send hether 218 : 30 : 4 : 169 : 44 : 38 : n7 : 12 : e8 : gg :  
 buss w<sup>th</sup> five or six men to lie here  
 w : 5 : 262 : 111 : x2 : 190 : 229 : 39 : 19 : w2 : k4 : 33 : f5 :  
 pre to n di n g it is to carrey  
 r4 : 240 : 25 : yy : 45 : 34 : 145 : g5 : 242 : 80 : s3 : 7 :  
 ouer a messenger when there  
 p7 : 64 : 30 : 170 : 228 : 45 : d4 : 14 : x7 : aq : w5 : 220 :  
 is occasion  
 147 : 477 : I being at the charge of keeping them when they  
 I would have the vessel  
 are here. 141 : z3 : 138 : 245 : r8 : x2 : 4 : 228 : 24 : 44 :  
 come to Montrose  
 nn : 47 : w2 : 171 : m6 : 222 : t3 : 320 :<sup>2</sup> I would haue you  
 and Mr. Atorney to stay in holland as being the place that is the  
 neerest to this Kingdome and where I shall haue occasion of your  
 services : I have no more to say to you at the present but to assure  
 that I am and euer will be

Your most affectionate friend,

CHARLES R.

<sup>1</sup> This is a new fact for the Writers of Scottish History. The report also that Charles was forced to perform public Kirk-penance by the Presbyterians, is mentioned in a ludicrous manner in a Letter from the Elector of Bavaria to the Queen of Bohemia, preserved in Bromley's Royal Letters, page 153.

<sup>2</sup> This plan is a manifest proof of the little reliance which Charles placed upon his Northern friends. Whether he doubted their power or their loyal y does not exactly appear; but it is evident that he wished to ensure the means of escape, independent of their exertions in his favour. The whole Letter is a good commentary upon the histories of that period.



*The King to Mrs. Twisden.*

Taken from a Copy.

M<sup>rs</sup> Twisden,

Hauing assurance of your readines to performe what I desired of you by my Letter of the 7th of February from Jersey, according to your Brothers promise, in order to the conveying to me the George and Seales left me by my blessed Father, I haue againe employed this bearer (in whom I haue very much confidence) to desire you to deliver the said George and Seales into his hand for me, assuring you, that as I shall haue great reason thereby to acknowledge your owne and your Brothers civilitys and good affections, in a particular soe deerly valued by me, soe I will not be wanting, when by Gods blessing I shall be enabled, deseruedly to recompence you both for soe acceptable a service done to

Your louing friend,

CHARLES R.

St. Johnston, 2 8<sup>br</sup> 1650.

*The King to Mr. William Hinton.*

Taken from a Copy.

Mr. William Hinton,<sup>1</sup>

Your many faithfull services done to my deere Father of blessed memory and to my selfe, & the constant continuance in your loyall affections to my just cause, are soe very remarkable, as I shalbe euer mindfull to acknowledge them, and to gratify and reward you for them. The condition of my affaires requiring that a considerable sum'e of money be speedily sent into Holland, I doe at present desire you by such private meanes as you shall conceiue most safe, to conueye or returne thither by bills of exchange for my use, such sumes of money, as either you haue or

<sup>1</sup> This Letter confirms the suspicion, hinted at in the preceding note, that Charles was more anxious for a safe escape to the Continent, than sanguine of success from the state of affairs in Scotland.

shalbe able to procure by loane, or otherwise, of my well affected subjects, towards my supply : and as I doubt not you will comply with all readines & industry with this my desire, soe I will that you assure all those who shall contribute to y<sup>e</sup> support of my occasions, y<sup>t</sup> I shall willingly repay them, when God shall enable me, and also further recompence them to their content : and will particularly consider you for the paines you shall imploy herein as a service very acceptable to

Your louing friend,

CHARLES R.

St. Johnstons, 2. 8<sup>ber</sup> 1650.

*The King to Sir John Greenville.*

Taken from a Copy.

S<sup>r</sup> John Greenville,<sup>1</sup> considering how important it would be for the good of my affaires to haue a body of men in a readines to countenance any attempt that shall be made by my good subjects in the West,<sup>2</sup> for recovering my just rights, their owne libertys, and suppressing the present barbarous and bloody Vsurpers, especially in a place soe neere and opportune for the seconding any such enterprize as that under your charge ; I haue thought good to desire and require you, to gather & entertaine as many souldiers, and to prouide what store of armes & munition you can possibly, and as may consist with the necessary subsistence of y<sup>e</sup> garrison under your com'and, to be ready to be seasonably transported on any good occasion : In w<sup>ch</sup> busines soe highly conducing to the good of my seruice, as I am very confident your particular relation and affection to my person and interests will prompt you to imploy your utmost industry and assistance, soe you may rest assured,

<sup>1</sup> He was afterwards Earl of Bath.

<sup>2</sup> This Letter was written at the period when Charles, weary of that particular Scottish faction which kept him enthralled, was engaged in a plan to join the opposite party, but was prevented by actual force. There is a letter of Abraham Cowley to Lord Arlington, in the *Miscellanea Aulica*, p. 152, which gives an interesting detail of those events.

that w<sup>t</sup> you shall therein performe shall ever be acknowledged on any seasonable occasion that may manifest your deserts and y<sup>e</sup> esteeme and kindnes I haue for you, who am

Your loving friend,

CHARLES R.

St. Johnstons, 2 Oct. 1650.

*The King to Sir Richard Greenville.*

Taken from a Copy.<sup>1</sup>

S<sup>r</sup> Rich: Greenville, though it be not seasonable for me to giue powers to any to appeare for me, in regard of the diuerse affecc<sup>o</sup>ns and dispositions of y<sup>e</sup> people I haue to deale with in the present conjuncture of my affaires, yet I held it requisite to cherishe the good affecc<sup>o</sup>ns of those who haue the like kindnes for me as I haue observed in you, desiring you to continue constant therein, and to keepe your selfe in readines for my imployments when it shalbe seasonable, and in the meane time not only to be your selfe very secret and circumspect in what concerns my interests, but by all meanes to procure that all others be soe likewise, least if the Rebells shall discern and app<sup>h</sup>end any disposition & intention in any of my good subjects to assist me, they shall, to p<sup>re</sup>vent the same, use violence on those that are best inclined to my service. I haue soe great confidence in your affection as I am assured of your readines, and when there shalbe a fitt opportunity you shall be sure to heare from

Your very louing friend,

CHARLES R.

St. Johnstons, 2<sup>d</sup> of 8<sup>ber</sup> 1650.

<sup>1</sup> This Letter is highly deserving of notice, as a proof both of the good policy and of the good heart of the youthful Monarch. Shortly after this he lost a warm friend in the Prince of Orange, who died on the 24th of this month.



*The Duke of York to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Sir Edw. Nicolas, though I haue much desired your company and aduise, yet not with the hinderance of the Kings seruise, nor your one inconvenience : but that now vpon the death of the Prince of Orange I haue more neede of your counsell then euer, which I desir you to comunicat to me by letter or any other waye as you shall thinke fitt. I desire you also to moue my Lord Culpeper<sup>1</sup> for monye to defray the charges of the Kings horses; as well for the Kings honor, as to preserve 3 of the best of them for the Kings use. I desire you would aduise me wheither I may not presse my Lord Culpeper to lend me 1500 or 2000 Pounds, to be repayd if the King allow it not : the wanting of those supplies which I expected from the King and the Prince of Orange enforces me to this counsell, wherein I desire your assistance with my Lord Culpeper if you aproue of it : desiring you to beleiue that I shall euer be

Your very affectionat friend,

JAMES.

Bruxells, Nouem; 12. 1650.

Indorsed by Sir E. Nicholas.

2-12<sup>o</sup> No<sup>bris</sup> 1650. R. 8-18<sup>o</sup>. The D. of Yorke from Bruxells to me.

*Copy of y Dukes letter to my Lord Culpeper.*

My Lord, the Kinges horses are to be sold for money to pay for their meat. Some of them are much pris'd by his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, and cannot be sold to their worth : therefore I desire that you would laye downe the money due for their charges, so that the Kinges honor may be preserued, and the best of y<sup>e</sup> horses still kept for y<sup>e</sup> Kings use : w<sup>th</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> I am sure his Ma<sup>ty</sup> wilbe well pleased.

I rest your louinge friend,

Bruxells, Novemb. 12, 1650.

JAMES

<sup>1</sup> The first peer of that name. He supported the King's cause with great loyalty during the whole of the Civil War, and was an exile, for twelve years, with Charles the Second; on whose Restoration he was made Master of the Rolls.

*The Duke of York to Sir Edward Nicholas.<sup>1</sup>*

Sir Edw. Nicholas, I haue receiued yours of the 8. of Nouember from the Hage, and with it that from Dicke Fanshaw, and I haue as you desired me lett the King know why I had you not heare with me, which he knows very well was not your fault, and I am sure he is well satisfyde with you, and has the same esteeme he always had for you, of which I am confident before this tyme you haue knowledge of in his hauing sent for you to come heither to him, which makes mee now that I shall not say any thing more to you, because I hope to see you shortly, till when you may assure your selfe that I shall euer be

Your most assured freind,

JAMES.

Paris, Nou. 18, 1651.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Paris, April 6, 1652.

Mr. Sec. Nicholas, I haue receaued yours of the 28 of the last month, and doe very well approue of your sending me intelligence in your letters to the Chancelour,<sup>2</sup> by whom you shall againe receaue my pleasure, and information of all my purposes and resolutions, and directions concerning your selfe, w<sup>ch</sup> the unsetlednesse of my condition heitherto hath kept me from sending so positiuely to you, as I hope shortly to doe. In the meane time assure your selfe I rely upon noe mans fidelitie and affection more then on yours, and you shall alwaies find me to be

Your most assured frend,

CHARLES R.

<sup>1</sup> This letter was written after the unfortunate battle of Worcester, fought on the 3rd of September. It was on the 2nd of November that Charles landed in Normandy.

<sup>2</sup> The Earl of Clarendon; but he is not marked on the lists as Chancellor until 1658: the Great Seal effectively being at that period in commission.

*The Princess Dowager of Orange to Sir Edward Nicholas.*Breda, 21 July, 1653.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Secretarie, I haue been so long without giuing you thanks for all y<sup>r</sup> letters, that if I did not hope you would not impute it to neglect, I should not know which way now to desire you to continu, but your knowing how little I loue this exercise will (I dout not) justifie mee enough in y<sup>r</sup> opinion. I am very vncertain of my stay here, because it depends vpon his Majestis remoue,<sup>2</sup> who I wish with all my hart would not come into thesse parts till hee sees what becoms of the treaty, for I do much apprehend at last thay will agree: the Hollanders desiring nothing more. By this imagine how ill his Ma<sup>ties</sup> reception will bee: Pray let mee know your opinion of this, and whether you beleeeue ther will be a peace, which in doing you will much oblige

Your affectionate friend,

MARIE.

*The King to Sir Edward Nicholas.*Paris, Sept: 28, 1653.<sup>3</sup>

Nicholas, I am very well pleased with the paines I perceau by your letters to the Chancelour you take in my seruice, and you must upon all occasions lett those good men know, who communicate freely with you, that I am very sensible of their affections to me w<sup>ch</sup> I will requite when it shall be in my power: I am exceedingly troubled at any factions and iealosyes amongst those

<sup>1</sup> From the Princess Dowager of Orange, in reference to the Treaty then pending between Holland and the English Commonwealth. The negotiations were finally settled on the 5th May, 1654.

<sup>2</sup> Charles the Second was then at Paris. From a letter written by Abraham Cowley to Lord Arlington very soon after this period, it appears that the King's dependence on Dutch friendship was greater than his sister's, as he believed the eagerness to conclude a treaty with Cromwell was not the wish of the States, but merely of a party which then was predominant. Vide *Miscellanea Aulica*, p. 158.

<sup>3</sup> This letter was written only a few weeks previous to Cromwell's assumption of the Protectorate. The initials in the latter part evidently refer to Sir Marmaduke Langdale and Mons. Befort.



who wish me well, and will use all my power to compose them, and if you meete with any who have hearetofore bene averse to those wayes, w<sup>ch</sup> haue bene most conducinge to my seruice, or bene opposite to that party w<sup>ch</sup> hath bene most tender of me, you may confidently assure them, if they haue now changed ther mindes, I will be there harty frind, and be very carfull to aduance there interest, and to requite there good will: In the particular w<sup>ch</sup> you and S<sup>r</sup> M. L. haue consulted, I thinke best to acquiesce in that generall, untill there shall be some declaration of at least an inclination towards me, and you shall let Mon<sup>r</sup> Be: (to whom you are to commende me kindly) know that I shall then make it appeare, that it is in my power to add more strenght to those states then is imaginable: if you haue interest in any discreete person who is a confident of Count Williams, I would be glad he should know, that I haue great kindnesse for him, and doe much depend upon his good will and frindshipe to me in all my concernements, as indeede I do;<sup>1</sup> proceede as you haue begun, w<sup>ch</sup> is very acceptable to

Your constant louing frind,

CHARLES R.

*Copie of the Kings (Charles II.) Letter to the Duke of Gloucester, concerning his being tempted to turne Papist.*

Deare Brother,

Coloigne Nov: 10: 1654.<sup>2</sup>

I have receaued yo<sup>rs</sup> without a date in w<sup>ch</sup> you tell me that Mr. Montague has endeauord to pervert you from yo<sup>r</sup> religion. I doe not doubt but you remember very well y<sup>e</sup> com'ands I left w<sup>th</sup> you at my going away concerning y<sup>t</sup> point. I am confident you will observe them: yet yo<sup>r</sup> letters that come from Paris say that it is y<sup>e</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The King's mode of expression with respect to Count Williams is extremely remarkable. It seems as if policy had taught him sometimes to express favour and affection to those for whom he had a very different feeling, and towards whom, the addition of "as indeede I do" would not have been strictly consistent with truth.

<sup>2</sup> The King left Paris for Cologne on the 18th of October, and there he received much attention and kindness from the Princes of Germany.

Queenes purpose to do all shee can to change yo<sup>r</sup> religion,<sup>1</sup> in w<sup>ch</sup> if you do hearken to her or any body els in that matter, you must never thinke to see England or mee againe, & w<sup>soeuer</sup> mischiefe shall fall on mee or my affaires from this time I must lay all upon you as being y<sup>e</sup> only cause of it. Therefore consider well what it is to bee not onely y<sup>e</sup> cause of ruining a Brother that loves you so well, but also of yo<sup>r</sup> King & Country. Do not lett them p<sup>s</sup>uade you either by force or faire p<sup>m</sup>ises ; for the first they neither dare, nor will use, and for the second, as soone as they have perverted you they will haue their end, and then they will care no more for you. I am also informed y<sup>t</sup> there is a purpose to putt you into y<sup>e</sup> Jesuits' Colledge, w<sup>ch</sup> I command you upon y<sup>e</sup> same grounds neuer to consent unto. And when soever any body shall goe to dispute w<sup>th</sup> you in religion doo not answere them at all. For though you haue the reaso<sup>n</sup> on yo<sup>r</sup> side, yett they being prepared will haue y<sup>e</sup> aduantage of any body y<sup>t</sup> is not upon y<sup>e</sup> same security that they are. If you do not consider what I say unto you, Remember the last words of yo<sup>r</sup> dead Father, w<sup>ch</sup> were to bee constant to yo<sup>r</sup> religion & neuer to bee shaken in it. W<sup>ch</sup> if you doe not obserue, this shall bee y<sup>e</sup> last time you will heare from

(Deare Brother)

yo<sup>r</sup> most affectionate brother,

CHARLES R.

<sup>1</sup> In some private instructions given by the King to the Duke of York, and dated the 13th July, 1654, there is a passage which confirms Charles's anxiety about his brother, and strongly marks the Queen's breach of promise on this subject. "I have told you that the Queen hath promised me concerning my brother Harry in point of religion, and I have given him charge to inform you if any attempt shall be made upon him to the contrary ; in which case you will take the best care you can to prevent his being wrought upon, since you cannot but know how much you and I are concern'd in it." Vide *Miscellanea Aulica*, p. 108. The "Mr. Montague" alluded to was Walter Montague, who had lately entered into Priest's orders, and, upon the death of Father Philips, became the Queen's confessor. Carte, in his *Life of Ormond*, speaks of his "busy temper, spiritual pride, and furious zeal ;" vide vol. ii. p. 163. Some further particulars of this bigoted Abbot of Pontoise, who was second son of the Earl of Manchester, may be found in page 676, vol. ii. of the *Sidney Papers*.



*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.<sup>1</sup>*

Mr. Secretarie, I ame verie glade to finde by your letter that you are safelie arriued and all your companie at Aix,<sup>2</sup> and that you found the King and my Neece<sup>3</sup> so well in health and so kinde one to the other, which has euer bene so since I haue knowen them. I beleue indeed the seperation will be hard, but when there is no remedie one must be content. As for my iourney up hill I cannot tell what to say to it, Sr Charles Cottrell<sup>4</sup> shall informe you how it goes but slowlie on, and which is stranger that it is not my fault. Dr. Morley has made a verie good description of the Queene of Sweden :<sup>5</sup> she gaue an assignation to the French Ambassadour to meet her at Breda, whither he went, and so did the Prince and Princess<sup>6</sup> of Tarente and most of our French gallants, who came

<sup>1</sup> Written by the Queen of Bohemia, sister to Charles the First. This, and several others, are very interesting specimens of her Majesty's style of epistolary correspondence. She seems to have possessed an admirable facility of introducing a greater variety of persons and things into a smaller space than falls to the lot of mankind in general. In short, her letters in this volume form an interesting commentary upon the grave affairs of that important period.

<sup>2</sup> Aix-la-Chapelle.

<sup>3</sup> Henrietta, Duchess of Orleans.

<sup>4</sup> He is repeatedly mentioned in letters from the Elector Palatine to his mother, preserved in Bromley's Collection ; and appears to have been attached to the personal service of the Queen of Bohemia.

<sup>5</sup> The far-famed Christina. It was in this year that she abdicated the Throne. There were several personal squabbles between the Ex-Queen of Sweden and the Ex-Queen of Bohemia ; and the former felt a considerable jealousy of Elizabeth, who at this period was the correspondent of Des Cartes and of William Penn. Christina, even after her abdication, still attempted to mingle in politics. She even affected to treat and negotiate with Cromwell. She also offered several personal slights to the Queen of Bohemia : which may account for the manner in which she is spoken of upon several occasions.

<sup>6</sup> Her Majesty's spleen against Christina seems to have affected her feelings even towards her own relations ; for Emilia, Princess of Tarente, was daughter of William, Elector of Hesse Cassel, whilst Charles, the Elector Palatine, son to the Queen, was married to Charlotte, another daughter of the Hessian Elector. The Prince was Henry Charles de la Tremouille, then in the service of the States, and in command of the Hessian cavalry. His connection with these august families procured him to be chosen a Knight of the Garter in 1653, along with the young Duke of Gloucester.





ELIZABETH, QUEEN OF BOHEMIA.





ELIZABETH, QUEEN OF BOHEMIA.





all sneaking home againe, for her greefe was so great for the beating of the Spanish armie before Arras<sup>1</sup> as she would not goe to Breda. She sent another account than that to the Ambassadour as you may imagin, but the Landgrave writt the truth to his neece the Princess of Tarente. We haue yet heere no particullars of this defeat, but in generall it is a verie great one. I long to heare what part my godsonne had in it, for I still thinke of him, being my cheefest comfort next your excellent Master. I am verie glad your daughter is so well,<sup>2</sup> I doe not wonder at it, she is soe well vsed, and now she has her father with her she is the more content, and I take it verie well that all this makes her not forget her frends heere. I assure you I long to haue her heere againe. I am verie sorie for poore Killegrew,<sup>3</sup> she was a verie good gentlewoman. You will heare by M<sup>rs</sup> Howards letter howe great a scape my little Nephue escaped yesterday vpon the bridge at the Princess of Orange's house, but God be thanked there was no hurt onelie the coache broken: I tooke him into my coache and brought him home. The Princess of Orange went from hence vpon Saturday, and you will haue our Baron shortlie with you at Aix, he will tell you the second part of the Queene of Sweden, for he comes from her to your Court. to morrow I beleeeve I shall goe a shooting, which I haue not done since you went. I am verie glade to heere that you are established in your place, which you desearve so well. this is no complement but the verie truth from

Your most affectionat frend,

ELIZABETH.

Hage, Aug. 31.

I am verie sorie for my Lo: Wentworths sickness. I pray lett him know so from me, and remember me to Mr. Chancellour.

I pray remember my humble seruice to the King: the news of

<sup>1</sup> Allusive to the defeat of the Spaniards by the French on St. Louis's day, when their lines were forced, whilst besieging Arras, with great slaughter.

<sup>2</sup> Lady of Sir Richard Browne, and mother-in-law of John Evelyn.

<sup>3</sup> "Kate Killigrew," daughter of Lord Stafford. She had been Maid of Honour to the Queen upwards of eight years. A curious letter, introducing this lady to her Majesty, in 1646, may be referred to in Bromley's *Royal Letters*, p. 135.

beating the Scotch<sup>1</sup> is now tolde quite contrarie by a ship come from thence.

"For Mr. Secretarie."

Indorsed by Sir E. N. 31<sup>o</sup> Aug: st: No: 1654. R. 3<sup>o</sup>. 7<sup>bris</sup>. Queene of Bohemia to me.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh, Sep: 7 (1654).

Mr. Secretarie, I thanke you both for the good news you writt to Sr Charles Cottrell out of Holland, and for your letter I receaued this morning with the relation of the defeat before Arras. I hope you will send that of Holland to Curtius<sup>2</sup> that the beleef of the Scotch defeat may not be continued in Germanie. but none pleaseth me better then what you write of my deere Godsonne,<sup>3</sup> and the continuance of my Neeces good health. The Queen of Sweden is yett at Anwerp, wee looke euerie day to see the Landgrave heere, and by him I shall know what she will doe. It is certaine that the flux is much in Monkes army,<sup>4</sup> a Scotchman that is come from thence reports it, and all the particulars you haue written. Dr. Morley has a letter from Anwerp of some trouble by a discouerie of a new treason in London of the levellers against his pretious higness, but I beleeeue you will haue more particullars of that then wee heere.<sup>5</sup> Dr. Earle setts forwards to morrow to Breda and so

<sup>1</sup> This was a trifling affair; being merely a check given to Lilburn the Parliamentary General, who commanded during Cromwell's absence.

<sup>2</sup> Curtius had long been the English agent, at Frankfort, to the German Princes. He had been Secretary to the King of Bohemia, and in 1640 was also employed by Charles the First in Germanic diplomacy.

<sup>3</sup> We have been unable precisely to ascertain the "godson" here alluded to. In her Majesty's letters preserved in the Bromley Collection, there are frequent allusions to him. In one place (Bromley, p. 286) she speaks of him under the name of "Tint;" but this seems merely a playful manner of writing to a familiar friend.

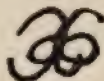
<sup>4</sup> Monk commanded in Scotland at this period; having superseded Lilburn, Morgan, and other parliamentary officers.

<sup>5</sup> This was immediately after Cromwell's well-known treatment of the House of Commons, and his assumption of the Protectorate. It was on the 3rd of this month that he called together his first mock parliament; and eight days after the date of this letter, the members swore fealty to him.



to Aix. I doe not write to you by him because this will be sooner with you. Our Baron has sent for his man Smith to meet him God knows where, for I doe not, I beleeeve you will haue him at Aix : he is the direct wandring Jew. My Ladie Herbert is looked for heere shortlie, but she was not come from Paris the last week. I heare M<sup>rs</sup> Hide <sup>1</sup> is to come to my Neece in M<sup>rs</sup> Killegrews place, which I am verie glad of, she is verie fitt for itt and a great fauorit of mine, who ame euer

Your most affectio  
nat Frend,



I pray lett my Lord Wentworth know I ame extreme glade he is of the kings councell, being so much his frend as I ame I cannot but wish him much ioye of it.

Indorsed, 7<sup>o</sup> Sep<sup>bris</sup> 1654. The Queene of Bohemia to me.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Mr. Secretary Nicholas.*

Hagh, Sep: 15. (1654.)

Mr. Secretarie, I assure you your letters are always verie welcome to me. I hope before this come to you, you will receaue a pacquet from Scotland which came to Rotterdam, and ould Will. Kepley caries himself to Aix. I shall be verie glad to know what news it brings, because heere is againe news of Monkes being beaten, which a man of Midletons writes to Straghen from Stranaven or such a

<sup>1</sup> This lady was afterwards Duchess of York, and, though not yet married to the Duke, at this period, she seems to have engaged much of the royal attention. Charles, in a letter to Bennet, afterwards Earl of Arlington, in 1655, says, "I will try whether Sir S. Compton be so much in love as you say, for I will name Mrs. Hyde before him so by chance, that except he be very much smitten it shall not at all move him." Sir Spencer Compton, son of the Earl of Northampton, was so loyal and gallant in his infancy, that, as Sir Philip Warwick informs us, though not able to grasp a pistol, yet in indignation he cried because he was not exposed to the same hazard his brothers were.

name, and from my Lo. of [illegible], and that all long for the King. Stone is at last here, he saith that Cromwell will be now either King or Emperour, I wish him the latter. he has heard nothing of Bamfeld, but I easilie beleeeue he is honnest enough to be well used by Cromwell, he tells the Fleet as you hear, but it will not be beleeeued heere. This day the assemblie of Hollande begins. theire agent in Sueden writt to the States Generall, that S<sup>r</sup> George Fleetwood, brother to him that is Leftenant of Irland, tolde him that he knew Cromwell had saide he would keepe the peace with the States no longer then he found it good for his interests, and would break with the first occasion that he can for the good of his deseins. Those of Hollande are verie angrie at the agent for writing this: those that have seene the letter tolde it me. it is so late as I can say no more, but ame euer

Your most affectionat frend.<sup>1</sup>

I pray remember me to my lord Wentworth, I have not time to answer his letter but will doe it by the first post.

15<sup>o</sup> 7<sup>bris</sup> 1654. R:  $\frac{7}{17}$ . Qu: of Bohemia.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Mr. Secretary Nicholas.*

Hagh, Sep: 21.

Mr. Secretarie, I thanke you for yours of the 18 of Sept: yesterday I was tolde that all the people at Bruxelles were sending theire goods to Antwerp for feare of the French.<sup>2</sup> Some in a ship come out of England say that the mock Parliament beginn to dispute their priuiledges with Cromwell, but I feare they will but too well agree. I ame verie glade the King used Prince Williame and his ladie<sup>3</sup> so well. Boswell<sup>4</sup> is well enough serued, but I pittie him for he is vtterlie vndone. there is heere no news at all, onelie Mons<sup>r</sup> de Wimmenom is verie sick. the States of Holland are

<sup>1</sup> The following letters of the Queen of Bohemia, where her name is not subscribed, are signed with her cipher, as in pp. 211 and 227.

<sup>2</sup> In consequence of the war existing in Flanders, between France and Spain.

<sup>3</sup> Sister of the late Stadtholder.

<sup>4</sup> Sir William Boswell, already noticed.



assembled, but Brederoke, Opdam, and Merode are not yett come. it is now verie faire weather. when the Princess of Tarents picture is ended by Louyr, which will be this day, then I may chance goe a shooting,<sup>1</sup> which I have not done since you went. I pray deliuer this inclosed to the King with my humble service. I ame euer

Your most affectionat frend.

I pray lett me know if the Queene of Sueden did write to the King by my Lord of Norwich, and if she did it ciuillie or not. Sure Dick Harding is growen a fish in his baths, for he is as mute as one, tell him so from me. I think the King had better stay where he is then to goe to Collein, he will not be so much at his leisure there as at Aix, those of Collein are odd people, so as I ame of your opinion.

$\frac{11}{31}$  7<sup>bris</sup> 1654. R.  $\frac{14}{24}$ . Queene of Bohemia to me.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Mr. Secretary Nicholas.*

Mr. Secretarie, I ame verie glade that I shall see my Neece heere so soone, and I thanke you for all your other news. I beleeeue Dr. Morley will write those that he heares out of England of Cromwells dessoluing of his Parliament,<sup>2</sup> for being so ungratious as not to doe as he woulde haue them. it was confirmed to me the last night by one of the States Generall, for three of ther

<sup>1</sup> Hunting seems also to have been a very favourite amusement of her Majesty of Bohemia. It is frequently alluded to in these letters; and in those of Bromley's Collection, sixteen years previous, there are several references to it.

<sup>2</sup> This evidently alludes to the transactions on the 3rd of September, 1654, when Cromwell summoned that Parliament which he immediately afterwards dissolved for their opposition to his assumption of the Protectorate; a rank and authority which, up to that date, rested solely upon a proclamation of the Council, but was not sanctioned by the people. The speech, which the Queen of Bohemia alludes to, was that remarkable one on the first sitting of the House; when a member, after denying the authority which had called them together, boldly exclaimed, "that as God had made him instrumental in cutting down tyranny in one man, so now he could not endure to see the nation's liberties shackled by another, who had no right to the government but by the length of his sword."



Deputies are come from London that were sent about the treatie of the Amb<sup>lors</sup> and the other disputes ; they confirme all, but it was so late that I coulde not heare of the particullars. the same State tolde me there was a speech of part of the orange and red men in rebellion against his pretious highness. I pray tell your daughter all this, for I had sealed her letter before I had the certaintie of the news. I ame verie glad the king resolves to stay at Aix, it is much better then Collein. I heare there is one that has heere-tofore served my Lo: of Brainford<sup>1</sup> paked from Scotland to the King but three days agoe, and came from thence but sixe days before, he would tell no news but made hast away. Soone as he went, there reached heere one Thomson, one I haue seene before : he tells all the particullars of the defeat that is so bragged of. he saith that they were dispersed vpon it, but it is aboue fīue weekes since he came from thence, being come thourough England by his countrie, the borders, where in his passage he mett with a partie where he was hurt and lamed, but for all that he is gone to the King. he much complaines of diuisions amongst them, and not of Sir George Monroe, which they doe also. I doe admire how people could tell so great a lye as the pacquet, but it is verie common amongst my countriemen.—Phil: Mohun is heere, she is fled from England fearing to be imprisoned by Cromwell, shes verie good companie and talkes verie freeilie but handsomlie. My Ladie Herbert is also heere, since Sunday last ; I haue had yett no time to aske her anie thing, hauing not seene her since Sunday. Thom: Doleman<sup>2</sup> is heere and desires leeuē to see me, which I haue put off untill I know the Kings pleasure : for hauing so openlie owned the setting forward of the treatie I will not see him without the Kings approbation. I haue writt thus to your daughter, and desire you both to know the Kings pleasure in it. I entreat you besides to remember my humble

<sup>1</sup> Patrick Ruthen, Earl of Forth in Scotland. He had been General of Charles's forces during the Rebellion ; but was dead at the date of this letter.

<sup>2</sup> Dolman had suffered much in the royal cause during the civil wars. He was a Berkshire gentleman, and his house at Shaw, just below Donnington Castle, was one of the points of attack during the battle of Newbury, making a good defence against Lord Manchester.

service to him, and keepe me still in his good opinion, for it is the best service and frendship you can doe to

Your most affectionat  
frend.

Hagh, Sep. 29.

I bragg'd to soone of shooting, for since I wrote the weather has not serued.

"For Mr. Secretarie."

29<sup>o</sup> 7<sup>bris</sup> 1654. R: 8<sup>bris</sup>. The Queene to me.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Mr. Secretary Nicholas.*

Hagh Oct. 2 (1654.)

Mr. Secretarie, I send you heere a letter for the King, it is about a match betwixt Prince Adolphe the King of Suedes brother and Sophie;<sup>1</sup> he has desired it verie handsomlie: my sonne has consented to it, reseruing the King of Suedens consent and mine, who ame to acquaint the King with it. I doe it now, and send you the copie of Prince Adolphes letter, I pray gett an answer from the King as soone as you can. I haue no more to say, but ame euer

Your most affectionat frend.

I pray assure me to my Lo: Wentworth, I write not now to him, I haue no time, for the post is readie to goe. I pray say the same to reuerent Dick Harding.

"2<sup>o</sup> 8<sup>bris</sup> 1654. st. No. R. 4<sup>o</sup>. The Queene of Bohemia to me concerning y<sup>e</sup> Kings consent for Pr<sup>esse</sup> Sophia to marry Pr<sup>esse</sup> Adolph, y<sup>e</sup> King of Swedens brother."

*The Queen of Bohemia to Mr. Secretary Nicholas.*

Hagh, Oct. 19. (1654.)

Mr. Secretarie, hearing that you may chance to stay all this week at Collein, I send you this inclosed for the King, to giue him

<sup>1</sup> Daughter of the Queen of Bohemia, afterwards married to the Elector of Hanover, and thence the stem of descent of the present Royal House of Brunswick.



humble thanks for his aprobaton of Sophies mariage. You will haue vnderstood by Curtius all the newes of Germanie, for his going to waite vpon the King. You will finde by the English prints that they are forbidden to write anie thing of the proceedings of their mock Parliament. I was at Delft to see the wrack that was made by the blowing up of the powder this day seuenight, it is a sad sight, whole streets quite razed ; not one stone vpon another, it is not yett knowen how manie persons are lost, there is scarce anie house in the toun but the tyles are off.—(*A great blot on the paper.*) Apollo with leaping into my lapp has made this blott. Thom. Killegrew is heere, who makes a rare relation of the Queene of Sueden. It is verie colde, which I hope will diminish the plague. I pray be confident that I am euer

Your most affectionat frend,

ELIZABETH.

I ame extreme glade to heare that the King is satisfied with Ruperts letter, and that he has answered him so kindlie. I pray doe poore Curtius all the fauour you can, that he haue something from the King to incourage him the more to serue him.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Mr. Secretary Nicholas.*

Hagh No: 16. (1654.)

Mr. Secretarie, iust now I receaue yours, and for a cause that you shall know heereafter I now answer you, this is a riddle which none but your daughter and two more know. I was Satterday last with my best Neece<sup>1</sup> at Speiling, it being her birth day. I ashure you she is [in] much trouble for her deare Brother the D. of Gloucester, all the world woulde looke for no other I can witness for you.—I ame sorie the King has so much cause of greef, I beseech God he may speedilie remedie it. I beleeeue my deare

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps the Princess Dowager of Orange, *par excellence* ; especially as the whole passage seems to refer to the attempts made at Paris, by Queen Henrietta Maria and her friends, to induce the young Prince to change his religion.



Nephue has a good resolution, but there is no trusting to one of his age. I confess I did not think the Queene woulde haue proceeded thus : all is kept heere verie secret that Prince Will:<sup>1</sup> doth in Overizel, but I ame tolde that all goes well, and that Deventer which toune was the most against will doe well, as also Rupert who was of the other faction,<sup>2</sup> not against the P. of Orange but Marshals. I pray beleue me constantlie for I ame so

Your most affectionat frend.

I send you a letter for the best of Kings, tis about Thom. Killegrew's business. I pray remember me to Mr. Chancelour, and tell him his Ladie and my fauorit his daughter came hither upon Saturday, and are gone this day to Teiling. I finde my fauorit growen euerie way to her aduantage.

<sup>6</sup>/<sub>16</sub> No<sup>bris</sup> 1654. R. <sup>9</sup>/<sub>10</sub> The Queene of Bohemia to me.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh De: 3. (1654.)

Mr. Secretarie, I receaued yours at Berghen, whither I was come from Anwerp and Bruxells. I finde you haue vnridled my riddle verie right. I saw the Queene of Sueden at the play, she is extrauagant in her fashion and aparell, but she has a good well fauoured face, and a milde countenance. One of the players that knew me tolde her who I was, but she made no shew of it. I went the next day to Bruxelles, where I saw the Arch-duc at mass, and I saw his pictures and lodgins. I lay at S<sup>r</sup> Harry de Vics,<sup>3</sup> who was verie carefull and dilligent to doe me all the ser-

<sup>1</sup> Prince of Nassau Dietz, married to the Stadtholder's sister.

<sup>2</sup> Evidently in allusion to the De Wit faction, which at this moment was disturbing the peace of the United Provinces. Their great object was to deprive the infant Stadtholder of his official power, and to give it solely to the Assembly of the States. This, in fact, was one of the articles which Cromwell enforced upon the States, as a *sine qua non*.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Henry de Vic had been long in the English service. He was with the Duke of Buckingham at Rochelle; and there are several well-written letters from him to Lord Conway, respecting that affair, in Hardwicke's Collection of State Papers.

vice he coude. I stayed but Sunday at Bruxelles, and returned to Anwerp vpon Munday, and heearing from Duart how the Queene of Sueden had desired to know when I came back thither, that she might meet with me in an indiferent place, I made the more hast away the next day because I had no minde to speak with her since I heard how unhandsomelie she had spoken of the King my deare Brother and of the King my dear Nephue, and indeed of all our nation, so I auoided it and went away as soone as I had dined. Yett she sent Donoy to me with a verie civill message that she was sorie she coude not use that ciuilitie to me as she both should doe and desired, hoping that one day wee might meet together with more freedome ; I answered her as civillie as I coude, and now when I went from Berghen I gaue Sr Will: Swann charge to make her a complement from me. I came hither vpon Tewsday from Berghen, where I was extremelie well intertaind by the Princess of Zolern<sup>1</sup> who was with me and was my guide all the iourney, and defrayed me. her daughter is now so prettie euerie way that you would like her yet better than euer you did if you saw her ; she is much growen and is still of a verie sweet disposition, and she doth become her : she has a great deal of witt and loues our nation extreamlie, it makes me think of your wishe<sup>2</sup> which I ame not against you know. by this post I haue had verie good news of the Duke of Glocesters constantie in his religion and of my Lo: of Ormonds handsome carriage in that business,<sup>3</sup> so as the Queen saith she will press him no further in it, but I hope the King will not trust to it, but gett him away from thence, which will doe the King great right : it is so colde as I can say no more, but ame euer

Your most affectionat frend.

<sup>1</sup> Francisca, daughter of Frederick the Rhingrave, and wife of John George Prince of Hohenzollern.

<sup>2</sup> Evidently allusive to a plan of producing a match between Charles II. and this young Princess, one of the daughters of the Zollern family.

<sup>3</sup> This alludes to the attempt made to force the young Duke of Gloucester into the Jesuits' College ; from which, and other attempts upon his religion, he was only saved by the handsome conduct of the Marquis of Ormond, who voluntarily offered his services to the King to snatch his brother out of the hands of the Queen-mother and her bigoted Confessor Montague. Carte's Life of Ormond, vol. ii. pages 163-7, contains a very amusing account of the whole transaction, very much to the  
marquis.



I pray excuse me to my Lo. Wentworth and reverent Dick Harding till the next.

"For M<sup>r</sup> Secretarie."

3 Dec: St: No: 1654 R. 6<sup>o</sup>. The Queene of Bohemia cons<sup>t</sup> her iourney to see the Qu. of Sweeden.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh De: 21. (1651).

M<sup>r</sup> Secretarie, I haue receaued yours of the 18 of this month. I long to heare my sweet Nephue<sup>1</sup> is at Bruxelles. My Neece has sent Nick: Armourer to meet him there. I haue written to him by him, if the King woulde permitt him to take this place and Teiling in his way from Bruxelles he woulde make his Sister<sup>2</sup> and me verie glade: he need not make such hast to see him, it is but the other day since he was with him, but it is much longer since wee saw him, and I ame sure our hoghen Moghens will take no notice of it if they be not asked the question as they were for the King's comming to Breda. To be with his Sister some time can doe him no harme. I haue taken the boldness to write the same by my Lo: Gerard<sup>3</sup> to the King, who I beleuee will be with you as soone as this letter, for he went from hence vpon Saterday last. We heere nothing of the rebells fleet heerabouts, but they say that Blag<sup>4</sup> is to ioine with the Spanish fleet against the Duke of Guise. The French Ambassadour beleuees the treatie with Cromwell as good as broken; he is much ioyed that the meeting betwixt the Queene of Sueden and P. of Condé<sup>5</sup> was to neither of their content, for he desired to be receaued as the Queene receaued the Arcdduc, which she refused, saying she had done too much in that and woulde doe so no more, yet he came to see her *brusquement* a

<sup>1</sup> The Duke of Gloucester, who was just brought from Paris by the Marquis of Ormond.

<sup>2</sup> The Princess Dowager of Orange.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Gerard of Bromley; now extinct.

<sup>4</sup> Admiral Blake is the personage here alluded to. The Duke of Guise died very soon after this letter was written, in consequence of wounds received at the siege of Arras.

<sup>5</sup> Yet the Prince de Condé was a great admirer of Christina, and observed upon one occasion—"How great is the magnanimity of this Princess, who



*Improuist*, and did nothing but *railler* her in his talke, which putt her so out as she said almost not one worde. This was in the morning; after dinner she sent to know if he woulde see the play at night, he said he would obey her, but desired to know whither he shoulde come knowen or as unknowen, for if he came as Prince of Condé he looked to haue a *chaise a bras* as the Archduc had—she saide he had better come unknowen, so he came, and she stood all the play, railling with Mon<sup>r</sup> Quito the Princes favourit. the next day the P. went to Bruxelles, and neither of them well satisfied with the other. My La: Swann will be heere within a few days, by her I shall know more of this: I haue heard the reason of S<sup>r</sup> Henry de Vics iourney to Coloign:<sup>1</sup> since it is a doting time for the kings ould Ministers of State, I thanke God your wife is yet aliue, for feare you should fall in loue againe. I pray lett me know when that wedding will be, for I (will) send you a letter to reverent Dick to bespeak him for brideman. I thank you for your congratulation of Apollos<sup>2</sup> returne, you know how great a favorit he is to

Your most affectionat frend.

I pray tell my Ladie Hide I ame verie glade she is so well come to Coloigne.

"For M<sup>r</sup> Secretarie."

$\frac{11}{11}$  Dec: 1654. R.  $\frac{11}{11}$ . The Qu: of Bohemia co<sup>r</sup> the Pr. of Condé and the Qu: of Sweedes being unsatisfied w<sup>b</sup> each other.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh, Dec: 27 (1654).

Mr. Secretarie, since you wrote yours, I understand that that

could so easily give up that for which mankind are continually destroying each other, and which so many throughout their whole lives pursue without attaining!" Condé, at the period here recorded, was in exile at Brussels; and though he felt offended upon the score of etiquette, her abdicated Majesty seems to have treated him with great familiarity, exclaiming "Cousin! who would have thought ten years ago that we should have met at this distance from our countries?" The Prince might have thanked her for his exile, as it arose partly from her intermeddling in the affaires of the Fronde in France, a few years previous.

<sup>1</sup> It was an affair of courtship! Her Majesty again alludes to it in . 222.

<sup>2</sup> Her Majesty's lap-dog, already noticed!

arch villaine Manning has receaued his iust desert.<sup>1</sup> I wish all those of his cabal with him. I wish I might know whome he has accused on this side the sea, to auoide them, but this is onelie in case you may tell it, for I doe not desire it otherwise; I haue curiositie enough to desire to know the rest, but I will not desire but as you think fitt. There is little news heere, the King of Sueden<sup>2</sup> has a sonne borne to him and has . . . . . and prospers exceedingly. the K. of Poland<sup>3</sup> is in Silesia, hunts and passeth his time with little care of anie thing else, this I haue from his owne resident, but I feare the Electour of Brandebourg<sup>4</sup> will be in a ill condition if he doe not make an agreement with the King of Sueden. it is beleeued that Prince Williame will be shortlie Marschall of the Feelde: those that were so much against him are not now so fierce: else there is no news, onely Scone is come, and I hope all will be well ended in that foolish business. I ame euer

Your most affectionat frend.

Mr. Charles Cottrell, my Lo: Wentworth,<sup>5</sup> and reverent Dick Harding, I cannot write to them now for lack of time. I pray say the same to Mons<sup>r</sup> Soiret from me.

<sup>1</sup> Of this Manning a remarkable anecdote is related in a scarce tract, now in the British Museum, which professes to give a memoir of Charles during his exile.

"Before his Majesty's departure from Colen, there happened a discovery of one of those persons who, under pretence of waiting upon him (Capt. Manning by name) discovered unto the Protector all his designs and counsels; who being found out, was by his Majesty's command, sent to a strong castle adjacent to Colen, there to be kept close prisoner. But all the Court being highly incensed against him for his perfidiousnesse, one of his Majesty's servants (though contrary to order) pistoled him as he was lighting out of the coach at the Castle gate, giving him less than the due reward of his so abominable treachery." It was by this Manning that Penruddock was betrayed. He corresponded with Thurloe.

<sup>2</sup> Charles Gustavus Duke of Deux Ponts, who had recently succeeded the abdicated Christina.

<sup>3</sup> The well-known John Casimir. The Queen's observations seem almost prophetic; as the whole of Poland was conquered by the Swedes in less than two years after the date of this epistle.

<sup>4</sup> George William, grandfather of the first King of Prussia.

<sup>5</sup> Lord Wentworth had been high in command, during the Civil Wars; and after Goring went to France, a second time, he had the command of the Western Army. Yet Bulstrode says of him that "he was a very lazy and unactive man, and was not thought either of interest, experience, courage, or reputation enough for that trust which was devolved upon him."

There are some curious anecdotes of him in Bulstrode's *Memoirs*, p. 150, &c.



*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh Jan: 4 (1654-5).

Mr. Secretarie, I haue receaued yours of the 29th at my returne vpon Thursday last from Teiling, and this morning I haue letters from Bruxelles, who tell me that my deare nephue the D. of Gloucester was there vpon new years eue the same day I was at Teiling, but when he came thither or goes from thence I know not. I am extreme glade the King permitts (him) to see his sister and me. I hope he will suffer him to stay some time with my deare Neece, it will be a great contentment to her and no hurt to him, and as long as there is nothing tolde to the States of him, they will take no notice of it, this I know is true. I am sorrie for poore Sr Henry de Vic,<sup>1</sup> for lett the match break or goe on, it is euerie way ill for him: We heare no certaintie heere how the French treatie with the rebells in England goes, whither it breake or peece.<sup>2</sup> I am verie sorrie for the Countess of Mortons death,<sup>3</sup> I pittie Sr Thom. Berkley, but most her children. the Queene of Sueden is now at Bruxelles, where she was receaued in greate state: I beleue the Arch-duke<sup>4</sup> wisheth her at Antwerp, for she persecutes him verie close with her companie, for you know he is a verie modest man. I haue written to the King some particullars of it which are verie rare ons, but the Prince of Condé is still verie unsatisfied with her and will not come at her. I haue one peece of news which it may be you haue not heard: the resident of Polande tells me that there is a treatie betwixt Sueden and Polande and a perpetual peace, and to assist one the other against the Muscovits: the King of Poland will quit his pretention to

<sup>1</sup> Sir Henry de Vic, in the early part of Charles the First's reign, had been his Majesty's Secretary for the French mission, and also agent to the King of Denmark. See p. 220.

<sup>2</sup> In January the cavaliers were stirring, but in vain; and in the following November, Cromwell made peace with the French. The Ex-Queen of Sweden and the Prince of Condé seem to have been meddling with those affairs, through the diplomatic exertions of the Count de Tott; as may be seen by reference to a letter in Bromley's Collection, p. 186.

<sup>3</sup> Widow of William Earl of Morton, Lord High Treasurer of Scotland, and long in great personal favour with Charles the First.

<sup>4</sup> Archduke of Austria.



Sueden vpon condition that he be recompenced with some lande or Islande for his heire, that if they be not chosen to succeed the kingdome of Polande, they may haue some place to them selfs to liue in, for the K. of Polande has no patrimonie of his owne nor can buy anie lande under the croune of Poland: his agent has order to goe for England, to see if Cromwell woulde send some ships against the Muscovits to make a diuersion. the good agent is verie vnwilling to goe, but he must obey his master. Sure Cromwell is the beast in the Revelations that all kings and nations doe worship; I wish him the like end and speedilie, and you a hapie new yeare as<sup>1</sup>

your most affectionat frend.

"For Mr. Secretarie."

4<sup>o</sup> Jan: St. No: 1654-5. R: 7. Qu: Bo:

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh Jan: 10 (1654-5).

Mr. Secretarie, I beleeeue you will heare at Collein how I haue beene debauched this last week in sitting up late to see dancing. wee made Friday out and every night, which lasted till Saterdag at fise a clock in the morning, and yesterday was the christening of P. Will:<sup>2</sup> childe: I was at the supper: my Neece, the P<sup>s</sup> douager, the little Prince<sup>3</sup> and P. Maurice were gossips: the States generall, I meane their Deputies, and the Counsell of State, and myself and Louyse were there as guests. after super was dancing this (till) three a clock, my little Nephue was at the super and sett verie still all the time: those States that were there were verie much taken with him. the King of Sueden with his army is within an houres going from Kunisberg with twenty thousand men, most horse. the Elector is in the toune and has also which they say is twentie thousand also, he has [*torn off,*] foot then the King has

<sup>1</sup> Her Majesty's political gossip in this epistle is highly deserving the notice of the historian. A preceding note shows that the proposed peace between Poland and Sweden was of very short duration.

<sup>2</sup> This evidently refers to William Frederick, Count and Prince of Nassau Dietz, who had married Albertine Agnes, sister of the late Prince of Orange.

<sup>3</sup> Afterwards William the Third of England, then only four years of age.

[also torn]<sup>1</sup> Ambassadour goe this week from hence towards Sueden and Dennemark, one of those that goes for Dennemarke is Mon<sup>r</sup> d'Ameron a gentleman of Utrecht, a verie honest and great Royalist and so you may be sure my great frend, but I beleeeue they will doe but little with that King, for I am tolde from a good hande that he and the K. of Sueden are in verie good intelligence together, which I am not sorie for considering how little these States assist there allies. My deare Neece continues her resolution of going from hence Thursday next, but I dout the weather will hinder for it thaughts apace.

I ame euer your most affectionat frend.

I have not time to write to Mons: Soiret, but tell him he was wished here vpon Friday last. I haue written to my Nephue all the particullars of what they were and who was best dressed.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Hagh, Jan. 11 (1654-5).

Mr. Secretarie, I hope my next will tell you of my sweet Nephues being wellcome to Teiling, for Mr. Lovell assures vs all heere that he is perfectlie well. I beleeeue Mr. Fraiser is not sorie to haue a commission to waite upon him this way, for soe he may see his Mistris though she will not confess him so. I know not how your people at Colloigne<sup>2</sup> goe on with their business, but our

<sup>1</sup> This alludes to the first invasion of Poland by Gustavus, who marched from Pomerania into that Kingdom after the irruption made by his order, by General Wirtemberg.

<sup>2</sup> Charles the Second now kept his Court at Cologne, but in great privacy. Sir Stephen Fox is described by Bulstrode, as having the care, management, and disposal of his household, which he kept at an expence of not more than six hundred pistoles *per* month. In fact, such was the royal economy, that Charles never kept a coach during his long stay in that City. "In the time of the King's banishment," adds Bulstrode, "he spent two years at Cologne, where he was well received by a widow, at whose house he lodged."

In a letter written by the King to Bennet, afterwards Earl of Arlington, and preserved in the *Miscellanea Aulica*, p. 109, it appears that Charles led a very rational and sober life whilst at Cologne. He says: "I hope it will not be



resident Thom. was asked yesterday for the first time, and so was Jack Sayers. I feare resident Halle will not haue by much so good a bargaine, but how Bess who is left at Bruxelles will take it, for she has written a terrible letter to S<sup>r</sup> Charles Cottrell of it, and how confident she is of her Masters honnestie to her, so as she may chauce forbid the bains. Vicfort tolde me yesterday that Bourdeaux has order to stay yett in England, which shews what you beleue is true. the news I writt to you of Poland and Sweden is most true, and that De Bre makes still his monitions to goe for England.

Wee had a Royaltie, though not vpon twelf night, at Teiling, where my Neece was a gipsie and became her dress extreame well . . . . . was a Northolland boorine; Mrs. Hide<sup>1</sup> a shephardess and I assure was verie handsome in it, none but her Mistress looked better than she did. I beleue my Lady Hide and Mr. Chancelour will not be sorie to heare it, which I pray tell them from me. the queene of Sueden takes a house at Anwerp, all her owne people leaues her and Italiens and Spaniards comes in their place. Heere is little news stirring. I beleue you heare of the quarrelle betwixt my soone and the Elector of Ments, it may come to some<sup>2</sup> ill business. it is so colde and they make such a noise with their bells and pleids in (the) street as makes me end, but am euer

your most affectionat frend.

I pray remember my humble seruisse to the King, and in my name make an humble suit to him in Thom: Killigrews<sup>3</sup> behalf.

many days before you see how we pass our time at Collen, which tho' it be not so well as I could wish, yet I think it is as well as some of you do at Paris; at least some that are here would not pass their time so well there as they do here."

In another letter, Charles mentions a design of himself and the Princess Dowager of Orange, to go to the Frankfort Fair *incognito*.

<sup>1</sup> Afterwards Duchess of York; but then in the household of Princess Dowager of Orange.

<sup>2</sup> A trifling dispute about boundaries.

<sup>3</sup> Killigrew, so well known in the private history of Charles's reign, was groom of his bedchamber after the Restoration, and happened to be engaged one morning with a volume of his own plays, which he took up in the window, whilst his Majesty was shaving. "Ah! Killigrew," asked the King,



It is to recommend him to Pr. William for Captaine Morgans companie who is dead. the companie lyes at Orzo and is under Eri . . . e, it will make him to subsist untill the King be able to doe for him, and his wiues frends haue putt him upon it. I woulde not trouble his Ma<sup>tie</sup> with a letter since you are in the place. Thom: writes himself to the King about it; it will be a great honnour for him the Kings writing because his wiues frends will by that . . . his Ma<sup>tie</sup> favour to him.

"For Mr. Secretarie."

11<sup>o</sup> Jan. 1654-5. R.<sup>ty</sup>. Queene of Bohemia to me.

*The Queen of Bohemia to Sir Edward Nicholas.*

Mr. Secretarie, I haue receaued yours. My sweet Nephue is not yett gone from Anwerp, but I hope now the weather is better, and I shall see him I hope shortlie, for as soon as he comes to Teiling I will be there. I hope it is a good prophesie of the Electrice of Brandebourg<sup>1</sup> hauing a sonne, but she doth looke to be deliuered before the end of this month or the beginning of the next. The letters out of England say Cromwell is bringing his armie to London, and doubles his gardes, plants cannon in manie places in London and at the Toure; it is saide he will make himself King by force since he cannot be it otherwise: this is written to the P. of Torent. I doe not heare that Bariere is at Bruxelles. I will tell Thom. Killegrew what the King answers. As for the Archduc he may thanke God to be ridd of the Queen of Sueden, who is lodged at the Count of Egmonts house in Bruxelles, where she stays all winter. My Lord Norwich has got news that the Archduc goes for Spaine, and Don John of Austria comes in his

"what will you say at the last day, in defence of all the idle words in that book?" To which the facetious Tom replied, that he would give a better account of his "idle words" than the King would do respecting *his idle promises and more idle patents*, which had undone more than ever his books did!

<sup>1</sup> The Electress Elizabeth Charlotte was daughter of Frederick V. Elector Palatine, and therefore sister-in-law to her Bohemian Majesty.

place and marrieth the Queene of Sueden, and to haue the Low Countries as the Archduc Albert, but I beleeeue it not: there is nothing else that I have to say to you but ame euer

Your most affectionate friend,

Hagh, Jan. 18.

8<sup>o</sup> Jan: 1654-5. R: 11-21. Queene of Bohemia.

*To her Royall Highness the Lady Princesse Dowager of Orange, from the States of Holland and West-Vriesland.*

Most excellent Princesse,

We were informed by some that the Lord King Charles your Royall Highnesses Brother should haue betaken himselfe within the limitts of this State, and particularly that he should at this present shelter himselfe in the house at Tylinge: And although we cannot by any meanes belieue or expect from the wisdom and reason of the said mighty Lord the King that he would or durst vndertake contrary to the Treaty of Peace made the last yeare with the Commonwealth of England to come within the limitts of this State, and directly against our particular orders comprehended in our Resolutions of the 30<sup>th</sup> of July, 2<sup>nd</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> of August all in the year 1653, and the writing made by the vertue thereof to be giuen to your Royall Highnes within the Province of Holland and West Vriesland: So haue we after good reasons, and for settling our selues in entire rest, found meete with these to set before the eyes of your Royall Highnes what is said before, with a desire and demaund that you will speedily declare, and assure vs of the truth hereof, nothing doubting, but desiring and requiring your Royall Highnes as much as in her lyes by all good offices and duties to be willingly helpfull to take heede and effect that the said mighty Lord the King doe not cast himselfe within the limitts of their high and mightines: and referring our selues thereto

Most excellent Princesse, We committ your Royall Highnes to



Gods protection. Written in the Hague the 8<sup>th</sup> of March  
1655. Your Royall Highnesses good friends

The STATES of HOLLAND and WEST-VRIESLAND.

By order of the same,

HERB'T VAN BEAUMONT.

1655.

The superscription.

"To her Royall Highnes the Lady Princesse Dowager  
of Orange." <sup>1</sup>

Indorsed by Sir Edw. Nicholas.

8<sup>o</sup> Martij 1654-5. Copy of the translation of y<sup>e</sup> let<sup>r</sup>  
written by y<sup>e</sup> States of Holl'd to y<sup>e</sup> Pr<sup>tes</sup> R<sup>ll</sup> conc<sup>t</sup>  
y<sup>e</sup> K<sup>s</sup> being reported to be at Tylinge.

*Instructions for our trusty & well-beloued Seruant, Richard  
Browne, Clerke of our Privy Councell &c. (in 1640).*

Charles R.

Hauing occasion to send a person of trust into Holland, unto  
our deare Sister the Queene of Bohemia, and our Nephew the  
Prince Elector Palatin, Wee are pleased to make choise of you for  
the imployment, and for your better direction therein, to prouide  
you w<sup>th</sup> the Instructions following :

You shall represent unto our Sister, and Nephew,<sup>2</sup> (wee beeing  
informed he hath a desire to passe over into these partes) how  
inconuenient it would be for our seruice if att present he should  
undertake the journey, and that w<sup>th</sup>all, it can noe ways aduantage

<sup>1</sup> The obscure Editor of Grebner, in his astrological guesses, has the follow-  
ing curious one. Speaking of Charles I., he says, "The old Prince of Aurange  
he almost beggard, and yet to no purpose ; the Parliament one time or other  
getting all armes and ammunition which ever came over to him ; its confidently  
averred, if the King had become absolute here in England, Aurange had been  
King," &c. In the margin this political conjuror adds—"Its pittie Aurange  
lived not to master the Jew Hollander."

<sup>2</sup> The Elector Palatine had been in England previous to this, and was then  
elected Knight of the Garter. In consequence of the present negociation, he  
did not proceed to England until 1643, two years afterwards. Perhaps  
Charles the First was aware of his possessing those sentiments which finally  
induced him to side with the Parliament, in opposition to his Royal Uncle.



his owne affaires, since we shall still haue the same care and affection for them, in his absence, as if he were present, and now especially in this Treaty between us and the States of the Vnited Provinces, and the Prince of Orange, wherein his interests shall not be forgotten.

That for the paper w<sup>ch</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Richard Cave<sup>1</sup> hath given us, Wee find it soe directly contrary to the interests of the States, and in itselfe impracticable, that from that ground, Wee cannot hope any effects conducible to the good of our Nephewes affaires, yet in the present Treaty we are resolu'd to endeaour y<sup>e</sup> interest of him, and the House Palatine, soe farre as the present conjuncture of affaires will permit, it being one of the principall motiues that induced us to harken to this Alliance w<sup>th</sup> the States, and the Prince of Orange.

You are further to giue our Sister and Nephew, all reall asseurances of our loue and affection to them, and particularly of our desires, that all misunderstands (if such there chaunce to haue bin) that haue happened either in circumstance or otherwayes, concerning the ouuertures of this Marriage<sup>2</sup> intended betweene our eldest daughter and the Prince of Oranges son, may be taken away: Wee foreseeing that nothing can be of more aduantage to them in their present condition, then that there be a cleare vnderstanding, and all reall friendship betweene them, and the Prince and Princesse of Orange: w<sup>ch</sup> you are effectually to represent vnto them by all the arguments and reasons you can frame, and of what dangerous consequence the contrary may be to their interests and restitution.

You shall likewise give unto our Sister and Nephew, a true and particular knowledge of the state of the Treatyes betweene us and the States Ambassadors as our principall Secretary shall informe

<sup>1</sup> This Sir Richard Cave appears to have been much engaged in the affairs of Holland and the Palatinate. In Bromley's Collection of Royal Letters, he is mentioned by the Count Palatine in a letter to the Queen of Bohemia, as, Captain Cave; he was then serving in the army, and occasionally employed in diplomatic affairs.

<sup>2</sup> The marriage took place on the 2d of May, 1641, when the Princess was only twelve years of age; and it is a curious fact in Charles's private history, that it was celebrated with great magnificence in the interval between the sentence and the execution of the Earl of Strafford.

you) as well of that of the Marriage, as of y<sup>e</sup> Confederation, in the latter of which, we are resolved (as aforesaid) to take a special care of their interests.

You are to acquaint them, that although the two Treatyes are not come as yett to a conclusion, neuerthelesse hauing been pressed by the Prince of Orange, that his son might passe into England before his going to the Field, Wee haue so farre giuen our assent thereunto as that wee haue left it to him, to doe therein as he shall thinke fitt.

You are to impart these our Instructions vnto S<sup>r</sup> William Boswell our Resident, and to take his aduise in all things that may concerne our seruice, and you are w<sup>th</sup> him to addresse your selfe in our name to the Prince & Princesse of Orange, & to passe like offices w<sup>th</sup> them for the endeaououring & settling of a good understanding betweene our deare Sister, our Nephew, and them, according as wee soe earnestly desire, and their interest requires: Giuen under our Signe-manuall att our Court at Whitehall y<sup>e</sup> 23<sup>th</sup> of Febru: 1640.

(Signed)

H. VANE.

Indorsed,

"His Ma<sup>ties</sup> Instructions to Mr. Browne, going into Holland 1641."

*Instructions for our trusty and welbeloued Richard Browne,<sup>1</sup>  
Esq. one of the Clerkes of our Privy Councell, and our  
Agent w<sup>th</sup> our good brother the most Christian King:  
(in 1641)*

CHARLES R.

Wee hauing occasion to imploy our right trusty and right welbeloued Cousin the Earle of Leycester<sup>2</sup> our extraord<sup>ry</sup> Ambassad<sup>r</sup> with our good brother the French King, in the gouernmen<sup>t</sup> of our Realme of Ireland, as our Lieutenant generall there, and to

<sup>1</sup> Afterwards Sir Richard, father in law of John Evelyn, Esq.

<sup>2</sup> Robert Sidney, nephew of the gallant Sir Philip.



that end being now to recall him from his employment in France : Wee haue that confidence of your fidelity, and abilities, and particularly of your experience in those parts, that wee haue thought fitt to make choice of you for to be our Agent there, and that you may the better acquitt your selfe in that charge, you shalbe provided w<sup>th</sup> the Instructions following :

First vpon your arriuall in that kingdome, you shall addresse yo<sup>r</sup>selfe vnto our said Ambassad<sup>r</sup> extraord<sup>y</sup> for to be by him presented vnto that King, to whom you shall deliuer yo<sup>r</sup> l<sup>r</sup>es of Credence, and impart your charge :

And when you shalbe thus admitted to his presence, you shall in due, and the best manner, lett him know the great affection wee beare to his person, and the good aduancement and prosperity of him and his affaires, and how much wee doe desire, according to the antient friendship and strait obligations betweene us, to maintaine all good intelligence and correspondence. To w<sup>ch</sup> end, that there may be nothing wanting on our part, We haue now, vpon the comming away of our Ambassad<sup>r</sup>, sent you to reside there : And soe you are accordingly to make this your principall aime, as it is indeede the proper charge of all Amb<sup>rs</sup>, Legats, and Agents, to nourrishe and maintayne a good correspondence betwixt the two Crownes.

And therefore you are to informe yo<sup>r</sup>selfe of all former Treatyes, and more especially of the last and most freshe in practice, betweene these Crownes, being the rule by w<sup>ch</sup> the proceedings of the subjects of both sides are to be regulated.

And that you may better know wherein Wee, or our subjects, are any wayes concerned in those parts, whether in suites, processes, or otherwayes, you are to take all fitting and necessary informations from our said Ambassad<sup>r</sup>, and what businesses shalbe left in agitation by him for o<sup>r</sup> service, you are in our name to continue the prosecution thereof, and to giue account of yo<sup>r</sup> proceedings therein.

Another part of your charge is, that you watch carefully ouer the motions of that State where you are, what treaties, alliances, assistances, or ennemities shalbe moued w<sup>th</sup> other States openly ; or vnder-hand, wherein our affaires may be any wayes concerned ; and for yo<sup>r</sup> better light and information herein, you are to keepe



intelligence w<sup>th</sup> our Ambassad<sup>rs</sup> and Agents w<sup>th</sup> other Princes, and States, to whom wee will giue orders to correspond w<sup>th</sup> you.

And as there shall further occasion arise for you to negotiate in, for our seruice, you shall receiue directions, either immediately from our selues, or from our principall Secretaries in our name, w<sup>ch</sup> you are to obserue & follow, as if it came vnder our owne hand, and from time to time to aduertise them (or vs as the importance of the occasion may require) of all yo<sup>re</sup> proceedings, and what soeuer else may come to yo<sup>re</sup> knowledge, w<sup>ch</sup> may be usefull and necessary for the good of our affaires :—Whitehall the 23<sup>th</sup> of July 1641.

H. VANE.

“ Instructions for Mr. Browne.”

July 23, 1641.

CHARLES R.

Nostre feal et bien amé Richard Browne, Gentilhom<sup>e</sup> de Nostre Chambre Privée, Secrétaire en Nostre Conseil Privée, et Nostre Resident en France, salut. Comme ainsi soit que ceux contre qui Nous avons a faire presentem<sup>t</sup> touchant le reste des derniers Dotaulx<sup>1</sup> de Nostre tres chere Epouse la Reyne, se veulent servir contre Nous de certains pretendus Ordres donnez l'un au mois d'Octobre 1633, par feu Nostre Grand Thresorier :<sup>2</sup> l'autre par Nous du 20<sup>me</sup> Juin 1639 a Barwick. Nous vous declarons & tous aultres qu'il appartiendra, que Nous desavouons celuy pretendu du dit N<sup>re</sup> Grand Thresorier, com<sup>e</sup> estant donné hors son pouvoir, et contre le bien de Nos affaires et interests, & contre Nostre intention. Et pour celuy donné au dict Barwick, Nous le revoquons absolument, com<sup>e</sup> e ayant esté tiré de Nous par surprise & du tout contre N<sup>re</sup> intention & le bien de Nos affaires. Ce que vous declarez et notifierez quand ainsi vous adviserez éstre affaire. Et

<sup>1</sup> This resumption with respect to the Queen's dowry was evidently to facilitate the supplies from the Continent ; since at this precise period her Majesty transmitted to the King a considerable sum of money raised upon the pawned jewels of the Crown. She went to Holland on the 23d of February preceding.

<sup>2</sup> Richard Weston, Earl of Portland.

pour ce faire, ces Nos Lettres vous seront Garrant et Autorité suffisante. Donné soubz Nostre signet le dixneufiesme jour de Juillet a N<sup>re</sup> Cour a Beuerley, 1642, l'an XIIIX<sup>me</sup> de N<sup>re</sup> Regne.

A N<sup>re</sup> feal et bien amé Richard Browne, Gentilhom<sup>e</sup>  
de N<sup>re</sup> Chambre Privée, Sec<sup>re</sup> en N<sup>re</sup> Conseil  
d'Estat & Privé, et N<sup>re</sup> Resid<sup>t</sup> en France. 1642.

CHARLES R.

Trusty and well beloved Wee greet you well. Whereas one Walter Strickland<sup>1</sup> hath bin very lately sent in y<sup>e</sup> name of both Houses of Parliam<sup>t</sup> here with credentials to treat with o<sup>re</sup> Allyes the States G<sup>r</sup>all of the Vnited Netherlands, as pretended, for the publick good, though without any concurrence or knowledge of Us, which We must interprett the highest act of affront & disobedience w<sup>ch</sup> hath bin committed against o<sup>r</sup> Royall person & dignity; And this example leading us to a beleefe of what Wee haue bin told, but were not apt to creditt whilst there was any shew of reverence of o<sup>r</sup> knowne Regalities yet remaining, that Augier,<sup>2</sup> or some other person, is by the said Houses sent with their usurped comission into France; Wee haue thought fitt hereby to authorise & com<sup>d</sup> you to use y<sup>re</sup> best and utmost meanes as well privatly as publickly & in Our Name to hinder & oppose any audience, countenance, or treaty in any kind to be afforded the said Augier or other whatsoever craving the same of o<sup>re</sup> Brother the French King, the Princes of the Blood, or any of the Protestant Party, o<sup>re</sup> Friends & Allyes, without Warrant under owre owne hand. And if, notwithstanding, Augier or any other shall prevaile, That you then in O<sup>re</sup> Name solemnly protest there against the highest violacon of their Allyance & Friendship with Vs, against w<sup>ch</sup> Wee shall seeke such reparacon as by God's assistance Wee shall be enabled. For all w<sup>ch</sup> as these o<sup>re</sup> Letters shalbe y<sup>re</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This Strickland was afterwards a member of Parliament, and one of those who had been strenuous in the affair of the "Self-denying Ordinance;" yet he is expressly stated by Walker, in the "History of Independency," to have been in the receipt of large sums from the public purse.

<sup>2</sup> Augier had formerly been in his Majesty's confidence in the diplomatic negotiations on the Continent with regard to the Elector Palatine.



sufficient Warrant & Proteccon, So we shall expect hereof yo<sup>r</sup> faithfull & bounden discharge as occasion therefore shalbe offred vnto you. Giuen at o<sup>r</sup>e Court at Nottingham the 12<sup>th</sup> day of Septemb<sup>r</sup> in the Eighteenth yeare of o<sup>r</sup>e Reigne 1642.

"To our trusty & welbeloved Richard Browne, Esq.

Our Resid<sup>t</sup> with o<sup>r</sup> Brother the French King."

Indorsed,

"From his Ma<sup>y</sup> 20<sup>th</sup> day of Sept<sup>r</sup> 1642."<sup>1</sup>

#### CHARLES R.

Trusty & welbeloved Wee greet you well. Wee beleeeve that before this Letter the Capucins<sup>2</sup> of Somersett house, or some from them, wilbe arrived at Paris & haue represented there how disgracefully they were lately entreated at London. Wee are exceedingly displeased that soe high an affront hath been put upon the Treaty between Vs & the French King Our Brother, & upon Our owne Authority. But forasmuch as this barbarous Act is the child of that monstrous Rebellion w<sup>ch</sup> goes big with confusion & destruccon to our Person & Posterity as well as our Laws & Rights. Wee wilbe cleare of any imputacon thereof, disavowing the same, the authors, actors & abettors thereof, as Wee doe disavow & detest all their traytrous machinacons against Vs & the Peace of Our Kingdoms, leauing them obnoxious to the iust indignacon & revenge w<sup>ch</sup> God shall inflict upon them in his due time. And to this effect Wee will & command you in Our Name to make yo<sup>r</sup>e addresse to Our said deare Brother the French King for his satis-

<sup>1</sup> This letter was written a month after the King had hoisted his standard at Nottingham.

<sup>2</sup> This evidently refers to the complaints, so long existing, against the Queen's Ecclesiastical establishment. So powerful was the popular feeling against Popery, that the King was forced to proceed much further than his own intentions would have led him; for he not only offered, in a message to the Parliament, to require by proclamation that all statutes concerning Popish recusants should be put in execution, but that the seven condemned Popish priests should be banished, and all Romish priests to depart the Kingdom in twenty days. Burton's Civil Wars.



faccon & the discharge of Our conscience & affeccion to Him in this regard. And soe Wee bid you farewell. Giuen at Our Court at Oxford the 5<sup>th</sup> day of Aprill in the Nineteenth yeare of Oure Reigne.

1643.

“To our trusty and welbeloued Richard Browne,  
our Resident with our deere Brother the French King.”  
From his Ma<sup>tie</sup> 5<sup>th</sup> April, 1643.

1. The first part of the document is a list of names and titles, including "The Hon. Mr. Justice" and "The Hon. Mr. Justice".

PRIVATE CORRESPONDENCE  
BETWEEN  
SIR EDWARD HYDE,  
AFTERWARDS EARL OF CLARENDON,  
AND  
SIR RICHARD BROWNE,  
AMBASSADOR TO THE COURT OF FRANCE, IN THE TIME OF KING  
CHARLES I. AND THE USURPATION.



1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses of the members of the committee.

## INTRODUCTION.

THE connection which Lord Clarendon had with the events and politics of the period to which this Work refers, is too well known to require more, in this place, than a short introductory sketch illustrative of the subjects noticed in the various letters. The first two of these are written from Jersey, whither Sir Edward Hyde had accompanied the Prince of Wales ; having indeed been of his Council when he was at Pendennis Castle, which he evacuated in 1645. Jersey was at that time under the government of Lord Jermyn ; and Sir George Carteret was his deputy. When the Prince went to Paris to join his mother, Sir Edward remained behind ; his reasons for which are fully recorded by himself in his Life. At Jersey he staid two years ; and during the same period Sir Edward Nicholas was at Caen in Normandy, afterwards in Holland, where he had the King's leave to reside, on his being forced to fly from England.<sup>1</sup> Lord Digby also, to whom frequent reference is made, had been in Ireland, when Charles fled to Jersey : but joined him soon after with two frigates, and two hundred soldiers ; at which time he strenuously urged the departure of the Prince for his father's Irish dominions. The Prince having afterwards proceeded to Holland, Sir Edward Hyde joined

<sup>1</sup> Vide Lord Clarendon's State Papers, vol. ii. p. 286.

him there in 1648,<sup>1</sup> and, soon after the murder of the Royal Martyr, was sent Ambassador into Spain, from which country he rejoined the young King in France, and was appointed resident at Antwerp, where he remained during Charles's unsuccessful attempt in Scotland; but was ordered to Paris on his master's arrival there after the escape from the battle of Worcester.

These events fill up the hiatus between 1646 and 1652, the date of the *third* letter; and it only remains to explain some particulars of the affairs alluded to in many subsequent parts of the Correspondence, with respect to the Royal fleet.

When Charles I. perished on the scaffold, a portion of the Navy revolted from the Parliament, and sailed to Holland in aid of the Royal Cause. These ships were soon put under the command of Prince Rupert, and were employed by him in a predatory warfare against the Commonwealth, besides making several attempts on the Eastern coast of England in aid of the small Royal party still existing there; after which they proceeded to the Irish coast, where they took some valuable prizes. The Parliament sent Blake after them; but in 1649, Rupert, having forced his way through Blake's fleet, continued to capture English ships, apparently on his own account, and indeed without either asking for, or receiving, any orders from his Majesty. He then proceeded for Portugal, but was forced off by Blake, so that he was obliged to fly for the Mediterranean, where he commenced aggressions on the Spaniards, and was repaired and refitted at Toulon, from whence he found it necessary to retire, sailing, in 1650, for the West Indies.

At this period Scilly and Jersey sent out swarms of privateers; but those islands being captured by the Parliamentary forces, the freebooters were obliged to bring their prizes into the ports of Brittany; and, in return for the sanction of Royal Commissions, were called upon to pay certain droits into the King's Exchequer—a circumstance to which many of the following Letters refer.

In 1652, Rupert arrived at Nantes from the West Indies, after suffering heavy losses from storms; so that, in fact, he only brought back one man of war, and three or four other vessels, being the sole remains of twenty-five ships of force of which his squadron

<sup>1</sup> A very interesting account of his adventures upon that occasion may be found in Clarendon's Life, page 105.



originally consisted : and these he was compelled to sell to pay his seamen, under circumstances which will be found illustrated in the ensuing Notes.

It may be proper here to bring to the Reader's recollection that the King staid at Paris until 1654, when he proceeded through Flanders to Spa ; thence to Aix La Chapelle, and, finally, to Cologne, as noticed in the preceding series. In 1657 he was at Bruges, where he appointed Sir Edward Hyde to be Lord Chancellor of England.

1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses of the members of the committee.

2. The second part of the document is a list of names and addresses of the members of the committee.







*Sir Edward Hyde.*

*by Sir Peter Lely.*

*From the original.*

T  
4  
a  
P  
I  
t  
I  
.





## CLARENDON LETTERS.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.<sup>1</sup>*

Sr,

THAT you receaved not an answer to your very kinde letter of the 4 of June, by some of the Princes trayne, you must impute to that agony of minde, which was necessary to oppresse me, at the partinge fro' so pretious a iewell, and with so many good frends ; I hope I shall be agayne restored to them, howeuer that all happinesse will crowne ther counsell ; whilst I with some very good frends of yours pray for them, in this poore island ; you will very much refresh vs with your correspondence, that wee may vnderstande the hopes, and progresse of that prosperity wee pray for. I doe not in the least degree apprehend a possibility of a peace betweene the Scots & the Independ'ts, but feare more the manner of the warr, least in opposicon to the nacon all the

<sup>1</sup> From the general purport of this letter, it is evident that Sir Edward Hyde was by no means pleased with the Prince's journey from Jersey to Paris. His reasons for this are pretty fully detailed in his "Life," and also in the second volume of State Papers, p. 276. The justice of the political opinions here expressed was fully verified by the succeeding events.

See also p. 239, 2nd vol. State Papers, for the King's reasons respecting the Prince's visit to the Court of France ; and p. 307, for further observations on the "Scots and Independents."

English turne Independ'ts ; which sure may be præuented : I believe the crisis is at hande : I wish you all happinesse, beinge,  
Sr,

Your very affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

Jarsy, this 12 of July 1646.

EDW. HYDE.

I beseech you remember my seruice to Mr. Nicolls,<sup>1</sup> and desyre him, if Coll. Murray<sup>2</sup> should not be at Courte, that he keepe my letter to him, in his handes, till he see him ; and that he deliuer it to none else. Your favour (Sr) for this to Sr H. Mackeworth.<sup>3</sup>

Sir Ric. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue this day receaued yours of the 18. of August<sup>4</sup> [qr. July], and by your leaue continue the giuinge you this trouble ; by this tyme I hope his Highnesse hath had so good a recepcon at flountainebleau,<sup>5</sup> that hath made some amends for the former wante of ceremony : Methinkes the imaginacons that it is possible for the

<sup>1</sup> Who this Mr. Nicolls was, does not appear ; for though Sir Edward Nicholas's name is sometimes spelled so in these letters, yet being then knighted he would have been called Mr. Secretary, as Sir Edward Herbert is often called " Mr. Attorney."

<sup>2</sup> Colonel Charles Murray, a companion of the Prince from Jersey to Paris. There is a humorous letter from him in Clarendon's State Papers, vol. ii. p. 255, describing the arrival of his Royal Highness in the French capital, and subsequently at Fontainebleau.

<sup>3</sup> The first Baronet of that name, of Normanton, in Rutlandshire ; and brother to the " brave and honest " Sir Francis, who distinguished himself in the Civil War, as Major General to the Marquis of Newcastle, and afterwards served in the Low Countries, during Charles's exile.

<sup>4</sup> This apparent anticipation of date, when compared with that of this letter, may have arisen from Sir Richard using the Gregorian style, from Paris, whilst Sir Edward preserved the old style, in conformity with English custom.

<sup>5</sup> The letter, spoken of in the preceding postscript, for Colonel Murray, appears to have been written on the subject of the Prince's reception at the French Court ; for in the second volume of Clarendon's State Papers, p. 254, there is an epistle from the Colonel, describing the distinguished reception which the Prince met with on his arrival at Fontainebleau.

Kinge to submit to those vyle proposicons,<sup>1</sup> is the next treason to the makinge them, ther beinge in them no seedes left, out of which Monarchy may agayne possibly springe : and therefore I longe to heare how our brethren of Scotland comorte themselves upon his refusall, which yet I doe not exspecte will be positive, but such a one as they at London will vote to be a refusall : I beseech you let me heare, how your intelligence from London diposes the Catholiques ther, I suppose that party cleaues to the Independ'ts, and I am sure had hearetofore fayre promises from them ; and can have no hope from the Presbitery. I feare the ill successe of the ffrench in Italy and fflanders,<sup>2</sup> will giue them an excuse for those faylings to his Highnesse, which they meant to committ in the most prosperous condicon : and if this indispoticon in the Pr. of Condé be in earnest, they may haue ther excuses multiplied.<sup>3</sup> If my brother Aylesbury<sup>4</sup> be come to you, I pray let him receaue this inclosed letter, otherwise keepe it for him. My service to Mr. Nicolls,<sup>5</sup> to whome I sent a packet by Dr. Jonson, which I hope came safe to him ; My LL.<sup>ts</sup> heare, and our very good Gouvernour,<sup>6</sup> are your seruants, as I am very heartily,

Sr,

your most affectionate, humble seru<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

Jarsy this 14. of Aug. 1646.

Sr Ric. Browne.

<sup>1</sup> The propositions here alluded to are noticed in the preceding portion of this work.

<sup>2</sup> During the war with Spain, in the minority of Louis XIII. ; but these events were not of sufficient importance to require specific illustration.

<sup>3</sup> The Prince of Condé was then at the head of the party in opposition to the politics of Mazarine. He was sometimes a courtier, sometimes a politician, and sometimes a rebel in arms.

<sup>4</sup> Son of Sir Thomas Aylesbury, Bart. and brother of Sir Edward's second wife, who finally became heiress to her father and brother.

<sup>5</sup> See note to preceding letter.

<sup>6</sup> Lord Jermy.



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.<sup>1</sup>*

(Signed by Edward Hyde himself.)

Sr,

Yours of y<sup>e</sup> 24. of Jan : from yourselfe and Sr G. Carterett came [not] to my hands till y<sup>e</sup> post was gone, and I am now in soe great torment w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> gowte, that I am not able to keepe off my bed, and soe must use another hand, w<sup>ch</sup> I hope you will pardon. The Duke of Yorke<sup>2</sup> is now here, and conceives all obstruccons are now remoued, w<sup>ch</sup> troubled you at Brest, the Marquis of Castelnoue<sup>3</sup> hauing made large promises to his Highnes : I would aduice you hereafter (though you may giue me an account apart) to send a very particular state of all the businesse and miscarriages there, to the D. of Yorke himselfe, Sir John Berkeley, or Mr. Bennett ; since all redresse must be obtayned by

<sup>1</sup> This letter relates to the difficulties respecting the reception and sale of prizes. Of the persons referred to, Bennet, afterwards Earl of Arlington, was then Secretary to the Duke ; Berkeley had been his Governor : Castelnau was Governor of Brest ; Holder was agent for the captors ; and Carteret, who had been Deputy Governor of Jersey, was then, or soon after, a Rear Admiral in the French service, though still attached to the Royal cause. Sir Richard Browne, the King's resident at Paris, had been dispatched to arrange affairs at Brest.

<sup>2</sup> The Duke of York had much personal interest at this crisis at the French Court ; for he had very recently distinguished himself in the French King's service, under the command of General Count Harcourt, and against the Prince de Condé's forces, especially on the preceding Christmas day, when, though Condé was finally victorious, the Duke charged against him in person, and commanded the forlorn hope, consisting of the English cavalry. In this rencontre the Duke's horse was shot under him ; but he himself received little hurt. Vide a printed pamphlet in the British Museum, "A bloody fight in France, Lond. 1651-2."

<sup>3</sup> The hopes of Lord Clarendon from the promises of Castelnau were but indifferently founded ; for the pamphlet quoted in the preceding note expressly states that at this period the return of the Cardinal Mazarin into France with a force of 7000 men had produced great jealousies at that Court, and that Castelnau and Villeroy having forwarded his return, on purpose to undo him, were suspected by him, and had therefore forsaken the Court. Castelnau's deputy had pretended an order from his Court to detain the prizes, in hopes of being bribed by the captors.

y<sup>e</sup> sole mediacon of his R. Highnes, and you shall doe very well to expresse at large the misdemean<sup>rs</sup> and cheates of y<sup>r</sup> Captaines,<sup>1</sup> whom upon all occasions Mr. Holder hath wonderfully magnified. You must take spetiall care for y<sup>e</sup> safe and speedy conueyance of this inclosed from the King to the Gouvern<sup>r</sup> of Innisbofine,<sup>2</sup> and I pray send the other to Sir George Carterett, if he be gone, and excuse this shortnesse, w<sup>ch</sup> my extreame payne produces. I am,

Sr,

your very affecconat humble seru<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Paris, 8 ffeb: 1652.

Sir Rich. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

Within 2. howers after my last to you of the 17. were sent away, I receaued both yours of the 5 and 9. of this moneth. I am entirely vnacquainted with the person or the purposes of your Capt: Anthonie,<sup>3</sup> nor do I heare that he is in these partes. I should imagyne, that whateuer else he does, he will neuer putt himself in the power of the Hollander, whome he hath sufficiently

<sup>1</sup> This little squadron had been recently very active, particularly in the chops of the Channel; but the Republican newspapers of that day affected to treat them with great contempt. In one of those, of the 8th of the preceding month, preserved in the British Museum, it was roundly stated that Capt. Chapman, in the Recovery, convoying a small vessel for Ireland, had met with the Francis, the Patrick, and the Hunter, and maintained a gallant fight from eleven at noon till night parted them. Prince Rupert is also stated to be at this period at sea, "with six or seven lusty ships," and to have taken several Spanish vessels.

<sup>2</sup> It was reported in the London papers that the King intended to set out for Rome, professing openly to own the Catholic religion, on which terms it was promised to him that the Duke of Lorraine should make a diversion in his favour in Ireland, by the relief of Galway, and by a general interference in affairs in that quarter.

<sup>3</sup> Commander of one of the privateers attached to the Royal cause.



prouoked and damnified.<sup>1</sup> I cannot giue you any good accounte of the transactions betweene this Crowne and the English Rebels, only that ther is nothinge like that order, of which you say you are aduertised from Rowen, that Pr: Ruperte<sup>2</sup> is requyred to go away with his shippes and pryres, his Highnesse hauinge all the respecte heare, and I thinke, security, he can desyre: and I heare they do not now bragg so much as they haue done, of ther treaty in Englande, and are not without some apprehension, that the Rebels of Westm. may fauour ther fellow rebells of Burdeaux:<sup>3</sup> of letters fro' London importe no new notable effecte of ther alteracon; ther Councell of the Army still sittinge at Whitehall to forme ther new modell of gouernment. I know not what to say to the complainte of your seru<sup>t</sup>, because you will not giue me leaue to take notice of it to the partyes who are most concerned, but I believe ther may be some errour or malice in the reporte,<sup>4</sup> because I am told by a very true frende of yours, that it is the maydes owne fault that shee hath not her dyett ther, and that because shee might not be trusted with the gouern<sup>t</sup> of the kitchen and the buyinge the meate (in which shee was thought to lauish) shee absolutely with greate indignation refuses to take her dyett, with which they say the lady is much troubled: but I tell you agayne, I haue this only from a frende, and not any of the house. I doubt your mayde is apt to be angry, and when shee is, shee may be as vnreasonable, as such angry people vse to be. Upon my con-

<sup>1</sup> The Royal fleet and the privateers were, at this period, in a great distress for a port to shelter them, in consequence of the Parliament having captured the Scilly Islands, which had for some time been their principal harbour; Jersey also having fallen.

<sup>2</sup> Though the fleet under Prince Rupert was, strictly speaking, an English one, yet it appears that in a recent attack upon the Spaniards he was avenging a private cause; for when, in the Spring of 1652, he sailed from Toulon with four men-of-war and two fire-ships, and instantly commenced hostilities against the Spaniards, taking as his first prize a ship worth 100,000 crowns, he put forth a declaration, in which he stated one of his reasons for this aggression to be in revenge for the injuries committed by the Spaniards against the Palatinate.—Vide Life of Prince Rupert 1683.

<sup>3</sup> Alluding to the Prince Condé party, then active in the south of France.

<sup>4</sup> Nothing can more whimsically mark the great change of circumstances of the English courtiers, than this rapid transition from national politics to kitchen gossip.



science you haue not the least reason to suspecte Geo. Carterett's<sup>1</sup> frendshipp or kindnesse to you, but you must not make his frequent writinge the measure of it, and it is very possible (for he hath bene out of all roades) he may haue written, and his letters miscarry, as yours may haue done to him.

I am very hartily,

Sr,

your most affectionate humble serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

Paris this 20th of May, 1652.

Sir Ric: Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I giue you hearty thanks for yours of the 17. which came safe, and I distributed the inclosed accordinge to ther directions; and the Kinge is resolved to obserue this order, of sendinge twice a weeke to Paris, wherby all our correspondencies will I hope be præserved: I send you a pistole inclosed that you may keepe an euen reckoninge with your man for the portage of my letters,<sup>2</sup> which will quickly spende such a summ, so that I conclude your owne charge in this seruice is no easy burthen; for what will concerne me, I will be carefull to supply, as this wastes. Wee haue yett taken no further resolucon, then to sitt still some tyme heare,

<sup>1</sup> Sir George Carteret, before this period, had been Governor of Elizabeth Castle, in Jersey, as Deputy to Lord Jermyn, besieged by the Parliamentary forces in 1651. His conduct was so loyal as to merit the praise even of his enemies, one of whom said in a letter, preserved in the British Museum, "I hear he hath sent to the Scots King, to acquaint him with the state of affairs, as touching our approach, and condition of the Castle, from whom he expects a letter; and if he with it signs a warrant for delivering up the Castle, I believe the Governor (to make his own conditions the better) will soon yield it up; yet, without it, his devout allegiance is such, that he will do nothing."

<sup>2</sup> However trifling this caution appears about a sum so insignificant, yet it will be found, in a subsequent note, that the postage of letters was a most important article of expenditure to the exiled Royalists.

both to decerne what conclusion your distempers will produce,<sup>1</sup> and what our friends of Hollande will do : you will be careful to receaue all information and aduice from the Dutch Ambassadour<sup>2</sup> how affayres goe ther, and transmitt it hither : if our letters fro' the Hague be true, they looke more kindly towards us fro' that climate, then they haue done, and the Ambassadour hath receaued some drection to communicate with his Ma<sup>ty</sup> ; but I know he is so iust and kinde, that he will gladly imbrace the orders, and therefore I doubte our information may not be true. The wayes I hope will be so secure shortly betweene us and you, that wee may euen visit each other.<sup>3</sup> God preserue you, and me as I am with my whole hearte,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate humble Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

ffriday night this 19. of July, 1652.

Euery body sends ther letters to me, & I cannot refuse to transmitt them : you will lett your man dispose them to the seuerall posts. If the Spanish Ordinary be not speedily expected, I pray putt this under youre cover to Bryon.<sup>4</sup>

Sir Ri: Browne.

<sup>1</sup> The distempers here alluded to were the disputes, and consequent civil war, between the Condé and Mazarine partizans.

<sup>2</sup> Mynheer Borell. One of the Journals of that day ("Perfect Passages," 23 July, 1652,) says, "Charles Stuart, being gone from the Louvre, continues yet at St. German's, where he hath been saluted by a messenger from the Marquis of Brandenburg, inviting him into Germany. His creature Brown, and the Dutch Ambassadour Borel, are often together."

Borel had been Pensioner of Amsterdam, and was very much devoted to the Royal cause, having formerly been Ambassador at the English Court. He was also of the Orange party, and anxious for a war with the Commonwealth.

<sup>3</sup> The road between St. Germain's and Paris was at that period totally unsafe on account of the military marauders of both armies.

<sup>4</sup> Count de Brienne, first Secretary of State to the French King.



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

Yours of the 20. came safe to me, and so the inclosed were disposed accordingly : I am sorry ther should be any hazard of hauinge our letters intercepted,<sup>1</sup> which I thought by the remoooue of the Armyes would haue been now without any doubt, especially since the Carry-all of this place trauelles dayly & securely to Paris : howeuer I will obserue your advice, and write any thinge of importance

you are in the King's name to returne  
in cypher: 731 . 405 . 532 . 668 . 220 . 13 . 596 . 667 . 333 .

his Ma<sup>ties</sup> very to the Dutch Amba<sup>s</sup>  
502 . 239 . 13 . 699 . hearty thanks 667 . 668 . 142 . 95 .

his Ma<sup>ty</sup> is of his  
and indeede 502 . 239 . 529 . exceedingly sensible 598 . 502 .

kind n e s s e and freind shipp  
544 . 30 . 7 . 13 . 62 . 23 . 407 . 488 . 651 . and if God

his Ma<sup>ty</sup> d  
blesses him, will make it appeare that he is so. 502 . 239 . 15 .

e s i r e s the Amba<sup>s</sup> to lett him  
23 . 13 . 27 . 36 . 56 . 62 . 668 . 95 . 667 . 551 . 505 .

know the warre is d e  
546 . as soone as he is assured that 668 . 723 . 529 . 25 . 23 .

c l a r e d that hee will  
15 . 28 . 21 . 36 . 7 . 26 . and then 673 . 501 . 710 . aduice

his Ma<sup>ty</sup> what he is to do  
502 . 239 . 717 . 501 . 529 . 667 . 439 . both with reference

the U n i t e d P r o v  
to 668 . 43 . 30 . 27 . 12 . 23 . 25 . 41 . 34 . 36 . 22 . 43 .

i n c e s and to this Crowne with which  
27 . 30 . 15 . 56 . 13 . 407 . 667 . 671 . 437 . 713 . 722 .

his Ma<sup>ty</sup> will in that manner  
502 . 239 . 710 . interpose 532 . 673 . 573 . 30 . 23 . 36 .

<sup>1</sup> The disturbances at Paris and its vicinity were at this period of such a nature as to justify the apprehensions here expressed. The scandal of the day asserted also that Charles was by no means a favourite with many of the highest rank in France; and it is recorded in a Gazette, or Mercurius Politicus of the 1st July, 1652, in the British Museum, that "Charles Stuart hath secured himself by shewing them a pair of heels," (just after the victory obtained by the Prince of Condé close to Paris,) "and retreating from the Louvre to Court, where the King harbours him, being highly distasted by the Duke of Orleans, Mademoiselle, the Princes, and all the people, so that they have made several books and songs of him."



as the Amba<sup>s</sup> best  
 401 . 668 . 95 . shall thinke 416 . 13 . 12. I shall not neede  
 him for  
 to bespeake your diligence in calling often 600 . 505 . 469 . 86.—  
 You will do me the fauour to send this inclosed to S<sup>r</sup> Jo. Mennes,<sup>1</sup>  
 who I suppose is still at Calice. I pray do me the fauour to desyre  
 Monsieur Paule to giue you the title of the Duke of Bauaria, and  
 to informe you how longe he hath bene Duke :—You will exspecte  
 no newes from this place wher wee haue little to doe, but to study  
 & take the ayre, and to longe for good newes of peace in this king-  
 dome. If the messengers dispatched from hence doe not attende  
 you at those howres they should, it is not for want of derECTION  
 heare. I haue a serious quarrell with you for somewhat Dr. Earles<sup>2</sup>  
 hath lately aduerticed me of, which in good earnest I take unkindly,  
 and doubtte you haue not so good an opinion of my friendship as  
 I wish you should, and for which I must chide you heartily when  
 wee meete.

Let me know particularly what you receaue from Englande, and  
 lett your man enquire for letters derected as Edgman<sup>3</sup> aduiced  
 you. I am,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate faythfull Seru<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

S<sup>t</sup> Germaines. Tuesday morninge 23. of July 1652.

Sir Rich: Browne at Paris.

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Mennes was Rear-Admiral of the Fleet in the reign of Charles the First; and was one of the most distinguished loyal officers, when the Parliament took those extraordinary steps which led to the defection of the greatest part of the naval force. He was removed from his station by the Earl of Warwick, in 1642, after the unsuccessful attempt of his Majesty to regain the fleet in the Humber, which failed through some mismanagement on the part of Sir John Pennington.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Earle, afterwards Bishop of Salisbury, author of the "Microcosmography," was one of the Loyalists attached to the exiled Court, and Chaplain to the King. He was in strict habits of friendly intimacy with Hyde, two of whose letters to him may be found in vol. ii. of the State Papers, pp. 322, 329. In the latter, Sir Edward facetiously arranges the Doctor's leisure time, allowing him two hours to eat his dinner, and "two hours in the projecting where to get one."

<sup>3</sup> Edgman was Secretary to Sir Edward Hyde, who, once vindicating him from a charge of having violated a seal, declared he knew him to be so honest, that before he would be guilty of such a villany he would starve!

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue not had an opportunity till now to acknowledge the receipt of yours of the 24. which came safe to me, and the contents therof were immediately by me imparted to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, who had not before heard of many of the particulars, nor do wee yett heare from the Court of any such message<sup>1</sup> sent from the Duke of Orleans, which it seemes they thinke fitt to conceale, when they do not intende to satisfy.

I am very sorry for the good Deanes<sup>2</sup> indisposicon, though I am gladd it is nothinge but a fitt of the stone, which I am very farr from vnderualewinge, yett it seemes lesse daungerous then a vylent ffeauour with which wee heard he labored: I pray remember my seruice very heartily to him, and send me worde quickly of his perfecte recouery.

The wante of the title of the Duke of Bauaria keepes us from making a congratulatory dispatch to him, which is requisite in seueral respectes, therefore I pray hasten it as soone as you may: let me heare any particulars you receaue from Englande, especially how our frends at Detforde doe.<sup>3</sup> If it would be any comforte to you to haue companyons in misery, you will heare shortly that wee are in greate distresses,<sup>4</sup> for I cannot imagine which way the Kinge

<sup>1</sup> Comparing this letter with another of the same date to Sir Edward Nicholas, in *State Papers*, vol. iii. p. 85, it appears that the whole of the news, here alluded to, related to the negotiations carrying on between the Court and the Condéans.

<sup>2</sup> This was Dr. Stewart, Dean of the Chapel Royal, whom Clarendon, in another place, calls "a very honest and learned gentleman, and most conversant in the learning which vindicated the dignity and authority of the Church." He had been long about Charles's person; for, as early as 1646, in a letter preserved in the *State Papers*, vol. ii. page 253, and addressed to the Prince, the King calls him an honest trusty servant, and recommends him to his Royal Highness as Dean of his Chapel, telling him at the same time to take the Doctor's advice, "giving reverence to his opinion in all things concerning conscience and church affairs."

<sup>3</sup> This inquiry refers to the Evelyn family at Says Court.

<sup>4</sup> The periodical prints of that day thus account for the King not wishing to remain at Paris. "The Scots King is still in Paris, but now upon his remove. What shall he do then? Trayl a pike under the young Lady of Orleans;" (this



will be able to procure mony for his subsistance ; nor indeed how the french Courte will subsiste it selfe. Wee know nothinge heare of the Spanish army : what is become of it ?

You will still commend the King to your neighbour : if the wayes were once open, I would make a iourney ouer to visitt you, and to be merry 3 or 4 howres : I am very heartily,

S<sup>r</sup>

Your most affectionate humble Seru<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

S<sup>t</sup> Germ: 26 July 1652 ffryday 9 at night.

I pray send me the copy of a warrant for Barronett, for I am not sure that myne is not defectiue.

Sir Ric. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

The messenger who brought me yours of the 27. is so positive in the iustifyinge himselfe, that I cannot but desyre you to examine his allegations, which if not true, he shall be no more sent on his errande, at least not by me : he sweares, he was on Saturday at your house, by 11 of the clocke, and you not being at home, he left the letters, both the Kings and myne with your mayde : this is so contrary to what you say, of his not appearinge before 4 of the clocke, (which putts me in apprehension that our packetts went not by the last ordinary) that I haue a great minde to know the certainty, and whether the fellow hath any excuse or not : I told the Kinge of the expedient you proposed, which he lyked well, only it was sayd by a stander by, that one footeman would not be alwayes willinge to make that iourny, and hauinge so little encourage-

lady had recently raised a regiment for the French King's service against the Confederate Lords :) "an honour too large for the late Majesty of Scotland. His confidents have satt in Council, and it is allowed by his Mother, that during these rumults in France, it is neither honourable nor expedient for him to continue in Paris, the affections of the citizens for the most part being alienated from the King," &c.



ment, it is no wonder, that euery man is willinge to saue his labour : I am of your opinion that the breach is already too wyde, betweene the two Commonwealths, to be easily closed agayne. I pray God wee may make good use of it, which will most depende upon your neighbours aduice and derectiō : I pray hasten the Duke of Bauaria's titles, &c. I wish I could tell you of a more plentifull conditiō heare, because I am confident you would haue a share of it : upon my worde, the Kinge hath not yett receaued a penny of supply since his comminge hither : he hath hope of 300 pistoles, for which he gott an order at his beinge at Grubyse, but payment is not yett made :<sup>1</sup> seriously I cannot be more troubled at any thinge, then at your distresses ; which I had rather see relieued then my owne : I will not surpise you at Paris, and would be glad that the communication should be with more freedome, before I uenture thither. —I will by Saturday send you a letter for George Carterett,<sup>2</sup> from whome I wonder I heare not, but more, that he forgetts his promise to you : I thought your agent ther had taken the duties in spetie accordinge to former aduice. The defeate of Count Harcourte<sup>3</sup> I would haue bene gladd to haue receaued more particularly ; wee hauinge heare heard nothinge of it : and the Court needes none of these humiliations. God præserue you, and,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your very affectionate hum<sup>ble</sup> serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

S<sup>t</sup> Germain's this 29. of July :  
Munday 3 in the afternoone  
1652.

Sir Ri: Browne.

<sup>1</sup> This delay is easily accounted for, by a reference to the preceding letter respecting the pecuniary difficulties of the French Court.

<sup>2</sup> Sir George Carteret, after having been forced to surrender Jersey, was very active as a sea officer in the King's service ; and in the month of July, 1652, he is stated to have been on the coast of Flanders with 13 sail under the royal colours, making prize of English vessels. Soon after this he joined Van Tromp ; and subsequently served as Vice Admiral of the French fleet under the Duke of Vendosme.

<sup>3</sup> Harcourt was a gallant and loyal French officer ; but his laurels faded before the genius of the great Turenne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I receaved yours of the 30. late the last night, and reade euery  
 worde of it this morninge to the Kinge. <sup>His Ma<sup>ty</sup></sup> 502 . 239 . is very  
 much troubled <sup>tha the Ambass<sup>r</sup></sup> 673 . 668 . 95 . should receaue any præiudice  
 for his friend s h i p p to him  
 469 . 502 . 488 . 13 . 17 . 27 . 34 . 35 . 667 . 505 . nor  
 can imagyne by what hande those offices are done.<sup>1</sup> The truth is,  
 ther is so greate a licence of writinge vnder the nocon of gettinge  
 intelligence, for which euery man thinkes himselfe qualified, that  
 men care not what they write,<sup>2</sup> so they may prætende to know  
 much, and I have seene some letters from Hollande, wherein it  
 hath beene sayd, that <sup>the S t a t e s</sup> 668 . 13 . 12 . 4 . 12 . 7 . 62 . 506 .  
<sup>giuen</sup> <sup>Ambass<sup>r</sup> to</sup>  
 493 . 30 . order to ther 95 . 667 . communicate all affayres  
 with the Kinge  
 713 . 668 . 220 . and so it seemes others who belieued that  
 true, may haue giuen notice of his resorte to the Louer, possibly  
 without any ill purpose, and yett I will not absolue them from that  
 nether: at least, folly and impertinency does the same mischieue  
 that malice does: <sup>King</sup> but the 220 . would haue you assure <sup>the Amb<sup>r</sup></sup> 668 . 95 .  
 that he will be as carefull hereafter as he desyres, and for the two  
<sup>he will</sup>  
 papers, 501 . 780 . examine his cabinet, wher he is sure they  
 are, if he did not burne them, and deliuer them to me, and I will  
 then send them to you by some sure messenger: ffor <sup>S t</sup> 13 . 12 .  
 a r k y and <sup>Taylor<sup>3</sup></sup>  
 21 . 36 . 51 . 10 . 407 . 39 . 21 . 10 . 28 . 53 . I am of  
 your opinion for the first, that he is honest, but a foole: The

<sup>1</sup> The De Wit party were at this period predominant in Holland, in opposition to the Orange Partizans, who were, of course friendly to the King.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Richard Browne himself had many enemies at this moment among the English Exiles; some of whom, from a wish to dismiss him from the King's service, went so far as to insinuate at Court that, "his Majesty being present, he could have no Resident." This is alluded to in a letter from Sir Edward Hyde to Secretary Nicholas, in the State Papers, iii. 112.

<sup>3</sup> This Taylor, adverted to in former notes, was the King's agent with the Emperor of Germany and the Diet; as appears more particularly in a letter to



other is more a foole, and I doubte not so honest, though yett I do not take him for a spy: nor can I imagine it possible for them

to make any sober vsefull proposicons 667 . 668 . 95. The

King will follow the aduice, 407 . 13 . 27 . 12 . 42 . still, till

the Ambass<sup>r</sup> w<sup>is</sup> h<sup>e</sup> s<sup>him</sup> to mone 668 . 95 . 20 . 529 . 17 . 7 . 62 . 502 . 667 . 577. The

Lord Willmott into Germany<sup>1</sup> and if sendinge 394 . 532 . 667 . 186 . is not declared, 407 . 531 .

hee goe s<sup>hee</sup> goe 501 . 491 . 13 . (which will not be yett) 501 . shall not 491 .

by Holand, the King would nott haue the Bishop 415 . 192 . 668 . 220 . 728 . 589 . 514 . 668 . 99 . propose

any such thinge 667 . 668 . 95. Though he be willinge 673 .

you should lett the Ambass<sup>r</sup> know 731 . 666 . 551 . 668 . 95 . 546 . that as low as his power

hee can putt such places in Irland and Scotland is, 501 . 429 . 615 . 654 . 618 . 13 . 532 . 204 . 407 . 363 .

of Holand into the handes 598 . 192 . as would inable them to torment

their enimyes:<sup>2</sup> Ther is no opinion of the good nature and grati-

Pr.El.Pal.<sup>3</sup> The Earl of Br: was to counsell tude of 308 . 452 . 598 . 103 . 707 . called 667 . 121 . as

Counsell<sup>r</sup> of an old 121 . 599 his father:<sup>4</sup> and it would haue bene greate pittie

him from Sir Edward Hyde (State Papers, Vol. iii. p. 112), in reference to an approaching meeting of that body. But in the same volume, page 121, a very strong reason is given for Lord Wilmot's German Embassy, for Hyde says, "I am sure a wise man is wanting there; for Taylor is the most absolute fool I ever heard of."—Vide further, same volume, pp. 113, 116.

<sup>1</sup> How well the King's motions were watched by the Parliamentary spies, is evident from the fact that a journal of the 5th August, 1652, states—"The late King of Scots is at St. German's, and expects daily to bee sent for by the Hollanders. The Lord Wilmot is designed to go Ambassador from him into Germany."

<sup>2</sup> This is a most extraordinary fact, and perfectly in unison with another letter from Sir Edward to Secretary Nicholas, published in the State Papers, vol. iii. p. 86. Fortunately for the King's credit, and the honour of the Nation, the idea was finally dropped by both parties.

<sup>3</sup> The Elector Palatine subsequently justified this opinion; for, when the German Princes made up a sum of ten thousand pounds for Charles, the Elector, though under great obligations both to his father and grandfather, did not contribute a single stiver.—Vide Clarendon's History, vol. iii. p. 418.

<sup>4</sup> In tracing the conduct of the Earl of Bristol throughout these letters, the



he should not : he is a good old man, and much my frende.  
L<sup>d</sup> Digby

155 . intends his owne businesse and lookes not after what concerns us : I thinke I haue answered all yours : and I am able to add nothinge of this place : god of heaven præserue you, and me as I am heartily,

Sir,

Your very affectionate hum<sup>ble</sup> Seru<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

St. Germain, Wensday July

31. 8 at night. 1652.

Sir Ri. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

Since I writt last to you (though it was but on ffryday night) I haue receaued 5 letters from you, two of the 2d, one of the 3. of the 4. and the 5. of this moneth, all which are now before me to be answered in order, after I have exceedingly thanked you for your dilligent and very punctuall correspondence, which is so greate a virtue, that it is high iniustice not to rewarde and gratify it, which I hope will one day be done.

I have informed the Kinge of the Venetian Ambassadors complainte against Mr. Killigrew,<sup>1</sup> with which his Ma<sup>ty</sup> is very much troubled, and resolues upon his returne hither, to examyne his miscarriage, and to proceed therin in such a manner as shall be inquisitive reader will derive much amusement from Walpole's account of him as a Noble Author.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edward, in his Life, page 116, says, that the King was at first unwilling to send Killigrew to Venice ; but afterwards was prevailed upon, only to gratify him, that in the capacity of Envoy " he might borrow money of English merchants for his owne subsistence, which he did, and nothing to the honour of his master."

This letter adds some interesting historical detail upon a circumstance but slightly noticed in the page of history. François Erizzo was the Doge who acted thus cavalierly to the representative of an exiled Monarch. Perhaps one of the most prudent, yet most dignified, of the events of Charles's reign, is the affair here treated of : and the Venetian Senate, if they had any feeling for Royalty in eclipse, must have experienced a degree both of shame and sorrow for their hasty conduct !

worthy of him, and as may manifest his respecte to that Commonwealth, with which the Crowne of Englande hath alwayes held a very stricte amity, and his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Ministers haue in all places præserued a uery good correspondence with the Ministers of that State, and therefore his Ma<sup>ty</sup> is the more sensible of this misde-meanour of his Resident : However his Ma<sup>ty</sup> wishes that the Republic had proceeded accordinge to the vsuall custome, and first acquainted him with ther iust exception against his Minister, that therupon his Ma<sup>ty</sup> might haue testified his respecte to them by recalling and punishinge him, and that they had not by a judgement of ther owne compelled him to retyre, which beinge so vn-usuall a way, his Ma<sup>ty</sup> doubts will not be cleerely and generally understood, but may be interpreted to the Kings disadvantage as a declininge in this tyme of tryall that auntient friendship with the Crowne of Englande, which his Ma<sup>ty</sup> is gladd to finde by the Ambassadour is not in truth the purpose or intention of that Commonwealth, and you are to thanke the Ambassadour in the Kings name for his particular affection to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, which he desyres him to continue.—After I had shewed the Kinge your letter,

to r e a d e it in counsell

he appointed me 667 . 36. 23. 4. 25. 7 . 530. 532. 121, and the resolucon was ther taken for the answer, so that the very wordes which I haue used upon this argument, were consider'd and perused by the Kinge.—I have bene very much troubled for poore Mr. Douglass's beinge sicke, and am much comforted with your good newes of his amendment : If ther had not bene 3 or 4 persons of quality heare very sicke, as my Lo: Wentworth,<sup>1</sup> . . . . Schomburgh, younge Mr. Jarmin,<sup>2</sup> who hath the small pox, and others, who, would not indure the absence of ther physicon, Dr. ffrayser<sup>3</sup> had gone over to Paris to looke to him : I pray when you

<sup>1</sup> Lord Wentworth, of whom some particulars may be found in a former note, was shortly after this sent as agent to Denmark, where he remained until the ensuing year.

<sup>2</sup> Son of Thomas, elder brother of Lord Jermyn. He succeeded his uncle, after the restoration, in the Barony of Jermyn, but not in the Earldom of St. Alban's, and died without issue male.

<sup>3</sup> Fraser was a Scotchman, and mingled much in the religious politics of that country ; he also had some political as well as medical influence at the exiled Court. Lord Clarendon, in *State Papers*, iii. 119, says of him, "I am glad you have so good a correspondent as Dr. Frayser, who is grown (Gods knows why)



go next remember my seruice to him, and desyre him to be very carefull of himselfe that he fall not into relapse : I could willingly be of your minde for the certainty of one avowed messenger, but I finde it harde to lay the worke upon one man, which your passe must suppose ; besydes the askinge such a warrant might possibly shutt the doore against all others, and that would not be well, for betweene the English and Dutch Letters, and the particular businesses from this place, ther is no day passes without a messenger to Paris, and an authority graunted to one might cause all the rest to be in more daunger ; the conclusion is, that wee will every Wensday morninge, or Tuesday night, send an honest fellow to you, and agayne on Saturday morninge, and in those two only I will take my selfe to be most concerned. I hope the Kinge of Spayne<sup>1</sup> is not deade, and then the arryvall of the fletee will indeede prooue a cordiall. I haue the same reproaches fro' the Hague for not writinge things which I doe not know, and sometymes that are not.—You must expayne this ; you say, I have not yet seene 95. both he and I haue bene to [too] busy. What do you meane by that, sure you haue not bene so, nor does any

wise man thinke you can be soe : I haue 668 . 670 . 559 . 29 .  
the two  
 memorialls hee the K. by  
 2 . 36 . 27 . 400 . 13 . 501 . sent to 668 . 216 . 415 .  
 his Sonn which you K.  
 502 . 13 . 43 . 30 . 59 . 722 . 731 . requyred and the 220 .

me  
 gaue 569 . two dayes since : I will keepe them till you order me to dispose them. As I was much startled my selfe with yours of yesterday, which my Lady Harberte<sup>2</sup> sent me late in the night,

that the K. had giuen  
 concerning 673 . 668 . 220 . 506 . 493 . 30 some derections

an absolute stranger with me ; he is great with Lord Gerard and Mr. Attorney, but he will speedily leave us and go for England, which truly I am sorry for, for the King's sake : for no doubt he is good at his business, otherwise the maddest fool alive."—He also speaks particularly well of him in the same volume, p. 45 ; yet Fraser took great offence against Sir Edward, on account of this trip to England, actually asserting that it was Hyde's wish to have him murdered when there, or that he might languish in prison until he should die of grief and hunger !

<sup>1</sup> Philip IV. He died not until 1665.

<sup>2</sup> Wife of Sir Edward Herbert, the Attorney General and, for a short time, Lord Keeper of the Great Seal.



quite contrary to what I understoode to be his minde, so I gave  
 my selfe the pleasure of perplexinge <sup>his</sup> 502 : 239 . by readinge only  
 the first parte of your letter : and when he was in trouble, and pro-  
 tested that he had neuer gaue any such order, I reade him that  
 which was in cypher, with which he was wonderfully pleased, and  
 exceedingly thanks <sup>the</sup> 668 . 95 . and referres the proceedinge  
 in it to his dis c r e t  
 532 . 530 . intirely 667 . 502 . 440 . 15 . 36 . 23 . 12  
 ion  
 537 . and frendshipp, for as he hath hitherto accordinge to his  
 aduice forborne in the least degree to stirr, or moue any thinge, for  
 feare of doinge it vnseasonably, so he very well knowes, that such  
 an ouerture as this, timely made, <sup>may</sup> 571 . 493 . 502 . 488 . 13 .  
 in Holland to s a y  
 532 . 192 . opportunity 667 . 13 . 21 . 10 . somewhat on his  
 behalfe,<sup>1</sup> which of themselves originally they could not doe, and  
 therefore <sup>the</sup> 668 . 220 . <sup>the</sup> 668 . 428 . <sup>con</sup> 25 . <sup>d</sup> 43 . <sup>u</sup> 15 . <sup>c</sup> 42 .  
<sup>e</sup> of <sup>t</sup> h e Ambas.  
 23 . 598 . wholly to 12 . 17 . 23 . 95 . and will acknowledge  
 the good e f f e t s to him :  
 alwayes 668 . 495 . 7 . 18 . 24 . 56 . 12 . 13 . 667 . 505 .  
 and ther is no doubt, if ther were an opportunity <sup>to</sup> 667 . 12 . 36 .  
<sup>e</sup> a t e on the Kings be h a  
 23 . 21 . 42 . 23 . 600 . 668 . 220 . 13 . 416 . 17 . 21 .  
<sup>l</sup> f e  
 28 . 18 . 7 . ther would be founde reall aduantages yett in his  
 power (as low as it is) <sup>to</sup> 667 . 493 . <sup>giue</sup> 713 . <sup>with</sup> reference 667 . 204 .  
 and Scotland<sup>2</sup>  
 407 . 363 . and really I have reason to belieue that wee could

<sup>1</sup> On consulting a letter of the 2nd August to Secretary Nicholas, then residing in Holland, it is evident that this passage refers to the former proposals for the delivery of certain places, both in Scotland and Ireland, to the Dutch.

<sup>2</sup> The King's wishes at this period are recorded in one of the public journals, ("Several Proceedings," 28th October, 1652,) in a letter from Paris. "Charles Stuart, the Tituler Scots King, lives in the Palace Royall, and still in necessity ; his Mother went to Challeau on Munday last ; he impatiently expects this peace ; he could wish to be now in Ireland, so he told some of his own Creatures of late ; so would all about him : yet Ormond and Inchiquin tell him

make Jersey, Guernsey, and Scilly  
 speedily 580 . 213 . 191 . 407 . 13 . 27 . 28 . 52 . 10 .  
 at our the Ambass<sup>r</sup> know  
 402 . 603 . deuocōn. You must lett 668 . 95 . 546 . that  
 the K. Lord Taff<sup>r</sup>  
 668 . 220 . hath this day dispatched 549 . 12 . 21 . 18 . 24 .  
 to the Duke of Lorrain  
 667 . 668 . 446 . 598 . 231 . (with whome he is in singular  
 to con i v  
 credit, and is indeede a very honest man) 661 . 428 . 27 . 1 .  
 r e him not Holland but  
 36 . 23 . 505 . 589 . in any degree to disturbe 192 . 417 .  
 on to he will assist  
 600 . the other hande . 667 . declare that 501 . 710 . 401 .  
 them against England  
 13 . 529 . 12 . 676 . 414 . 13 . 12 . 164 . which I doubte not  
 he will doe heartily. I conceaue my L<sup>d</sup> Inchiquin<sup>2</sup> (though I haue  
 not spoken with him of it this day) does not speedily intende to  
 make use of his passe, but will send to you agayne about it, before  
 he expects it fro' you.—It is very true ther was such a summ of  
 mony lately receaued at Paris for the Kinge as you mention, and  
 40. pistoles of it disposed to that Lady, which is all the mony he  
 hath receaued since he came hither, and in some tyme before, and  
 he hath hope to receaue iust such a summ agayne within these  
 few dayes, but alas it doth not inable his cooks and back-stayres<sup>3</sup>

plainly that those who most oppose the Commonwealth are but Ulster men,  
 which doe not much care for him, and are only for their own ends, which if  
 they could obtain, would never look upon a King, and that if they promise to  
 be faithful to a Parliament they would be constant."

<sup>1</sup> Lord Taaffe was particularly active in the King's Councils, with respect to  
 the affairs of Ireland. A Gazette of that day, alluding to the King's Hibernian  
 proceedings, says, when speaking of the proposed operations of the Duke of  
 Lorraine—"Lord Taaffe is the man that manageth the business with the King,  
 which is much opposed by the Lord Wilmot, and some others, as a course very  
 improbable: and this hath occasioned a quarrel, and afterwards a challenge,  
 betwixt Taaffe and Wilmot, which with much ado was composed by the Scots  
 King."

<sup>2</sup> It had been intended, at this period, that Lord Inchiquin, accompanied by  
 Jermyn, should go as Ambassador to Holland, to prepare matters for Charles's  
 reception there.

<sup>3</sup> The public journals, in real or fictitious letters from Paris, asserted loudly  
 that the "quondam" King, as they styled him, had grown so hateful to the  
 people of that city, "since Lorraine's treason, being afraid lest he might find  
 such entertainment from them at the new bridge as others had experimented,



men to goe on in the provydinge his dyett, but they protest they can undertake it no longer. I hope ther will be shortly another manner of receipt, and then if you should be left out, I should mutiny on your behalfe : in the meane tyme, if it would giue you ease, I could assure you, my L<sup>d</sup> . . . . nor I have one cardicue in the worlde, yett wee keepe up our spiritts : ffor gods sake do you so to, and he will carry you through this terrible storme.—My L<sup>d</sup> Jermin is this day gone to the Courte, how longe he stayes I know not. We haue no newes, at least that I know. I pray tell us as much as you know of the Armyes mouinge, and what hope ther is of peace. I am,

S<sup>r</sup>,  
your very affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> serv<sup>t</sup>,  
EDW. HYDE.

S<sup>t</sup> Germans this  
Tuesday the 6. of Aug.  
6. at night. 1652.

This messenger is to returne as soone as the fflanders letters are arryved.

S<sup>r</sup> Ri. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

That yours of the 10. of December (which came to my handes the same day that I dispatched my last to you) hath yett brought you no answer, is not my faulte, for as I was takinge penn & paper

and being reduced to nothing to subsist on, and having beggared a multitude of bakers, brewers, butchers, and other tradesmen, on Saturday last departed out of this town with all his family (*nullo relicto*). The Prince of Condé and Beauford accompanied him about a league off the town ; he is gone to St. Jermin's, and from thence to St. Dennis, intending for Holland, where keeping a correspondence with the Duke of Loraine, and likewise with his Mother and his brother Yorke, who are to remain yet in France, he hopes to worke some mischiefe to the State of England."

We suspect, from the internal evidence of this Parisian letter, that, like many others of modern date, it is of London manufacture—" *mutato nomine*," &c. It is not the less curious ! for in those days the public papers were printed with an *Imprimatur* from Hen. Scobell, Clerk of Parliament ! "



to do it on Sunday last, your other of the 14. arryued, which derected me to change my course of writinge, and to send no more to Nantz,<sup>1</sup> but to St. Malos : and indeede I was very gladd to finde that you were bounde for Brest, wher I should haue wished you, notwithstanding any discouragements you receaued from thence, except you could bringe a recommendation from this Courte : for Mr. Holder<sup>2</sup> writes me worde, that a letter from Moun<sup>r</sup> Castlenoe would signify very little. I am confident the letter you haue from our Master, will præsereue you from any affronts, and then sure your beinge ther will be at least for your owne aduantage, both to collecte what is dew to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> upon accounts,<sup>3</sup> which must be worth somewhat, and will be easily discouer'd by what Mr. Holder hath receaued from the Duke, and to receaue the dewes upon ther last pryzes, which will, they say, amounte to a rounde summ.—Though Sr Geo. Carterett was gone out of the towne, when I receaued yours of the 10. yett very contrary to my expectation he returned hither 3 or 4 dayes after, and stayed only one night, when I shewed him your letter ; sure he will do all the good offices to you in all thinges he is able. My L<sup>d</sup> . . . . will obserue the caution you giue him, and will be gladd you can discouer any monyes to be dew to him, and he will gladly giue you authority to receaue it ; indeed a supply will come as seasonable to him as to any body, for when I haue told you, that none of us haue receaued a penny since you went, you will believe our necessities to be importunate enough, which would be more insupportable, if wee did not see the King himselfe reduced to greater distresse then you can believe or imagine. I perceaue the arrest of ffarrande, is upon some pique betweene the Duke of

<sup>1</sup> Sir Richard Browne was, at this moment, very active in endeavouring to collect the King's dues on the prizes brought into the different ports of France.

<sup>2</sup> Holder was Secretary to Prince Rupert. He was loyal, and it appears from Lord Clarendon's State Papers that great dependence was placed on him when wanted : yet Sir Edward calls him "the pert, importunate agent of the Catholics." See also p. 269.

<sup>3</sup> The difficulty which the King experienced in raising any money upon the prizes, is alluded to in "Perfect Passages" of the 15th October, 1652 : "Prince Rupert hath lately seized on some good prizes ; he keeps himself far remote, and makes his kinsman, Charles Stuart, make a leg for some cullings of his windfalls."

Vandosme and the Marshall Melleray,<sup>1</sup> between whom the contests grew very high, and are like to breake out to such a degree the Courte is not without apprehension, that it shall not conteyne them both to its seruice, and seemes at present, to be vnsatisfyed with the Marshall, and I heare some letters of reprehension are sent to him ; therefore this arrest is not like to produce any aduantage to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, besides that it seemes the shipp is out of the power of the Marshall. I haue giuen Choquex the papers, and will conferr with him what is to be done, for it is I perceauue true that the shipp and all the furniture was really putt into his handes by Pr. Ruperte,<sup>2</sup> so that besides the restitution of the vessell, there will be a large accounte to be made : When any thing is resolved, you shall haue an accounte of it.

I am very gladd you haue had so good successe in your suite, I hope it is but an instance of future good fortune at Brest, wher ther is much dew, if you haue receaued so little, as I haue formerly hearde you haue mentioned :—I præsume you haue kept an exacte accounte of all you haue had upon those assignations, which I putt you only in minde of, because upon conference with S<sup>r</sup> Geo. Carterett, he could not belieue it had bene possible, that upon so many pryzes as he obserued to be brought in, you should touch so little, as I assured him had come to your handes. When you went from hence, and vpon occasyon of somewhat I writt lately in a letter to Mr. . . . . of the no profitt accrewed to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> upon that receipte, he answered me that it was impossible much could come to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s owne receipte, when he granted so large assignments out of it, and so mentioned in the first place, what was allotted to you, as if it had bene payde.—Wee know nothinge of Englande more than that your french Minister was landed at Dover. Wee shall shortly see what his reception hath bene, and shall then better guess at the effects : in the meane

<sup>1</sup> Melleray was Governor of Nantes.

<sup>2</sup> Prince Rupert, just before this period, was in the West Indies, and had with him a fleet of fifteen sail, to which eight Dutch ships were joined in October. He is stated in the journals to have captured ten rich English vessels, whilst cruising off St. Kitts. It is a remarkable circumstance, however, that another journal, the "Perfect Passages," places him off Cyprus, and describes him as capturing all vessels that pass him in the Levant.



tyme, we are at no ease heare. My Lo: of Rochester (for that is my L<sup>d</sup> Willmotts title)<sup>1</sup> is to sett out from hence on Thursday morninge, he trauells with a small trayne, and hath it in his power to assume the title of Ambassadour,<sup>2</sup> which I suppose he will choose to declayne, and do his businesse in a priuate way, which will procure a speedyer dispatch.—God præsereue you.

I am, Sr,

your very affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,  
E. H.

Pallais Royale this

24 of Decemb. Christmasse Eue, 1652.

Commend me to Mr. Holder, and lett him know I have now receaued his of the 13.

<sup>1</sup> There was a considerable difficulty in finding a proper title for Lord Wilmot, since his first proposed one of Essex was claimed by Lord Capel, and that of Danby by the Attorney General; upon which, as stated in the Clarendon Papers, iii. 121, "my Lord declined that title, and so his patent is drawn up for the Earl of Rochester."—Also iii. p. 57.

<sup>2</sup> It was hoped that he would be able to induce the German Princes to advance money for the King's private expenditure; and also to interfere with the Dutch, and render them disposed to undertake some decided step in his favour. The King must, certainly, at this period, have been in extreme distress, if we are to credit a letter from Paris in the "Several Proceedings" of 13th December, which asserts that "the titular King of Scots is reduced to so low a condition that he is forced to eate his meals in taverns here in Paris, having not the commodity of dining at home."

The distress of the King and his friends may indeed well be imagined, when Sir Edward Hyde, not three months before this date, thus expresses himself in a letter to Sir Edward Nicholas: "It is no wonder you should desire to be eased, as much as may be, of all kinds of charges. I am sure I have as much reason as any man living to join with you in that thrift; yet I cannot avoid the constant expense of seven or eight livres the week for postage of letters, which I borrow scandalously out of my friends pockets, or else my letters must more scandalously remain still at the post-house; and I am sure all those which concern my own private affairs would be received for ten sous a week, so that all the rest are for the King, from whom I have not received one penny since I came hither, and am put to all this charge; and yet it is to no purpose to complain, though I have not been master of a crown these many months, and cold for want of clothes and fire, and owe for all the meate which I have eaten these three months, and to a poor woman who is not longer able to trust."



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue receaued yours of the 22<sup>th</sup> from Nantes, and am very gladd that you haue passed that parte of your iourney so well; I hope the rest will be as successful, though I do not exspecte you should finde as good weather to bringe you home, as you haue had to carry you out: The Spanyard<sup>1</sup> desyred me to giue you my thanks for your care of him, which I do very heartily, and conceaue by this tyme he is gotten into his owne Country, and I do not thinke he will euer visitt ffrance agayne, which he hath no reason to loue, but for the English which he founde heare. Ther hath beene yett no letter from the Mareschall de Melleray, which ther was no reason to exspecte, if you had not mentioned it, as somewhat you thought intended; I am exceedinge gladd that he proceeded so roundly with the English Rebells, as to arrest both the shippes and goods,<sup>2</sup> I wish they did so in all other partes of ffrance, that they might proceede a little more briskely towards ther greate worke, then yett they appeare to doe, but if I am not deceaued, the English will quicken them shortly, if they haue any spiritts left.

You must not suspecte your frends kindnesse and affection to you, when I tell you, that your arrett is not yett dispatched: you know how little seruice I can do in that kinde by any personall sollicitation of my owne, more then by callinge upon Sir Ri: Foster,<sup>3</sup> which I haue often done, and in truth I thinke him to be as carefull in all that concernes you, and in this particular, as a frende

<sup>1</sup> This is a part of the private history of the time, to which there is no certain clue. There were some plans in agitation on the part of the Condeans to persuade both England and Spain to aid them with their arms; and as at this period there were two powerful political parties at Madrid, perhaps the man alluded to may have been a secret agent in the politics of the day.

<sup>2</sup> This is an event not elsewhere recorded; unless it alludes to the seizures of some ships at Dunkirk, afterwards restored to Cromwell by the French Government.

<sup>3</sup> Sir Richard Foster was keeper of the King's privy purse, though he seldom was lucky enough to have any cash in it. Vide Clarendon's State Papers, vol. iii. p. 46.

can be : But the truth is, he hath beene ill since you went, and your Aduocate hath bene neuer with him, not at home when he went to finde him, and the setlinge the kings businesse with the Surintend't (which is yett farr from being settled) hath so worne out the good old man, that he hath not bene yett able to settle yours, which he promises me to dispatch out of hande : I forgott likewise to tell you, that this man is gone from him, which leaues him so much the worse.

I receaued this weeke a letter from S<sup>r</sup> Ger. Lucas, under a cover to you, dated from a place called I thinke . . . . ., I suppose it is somewher in Britany, and I belieue you haue some addresse to him, therefore I trouble you with the inclosed.—All heare are your Seru<sup>ts</sup> : God præserue you. I am very heartily,

Sr,

Your most affectionate humble Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

Pallais Royall 29 of Novemb. 1652.

The Kinge would have you giue Mr. Richards all assistance in executinge the orders for the Patricke & Francis,<sup>1</sup> formerly granted to S<sup>r</sup> G<sup>e</sup> Carterett : the 10<sup>th</sup> & 15<sup>th</sup> are to be payd to the proper receauers.

Sir Ri: Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>

I haue receaued yours of the 26. of Decemb. and am very gladd that you were then upon your way to Brest, wher sure your presence will be more necessary than at Nantes, though it may be, your company was not much desyred ther : you will I suppose finde the seamen and Capt: weary of that Porte, and therefore you are like to be the more wellcome to them, with the proposicon from the Marechall de Melleray,<sup>2</sup> and if they were once induced to

<sup>1</sup> Two of the Jersey privateers.

<sup>2</sup> Melleray was at this moment a great object of jealousy to Cardinal Mazarine, who caused a letter to be sent to him from the King, inviting him



goe to Porte Lewes, I would mooue the Kinge to take notice of it, and to write to the Marechall; I hope you haue founde good store of mony for your selfe at Brest, from the pryzes which haue bene brought in, & that you finde that trybe of Captayns as towardly as Mr. Holder reported them to be, who hath a wonderfull esteeme of them: Though I do not loue to infuse any iealosyes or distrust in any man, of his frends, and those of whome he hath a good opinion, yett I haue reason to warne you, to be a little upon your

to  
 garde, and not too freely to imparte all you know or thinke 667 .  
 Mr. H. o l d e r who a ...  
 568 . 17 . 2 . 28 . 15 . 23 . 36 . 704 : trust me is 4 . 699 .  
 weeke man in his Religion that  
 726 . 573 . and so sottishly corrupted 534 . 502 . 337 . 673 .  
 hee p r i e s t  
 501 . belieues whatsoever any 34 . 36 . 27 . 7 . 13 . 12 . sayes  
 to him, how ridiculous soeuer, and to all these virtues he thinks  
 himselfe wiser than Solomon. Ther are some other reasons for  
 this caution, which I cannot expresse at large, which make me  
 he is not so iust to you  
 belieue that 501 . 529 . 589 . 645 . 538 . 667 . 731 . as  
 he  
 501 . ought to be. We are all heare in the same beggarly con-  
 dition<sup>1</sup> you left us, which I thinke by longe custome will grow a  
 seconde nature to us: I should be glad to heare that S<sup>r</sup> Geo. Car-

to Court, and adding an offer of the command in Champagne; but the Marshal was aware that this was an intrigue to get him and his son to Court, they being suspected as friendly to the Condé party, and therefore he excused himself on pretence of illness, &c. He was Governor of Nantes.

<sup>1</sup> This is rather extraordinary, when even the Parliamentary journals in England state the following remarkable facts, in November, 1652: "The King of Scots lies yet in the Palace Royal, whither the King and Queen came to give him a visit, and in abundance of ceremony, to thank him for that great pains he had taken in labouring the healing up of those sad breaches between his Majesty and his people; which Christian office has gained him at Court the title of *Magne Britannia et Hibernia Rex, Fidei Defensor, Pericli Dissipator Gallici, Pacisque Compositor Generalissimo*. 'Tis rumoured that the King of Denmark should send him £100,000 in gold for a present, with the promised assistance of him and his subjects in the disputing of his cause against all opposers. The Duke of Yorke is still in high favour, and is cryed up for the most accomplished gentleman, both in arms and courtesie, that graces the French Court. The English begin to be admitted dayly into places of high trust and command; and those shaded Cavaliers, whom the world thought



terett were come to Brest.—God præserue you, and bringe us well together agayne :—I am very heartily,

Sr,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>b<sup>le</sup></sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Paris this 11 of January 1653.

Sir Ri. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue yours of the 3<sup>d</sup> and the 6. of this moneth : and you had receaued an answer to the first before the last had come to my hands, if it had bene in my power to haue returned you such a one as could haue satisfied my selfe. I was as full of the sense of the iniury and indignity that is offred to your Captaynes at Brest, and truly so is the Kinge, as they could wish, but you know iniuries and acts of iniustice are not as soone remedied and repayed heare, as dicouered : The Kinge wished young L<sup>d</sup> Jermin, Mr. Atturmy and my selfe, to consider what was to be done, and wee were all of opinion, knowinge what Princes all Gouvernors are at present in ffraunce, that it would not be fitt to moue the Courte, which no doubt knows nothinge of this arrest and restraite, nor it may be of the bargayne and connivance for the admissyon of our shippes (for you know wee haue bene longe without the benefitt of the printed Order you mention) before Mons. Castelnoe (from whome the orders were without question sent, for his owne benefitt) be first spoken with, and my L<sup>d</sup> Jermin<sup>1</sup> promised to

worthy of nothing but exilement, begin to be looked upon according to their worth and known gallantry."

<sup>1</sup> Jermyn's influence at the exiled Court had for some time been very great ; and is thus described by a journalist of that period, in a volume of Tracts in the British Museum : " The little Queen is retired to the nunnery at Chaliot, there to spend her time a while in devotion, for the advance of some designs that she hath on foot ; she left her son the fugitive at the Louvre, given up to the bent of his Common Prayer Mongers, and of Jermyn, whose power is now greater with him than any ; which is a sure sign that his Mother rules him again, and

doe that presently, and he hoped effectually; but wee finde after longe enquiry that Mons. Castlenoe is gone out of this towne to the Cardinall, nor is it knowne when he will returne, and yett it is thought as necessary, that his minde and resolucon be first vnderstoode: Therefore my L<sup>d</sup> Jermyn hath written to him, and inclosed the state of the case, made out of your letters, and Mr. Atturmy hath sent the same to the Duke of Yorke, who wee presume is most like to gett a full dispatch in it, and wee must expecte the answer from thence, and then if there be any cause to complayne at Courte, wee will take the best care wee can, that it be made as it ought to be.

ffor the other businesse concerninge the Marq: of. . . . ., of which I thinke I writt somewhat to you in my last, Mr. Atturmy and I haue spoken with Choquy of it, who exspectes euery day an answer to what he hath formerly sent to the Marq: and when that comes, or that it appeares he desyres not to make any answer, the Kinge will conclude what he should doe as to the revocation.

ffor your Hamborough pryse, you cannot suppose that I will returne a priuate opinion of my owne, in a businesse of that nature, for many reasons, and the Kinge commanded me to aduise with M<sup>r</sup> Atturmy, and upon both our consideringe the case, as M<sup>r</sup> Holder sent it me, wee doe not see it so cleerely stated, as to be able to giue the King any iudgement upon it, since it does not

that he hath resigned his judgment, affection, and all to her, because heretofore there was a sore grudge between him and Jermyn, in regard at his former being here [Paris] Jermyn (who then commanded and still keeps the purse) was very streight handed over him in his expences.—The old Court flies begin now again to flock about him" (30th Dec. 1651) "from all parts. Crofts is returning from Poland, where he called himselfe a Lord Ambasadour, and is to be made a Lord, as soon as he comes (as they would have us believe), for his pains in that employment, and for the charitable contribution of our Polish cousins that (they say) he brings along with him. Some of them are come to the Louvre already out of Flanders, as Hide, a man of dignity too, that calls himself the Chequer Chancellor; here is also Bramhall, of London Derry, Dan O'Neill, Fraiser, a physitian, and one Lloid, a Chaplain. These bring newes, that Buckingham and Secr. Nicholas would have come along too, but that they wanted Ghelt; and the rest of his Majesties black guard and retinue that wander in the Low Countries, if they were sure of daily bread for their attendance."



appeare that the goods do at all belonge to any English marchant or ffactor, but for ought appears may be the proper estate of the Hamberghers.

I did not suppose they had suffred you to giue any adiudications ther, and that the former arrest had bene made at Rhemes upon that quarrell : We hope the Duke will be heare within 2 or 3 dayes, and then it will be necessary to receaue his derection upon all this businesse. My L<sup>d</sup> Inchiquin and I are upon some trouble with your Landlord, who yesterday was at your house, and expresses some purpose to seize upon the goods ; which we all vnderstande would not only be very mischieuous to you, but very dishonorable to the Kinge, and therefore you may be confident that wee omitt nothing that is in our power to doe, hauinge not a penny to discharge the debte.<sup>1</sup> This day S<sup>r</sup> Ri: ffoster goes with my L<sup>d</sup> Inchiquin to him, to see how farr good wordes and promises will prevaile with him, and all other courses shall be really taken for his satisfaction, that are in the Kinges power. Will ther be nothinge dew upon the Kinges owne share of the pryces brought in by the Patricke & Francis, that might be employed to that purpose ? any order should be procured from hence.

I pray convey this inclosed to Ge: Carterett, who I suppose is not still with you. God præserue you. I am heartily

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Pall: Ro; this 21 of January 1653.

Sir R. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue receaued yours of the 7th from the good Govern<sup>r</sup> and yourselfe, and this must serue as answer to you both, for I am still in my old posture, not yet able to stirr from my bed. I have

<sup>1</sup> The distress of the King may be faintly appreciated from an extract from the *Mercurius Politicus*, 8th July, 1652, where it is stated : " Charles Stuart,



not heard these many weekes from Mr. Holder, but I suppose he giues the same informacon to the Duke and his officers, if not, what he sayes is likely to be belieued more then what I shall informe, therefore I must still renew my aduice to you, that you write very particularly to the Duke himselfe, or to some of his officers, of all the obstrucons you meete with, and very particularly of the misdemeanours of the Captaines,<sup>1</sup> and of any such proposicons and expedients which you thinke fitt to offer for the promoting his seruice, and I make noe doubt but his Royal Highnes will as soone hearken to you, and be aduiced by you, as by any persons. I can giue you no intelligence from hence, whilst I continue thus a prysoner, but truely I thinke they who are abroad know little of moment, the Court here being wholly intent upon battels and matters of pleasure, and our owne affaires being in a dead calme, exspecting some gentle gale from some of our neighbours to give them motion, and really I doe belieue y<sup>e</sup> good spiritt does improve, since no body can doubt, but y<sup>t</sup> the people in England are generally well prepared for it. This is all I can say to you, but y<sup>t</sup> I am to you both

your most affectionate humble servant,

EDW. HYDE.

Paris 18 Feb. 1653.

The King hath lately bene aduertised by the Gouernment of Innisboffine, that if any Marchantmen will bring corne, armes, or

who was said to be gone in our last [from Paris] went not till some few days after. He made the more haste, because a servant of his was fallen upon, pursued, and beaten, even in his master's place of abode at the Louvre. Hee also was besieged there by the bakers, butchers, and other tradesmen of all sorts, in whose books he is faln very deep; and they feared, if they lost him they should lose their money. But to pacify them they were told his intent was but to go to Rosny upon the way to Roan. His mother marches with him. The small baggage they have is already gone. They give out that they will returne after the peace is made, and condemn this City of ingratitude; alledging that it had bin blockt up by the King before this time, had it not bin for their mediation with his Majesty."

<sup>1</sup> The Duke of York was actually at this period with the French Army under Turenne; and though he here appears to have been personally interested in the affairs of the little squadron of privateers, yet there is no mention of it whatever in the Life recently published from his own Memoir.

ammunicon thither, they shall be sure to receive ready money for it, and that such a supply would enable them for some time to expect greater, and not to submit to the rebels. If it were possible to procure any of your Men of War, or any Marchants to resort thither, it would be a wonderfull good service, therefore I pray deviece all wayes possible to compasse it, and let me know now the seuerall letters I sent to you directed to y<sup>e</sup> place haue bene disposed off.<sup>1</sup>

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I am sure it can be no newes to you that Pr. Rupert is safe at Nantes,<sup>2</sup> and therfore it is very probable this letter may not finde you at Brest, but that you may haue thought it fitt to attende his Highnesse, and offer him your service. The Kinge hath sent Mr. Holder some derection concerninge the Hamborough shipp. If George Carterett<sup>3</sup> be not with you, I pray send this letter to him

<sup>1</sup> These plans and hopes were soon after put an end to by the capture of Innisboffin by the Parliamentary Army, it being then the last place in Ireland that held out for the King.

<sup>2</sup> This was the last of Prince Rupert's maritime expeditions during the Interregnum. On his return to Europe he captured a rich prize laden with tobacco, and having carried her into Nantz, in March, 1653, he was soon after seized with a violent illness, recovering from which he proceeded to Paris, and was well received by the French King. From thence he went to the Imperial Court; but returned to England at the Restoration.

The small fleet now under the command of Prince Rupert had been originally re-fitted at Toulon; but having met with losses of ships, particularly at the Azores, where his own flagship, the *Reformation*, had been sunk, and the whole crew of 360 men perished, with the exception of Rupert, his brother Maurice, and twelve others, it was found necessary to return to the Northern parts of France, particularly as Admiral Penn, with his squadron, was waiting for them in the Streights of Gibraltar.

<sup>3</sup> Sir George Carteret, a little before this time, commanded a small squadron of the Royal ships, with which he cruised, principally upon the coast of Ireland, and greatly to the annoyance of the Republican Party, if we may judge from their splenetic observations in the journals of the day.



by the first safe opportunity, and if he hath not a copy of your cypher, send it to him, I havinge used it in this letter for 3 or 4 lynes, which it is necessary for him to understande. Excuse me, who hauinge no letter of yours to answer, for beinge at present so shorte, which you know is not my naturall faulte. Wee haue reason to hope the Kings affayres are upon a mendinge hande, with reference to Hollande.—God be with you. I am very heartily,

Sr,

your most affectionate Seru<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Paris this 22 of March (1653).

Sir Ric: Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

About three days since I receaued yours of the 24. of the last moneth, which makes me still wonder how it comes to passe, that yours are so longe upon the way, for it is not possible that the post can be 12 or 14 dayes upon the way from Brest, and so much tyme ther is still betweene your writinge and my readinge. I suppose the Governour is now gone to Nantes, or else he will not wayte on the Prince, which I should be sorry for. the Kinge sent his coach on Wensday to Orleans, supposinge it will meete his Highnesse<sup>1</sup> ther, or that he will be ther within a day or 2 after, so that wee expecte him heare on Tuesday or Wensday, and till his returne I do not conceaue that you neede putt your selfe to the trouble of a iourny, and if ther be then any occasyon for it, I will aduertise you : If the euidence against the Captaynes be so pregnant as it seemes by you to be, of seuerall theftes and cozinages, how would it be possible for the Judge to declare them innocent? and though it may, it would be difficulte to obteyne iustice against them in that jurisdiction, yett the declininge to giue in the testimony and charge against them before the proper officer (though it is possible he will

<sup>1</sup> Prince Rupert. This event is much noticed in the London journals of that period. These journals also assert, upon the authority of some runaway seamen, who landed at Weymouth, "that all the plunder he hath brought is not worth £10,000, and the Swallow is hallen up altogether unserviceable."



not haue power enough to cause reparacon to be made, if he had the will to do it) will be made a greate countenance to them, as if the allegations were not waighty ; and I finde (though I am a stranger to all that is done on that syde of the house) that the Cap-  
taynes are upon all occasyons much magnified, as excellent vsefull ministers.—I am very gladd of that order you mention, against the transportinge the necessaryes for shippinge, which I wonder the more at, because wee conceaue the french Minister at London euery day getts grounde, but I hope they will deceaue each other. —Innisboffin was poorly giuen up aboute the middle of february, so that now I feare the poore Irish haue only woods and boggs for shelter ; I pray keepe all those dispatches safe by you, but you neede not send them backe, till you come your selfe. Hath G<sup>r</sup> Carterett a good opinion of Anthonio ? I hope ther will be some parte of your house-rent payd ot of hande, but I know not what to say to your assignements upon the Prince, who no doubtte will haue occasyon to vse all and more then he can haue brought home, to repayre and fitt out his shipp<sup>s</sup>.<sup>1</sup>—It is a good and conscientious thinge to pay off any old debts, and good husbandry to discharge those first, for which interest is to be payd ; but if I were in your case, I should satisfy my selfe, in keepinge mony enough in my purse to præsuerue me a yeere from staruinge, before I thought of paying any debtes. Wee do flatter ourselves with an opinion that our affayres will mende, and that wee shall not stay longe heare, indeede I belieue our Master will putt himselfe into some action this summer, and that wee shall not spende it in ffirance.<sup>2</sup> God præsuerue you and,

S<sup>r</sup>,

your very affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 12. of April (1653).

Indorsed by Sir R. Browne :

From Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer, 12 Ap<sup>l</sup> 1653. Received 19 Ap<sup>l</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> These were the shattered ships which had returned to Nantz from the West Indian cruise ; but another portion of the Royal squadron was now favourably received in the ports of Holland ; as is asserted in the "Moderate Publisher" of the 15th April, 1653. Indeed it was generally reported that the States had now resolved to give to Charles the title of *King of Great Britain*.

<sup>2</sup> This was a vain hope, for Charles remained in France until the ensuing year.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

21 April 1653.

Two dayes since I receiued your Hon<sup>rs</sup> of 12<sup>th</sup>, by which it appeares that it made better speede hither, then it seemes mine commonly doe to Paris, the cause whereoff is, that betweene this place and Morlaix there is noe settled conuaiance, only the opportunity of such carriers who come uncertainly from thence hither once or twice a weeke to fetch linnen cloth. I haue not yett heard one word from the Gouvernour since his going hence : butt Mr. Holder (who yesterday returned from Nantes) assures mee that hee had beene with the Prince some dayes before his Highnesses going for Paris ; and that His H. did also acknowledge to him to haue receiued my l're by Sir G: Carterett.<sup>1</sup>

I perceiue the French minister is nott returned (as wee were made belieue) out of England, which I am sorry for, butt hope God in his due time will doe our worke by puttinge his Ma<sup>ty</sup> into some succesfull action worthy his Royall undertaking : and shall with impatience expect to heare how in case our Maister leaue the kingdome, I shall bee inabled to returne to Paris (one handsome stepp to which the discharge of my house-rent will proue), or be otherwayes disposed off in order to his seruice. If wee had faire play the Kinges dues here would rise to somethinge, butt with this most abominably shockinge Gouvernour there is such an unpreuentable tyranny in the vpper and corruption of the under officers in this place where we are but *precario*, that it is a shame to see it.

Captain Antonio hath vppon that score quite left this port, and

<sup>1</sup> How very little chance the Privy Purse had of assistance from the assets of the squadron, may be judged from a letter of Hyde's to Nicholas, where he says : " You must never expect information from me of any of the business of the prize, or any thing that is managed by Prince Rupert, who consults only with the Lord Keeper ; and I much doubt very little of that money will come to the King. I shall be satisfied if what is raised on the guns and ship (for all is to be sold) come justly to his hands." Vide State Papers, vol. iii. p. 200— And again, in p. 222, he speaks more feelingly : " The truth is, Prince Rupert is so totally governed by the Lord Keeper [Sir Edward Herbert], that the King knows him not. You talk of money the King should have upon the prizes at Nantz ; alas ! he hath not only not had one penny from thence, but Prince Rupert pretends the King owes him more money, than ever I was worth."



will yf hee may be beleiued be shortly with you at Paris, where he hath a proces. S<sup>r</sup> G. Carteret will giue y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> an account of him ; for since the receipt of your last I haue written to him soe to doe. He knowes what I thinke of him, and yf his owne opinion bee not better then mine, I doe assure your Hon<sup>r</sup> it is nott admirably good : and I doe wish the Kinge would be very sparinge how hee conferre any fauour on him until he deserue better then hithertoo I can say hee hath. I perceiue you haue new councillours sworne & a grand new officer with whom I am obleeged to congratulate. God direct all for the best : soe that the generall of our affaires goe well, it matters not much what becomes of him, who is unfaignedly and æternally Yo<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>rs</sup>

Most faithfull, most obliged,  
and most humble seruant,

R: BROWNE.

Brest 21. April 1653.

Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

My last to your Hon<sup>r</sup> were of the 28<sup>th</sup> Aprill, Munday last ; the day followinge in the eueninge came priuatly to this towne the Marquis de Neubourg, youngest brother to the Marq: de Sourdiac, with another gentleman in his company ; who immediately went to the Castle, and after a longe consultation with Mon<sup>r</sup> de Camper concealed themselves as much as they could. Yesterday in a small fregat<sup>1</sup> which was goinge to sea with his Ma<sup>ties</sup> commission, this Marquis, with a Captain, an officer of the Castle, & 150 men, amongst which our turbulent Captain Smyth, imbarqued as priuatly

<sup>1</sup> The journals of the day, in allusion to the loyal navy, say : " The King of Scots Pickroones play their cards cunningly upon the coast of Jersey ; no less then two delicate prizes have they taken and carried to Shawsey Island," (Isle du Choisi,) " amountinge to a great value ; besides Captain Chamberlin playes his pranks notably, and trusses up our pore fishermen, even as a falcon doth wild ducks, forcing them to pay tribute to his young master Charles, and exacts a pistol upon all such boats that fetcheth wrack [sea wrack] from the said island of Shawsey, belonging to the French King."



as they could with intention to goe and reduce the Isle of Ushant for which enterprise I heare this Marquis hath brought the French Kinges orders and Mon<sup>r</sup> de Castlenau's recommendations. As I presume the island yf taken, will as formerly bee re-annexed<sup>1</sup> to this gouvernement of Brest. Wee are in hourly expectation what the successe will bee, wheroff your Hon<sup>r</sup> may expect account in my next, and accordingly I shall gouverne myselfe in the demand of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> dues out of the tobacco that shall be there found, which is nott vpon this occasion to bee neglected. Nott yett one line from my deare S<sup>r</sup> George Carteret: wee liued together like brothers; and I hope he hath nott soe soone forgotten mee.

Prayinge, &c.

From your Hon<sup>rs</sup> &c.

R. B.

Brest. 2 May. 1653.

The Hollanders bringe more prizes dayly into the ports vpon this coast. Captain Swart, who commanded The Patricke hath this weeke lanced a small man of warre under the Holland colours; Agent Rameng Coale hauinge undertaken to procure for him a sea-commission from the States of Holland.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue receaued yours of the 21. of the last, and had one little letter from the Gouverneur<sup>2</sup> since his departure from you, after he had wayted on the Prince: I belieue he is now busy at Burdeaux, yett sure he will sometymes write to his frends, who haue the lesse reason to be angry with his silence, since his wife knowes so little of him, that shee askes me wher he is. Our reportes of the proceedings of the french minister in Englande are so different, that I know not what to thinke of it, many of our frends at London conceauinge him even ready to come away full of dis-

<sup>1</sup> The affair is rather unintelligible, unless we suppose that Ushant had declared for the Condéan party. The tobacco alluded to, may possibly have formed the cargoes of prizes carried in there by the Royal cruisers.

<sup>2</sup> Sir George Carteret, who had been Deputy Governor of Jersey.

satisfaction, & on the contrary the Courte heare belieue, or seeme to belieue, that they haue almost finished a treaty with them to ther content: if the newes which came to the towne 2 dayes since, be true, that Burdeaux hath declared it selfe a common wealth, and is promised protection fro' Englande, ther will be a quicke end of that negotiacon: I wish wee were ready to be gone from hence, though you were not so amply prouyded for, as I wish, yett I doubte not somewhat would be done towards it: in the meane tyme, I am confident S<sup>r</sup> Ric: flosser hath payd at least halfe a yeeres rent, but I thinke more: I know no new councellours made but the Keeper;<sup>1</sup> and wee haue now another new greate officer, Pr: Ruperte, Master of the Horse:<sup>2</sup> God praeserue you, and send us a good meetinge. I am uery heartily,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 3 of May 1653.

Sir R. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I receaued yours of the 28. of the last, and of the 2<sup>d</sup>. of this, together 3 dayes since: I thought all the duties of the Marq<sup>s</sup> pryzes had bene already in Mr. Bullins hande, and I told him that

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edward Herbert, Lord Keeper since 1652, of whom Clarendon says, that he "thought himself the wisest man that followed the King's fortune; and was always angry that he had not more to do." His intrigues are humorously depicted by Lord Clarendon, in his own Life, page 123.

<sup>2</sup> A letter from Paris, in the journals of the day, says: "Prince Rupert is in some measure recovered of his bloody flux, but goes little abroad out of the Palace Royal, because he wants a princely retinue, which I see no probability for him to have in France yet a while. Charles Stuart is at a non plus what to do; things do not answer his expectations; his designs faile him."

Another observes: "Prince Rupert flourishes with his blackmoors and new liveries, and so doth his cousin Charles, they having shared the monies made of the prize goods at Nantz; and in recompence Rupert is made Master of the Horse.



he should, and he told me he would retayne in his owne hands the 15<sup>th</sup> for you : I will not so much as enquire into what concernes or may relate to the 10<sup>th</sup>, nor a worde more concerninge the commissyons, for which I am sure Edgman neuer expected a penny, but Maffonett did, and had reason to doe, which I suppose Mr. Bennett <sup>1</sup> had not : but no more of that : nor I pray take any more notice of it.

I receaued a letter from the good Gouvernour within these 2 days from Brouages, which was the first I had from him since his beinge at Nantes, though he sayes he hath writt others. It is no easy matter in that hurry he is in of businesse and remooues to write frequent letters, nor is he good at itt at any tyme, and therefore you and I shall be very vnkinde and vniust to him, if wee suspecte his frendshipp to us, for those omisseyons, which all men, but those of the penn, are alwayes guilty of : he is sure a very worthy person, and loues wher he professes soe to doe : you heare what a noble confusion Cromwell hath made, by dissoluinge ther Parliam<sup>t</sup> <sup>2</sup> with all the contempt and scorne imaginable, and now those adored members, and of the Councell of State, are looked upon by all, as they deserue to be : what be ther next acte, is our great expectacon, and what influence that which is done, must haue upon forraigne nations, who were treatinge with them : sure some notable crisis is at hande,

<sup>1</sup> This is the person of whom Clarendon says, in his Characters, that he was a man bred from his cradle in the Court, and had no other business in the world than to be a good courtier, in the arts whereof he succeeded so well, that he might well be reckoned in the number of the finest gentlemen of the time ; and, though his parts of nature were very mean, and never improved by industry, yet, passing his time always in good company, and well acquainted with what was done in all businesses, he would speak well and reasonably to any purpose.

<sup>2</sup> Alluding to the events of the 21st April, when he entered the house at the head of a party of soldiers, took away the mace, and ordered the doors to be locked up. A few days afterwards a bill was stuck upon the door—"This House to be let, now unfurnished." The London papers of that day said, as by letter from Paris, "Charles Stuart pretends to be as glad at the dissolution of the Parliament of England, as at the coming of his brother Henry to him, but I think they are both but frolics. He hath received intelligence from Rome, that the Pope will have nothing to do with him, and in no case have dealing with him, as being not only inconstant and unsettled what to do, but unable to do any thing."



worse I hope wee cannot be. All things are heare as they were, S<sup>r</sup> Ric. ffooster hath payed 500<sup>l</sup>. for your rent, and hath acquittance only for so much, but no information, what the contracte is, or how much is still in arreare. God send us a good meetinge in England, which is not despayred of by,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your very affectionate serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris May 19. 1653.

Sir R. Browne.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

20 May 1653.

Yesterday I gaue yo<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> notice of my being called to Nantes; this morninge as I am ready to putt foote in stirrop, Captain Sadlington's<sup>1</sup> fregat arriues from the coast of Irland with the bearer hearoff O'Sullivan Beirne,<sup>2</sup> a person whom I find noe lesse by his owne discourse then by the testimonye of all his countrymen here, very well affected to his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service: He comes deputed from such of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> faithfull subjects as yett remaine in the west side of Munster: and hastens now towards Paris to giue his Ma<sup>ty</sup> an account of those parts: which though of it selfe it bee recom-

<sup>1</sup> Captain Sadlington was retained in the service after the Restoration, and fell gallantly fighting for his country in the year 1673, on the 4th of June, in the action with Van Tromp. He then commanded the Crown, under the orders of Prince Rupert.

<sup>2</sup> O'Sullivan Beirne was a gentleman of some landed property in Ireland, living near Beerhaven, and was of such consequence in that part of the country, where the clans of O'Sullivan were very numerous, that he was chosen general of the forces raised in aid of the Royal cause. The reason of this visit to France seems to be accounted for by the following extract from the "Severall Proceedings" of the 30th June, 1653: "From Ireland it is certified, that a party of Irish, of General Bear's men, had a design to have surprized some garrisons; but, having notice, a party fell upon them in their march, routed them, and killed many; and Bear himself, with some other officers, got into a boat, and fled over into France."

mendation enough, yett at his request, I take the boldnesse by these to addresse him to y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>rs</sup> acquaintance, and by y<sup>r</sup> fauour to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> : The state of whose affaires, I hope hee may by Gods goodnesse find in a condition able to afford such releife as may excite and animate these embers of loyalty into a fire, nay flame, sufficient to destroy and consume the circumambient and the now too predominant contrary of haynous treason and unparaleld rebellion. In which good omen I kisse yo<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>rs</sup> hands, and rest

Y<sup>rs</sup> &c. &c.

R. BROWNE.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I receaued yours of the 7. 3 dayes since and yesterday your other of the 10. and returne this by the same hande which brought me yours, which seemes to be very sollicitous and confident to returne it safely and speedily to you: I haue sent you such a letter from his Ma<sup>ty</sup> to the Marshall, as in my vnderstandinge is necessary, and I hope if any thinge would, will praeuayle with him. To have inserted the memoire it selfe would not haue bene so proper, since it cannot be supposed to be within his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s proper cognisance. Your letters concerninge O'Sullivan Beare are not come to my hands.

Upon the receipt of your former I did send the inclosed to Mr. Bennett, who hath notwithstandinge not vouchsafed to conferr with me a worde about the businesse, and when I sent to him to know whether he would send any thinge to you, and lett him know what his Ma<sup>ty</sup> had directed, he returned me answer that I might haue spared his Ma<sup>ty</sup> that labour, for the Duke had done the same, but I hope actes of supererogation in this kinde will do no harme: it may be he will send his letters under this cover.

Ther is no questyon that I know concerninge your accounte, it is fitt you should alwayes haue it ready, and produce it when it is



called for, and I doubt not you will receaue all iust allowance, and truly I am heartily glad that it hath brought so seasonable a reliefe to you :<sup>1</sup> our Master thinkes of remoouinge, but when or whither is not yett determined. Wee exspecte euery day newes of an engagement at sea betweene the two ffleetes, the successe of which may probably alter<sup>2</sup> the temper in both Councells, at London and at the Hague, the last still pressinge most vnreasonably ther desyres of treaty. I am very heartily,

S<sup>r</sup>,

your most affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 14 of June 1653.

Sir Ri: Browne.

<sup>1</sup> It appears from the public journals that a seasonable supply had arrived for the Royal family at this moment. The "Faithful Post," of the same date as this letter, says, in a letter from Amsterdam, "Here is arrived the adventurer called the Spanish Bark; coming from Rochelle; he hath taken three prizes about the West, which he hath sold in France, amounting to a great value, which is distributed by the Commander in Chief, Capt. Grimes, as followeth—to the poor distressed widow, our late Queen, £1000; King of Scots, £3000; Duke of York, £2000; Duke of Gloucester, £1000."

<sup>2</sup> The action did take place, and the Dutch were defeated. The consequences, if we are to believe a letter from Paris in the public journals, were very inimical to Charles's interests at the Court of France; for it was there stated that "the news of the defeat given by the English to the Dutch much startled the Court, and indeed all France; those of Charles Stuart's followers gave out reports at first that the Dutch had beaten the English, and that he was to go to Holland, and that they would do great things for him, and the English went vapouring of it up and down the streets, and some of them were soundly *foxed*; but the next day came news to several merchants of this city, besides letters to the Courts (which were kept more private), that the Dutch were beaten, and had sustained a very great losse: upon this there was a great meeting of the Council with the King, and their countenances very sad all about the French Court, and divers of the English going through the streets of Paris were so mocked and jeered that they have been ashamed almost to show their heads abroad."



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue receaued yours of the 30 of June by Mr. Holmes, & a duplicate of by your mayde, to nether of which ther needes any answer, my last which you since haue had satisfyinge the contents of those. Since, your other of the 5. of July are come to my handes.

To what concerne the Marshall I can add nothinge, till I know in the way I advised what his prætences are; nor haue I any reason to imagyne that he hath taken any excepcons to your person, only when I asked, why it was desyred that the busynesse might be referred to Pr. Rupert, since being not upon the place his Highnesse could not so easily giue direction upon it, answer was made to me, that it might be, that the Marshall desyred not to treat with Sr Ri. Browne: and truly in those cases, when men aske vnreasonable thinges, it is no wonder that they haue no minde to be pressed by publique Ministers.<sup>1</sup>

I doubt I shall not be able to finde a copy of your peticon and order from the Kinge, if I can I will, nor will I do any thinge upon that businesse, till upon your view of the whole accounte you can see in what state you are, and then I will procure such orders as are necessary; till then it is to no purpose to discourse of it: nor is it proper for me to send to Mr Windham<sup>2</sup> (with whome I haue no correspondence) to know what you haue receaued from him, you will state all that upon your accounte. The course I propose to my selfe to obserue is, that the Kinge signe a warrant to you, to deducte out of your receipts satisfaction for all such warrants

<sup>1</sup> This alludes to the rapacious conduct of the Marshal with regard to the prizes, and the stores of the ships that were sold.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Windham, as early as 1652, had been appointed the receiver of the King's fifth in all prizes; and this by the King's special appointment, in opposition to the Duke of York's recommendation of the Bishop of Derry. The situation was one which Sir Edward Hyde had been very anxious to obtain for his godson, son to Sir Edward Nicholas. Vide Clarendon's State Papers, vol. iii. pp. 112, 118.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue receaued yours of the 26. of the last moneth, and by this tyme I suppose Pr: Ruperte<sup>1</sup> is with you at Nantes, so that you can iudge what is like to become of your businesse better then I, but his Highnesse seemes to me to be confident that the Marshall will make no question of deliueringe the 10<sup>th</sup> and the 15<sup>th</sup>. but it seemes he claymes accounts for the rights of his Admiralty of Britany,<sup>2</sup> upon which he thinkes ther is a greate arreare dew to him from all those who haue carryed pryzes into Brest: And to this pointe you shall do well to instructe your selfe as well as may be, and whether his Officers at Brest ever demanded any thinge before he made this seizure at Nantes, for in truth I know not how to answer this; if he hath the rights of Admirall due to him in all the portes of Britany, and none of our shippes haue euer payd him any, by virtue of ther deere-bought protection at Brest, I do not wonder he takes the best way he can to recouer his dewes, when wee fall into his dominions: Ther is not the least thought of Ostende in the pointe: My opinion is, that you should do the best you can to gett the 10<sup>th</sup> and 15<sup>th</sup>. and you are to vse his Ma<sup>ty</sup>

<sup>1</sup> His Highness had nearly lost his life a few days before this date, as recorded in a journal of that period: "Paris.—We have not much of newes here; but the river Seine had like to have made an end of your black Prince Rupert; for some nights since hee woulde needes coole himselfe in the river, where he was in danger of drowning, but by the help of one of his blackmores escaped. His Highness (it seems) has learnt some magic amongst the remote islands; since his coming hither he hath cured the Lord Jermin of a feaver, with a charme; but I am confident England is without the jurisdiction of his conjuring faculty."

<sup>2</sup> There were also other difficulties respecting those prizes; for the French Court were at this period, or at least Mazarine was, so anxious to conciliate the favour of Cromwell, that they actually suffered an arrest to be made upon the prizes, the affairs connected with which were very badly managed, as Sir Edward Hyde observes in another place, by Sir Edward Herbert, whom he describes as despising all men, and looked upon by Prince Rupert as an oracle. Vide State Papers, vol. iii. p. 177.

The paltry conduct of Mazarine, surpassed even by that of Marshal Melleray at Nantes, on this occasion, may be further seen on reference to Clarendon's History, vol. iii. pp. 405, 6, where Melleray's is also justly depicted in its proper colours.



name to no other purpose, and then lett the rest petition the Prince (since his Ma<sup>ty</sup> hath referred the matter to him) to mediate for fauor to the Marshall, for it is playne he will haue somewhat out of it, if not the whole: God blesse me from your ffrench Governours: Concerninge your house I can add nothinge to my last: nor will any care be omitted to keepe up the seruice. God præsereue you. I am,

S<sup>r</sup>,

your affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 2<sup>d</sup>. of Aug. (1653).

Sir Ri: Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

Yours of the 31. of the last (which is the last I haue receaued from you) gaue me so much ioy, that as soon as I receaued it, I thought it my duty to imparte the good newes to the Kinge, who upon reading that clause, made not the least scruple that Mr. Morrice<sup>1</sup> was in safety, of which since wee see no euidence, I pray send me worde, how it was possible for you to be deceaued, and how the reporte came to you: I told you in my last, that it is too manifest, that Innisboffin is deliuered up, so that there is nothinge to be done with those dispatches, but to keepe them. I can add little of newes, only that the Court hath new argument of tryumph, upon a late victory of some considerable party of the Pr: of Condé,<sup>2</sup> wher they tooke many prisoners and some officers of

<sup>1</sup> For an account of Mr. Morrice, see at the end of these Letters.

<sup>2</sup> The conduct of the Condéan army at this period was of a most discreditable nature, if we are to believe the following statement in a letter from Paris of the 8th of August, 1653, in the "Faithful Scout." "The Prince of Condé is become very considerable, and exceeds the K. in number of forces, being 7000 foot and 1000 horse, besides the Spanish auxiliary army under the command of Gen. Fuensaldague, which makes 13,000 horse and foot. His Highness hath sent several challenges to Marshal Turenne to fight; but he declines; so that he hath given Condé an opportunity to get within eight leagues of Paris, plundering all, his Germans ravishing the nuns, and ransacking all religious houses, firing suburbs of towns, and enforcing contributions from others. He made way so far as to come and dine at his own house, where he and his commanders were as merry as so many Princes."



eminent quality : The Dutch yett proceede very slowly, as well in order to ther allyance with this Crowne, as in any declaracon for our Master, notwithstanding which my hopes are not abated, nor do I thinke a peace almost possible to be made betweene the two Commonwealths, and all this addresse which is so much spoken of, is only a letter from a priuate man, without any knowledge of the Pro : of Hollande, much lesse of the States Generall, who resent the præsumption. Lett me know, whether Mr. Bennett did euer requyre the ffees from you upon any of the Commissyons which I deliuered to you, or how he comes to prætende to them : howeuer you shall by no meanes take the least notice of this question, nor declayne the course you intended, for I am sure I neuer intended to receaue penny fro' them, but would gladly know how he claymes such ffees. I wish you all happynesse, and am,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your very affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 19. of Aug. 1653.

Sir Ri: Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue receaued yours of the 15. of Octo : but nether know nor can imagyne<sup>1</sup> the reason of your longe silence, but conceaue it proceedes from some such cause as made you wish that it might not be interrupted by any provocation from me : and yett it was not possible for me to do you any seruice without beinge instructed by you in the way, the businesse standinge as it did. I hear nothinge of Choquez, and what his undertakinge is I know not. I asked the Kinge whether he knew any thing of the businesse, and I haue reason to believe that he nether hath nor will giue any order in that affaire without askinge me how the case standes ;

<sup>1</sup> Though Sir Edward Hyde was too sanguine in the hopes expressed in this letter, yet the plain good sense manifested throughout, alike above that listless apathy which deadens enterprize, and that hasty enthusiasm which mars it, affords sufficient reason for the King's partiality and confidence in his counsels.

but if you give me no cause to move publicly in it, it is no wonder if I say nothing of it and if you do write upon the argument, you will write so that the letter may be read at Council, any other advertisements you will put in a paper aparte. I heare nothinge of the wyne, nor know not any thinge of Nantes, when they come away, who are ther, or what they do ther.

The Kinge hath spent the last fortnight in the country at Chantilly, and returned hither on Wensday last; and proposes to goe backe thither agayne tomorrow, and I suppose will spende his tyme ther, till the fayre weather be done: I can tell you little of newes, the distractions I thinke are so high in Englande, that ther must be some suddayne alteration: and I depende more on that, then any thinge that can happen abroade, wher there is little care of honour, or any thinge but ther owne present conveniences. It may be, all the pause in your businesse is in contemplation of the greate pryze, and I would not interrupt that, by any meddlinge in a matter so particular and inferior as the other; but if that were at an end, or I knew what were like to come of it, I would be very importunate to knowe what the grounde of the proceedinge is. If ther be no reason to the contrary, I shall be gladd to heare from you, and as particularly as you please; but if you thinke it in any consideration inconvenient, I referr it wholly to you, and am very heartily,

Sr,

Your very affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 26: of Oct: (1653.)

Sir Ri. Browne.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

With humble acknowledgments of your last favour of 26. Octob<sup>r</sup> I can now give your Hon<sup>r</sup> this brief account of my businesse here on which I haue soe longe and with much charge and trouble attended. Captain Anthonio hath without any consent of mine, nor doe I know with what power from the rest of the witnesses,



payed the Mar<sup>l</sup> fifteen thousand livres, and by this means obtained *mainlevée* [removal of the arrest] of all the goods arrested, and consequently gotten them all into his hands.<sup>1</sup> By H. H. Prince Rupert's order I haue now commenced a sute in law for recoverie of the fifteenths, and the Duke of Yorkes interest (both which the Mar<sup>l</sup> allways intended to restore without diminution) and his highnesse doth soe nobly support and countenance me therin, that I hope eyther by decree of justice, or by the Captains voluntary rendition, to have a speedy end, & therby be soon able to remit to Paris that money his Ma<sup>ty</sup> hath ordered towards satisfaction of my Landlord.

I haue (together with money for the charges of the carriage) committed to Mr. Killigrews care, a butt of Canary wine divided into three barrells. The one wheroff I humbly present to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, the other to his R. H. and the third to the Lords at Court.<sup>2</sup>

Soe praysinge God for his Ma<sup>ties</sup> happy recovery of health, and dayly prayinge for the same.

Nantes first No<sup>r</sup> 1653.

Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue yesterday receaued yours of the 1. and the 4. of this month together, & this day gave the Bill of Exchange to Mr. Deane, who will be very glad that he is provyded to comply with some parte of your landlordes importunity, and we shall all have the more ease by it. I heare the Canary wyne is come to Paris but no men'con of the delivery of it, being conceaved to be M<sup>r</sup> Killigrews owne wyne,<sup>3</sup> so that I expecte a very small share of it, but have acquainted his Ma<sup>ty</sup> and my LL<sup>ds</sup> with that parte of your letter, and my L<sup>d</sup> Chamberlyne will enquire after it: You cannot

<sup>1</sup> The whole of this affair is deserving of notice, and strongly marks the jockeyship of the avaricious Governor.

<sup>2</sup> The politic attention of Sir Richard in this instance shews how fit he was for a courtier—even upon a small scale. How far he was prudent in trusting Killigrew with the wine may be doubted!

<sup>3</sup> The Chancellor's suspicions of Tom Killigrew are not surprising!



imagyne I can misinterprett any acte of yours, which I know can not want kindness to me ; your silence was very fitt, and I guessed so much at the reason of it, that I complied with it, and yet (as you say) all is little enough, and iealous natures will alwayes finde somewhat to worke upon, to disquyett themselves and others, and I know no cure to apply to those, who are not pleased with fayre and open dealing.<sup>1</sup>

I hope you haue not suffered your selfe to be too much a loser by Capt: Anthonio, with whom you know how to deale well enough: at least if he intends to haue any more to do with us : I hope ther is care taken to giue Geo: Carterett satisfaction, who over apprehends discourtesy from hence, and that he was putt out of the Kinges protection, when God knowes the Kinge resolved to do all he could for him and the other adventurers, as soon as the case should be so stated that he knew what to presse, but it seemes all is now composed, and it is a notable ffyne you have payd to the Marshall, if the commodities were not of a huge value : God preserve me from such governours.—Wee are yett in the country, which the kinge is better pleased with then with Paris, and truly he hath recovered his health most miraculously : But if the weather changes, as it is like to doe, I suppose we shall looke backe to Paris : and then any good newes will carry us away. I wish you all happynesse, and am very heartily,

Sr,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Chantilly this 10: of Novemb: (1653.)

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

I have here received your Hon<sup>rs</sup> of the 10<sup>th</sup> Nov<sup>r</sup> for which I sende humble thankes, as bringinge with it the assurance of my

<sup>1</sup> It has already been hinted, in an antecedent note, that Sir Richard Browne had many enemies at the exiled Court. Hyde had many also ; and no doubt all this caution in the correspondence of the two friends was for the purpose of guarding against the malevolence and insinuations of Court sycophants. Vide Hyde's preceding letter of the 26th October.

standinge upright in your opinion : your friendship being one of the greatest consolations I have in the midst of all my sufferinges. I humbly submitt the adjoynd for your management : yf you approve not theroff, and had rather convert the summ mentioned to your own use, order it how you please and to whom you would have the bill made : perhaps you may think Mr. Edgman a fitt person to be trusted with the secret, that soe little notice may be taken. The three barrells of Sacke are yett here ; in company with them goes a fourth vnder Sir Gervais Lucas<sup>1</sup> his name, which is a present I make to y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> wherewith to rejoyce yourselfe and friends : Only I intreat you that the good Lady Lucas may have her physicall proportion out of it. . . . . warmed keepes her alive as shee herselfe sayth. That you will not give Dr. Earles half a dozen of bottles I cannot doubt. The person I last mentioned in cipher will tell you notable stories when he comes to you. To him I refer all. You may beleeve him, for hee is much a man of honour. Being ready to goe from hence I expect to find your answer hereto in Mr. Richards his hands at St Malo's. This is all at present from,

y<sup>r</sup> hon<sup>rs</sup> most faithfull and most obliged

humble servant,

R. BR.

The following is the Paper adjoined :

I have formerly acquainted you that I cannot make up my accounts untill I returne to Brest, which I am now hastening : In the interim, finding that some monyes of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> will remaine with me, I humbly submitt it to your Hon<sup>rs</sup> consideration whether a hundred Lewises in gold will not be acceptable to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> to be by your Hon<sup>r</sup> privately delivered into his owne Royall hands, towards his merry playing,<sup>2</sup> wherewith to passe his time at cards

<sup>1</sup> The whole of this is confirmation of the preceding note. Sir Gervais Lucas had been a cavalry officer in the Royal cause during the Civil Wars.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 298. Lord Jermyn's conduct as cashier for the Royal expenses seems not to have been very respectful or honourable towards his Sovereign, if we are to credit Lord Clarendon, who roundly asserts, in his History, that whilst Jermyn kept a coach of his own, and an excellent table for those who courted him, yet the King, even when having the most urgent want of 20 pistoles, could not find credit to borrow them !



this approaching Christmasse. This I shall be able to performe from St. Maloes, if I may there meet with encouragement. This is all at present from,

y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>rs</sup>

most faithfull and most

obliged humble servant,

R. BR.

Nantes 18. Nov<sup>r</sup> 1653.

Mr. Chan: of the Excheq<sup>r</sup>.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue receaued yours of the 18. and since you are so well pro-  
vyded, I cannot but commende your designe, and as I believe the  
Kinge does not expecte such a present, so I am sure it will be  
most wellcome to him, and I will promise you to present it to him,  
in so secrett a manner, as nobody shall know it but himselfe; and  
be confident I will never conuerte one penny that belongs to him,  
to my owne use, in what straits soever I should be.

I like very well your distribution of the sacke, and I will not  
bragge of my share, nor fayle of delivering the proportion you  
assigne, and if the good lady comes hither, (as by yours I guesse  
she intendes to do, though Paris at present is a place of prodigious  
expense, every thinge double the pryse of what it was when you  
left it) the vessell shall stay with her; and I there shall be sure of  
iustice, and I will fetch my allowance in bottles; Lett me only  
giue you this warninge, that the carriage be payd for, as I thinke  
you told me in your former that it was, and I am sure I cannot do  
it, and then, the sooner it comes the better.<sup>1</sup> Wee are full of  
exspectac'on of good newes from all quarters, and I hope some of  
it will be of such a nature that will call us from hence, which I

<sup>1</sup> The whole of this letter is an interesting illustration of the distresses of a man who was afterwards Lord Chancellor of England, and father-in-law of a King. It has been the fashion to run down the restored Court of Charles; but surely his exiled Court could boast some instances of honour and honesty that would have been immortalized if in classic times.



will be sure to giue you an accounte of as soone as I can : I wish you all happynesse, and am very heartily,

Sr,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE

Paris this 24 of Novemb: (1653.)

Sr R: Browne.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right hon.

Mons<sup>r</sup> de Varennes, Intendant of Marqu. de Castlenau's affairs at Brest, having beene from that towne deputed to the States of Bretany, Mars<sup>r</sup> de Milleray did there declare unto him that he pretended nott to abate any part of what belonged unto him in the loading of the fleete which hee had seased, and for *mainlevée* wheroff hee had receaved 15000 livres. Wheruppon this gentleman came hither to demand his right, and after a weekes digladiation at law with Captain Antonio, the Captain yeelded up the cudgells and gave him satisfaction. My desire to see the issue of this suite in law causeing my stay here longer then I intended, hath brought me hither your Honours favour of 15 Nov. which containinge an intimation of something of complaint against (as they call it) the King of Englands Admiralty at Brest, I considered myselfe whether it will be fitt for me to goe now into Low Bretany before I haue once again shewed myself to the Mar<sup>l</sup> and received his commands (who they say will bee here shortly) least he againe come uppon us with a second costly after-reckoning, grounded uppon pretence of not beinge sufficiently applied unto, or of being neglected in his government ; at least not untill I have your Hon<sup>rs</sup> sence heruppon, which I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe mee, sending y<sup>r</sup> letters as you please, eyther directly hither, or by the way of M<sup>r</sup> Richards, thorough whose hands I expect answers of my last of 18<sup>th</sup> currant.

I render humble thanks to your Hon<sup>r</sup> for the sanguine part of your letter, resultinge out of the good newes from Germany and England. God of his mercy improve these comforts to us ; and preserue his Ma<sup>ties</sup> sacred person, and vouchsaef him a speedy

establishment uppon the throne of his Royal progenitors. Soe prayes dayly and heartily,

y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>rs</sup>, &c.

Nantes 29 No<sup>r</sup> 1653.

*The same to the same, accompanying the preceding letter.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>

I am told that the Prince [Rupert] hath now totally settled his businesse with the merchant, and stayes only to see performance. Meane time S<sup>r</sup> Gervais Lucas hopes to be goinge with his lady some time the next weeke for Paris, and takes along with him that commodity for your Hon<sup>r</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> I thought would have accompanied the other 3 which are now upon their way. Mr. de Varennes carries a letter recommendatory from mee to y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup>. Yf hee uppon his maisters the Marqu. de Castlenau's recommendation hath thus enjoyed the benefit of favour and protection in his part, how much more might wee (had not an unhandsome eclipse happened) his Ma<sup>ties</sup> subjects and servants uppon our Royal Maisters gracious owning of us? beleeve me the Captain doth now sufficiently repent his unprofitable, unadvised, nay precipitate performance of Mons<sup>r</sup> Choquere his bargain.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>

I haue receaued both yours of the 29. of the last, & cannot imagyne, how any thinge I sayd to you in my former letter could make you deferr your iourney, nor can I add any thinge to what I then sayd, havinge not heard since of the complayntes, and you must indeed know the temper of those places much better than I can doe: I perceave by what you say of Mons<sup>r</sup> Varrennes that wee are nothing beholdinge to the Marshall, who it may be without our frends helpe would not have beene able to have done us so much prejudice. Lett me know when you goe from thence,



and wher my letters may finde you. The Capt. doth well to quit his old frends, and betake himselfe to new who know better how to use him. Wee heare not yett of Pr: Rupertes comminge hither, but meethinkes he hath bene longe absent. Hath S<sup>r</sup> Ge: Lucas absolutely quitt his ffarme in Britany, or doth he only repayre hither for health.<sup>1</sup> Meethinkes the comodity you mencon should not be worth the charge of so longe a voyage by lande. The Duke of Yorke is returned hither, full of reputac'on & honour,<sup>1</sup> and the french Courte is expected on Sunday or Munday. I can tell you little newes: our frends in Hollande do not believe the treaty will produce a peace, and for an instance that the States do not so much depende upon it, they have given a licence this last weeke to . . . Ge: Middleton,<sup>2</sup> to transporte armes and ammunicon for Scotlande, which is a goode signe: I suppose you heare frequently from Englande, where sure the confusion is very high, and it is expected that they will declare Crumwell Protector of the 3 kingdomes, that his single influence may compose those distractions, which the multitude cannot doe, for Mr. Peters himselfe now professes that Monarchy is the best government. God send us well under it. I am,

S<sup>r</sup>Your most affectionate serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Paris this 6. of Decemb: (1653.)

*Sir Richard Browne to Sir Edward Hyde.*Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

This being onely to give course to a bill of exchange for one hundred Lewis's of gold in specie payable at sight unto Mr. William

<sup>1</sup> The Duke had been serving under Turenne, and had just before this period distinguished himself much at the siege of Mousson. Being disappointed in his wishes to be present at the siege of St. Menchoud, he had repaired to his brother's Court, in order to accompany him during part of his route from France to Germany.

<sup>2</sup> Middleton bore the rank of lieutenant-general, and was very active in Scottish affairs, as Charles's agent with the Highlanders and other Loyalists in that country.



Edgman, which I haue desired Mr. Richards to inclose herein at St. Malos.

Nantes 10 Dec. 1653.

*The Same to the Same.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

Nantes 20 Dec. 1653.

My last unto your Hon<sup>r</sup> were of 10 Dec. with an inclosed bill, which Mr. Richards assures me will be punctually payed this very day (20 Dec<sup>r</sup>) at Paris. My desire now is (in case you approve theroff and will at my humble request vouchsafe to accept this poore tender of my seruice) to transmitt to your Hon<sup>r</sup> a supply of money for your owne occasions in that now extraordinary deare place, which I am the more apt to beleive in regard that the price of all things here raysed a third since my cumminge into this province. I doe nott designe lesse than a thousand livres, and am very sorry I cannot performe it untill I draw a somme from Brest, in which I find great difficulty at present, noe man being willinge to meddle with money, in regard of the approachinge fall at the end of this month. By this abatment in the species I am like to sustaine not an inconsiderable losse, for I heare they have this good while payed the Kings dues at Brest according to the rate the money went many monthes since, when the commoditis were sold (*vis*). Lewises of gold at 12 livres and of silver at £3 9s. And I am told the Duke of Yorkes receivers can gett noe better quarter. I know not why I should nott make the just reparation of this losse as an article in my account, as well as the Treasurer of the States of Bretany, who hath on this consideration lately had seven thousand crownes indemnification adjudged him by Act of the States. By way of St. Malos your Hon<sup>rs</sup> next commands will find mee, and you may well imagine your presence, tho not possible, will be most heartily wished, and your health noe lesse cordially celebrated.

I am now to acknowledge your Hon<sup>rs</sup> favour of the 24. Nov. & 6 Dec<sup>r</sup>. The three first vessells of sacke are doubtlesse longe since arrived by water at Orleans, there expectinge Mr. Killigrew's order,

who is desirous to present them himselfe. I have already furnished him with some money towards the charges, and have taken care to defray at Paris the whole port of them and of the 4<sup>th</sup> which went hence in boate the beginnigne of this weeke with noble Sir G. L. [Gerv. Lucas] and his lady, who have quite abandoned this province, the Ladies intention being to goe 'ere longe into the greater Bretany. I desire your Hon<sup>r</sup> to give credit to him in many things with which hee will acquaint you, for hee is much a man of honour and integrity. Hee will tell you to what degree wee have (as you well call it) had our freinds heelp and furtherance in the payment of the 15 thousand livres fine, &c. I did not till uery lately know that my Lord Percy now Lord Chamberlin was come to the Kinge, and I am likewise told that he is much in your intimacy, of which, if true, I am uery glad, for hee hath beene my noble freind of a date little lesse than 30 yeares old. I pray if your Hon<sup>r</sup> thinke it fitt be pleased to present my humble seruice and congratulations to his L<sup>pp</sup>.

Prince Rupert hath now quite finished his businesse with the marchant that lost the sugar prize, and speakes of goinge hence for Paris within few dayes.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I have yours of the 20. as I had before your former with the bill, which was punctually payd,<sup>1</sup> and delivered to the Kinge, for which you shall have his acquittance, and I must tell you, it came very seasonably to him, and most acceptably, of which you shall heare more hereafter. ffor your new noble offer, I am not in a condic'on so plentifull to refuse, for I must tell you that I have not had a Lewes of my owne these 3 moneths; therefore when you send the bill, lett me know whether you lend me so much out of your owne little stocke, or whether it be the Kings money, for in that case, his Ma<sup>ty</sup> shall be the disposer,—since my office hath never yett nor shall intitle me to take his mony without his derection.<sup>2</sup> Ther is

<sup>1</sup> See page 294.

<sup>2</sup> The delicacy manifested by Sir Edward Hyde in this transaction must surely



no question any fall of moneyes in a just grounde for demaunde of allowaunce upon accounte. If you are at Ducey, wish me with you, as I do heartily. I write to the Governour the way he derected and must be informed when he returnes to his dominion.

I hope you thinke it strange to heare that I have bene in Englande, and have had private conference with Cromwell, and [that you] are not sorry that my enimyes can frame no wiser calumny against me: Pr: Rupert is not yett arrayed, nor is ther any newes of the sacke: I shall be gladd to see S<sup>r</sup> Ge: and his lady heare. Though my L<sup>d</sup> Chamberlyne<sup>1</sup> and I lyue ciuilly together, and I can menc'on you to him, yett it is fitt you write a congratulatory letter to him, which if you thinke fitt, I will deliver. God send you a merry Christmasse. I am,

S<sup>r</sup>,

your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Paris this 27 of Decemb. (1653.)

become matter of record in future history, when the party prejudices of the Civil Wars, for such still exist, shall moulder in the tomb of oblivion, like the ashes of those whose conduct and opinions gave to them a local habitation and a name.

The charges to which he next alludes were those brought against him by the Queen's party, who were unwilling that he should execute the duty which Lord Jermyn had formerly done, the disposal of the King's private funds. Mr. Long, the Ex-Secretary, was therefore brought forward to hash up this charge, on the evidence of one Massonet, or rather his hearsay evidence from a maid-servant in London, who assured him that she had seen Sir Edward go into Cromwell's chamber at Whitehall: but the King laughed at it, and was, in fact, himself a competent witness to prove an alibi. Vide Lord Clarendon's History, vol. iii. p. 402. When King Charles I. appointed a Council for the Prince of Wales in 1644, Mr. Long was their Secretary. After this he was suspected of holding a correspondence with the Earl of Essex, on which he went into France, and made great complaint to the Queen [Henrietta]. He was Secretary to Charles II. in his exile, was created a Baronet shortly after the Restoration, was Auditor of the Exchequer, and a Privy Councillor. He was suspected of being a Papist, and a legacy in his will strongly confirms the suspicion. Manning and Bray's Surrey, vol. ii. p. 606.

<sup>1</sup> This was Lord Percy, to whom the office had been granted in lieu of that of Master of the Horse, to which he had some claim, but which had been reserved by the King for Prince Rupert, who afterwards threw it up in a manner the most ungracious. The whole affair, as recorded in Lord Clarendon's History, vol. iii. p. 411, is illustrative of several of these epistles.



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

Yours of the 30. of January came not to my hands till within these 2 dayes ; and you haue before this tyme I conceaue receaued some of myne since that date, which haue informed you how much wee have bene all deceaued in the imaginac'on of the breach of the treaty betweene the Dutch and the Rebells. It is now looked upon as concluded in a peace, and though the other Prouinces are not yett reconciled to the condic'ons, wee have very fainte hopes, that ther opposic'ons will be able longe to deferr what the Province of Hollande so importunately and vehemently pursues : and I do belieue that this Crowne will labour all they can (and I thinke with successe) to gett it selfe into the allyance,<sup>1</sup> for the facilitatinge wherof I suppose they wish our Master gone from hence, and wee shall gratify them in it, the Kinge resoluinge to goe as soone as he can gett away : you shall do well to hasten all accounts with your Capt\* as soone as may be, least they grow lesse respectfull of the Kings authority, and what they owe to him, when they finde that they are like to finde little protection heare. I am in greate payne, therfore you must excuse me, that I say no more, but that I am,

S<sup>r</sup>,

your very affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Par: this 17 of Feb. 1654.

So certain were the politicians of that time of a treaty between the French King and the Protector, that in a letter from Paris, 20 January, N. S. in the public papers, it was expressly stated, "Here is much talk, as if the Peace were concluded between France and England." It did not take place so rapidly, however ; for, notwithstanding Mazarine's politeness to Cromwell, the sturdy *independent* spirit of the latter refused to amalgamate as the former wished. In writing to Cromwell, about this period, Mazarine concluded with, "Votre tres humble serviteur," which obtained nothing more from Oliver than "Your affectionate friend to do you service ;" added to which, he expected from the French King the address of "mon Frère !" Vide State Papers, vol. iii. p. 227.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

Captain W<sup>m</sup> Arundell the bearer hearoff being dispatched<sup>1</sup> by Col<sup>l</sup> O'Sulleuan Beirne to giue his Ma<sup>ty</sup> a particular account of his proceedinges hitherto, and to receiue our royall and gracious Maister's farther directions and orders for the future, in case he may be soe happy as (in the present conjuncture) to be found any way vsefull & serviceable to his owne Soueraigne, in whose just quarrell he much rather chuseth accordinge to duty and alleageance to loose his life as he hath already donne his estate and fortune, than to drawe his sword in the service of any forraigne Potentate : I am desired to giue your Hon<sup>r</sup> this summary account of what hath beene here transacted since his arriuall in these partes some few weekes since, with diuers persons of quality, leading men of the severall chiefe provinces of Irland,<sup>2</sup> about 30 barrills of powder and some other armes ; for transportation of which whole equipage into the south-west part of Munster, O'Sulleuans country, there to make an impression, M<sup>r</sup> Holder and myselfe had here prevailed with M<sup>r</sup> Griffin, Captain Smyth,<sup>3</sup> and Captain Dillon, (whose readinesse to serue his Ma<sup>ty</sup> on this occasion hath beene very laudable, and ought soe to be represented unto his Ma<sup>ty</sup> as nott unworthy of his particular taking notice thereof) who in their three fregats had undertaken to passe them ouer & by Gods goodnesse to have giuen a happy beginning to this generous and loyall enterprize : offering further in case they could at ther landinge gett possession of any fortifiable place, fitt and considerable, to furnish them with

<sup>1</sup> There are no historical records of the specific events in Irish affairs to which this letter alludes ; the letter therefore itself becomes matter of history, and forms a link in the chronological chain of that period.

<sup>2</sup> The hopes of the Royal party, and the fears of the Cromwellians, at this moment, seem to have been equally great. A "Mercurius Politicus," dated 22nd February, says, "The Irish are much troubled to hear of the dissolution of the late Parliament, in whom they had great hopes, but, blessed be God ! their hopes are prevented."

<sup>3</sup> How very trifling this naval force was may be estimated from the fact that Captain Smith's vessel only mounted eight guns ; whilst another, commanded by Meldrum, carried two !



2 or 3 peeces of canon out of each vessel: and to afford them what other assistance might lye in their power. But just as they were ready to sett sayle, comes the certain advice that Mortagh O'Brian (to whom O'Sullivan chiefly intended to joyne himself, and whose party was it seemes the principall foundation of his hopes) had layd downe armes; by which unexpected newes, this soe probable dessigne auertinge for the present, O'Sullivan hath neuer the lesse thought fitt to aduenture a kinsman of his owne name, an experienced soldier, with some few others, and some powder, to goe in Captain Dillon's fregat, *tanquam explorator*, at whose returne hee hopes within 2. or 3. weekes to be able to giue a full account of the state of affaires in that kingdome, and what likelihood there may bee of attemptinge any thinge there for his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service and aduantage, which failinge, this noble person and his company are ready to transport themselves into Schottland, or what other part of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> dominions may be thought expedient.

Brest 30 Aprill 1654.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,<sup>1</sup>

The last weeke I receaued yours of the 23. of the last moneth, & by this post your other of the 1 of this moneth, to both which I shall neede reply no more, then to assure you that what I wrote to you was not out of the least unkinde purpose towards you, or doubte of your punctuallity in accounte, or opinion that you had receaued so much as people give out (yett, as you say the Duke of Yorke's officers can make a shrew computac'on, and are not very nice of publishing what they conceave may aduance his Ma<sup>tyes</sup> service): but I was willinge to be ready to answer any questions the Kinge himselfe might be induced to aske; and the truth is his

<sup>1</sup> Between this and the preceding letter there is an hiatus of twelve months; during which period the King and his friends, having left Paris in June, 1654, had been resident in Flanders and Germany. The inquisitive reader will find a very remarkable anecdote connected with that event in Clarendon's History, vol. iii. p. 413, and another at page 422.



necessities are so greate, and so like to encrease, that all wayes must be thought on to draw supply to him, and therfore make what you can ready, and I had rather you should prevent him by sendinge Bills before he expectes them, then that I should be required to call upon you : if you procure Bills upon any honest able marchant at Antwerpe, payable to Patricke Garlande,<sup>1</sup> or his order, and send them to me, I can easily draw it from thence to Cullen, or to any place wher the Kinge will neede it. I can make no other conclusyon by the discourses of peace or warr betweene Cromwell and that Crowne, but that the Cardinall<sup>2</sup> will do all that is in his power to prevent a warr, which very many believe he will not be able longe to doe, and the Spanyard is very much abused, if he be not sure of a firme coniunction with him. I doubte the tyme of our deliverance is not so neere at hande, as was expected. God will send it at last : you may be very confident that I will never cease to be.

Sr,

Your very affectionate Serv,

EDW. HYDE.

Br: 22: Apr: (1655).

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue receaued yours of the 10. of the last moneth, and shewed it to the Kinge, who hath sent derection to S<sup>r</sup> Geo. Ratcliffe<sup>3</sup> to returne the 2000<sup>li</sup>. to him as soone as he receaues it, and I assure

<sup>1</sup> Sir Patrick Garland, who was long in confidence with Sir Edward Hyde.

<sup>2</sup> Mazarine was certainly a personal admirer of Cromwell, and therefore the more likely to be averse to a war between France and England.

<sup>3</sup> Ratcliffe had once been thought of by Charles the First as Governour to the Duke of York, in his infancy, instead of Lord Byron. He was a Privy Counsellor, and resided at Oxford during the siege, previous to which the Queen had desired him either to bring the Duke to her at Paris, or to carry him to Ireland ; but this Radcliffe refused, on the plea that he dared not to convey any of the King's sons out of the kingdom without an express order from his Majesty. The writer of the Life of James the Second, evidently written under that Monarch's inspection, speaking of this affair, says, " which

you it will come very seasonably hither, wher ther is as much pouerty as you haue knowne at Paris. I doubte Mr. Crumwell hathe putt a periodd to your receipts, but it is not impossible that Dunkirke<sup>1</sup> and Ostende muy prooue as hospitable to our shippinge as Brest hath bene, for they say, upon closinge with ffrance, the Rebells will have a briske warr with the Spanyard, and looke euery day to heare that they are possessed of some considerable place in the Indyees, which is at last believed at Bruxells ; wher they finde how they haue beene fooled. I am newly returned hither, hauinge beene kept in my way hither at the Hague by a greate sicknesse, for above a moneth, but God be thanked I am now well recovered, beyonde the hope of many of my frends, and contrary to the wishes of those who are not so : I hope I may live to see better dayes : I haue not heard from George Carterett these very many monthes, though I am sure he hath many letters of myne upon his handes, so that you may tell him, I thinke he despayres, and hath given me ouer : God send us a good meetinge, wher you shall receaue all seruice from

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>.

EDW. HYDE.

Coll: this 8 of June (1655).

S<sup>r</sup> Ri: Browne.

nicety, or I may rather call it indiscretion of his, might have cost his Highness dear, as being the occasion of his being put into the Rebells' hands." When the Duke of York was taken prisoner at Oxford by the Parliamentary army, Fairfax ordered Ratcliffe to continue with him, until the pleasure of the Parliament should be known, and he was only discharged from his attendance by the Earl of Northumberland being appointed Parliamentary Governor to the Duke. In consequence of this early acquaintance, Ratcliffe retained much influence over his Royal Highness, to the great dislike of the Queen, and also in opposition to Lord Byron. He was at Jersey with Charles, and afterwards joined him in Flanders. He was also very active in securing the Duke's interest, when it was reported that the King was dead in Scotland, three years before this period. Vide Clarendon's Life, p. 124.

<sup>1</sup> Many prizes had already been carried into Dunkirk by the Jersey privateers ; and in 1650 the Duke of York had been supported solely by the tenths which the captors paid him. See further a letter on this subject to the Spanish minister, State Papers, vol. iii. p. 276.



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*S<sup>r</sup>,

Though it be now many moneths since I heard from you, I had not at this tyme troubled you, if by letters which I receaved the last weeke, I had not cause to believe that one which I writt above a moneth since to you, is miscarryed : I then told you how seasonable your 200 pistolls would come to the Kinge, who hath bene and is still in straight enough, since which tyme it is receaued, but not till within these 3 dayes, it being returned very unskilfully to be payd at Amsterdam upon double usance.

I told you likewise in that, that his Ma<sup>ty</sup> would haue you giue a deputac'on to Mons<sup>r</sup> Marces<sup>1</sup> to collecte and receaue the duties dew to him in 2 or 3 of the lesser and more obscure portes in Britanny, untill he should haue receaued the summ of 200 pistolls which are owinge to him, and he was well content to receave them this way : I thought it more proper that the deputac'on should be given by you, then an immediate grante of it from his Ma<sup>ty</sup> to him, therefore I pray (if my former letter miscarryed) lett him know that you haue receaued such derections, and lett him have a proper instrument accordingly. I doubte it will be very long before he will out of those portes receaue that summ, but the request is the more modest, and could not well be denyed, his Ma<sup>ty</sup> lookinge upon the man as one who hath done him many services. You can expecte little newes from us, who have only courage enough to look for better tyme ; the apprehensions the whole Empyre hath that it shall not longe inioy ther peace, and the terrour the Kinge of Sweade<sup>2</sup> gives them by his inroade into Polande, wher he carryes all before him, proove of no small præiudice to our master, who is therby much disappointed of the mony he was promised from those Princes, so that the truth is wee are no richer than you haue knowen us at Paris : yett trust me wee are farr from despayre, and do promise our selves with reason

<sup>1</sup> Vide pp. 310 and 311.

<sup>2</sup> Gustavus, the successor of Christina, whose disputes with the King of Poland were a source of great confusion and disturbance to Germany.



enough, that wee shall shortly have good frendes, and see a good turne in our fortune, especially if the newes with strange confidence repeated at present heare be true, of Cromwells death : which I doubte is not upon ground enough. The Kinge and his sister are in a private . . . . . at ffrankeforte,<sup>1</sup> from whence wee expecte them in 4 or 5 dayes : the Qu: of Sweden is this very minute passinge through the towne, wher shee stayer not, but lodges this night at Bone, the house of the Elector of Cullen [Cologne].

If you are very rich, and can lend me 20. or 30. pistolls, or such a summ, and returne it to honest Church, he will transmitt it to me, and it will come very seasonably to supply,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your very affectionate humble serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

Cullen this 28 of Sept. (1655.)

S<sup>r</sup> Ri. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I write now to you rather to lett you know that yours of the 16. of the last moneth is come to my hands, then to returne a full answer to it, which I cannot do till the next, and then I shall not fayle to do it, except by our intelligence out of ffrance I conclude that it is for the present to no purpose to do it in the way you propose ; as I suppose it will not be, if the peace betweene Cromwell and ffrance be published, which I doubte it is, and then all your armado at Brest will be quickly discharged those harbours, and I heartily wish they may gett off fayrely, without any preiudice or even violence offred to them to obliege Mr. Cromwell. If this

<sup>1</sup> This journey to Frankfort is noticed in the preceding part of the Collection ; it also excited some attention both in England and upon the Continent : for, in a paper of the day, a letter from Paris observes, after alluding to the newly-signed treaty with Cromwell, " In the mean time, it seems, the Princess Royall of Orange is expected here in January, she intending to bestow a visit upon the little Queen, her mother, and bring her all news from Frankfort fair ; what further end there may be in the voyage is not known."

falls out to be the case, and that you see ther is no more worke to be done ther, you will not be the lesse intent, sollicitous, and dextrous, to oblige the seamen to continue ther affection to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s service, and to continue ther commissyons, since ther is no greate doubt we shall prepare a better recepcion for them at Dunkirke and Ostende, then they have found at Brest,<sup>1</sup> and *your owne particular will not be neglected*: I hope to be speedily able to say more to you upon this subiecte, and to tell you that we shall not be longe confined to Cullen, and I pray dispatch such advyses to me as soone as may be, as may be necessary to be considered in that traffique we are like to have with seamen, how we may give them encouragements enough and yett retayne a competency for our Masters supporte.

I haue not time to add more, having very much to doe, upon those greate alterac'ons which fall out, which truly I believe will carry us all wher wee desyre to be:<sup>2</sup> God send it, and you shall then have cause to believe me to be,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Cull: this 9 of November (1655).

S<sup>r</sup> Ri. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

Since my last to you, which was of the 9. of this moneth, I have receaued yours of the 23. of the last moneth, and yesterday another of the 8 8<sup>ber</sup>. which it may be ought to be of this moneth: you will not wonder that I make no hast in sendinge these dispatches which concerne your Admiralty, which no doubt is now at an end by virtue of this peace, so that if you parte fayre, and they suffer all the vessells to get out of ther portes, it is as much as I looke for:

<sup>1</sup> The facts here mentioned will be of importance to the naval historian, in illustrating a period of which very little, at least with regard to the loyal part of the service, has yet been recorded.

<sup>2</sup> These anticipations, though finally correct, were too premature by five years!



and if ther had been any more to be done ther, I should not haue moued the Kinge for such a letter to the Duke of York as you advise, till wee had knowne his Highn<sup>a</sup> pleasure, ffor for the Kinge to declare that he would abate as much of his fifteenths as the Duke would abate of his tenths, before wee know that he thinkes fitt to abate any thinge, were to putt him upon some disadvantage, and ther wante not those who would be gladd upon any occasyon to infuse an opinion of the disrespectes of many heare towards his Highn<sup>a</sup>. Therefore you should adiust all those thinges with his ministers, before any thinge be moued to come from hence: But at present all that designe is at an end, and wee must consider what conclusyons wee are to make to aduance our maritime assayres in fflanders, wher I hope wee shall finde all encouragement. Whateuer concessyons are to be granted, they must be to all alike, and not with distinction betweene rich and poore, which will interrupt all payment of dewes. I writt to you to send us any advise that upon your obseruance of those people, you thinke necessary to be obserued.

That which wee are sollicitous for is, to gett into fflanders,<sup>1</sup> which I hope wee shall do shortly, and not be without such a benefitt from this warr betweene Spayne and Cromwell, that may giue our frends new courage. I shall add no more, but that I wish you your heartes desyre, and shall alwayes be ready to serue you, as,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate humble Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Cull: this 23. of Nouemb: (1655).

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

The Kinge is so desyrus to pay Moun<sup>r</sup> de Marces some parte

<sup>1</sup> The necessity of this step is evident, when we reflect that the second article of the new treaty between Cromwell and the French Court provided against any aid to the *enemies* of either; and also "that neither of the Confederates shall harbor, or permit their people to harbor, any *pirates or robbers*"—terms lavishly applied to Charles's cruizers.



of the debt that is dew to him,<sup>1</sup> that understandinge that ther is dew to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> frome a frende of his the said Mo<sup>r</sup> de Marces nine hundred livres, and from another twoo hundred livres, both which summes are payable to you from them for the fifteenths dew to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>: since the former order given on his behalfe hath prooued ineffectuall to him, his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s pleasure is that you authorize him to receaue the sayd two summes of 900. and 200<sup>li</sup> and that you appointe the sayd persons to pay the same to him. I shall neede to add no more, but that you may see, the Kinge hath a very good opinion of Mo<sup>r</sup> de Marces, and a sense of some seruice he hath done him, otherwise you would not haue receaued this commande from him, by the hande of,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your very affectionate hu<sup>bis</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Coll. this 15. of febb. 1656.

Cullen this 29. of febr: (1656).

S<sup>r</sup>,

I haue yours of the 31. of January which came not to my handes till the last weeke, and I forbore to answer it till now, supposinge you would not be sooner come to Paris. ffor your men of warr, I know not what to say, they are so fantastickall and humorous, that till wee can exercize such a iurisdiction ouer them as to compell them to keepe good order, I care not how little we haue to do with them. In Spayne I heare they haue sent up an agent to Madrid, to offer to engage in that Kings seruice, and Capt. Martin at Dunkirke hath desyred a commissyon from that Admiralty:<sup>2</sup> But I doubt not, when the Kinge himselfe shall be in flanders, which I hope will be very speedily, and that by the next post I may send you newes to that purpose: those ffrygates

<sup>1</sup> See p. 307. This extraordinary anxiety on the part of Charles to pay his debts is deserving of remark, and excites some curiosity to ascertain its particular cause. If he had displayed the same anxiety on other occasions, his best friends would have had less reason to complain of him, and Lord Rochester's well-known *living* epitaph would have been deprived of its point!

<sup>2</sup> The whole of these facts deserve the notice of the naval historian, being totally unrecorded.

which are manned with his owne subiects, will choose to come into his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s service, & take commissyons from him, and for the rest lett them do as they see cause : you shall do well to encourage Capt: Smith<sup>1</sup> and Capt: Beart to gett up as many seamen English as they can, and to come to Dunkirke or Ostende, wher they will be wellcome.

For your owne condicon, I am very sorry it is no better, yett in one respecte I did not thinke it so good, for I neuer imagined your receipte would have inabled you vpon the assignements the Kinge had given you to haue discharged all your debts at Paris, and thought it would haue prooued well if you were inabled to pay those which were most crying and importunate, which God knowes the poore Resident at Bruxelles is not able to doe, but is euery day in daunger of an affronte. I am sure you doe not belieue I envy you any aduantage you haue reaped : I wish it greater with all my heart, and shall alwayes contribute towards it with all my credit ; but trust me I am often putt to answers & replies that I know not how to go through with, when they who know the Duke of Yorke's receipts as Admirall, confidently avert that the King's haue not bene so little as 5000 pistolls, and enquire how much hath bene paid to his vse. Therefore as soone as you can, send me such an accounte (which neede not be uoluminous) as I may vpon occasyon satisfy his Ma<sup>ty</sup> in that affayre, that I may the more confidently propose any thinge on your behalfe, which I shall doe very heartily as,

S<sup>r</sup>, Your most affectionate serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Sir Ri. Browne.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

I returned hither on Sunday night ; and Munday morninge Mr.

<sup>1</sup> Captain Smith was taken prisoner about a year afterwards, as related in the weekly journals. " Letters come from Plymouth which give an account of wly taken, and brought in thither by the Sapphire frigate. It a Brest man-of warr, new built, of 30 guns. He was met



Locker<sup>1</sup> from Mr Crumwel came into this towne, and had yesterday eueninge publick solemme audience of K. Q. and Card<sup>h</sup>. Hee hath bought a coach and talks of hyreinge a house, and though he thus insinuates himselfe as Envoye, yet it is belieued he will within few weekes produce a latent Commission, and take vpon him the title of Ambass<sup>r</sup>: Monsieur Le Comte de Briene<sup>2</sup> sayd thus much to 668 : 192 : 95 ; whom I was faine to visit *en particulier* by reason of some thinges I left in his hands. *If this should cause any alteration in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> intentions of continuinge a publike Minister here* (as perhaps much may be sayd *pro* and *con*), I beseech your Hon<sup>r</sup> to giue me timely notice : that yf I remoue, I may dismiss my house and forbear to make a new household : and I pray your Hon<sup>r</sup> to giue mee instructions how to carray myselfe towards 668 : 192 : 95 : whether I shall uisit him in quality of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Minister or not ? The French Court will some time the next weeke remove towards the Frontier.

Paris 19<sup>th</sup> May 1656.

I haue as yett beene onely once at our Court, wher by misfortune I could nott kisse y<sup>e</sup> hands of your faire daughter.

Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer :

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I am gladd to finde by yours of the 19. that you are returned to Paris, and cannot write at large to you upon what you propose to me in this concerning your selfe, and in some former, till wee are returned to Bruges, which I conceive may be by the end of the next weeke : nothing being possible to be maturely weighed and considered in the moc'on we are in. I thinke wee shall be at Bruxells to-morrow or Munday, only priuately, to uisitt Don-

with about the Land's End, and had aboard two captains, the one named Meldrum, a famous pirate ; the other named Smith, who sailed by virtue of a commission from Charles Stuart."

<sup>1</sup> Lockhart soon became a great favourite with Mazarine. He did remain at Paris, and was very active there in 1659. Vide State Papers, vol. iii. p. 547.

<sup>2</sup> The French Secretary of State.



Juan,<sup>1</sup> nothinge being to be publiquely declared on our behalfe till the returne of the Enuoy fro' Spayne, but wee haue no cause but to hope very well.

Ther can be no reason for you to discontinue your old frendshipp and neighborwoode with 668 : 192 : 95 : who truly I believe wishes us uery well, and can do no other then he does : when you see him, remember my service to him, and tell him I doubt not but I shall yett lyue to meete him at Whitehall. I shall now heare from you euery weeke, and shall not neede to put you in minde not to omitt to write constantly to M<sup>r</sup> Secretary :<sup>2</sup> I shall be gladd to know how your friends do in Englande, who I doubt not continue ther kindnesse to you : If nothinge be done by the ffrench Courte to discountenance you, you will not put off your house, till the Kinge giues you full order. I pray informe your selfe who of either Nac'on performe most respects to M<sup>r</sup>. Lockyer. I wish you all happinesse, & am uery heartily,

S<sup>r</sup>,

Your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Antwerpe this 26: May (1656).

The letter which included the examinac'ons of the Spy<sup>3</sup> is not yett arriued heare, so that wee haue a very obscure informac'on of that affayre, nor can I imagyne what seruice the rogue (whome I know well) could do in these partes, to deserve the charge he hath beene to them. I heare the Life of Cardinall Richelieu is newly come out, or in the presse, I wish you could send it to me.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Don John of Austria; formerly Viceroy of Catalonia, and recently appointed Governor of Flanders. Lord Clarendon, in his *History of the Rebellion*, vol. iii. p. 478, mentions some anecdotes respecting him and the Earl of Bristol, his belief in astrology, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Sir Edward Nicholas.

<sup>3</sup> P. 317.

<sup>4</sup> The Cardinal seems to have been considered, by some folks at that period, as a conjurer. An English newspaper of that date, called the "French Intelligencer," says "There hath been lately a prophesie found in the Priory of Cardinal Richelieu at Paris, written by his own hand wherein he foretells the wofull calamities of the family of Stuarts, descending from *the Lyon*, that is, King James, for so he was called, by reason that he brought the rampant Lyon figured upon his breast, in the world with him. He likewise predicts three changes of Government, and domestique divisions," &c.

*Sir Richard Browne to the Chancellor of the Exchequer.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>,

I did nott vntill now know of your Hon<sup>rs</sup> beinge in personall attendance on his Ma<sup>ty</sup>. This ignorance of mine nott onely depriued me the contentment of beinge assured that I had soe worthy a friend soe neere my Royal Maister, butt also made me guilty of an omission of nott sooner giuing notice accordinge to my duty of my returne unto this my former station : for which I humbly crave your Hon<sup>rs</sup> pardon.<sup>1</sup>

The French Court parted hence a weeke since, and remains yett at Compeigne. Yesterday came newes that the Mar<sup>l</sup>. de Turene had defeated 4 Regiments of horse, and taken a small place : yf true, a good beginninge of this Campaigne.

M<sup>r</sup>. Locker, M<sup>r</sup> Crumwells Envoye, followes the Court : before his going hence he declared to a person of quality, that he had by him, and would ere long produce, a Commission to be Ambassador ; notwithstanding that I haue publicquely (since my returne hither) appeared in the French Court in presence both of this K. & Queene, and twice beene with the Count of Brienne, yett I find nothinge at all of any the least intimation to retire :<sup>2</sup> And the other day in conference with my Lord Jermyn, his opinion was that this State would permitt me to remaine here as long as his Ma<sup>ty</sup> thought good : soe that I expect to heare what his Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure will bee, in this particular : forbearinge in the meane time to engage for the continuance of my house, or to make a new family : humbly intreating your Hon<sup>r</sup>, that yf his Ma<sup>ty</sup> thinke fitt to continue mee here, you will please to move for a settlement of my subsistence upon some good and well assured funds, without which I shall soone lapse into a very sad condition.

In the conuersation I have had abroad in my trauail, as well as

<sup>1</sup> Though without signature or address, it is evident that this letter is from Sir Richard Browne to Sir Edward Hyde.

<sup>2</sup> This detail sufficiently marks the temporizing policy which actuated the French Court, still unwilling openly to acknowledge Cromwell to the extent of his wishes, yet fearful to offend him by the abrupt dismissal of his Envoy.



here in Paris since my returne had with the French Protestants, I find them generally much inuolved in Cromwells interests, he hauinge dexterously insinuated into their belief that he will maintaine them in the enjoyment of ther preiudges : a more manifest demonstration of their good inclinations to him may also doubtlesse bee, their hauinge since Lockers arriuall effaced the name of *Kinge* out of the inscription of the Seate for the Inglish Ambassad<sup>rs</sup> at Charanton, and left only "*pour les Ambassad<sup>rs</sup> de la Grand Bretaigne.*"

*Olim tempus erit magno cum optauerit emptum  
Intactum Epigraphen.*

And in their discourse upon all occasions, they fervently declare their great good wishes of the prosperity of the army of the Kinge of Sweden as abettinge uppon that hand in order to the ruine of Antichrist, vnder that Kinge and Cromwells banners.<sup>1</sup>

I humbly beseech your Hon<sup>r</sup> to direct mee how I shall henceforwards addresse my letters unto you

Soe praying for &c.

Paris 2<sup>nd</sup> June 1656.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

S<sup>r</sup>,

I had not tyme the last weeke to acknowledge yours of the 23. (whiche I hope you excuse) and I have since receaued your other of the 30. in answer to both which I can say no more, then that you shall be sure of all the seruice I can do you upon all opportunities, and I hope any improvement of our fortune will administer these opportunities :—you shall doe well seasonably and naturally to pursue that discourse to Ld. Jermin concerninge your stay ther, and draw an advise from him hither for your reuocac'on, and then wee shall know what is next to be done. All the papers

<sup>1</sup> Of all this private history of political chicanery the French Court must have been well aware. It may indeed be considered as a sufficient reason for the middle course which they held between the cause of Charles and the demands of Cromwell. The Protestants certainly had no reason to wish well to the cause of Charles.



concerninge Martin wee have, and would be gladd to know what is become of the fellow, and whether he be yett hanged, and what goodly confessyon he made in that season.<sup>1</sup>—God send us once a good turne, w<sup>ch</sup> it may be may not be farr off: and then wee shall have more frends and I hope lesse neede of them. I perceave your spiritts in Paris are not so composed, but that ill accidents may cause some disorders amongst you, and those people do believe that your designe before Valenciennes may be frustrated; it is a greate stake, and these as much concerned to preserve and you to possesse it. Wee expecte howrely newes of some action before it: I have beene misinformed if Cardinal Richelieu's life be not in the presse.—I wish you all happinesse, and am very heartily,

Sr,

your most affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H.

Bruges this 7 of July (1656).

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Bruges this 11. of Aug. (1656).

Sr

It is ury true, I haue besydes your last of the 4: of this moneth, your other of the 21. and 28. of the last upon my hands, the subiecte of both which beinge such, as I could not discourse upon, before my L<sup>d</sup> of Bristolls arriuall,<sup>2</sup> to whom you referred me, I forbore to say any thinge till I could speake to the purpose, and he arrived not till Sunday last: and you will easily believe that in this little tyme wee have not bene able to conferr of halfe the matters of importance which are necessary for present consultac'on:

<sup>1</sup> Vide p. 314.

<sup>2</sup> On a reference to the history and official documents of those times, this letter evidently relates to the hopes and also the plans of the Royal partizans, who were now carrying on a rapid intercourse with their friends in England, and augured much good from the distrust manifested by Cromwell in regard to his own personal security.

Lord Bristol, soon after this, was left as the King's Agent at Brussels, whilst the King and his Court went to Bruges, &c. Vide State Papers, vol. iii. p. 308, 10.

yett wee have spoken of your businesse, wherein I perceive he is farr from hauinge any positive opinion, nor have either of us yett spoken with the Kinge of it: Wee haue many thinges under debate, which must be praeliminary to any determinac'on in that pointe, therefore you must haue a little patience, and be confident if you are designed to continue that imployment, prouisyon must be made for your reasonable supporte, and it cannot be most [more] secure then upon that pension, but whether you are to be continued ther I cannot yett tell; shortly wee may. I do not finde that the Queene or my L<sup>d</sup> Jermin haue writt or sent any opinion upon it: I am of your opinion in the matter of Mon<sup>r</sup> Lyon, nor can I discover the least footestepps of a treaty betweene the 2 Crownes, nor is Madrid a place of that secrecy, but the Venetian Ambassadour in that Courte would discover it. I pray informe your selfe as particularly as you can of Mo<sup>r</sup> Orleanes, whose visitt in this season is not merely upon complement. It is not possible to give such an accounte of our affayres heare, as may satisfy the curiosity of our frends, since if what is intended be not kept secrett, wee shall have little fruites of it: trust me, so farr, as to be confident, our condic'on is very hopefull, and I am as confident that I shall lyue to see you at Whitehall, and serve you ther as,

Sr,

your very affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr

Hauinge replyed as particularly as I can in my last to what concerne your owne particular, I should not at this tyme (when I have very much to do) acknowledge yours of the 11. were it not to desyre your fauour in transmittinge the inclosed. I receaued a letter from Mr. Bourdon, whom I well knew at my beinge at S<sup>t</sup> Sebastians, and I am gladd that ther is such a distinction made ther, for he writes me worde, that since the Edicte for the turninge out of towne all the English, Irish, and Scotts, there is a seconde



order, that excepts all those that can make it evident that they are good subiectes to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, and therefore he hath desyred such a certificate, havinge as he sayes hitherto preserved himselfe by producinge some letters which I writt to him at my beinge at Madrid : I have in the inclosed sent him what I conceive may do him good, and have derected it as he aduised, to Bourdeaux.<sup>1</sup>

We expecte the Duke of Yorke here very speedily, and then wee shall come the sooner to a resolution in that pointe which concernes you. I pray lett us know more of Don Michel de Castile, and of Mr. Locker : I would be gladd you would send me (if you have it by you) the life of the Connestable De Desguynes, which they say is well written. I wish you all happinesse, and am very heartily,

S<sup>r</sup>,  
your most affectionate hu<sup>ble</sup> Serv<sup>t</sup>.  
EDW. HYDE.

Bruges this 18: of Aug: (1656).

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Bruges this 25. of Aug. (1656.)

S<sup>r</sup>,<sup>2</sup>

I have yours of the 18. and as you have greate reason in this perplexed and unsteady condic'on wee are all in, to desyre to know as soone as may be what your owne lott will be, so, you must not

<sup>1</sup> This transaction seems to have had reference to the expected war between Spain and the English Commonwealth.

<sup>2</sup> The hopes of the Royal partizans now revived rapidly, as is evident from the whole tenor of this letter. The reader who feels an interest in the hopes thus expressed, will be very much gratified by referring to Clarendon's State Papers, vol. iii. pp. 302, 6, for various particulars, especially by the gentle mode (p. 302) adopted by Sir Edward to urge the King to a punctual payment of his debts on the receipt of some cash for himself and the Duke of York. This anxiety on the part of Sir Edward, particularly in regard to the debts at Cologne, may be accounted for by the detail of his own distressed state in that City. Vide same vol. p. 290.



wonder that your friends cannot give you so speedy satisfaction in it, as they wish ; wee shall shortly I hope see the Duke of Yorke heare, and then that matter will be most properly and seasonably consulted ; besydes, the case is now very different from what it was understoode to be, when you returned to Paris, for the Romance of Don Miguell will prove authentique History, and it may be Mr. Lockier may retyre with lesse glory then he entred, and S<sup>r</sup> Ri: Browne stay ther with more respecte: there is one thinge no doubt you may depend upon, which is, if you are continued ther, some fitt assignac'on will be made for your supporte, and if you are called away, no doubt your Master will thinke of some other prouisyon and imployment for you. Our businesse does not goe so ill, but that we may reasonably hope that wee shall all have somewhat to doe. The Declarac'on of the freedome of the Portes is now published accordinge to our heartes desyre, and many other evidences given us, of a full affection from Spayne, and if they do not do all for us that wee desyre, it is only because they are not able : nor are they so weake, and unable to helpe us, nor Mr. Cru'well at so much ease or so confident of his new parliam<sup>t</sup> that wee have reason to dispayre of better dayes, or that we may not *eate cherries at Deptforde* agayne.

I returned you by the last post an answer to what was desyred from S<sup>t</sup> Sebastians, which I præsume you receaved and have sent forwarde. I do belieue ther will be occasyon for me the beginninge of the next weeke to repayre to Bruxells and Antwerpe, and therefore if you please lett your letters be putt under couer to S<sup>r</sup> H. De Vic, or Mr. John Shaw at Antwerpe : S<sup>r</sup> H. De Vic complaynes he knew not of your returne to Paris, till some letters from you came into his handes to be sent to a 3<sup>d</sup>. person. Corresponding with each other may be usefull to you both. I am

S<sup>r</sup>,

your most affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

E. H

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I haue yours of the 8. upon my hands, and this last nyght at my comminge I founde your other of the 22. and how longe I shall stay heere I knew not, my businesse dependinge upon the pleasure of others, who will moue faster or slower as they haue a minde to it, and the ill newes of the losse of Valenza, and the march you haue putt this army to make, by your attempt upon la Chappelle,<sup>1</sup> makes the season lesse fitt for those kinde of negotiac'ons, then I belieue otherwise it would haue prooved; howeuer I hope some tyme the next weeke to be agayne at Bruges, and then after the Kinge hath conferred with the Duke of Yorke, I conceaue some resoluc'ons will be taken concerninge your owne particular, and it may be the Cardinall<sup>2</sup> will finde wee can be as angry as hee, and with more reason: I will enquire of the letter you say was writt to the Jesuite, and I pray haue as stricte an eye upon the Knight, and informe your selfe of him, as you can: and likewise of the moc'ons of the Cardinall de Retz<sup>3</sup> which is an intriegue I do not understande: you must excuse me for writinge so impertinently at this tyme, when the truth is, I haue so much to doe, that I hardly gett this tyme to write at all: and I pray lett me heare from you of any thinge you thinke fitt to imparte, I mean when I am fro' Bruges, for whilst I am ther, your letters to the good Secretary will serue us both: God send us good newes fro' England, which is expected by

Sr,

Your very affectionate Servt,

EDW. HYDE.

Antwerpe this 29: Sept: (1656.)

<sup>1</sup> Alluding to the events of the Low Country wars, and the campaign in Italy. The Valenza here mentioned is in the Milanese, and was taken, at this period, by the Duke of Modena and the Duke of Mercœur.

<sup>2</sup> Mazarine.

<sup>3</sup> De Retz had always been extremely active during the contest between the King and Princes. He was the bitter enemy of Mazarine, and also of Condé,



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

Sr,

I had not tyme the last post to acknowledge yours of the 29. of the last moneth, and I haue since, by your to reasonable guesse of the slownesse of all despatches heare, receaued your other by the last post without a date, which was the only one I receaued fro' Paris, all my other frends conceauinge as they had reason that I would be at Bruges, and therby they are all now without any letter fro' me. The truth is, my stay heare hath beene beyonde all possible expectac'on, and hath so tyred my patience, that though this day be not like to giue so good an ende to my businesse as I desyre, yett I resolute (God willing) to be gone to morrow towards the Kinge, from whom I haue been now aboute a fortnight: Wee are willing to belieue that these seasonable raynes will dispose both armyes to enter into ther winter quarters, and then wee shall do our businesse the better: Ther is a discourse of the Marq; of H. . . . court goinge this winter into Spayne, which meethinkes yett he should not haue leaue to doe: you menc'n your neighbour the Venetian Ambassadour, but you neuer speake of your next neighbour my old friend the Holl: Ambassadour,<sup>1</sup> I would gladly know what he thinkes of these alterac'ons, and whether his old affections continue to us: I haue nothinge to add but hearty wishes of your happinesse fro'

Sr,

Your most affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW: HYDE.

Antwerpe this 13. of Octob: (1656.)

Sir Ri: Browne.

playing a double part, and ruling the Duke of Orleans in all things. De Retz also, before this period, had been joined in an accusation brought forward against King Charles, as a mere creature of Cardinal Mazarine. The "Mercurius Politicus" of July 1, 1652, says: "In the mean time the Cardinal, by his creatures, the pretended King of Scotland, the Cardinal Retz, Madame Chevreuse, Monsieur le Chasteauneuf, and Montagu, have played their game so well that they have drawn the Duke of Lorraine to declare for the King, and to forsake the cause of the Princes."

<sup>1</sup> Mynheer Borell.



*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*S<sup>r</sup>,

I must give you many thanks for your fauour of the 25. And the greate ciuillity you expresse to me, which I assure you you will finde returned to you, by all the seruices I can doe: it is indeede to melancholique a tyme, to feele any præferment<sup>1</sup> with that *gusto* that it hath vsed to carry with it, and I wish that considerac'on would abate somewhat of the enuy that will attende it, but wee must submit to the burthen and uneasinesse of the last, without any refreshment from the former: I hope the tyme is not far of, that God Almighty will give some change to the sadd condic'on of our poore Master, and then wee his seruants shall haue abundant matter to reioyce in, be our condic'on what it will: myne, trust me, will be much the more pleasant to me, if it shall giue me any power to lett you see how heartily I am,

S<sup>r</sup>,Your most affectionate Serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Bru: this 5. of feeb: 1658.

Sir Ri. Browne.

*Sir Edward Hyde to Sir Richard Browne.*

(This Letter only bears the signature and postscript of Lord Clarendon.)

S<sup>r</sup>,

I doe very seldome trouble you with my letters, knowing very

<sup>1</sup> The preferment here alluded to was his own appointment as Lord High Chancellor of England, shortly after the Great Seal had been surrendered by the Lord Keeper, Sir Edward Herbert. A curious anecdote respecting this latter circumstance may be found in Clarendon's History, vol. iii., p. 411; and another in the subsequent page. It was not very long after this that the Duke of York was privately married to the Chancellor's daughter. A serious

well that the good Secretary<sup>1</sup> informes you of all things that passe here: But I write now vpon a particular occasion, in which his Majesties honour is concerned: and iustice and charitie obliges vs to doe all wee can: and though you are not in your publike capacity, and soe cannot move any thing in the Kings name, I doe beseech you for charities sake, to take a little paynes to informe your selfe and therevpon to apply your selfe to my Lord Jermyn, or Mr. Montague<sup>2</sup> on the poore mans behalfe: and I cannot but presume but they will so farre interpose, and vse their credit, that there may be no further proceeding vpon so foul an arrest, but y<sup>e</sup> the man may be sett at liberty; and if it be possible, with some reparation. You cannot but remember that scandallous arrest of the Parliament of Rennes, whilst the King was at Paris, of which the Court being informed was so ashamed, that they gaue present order in it, which I thought had beene so effectuell, that there would have beene no record left of it: nor did I since heare any thing of it, till within those last fourteen dayes Mr. Crowther told mee that Mr. Bullen was in prison vpon the same arrest. I presume y<sup>e</sup> Duke of Yorke hath, vpon the addresses about that time made to him, recommended it to some sollicitation; howeuer the enclosed letter com'ing to my hands within these two dayes, and the King being absent at this time from hence, I cannot but recommend the matter to you, and doe desire you vpon perusall of his letter, and the processe, which will informe you of all that I can say, that you will likewise take the paynes, if it be necessary, to call vpon the Superiour of the Benedictines for the other papers, and therevpon to take such course, that such letters of evocation may bee sent, as are necessary; & that the poore man may bee sett at liberty, and out of danger of future vexation: and I hope the conjunction may not be vnfavour-

quarrel had for some time existed between Charles and the Duke, and a separation between them had actually taken place whilst the former, during great part of 1657, resided at Bruges.

<sup>1</sup> Sir Edward Nicholas.

<sup>2</sup> After a diligent research, it has been found impossible to ascertain the individual to whom this letter alludes. Lord Jermyn and the Abbé Montague were at this time in active confidence with the Queen at Paris, as appears from a letter of the Marquis of Ormond to the Chancellor, written in 1659. *State Papers*, vol. iii. p. 547.

able towards the advancement of such acts of justice. I wish you  
all happiness, and am,

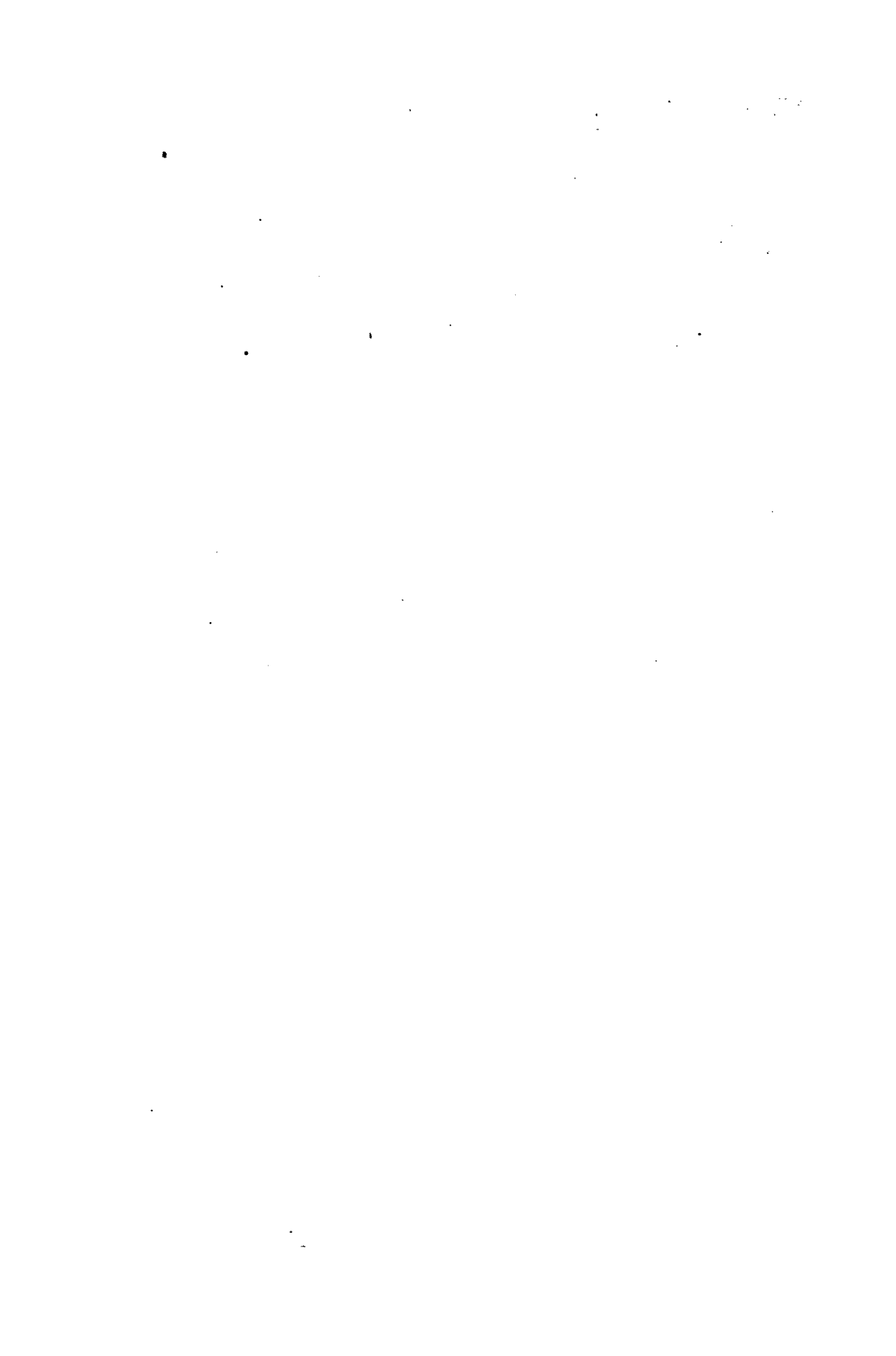
S<sup>r</sup>,  
your very affectionate serv<sup>t</sup>,

EDW. HYDE.

Brux: 16<sup>th</sup> August 1659.

If S<sup>r</sup> George Carterett be in towne, desyre him from me to do  
all the good offices he can in this affayre.





**EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS**

**WRITTEN BY**

**SIR RICHARD BROWNE,**

**WHILST AMBASSADOR AT PARIS.**





## EXTRACTS FROM LETTERS, &c.

THE following Extracts from Letters written by Sir RICHARD BROWNE, whilst Ambassador at Paris, furnish some curious Particulars.

21 Oct. 1642.

Rich<sup>d</sup> Browne, Esq; Ambass<sup>r</sup> at Paris writes to S<sup>r</sup> Edw<sup>d</sup> Nicholas, Secretary of State—That by his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s late speech at . . . . Shrewsbury & by other advices, he hears the possibility of a thing w<sup>ch</sup> he hopes will never come to pass, that his Ma<sup>ty</sup> will be constrained to sell or engage his fairest parks or lands: that there is at Deptford certain pastures called Sayes Court, reserved in his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s hand for the special service of his houshold, for w<sup>ch</sup> being so near London, there may in these intruding times, be persons ready to deale: he beseeches S<sup>r</sup> Edw. to move his Ma<sup>ty</sup> that they may not be sold, but if (w<sup>ch</sup> God defend) his Ma<sup>ty</sup> sho<sup>d</sup> have just cause to part from them, that he wo<sup>d</sup> let some sufficient persons (whom he shall find out) to deale for them, have the first offer, not above 260 acres; no man shall give a clearer light than he will, for they have been long in the custody of his ancestors, by whom the dwelling house thereon was built at their own charge, & it is the only seat he has, & is the place wherein he was borne.

*To Sir Edward Nicholas.*

7 Nov. 1642.

That        [*in cypher*] doth continue his assistance to the Irish, furnishing money to buy arms, w<sup>ch</sup> they send away for Ireland; that he has made reiterated complaints by his Ma<sup>ty</sup> express order, & in his name, with so little success that it is useless to endeavour any more. The Irish priests as well as the soldiers flock very fast into their country & pretend bishopricks and other benefices by donation from Rome. Col. Tirl is here lately come out of Portugal and hastens into Ireland. Col. Belinge (late prisoner in England) hath obtained his liberty, & is now in this town.

*To the Same.*

9-19 Nov. 1642.

The Prince of Condé lately sent for me & told me the Counsellors of France had hitherto beene contrary to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>—excused and asked pardon for his complyinge: bad mee assure his Ma<sup>ty</sup> he would henceforward do all that lay in his power to serve him, that he would in confidence advertise me (and only me) of all that passeth, and (yf neede so require) hee would himselfe endeavour assistance for his Ma<sup>ty</sup>.

Use may be made hereoff yf cherisht & kept secrett, especially in regard the French King is not like to live longe, & the Princes of the blood will probably have their share in governm<sup>t</sup> then yf not sooner.

*To the Same.*

13-23 Jan. 1642-3.

The whole numbers of the Scotch who doe allready serve or have contracted to serve this Crowne, are,

Colonel Douglas his foot Reg <sup>t</sup> . . . . .	2000
Earl of Erwin his new Reg <sup>t</sup> of Guard consisting of 30 companies . . . . .	4500
My Lord Gray one Reg <sup>t</sup> of foote . . . . .	1000
My Lord Lundy one Reg <sup>t</sup> of foote . . . . .	1000
Col. Fullerton one Reg <sup>t</sup> of foote . . . . .	1000
Earl of Laudian (is sayd) shall have auncient company of Gens d'Armes . . . . .	100
	<hr/>
	9600
	<hr/>

## Of these, allready here

Coll. Douglas Reg <sup>t</sup> . . . . .	1000
The Earl of Erwins . . . . .	2000
Coll. Fullerton's . . . . .	500
	<hr/>
	3500
	<hr/>

The rest expected, butt much difficulty to find men in Scotland.

I have seene letters lately written from a person of great quality in Scotland bearinge the Earl of Laudian's speedy comminge over hither with his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s leave to treate the renewinge of the auncient allyances betweene the Crowns of Scotland and France; uppon which Treaty many particular interests depend, as, the reestablisheinge the Marquis Hamilton in the Dutchy of Chatelraut, of the Marq. Douglas in that of Turenne, of restoringe the Captainship of the Scottish Archers and Guardes-du-corps to one of that nation, &c. . . . . relative to which negotiations [*cypher*] and Mons<sup>r</sup> de la Ferte Imbault pretends to have in favour of him erected a new office of Colonel de la Nation Escossoise, of the same nature and in all points of profit and honour equall to that of the Suisses.



Mr. Chambers hath very honestly beene with mee and tells mee unlesse the Earle Laudian come (as he pretends) with his Ma<sup>ties</sup> leave, and that his Ma<sup>ty</sup> doe well approve of the employment whertoo hee is designed, he shall not bee very forward so farre to quit his allegiance to his lawfull Sovereigne as to accept theroff.

I beseech y<sup>e</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> lett me receive y<sup>e</sup> orders how I shall carry myself in this business.

Mons<sup>r</sup> de la Ferte Imbaull is nott only a vehement stickler for the Scotch, butt in a manner also agent for the Parliament here. I have by me the authentique copie of a letter written lately to him by a Peere . . . .<sup>1</sup> in the name of the Upper House to-solicit a businesse here. In all his discourse he rayseth their reputation to what heighth hee can, and depresseth his Ma<sup>ties</sup> causelessly, dishonestly, and maliciously.

*To the Same.*

11-21 March 1642-3.

Passports to treat for a general Peace to assemble at Munster. —The Earle of Laudian with S<sup>r</sup> T. Dishington sollicite very earnestly here for the sendinge an Ambass<sup>r</sup> into England, to treat of an accommodation, by order as is presumed of the Parl<sup>t</sup> in England, and Mr. Fert Imbault is noe lesse earnest to bee the man. These three are all one and violent Parliamentarians.

[An inclosure in cypher.]

*To the Same.*

2-12 June 1643.

By the letters I recommended to Mr. de Gressy's safe delivery, your Hon<sup>r</sup> will have understood in what a miserable condition I am for want of some present supply of money, my friends haveinge plainly signified unto mee that I must expect no more from them,

<sup>1</sup> In this part of the original, the words, "my lord of Holland" are scratched through with a pen.

or from my estate in England already engaged to its utmost extent.

By the same opportunity I likewise give yo<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> notice of S<sup>r</sup> Balt. Gerbiers manner of proceedinge here at his first arrival, since which he continues his frequent visits to the Queene, Princes, and Ministers, taking much upon him, and using his Ma<sup>ties</sup> name how hee pleases upon all occasions, not onely givinge out here, butt also writing into other parts (as I have received notice by letters from good hands) that he is sent hither by his Ma<sup>ty</sup> to condole about other business of great consequence.—I shall be glad to know what y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> thinkes of this kinde of carriage of his, and whether it bee his Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure to have a pretended Ambassad<sup>r</sup> where he hath allready an avowed Resident.

*To the Same.*

3 Sept. 1643.

[*Cypher*] concerning which moneyes as I treated with 335 . 420 (who hath very much contributed to the findinge out and sending this summe) hee knowinge my case, of himselfe offered mee to move 335 . 501 . to reserve here what part I would towards payment of my entertainment until they received his Ma<sup>ties</sup> order to put it into my hands, but I replied that though my necessities did much presse mee, yett I would nott presume to stopp or divert any supply whatsoever sent to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>. Here is a very considerable and ammunition<sup>1</sup> quantity of 259 . 82 . 91 . 83 . sent and sendinge from hence, the particulars wheroff are I assure myselfe well knowne to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> and to y<sup>r</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup>. — prays for money & to be preserved from perishing.

*To the Same.*

10-20 Nov. 1643.

The Queene is in a manner wholly governed by Card<sup>l</sup> Mazarine, who is secretly leagued with the Prince of Condé, but governed by

<sup>1</sup> The words "and ammunition" are struck through with a pen in the original.

Mons<sup>r</sup> de Chavigny ; this last beinge by this meanes though in a close way more powerfull than ever. The whole triplicitly I feare will league noe very favourable influence on England.—Mr. Croft is gone to Rouen joyntly with my L<sup>d</sup> V. Mountague & others to treat with som merchants for furnishinge his Ma<sup>ty</sup> with armes & ammunition, &c.

*To Sir Edward Nicholas.*

3 Sept. 1643.

— the welcome newes of £20,000. sterling which this good Queene sends to their Ma<sup>ties</sup> by her Ambass<sup>r</sup>.—They offered to put part into his hands, but he refused it, tho' his necessities were great, as he wo<sup>d</sup> not intercept any supply sent to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>.

Much arms & ammunition sent—lord V. Mountague had 50,000 livres Tournois to purchase arms—35,000 only expended—prays the other part may be ordered for him.

*To Lord Digby.*

6 Jan. 1644.

Delivers the Kings passe for 100 barrells of powder, 12,000 waight of match, 2000 swords & 500 case of pistols to be by a merch<sup>t</sup> put aboard his Ma<sup>ties</sup> 2 men of war at Havre. The passe was drawn according to my memoire, for the king of Gr. Br. service, but the Secretary of State caused it to be new written, and those words left out ; w<sup>ch</sup> among many other things I have observed, makes me think those here very far from declaring for either side in England.

*To Lord Digby.*

25 March 1644.

I have received your L<sup>ps</sup> letter of 21. Feb. that some supplies of money will speedily be sent to me, & intimating his Ma<sup>ties</sup> gracious pleasure to conferre upon mee (not lesse unexpected than undeserved) the dignity of Baronett as yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup> has happily joynd



these two together, soe I humbly beseech . . . . . they may not be separate butt for mutual support and ornament march hand in hand. To attend y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>d</sup>'s commands in both I have desired the bearer hereoff Mr. William Prettyman (a younger brother of my wife's) to make a journey to Oxford——within few dayes I shall have better opportunity to express my thankfulness more at large.

I humbly beseech yo<sup>r</sup> L<sup>d</sup> to represent my most abundant gratitude to his Ma<sup>ty</sup>.

*To Lord Jermy.*

3-13 June 1644.

Y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>d</sup> hath obtained from his Ma<sup>ty</sup> a grant of the perpetuity here in France of 2822 livres tournois p<sup>r</sup> an<sup>o</sup>. If yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>d</sup> should not already have made sure thereof, I know not how Mr. Aubert's pretensions may interfere with this of yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>d</sup>; for three days since his Agent here signified his Ma<sup>ty</sup>'s order to mee for payment to him of 25<sup>m</sup> livres and returning from him the diamond; which sume not being to bee had out of the arreares, it is probable hee will now make a demand of the rents themselves, which if he doe obtain, and that they bee made over to him in that lowe and underhand rate hee expects, he will make up his summe, sweep away not only the rents themselves, but alsoe the remaininge part of the arreares.

*Lord Digby and Sir Edward Nicholas.*

3-13 June 1644.

The inclosed arret will lett yo<sup>r</sup> L<sup>d</sup> see that I have at last finished the longe dependinge suite for recovery of a remainder of His Ma<sup>ties</sup> portion-money longe since deposited here for the payment of certaine creditors & servants of his Ma<sup>ty</sup>. The rents or perpetuity tenn yeares since bought with this money, with the arrears of the sayd rents, I have been forced to wrest out of violent hands uppon the best terms I could; for to say the truth, they were in a manner swallowed up by some greedy cormorants in too great place and power here, who never thought to have thus regorged

them to their true owner his Ma<sup>ty</sup>. Of the tenn yeares arreares of 2822 livres p' an. there are little above seaven at present to bee found in ready money (the rest being nott yet payed), which present money will all be disposed off partly by the arret itselfe, and partly for necessary compositions, charges, and gratuities (as shall appeare by my just and good account), so that to his Ma<sup>ties</sup> profit there will come cleare only the perpetuity or rents themselves, and betweene two or three yeares arreares. These rents stand his Ma<sup>ty</sup> in twelve yeares purchase, but by reason of the seasures the late French King and this have since these warres made uppon rents of this nature, and of the uncertaine condition of these times, they will not now bee sold at so good a rate as they may improve to after a general peace.

*To Lord Digby.*

7-17 June 1644.

Writes earnestly for money—inevitable ruin must befall him—has not wherewithall to provide himself out of mourning, a new Coat and Liveries, w<sup>ch</sup> will much tend to his Ma<sup>ties</sup> disreputation—"I appeall to all the world whether I have not in this absolutely dearest part of Christendom for these three yeares maintained his Ma<sup>ties</sup> honour beyond what could be expected from my quality in these distracted times, my estate lying all in Kent and Essex yielding little or nothing, the moneys I take upp comeing uppon much disadvantage, and a constant great interest paid."

*To Lord Jermin.*

Right Hon<sup>ble</sup> my singular good Lord.

Accordinge to y<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>ps</sup> command to send you the Inglish newes, I now begin by this opportunity of Mr Besse's departure: What London affords this inclosed printed will acquaint y<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup>. Besides which the letters containe little or nothinge, onely some hopes of misunderstandinge and diuisions amonge the Parliamentary Generalls.



Yesterday the Pr: Elector Pal. his Agent came to acquaint mee that His Elec: High: hee thought was by this time in London: and to declare the cause of his journey thither to bee, partly to see what aduantages he might reape to himselfe from His Ma<sup>ty</sup> and Parl: according to both their promises, in case they treated an accommodac'on; & partly to sollicit some supplies of money for y<sup>e</sup> Queene his mother and himselfe, without which they can neyther of them subsist any longer. And this hee desired mee to write to their Ma<sup>ties</sup>. And I thinke the same excusatory account will bee brought within fewe dayes to y<sup>e</sup> Court by Pr. Edward, who was also yesterday with mee to consult where he might most speedily and most conueniently find His Ma<sup>ty</sup>.

The Duke of Orleans is on his way hither, and yf what I heare be true, will visit his Ma<sup>ty</sup> ere long at Bourbon. Of the Duke d'Anguien's action at Fribourg, I will nott giue an account till the lame Post bee come, and then I shall send it by a speedier conueyance. It shall suffice that by this sure hand I present my humble seruice to yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup>. and giue assurance of my diligent endeauours to obey y<sup>e</sup> commands. Beseeching y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup> to take some speedy care for the subsistance of a creature of yours whose sole ambition it is to bee vsefull to you: Many haue allready passed by and pitied his condition; butt y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup> is the Samaritan from whom alone his vrgent necessities expect that balme must cure them. In which happy omen I take the boldnesse to kisse y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup>'s hands in quality off,

Y<sup>e</sup> Lo<sup>p</sup>'s,

Most faithfull humble Ser<sup>t</sup>,

RICHARD BROWNE.

Paris 19. Aug. 1644.

S<sup>r</sup>,

After seuerall negotiations betweene the Palais Cardinal and the Court of Parliament, the Queene Regent vpon Tewsday last signified to the Parlam<sup>t</sup> that being well informed of their good inten-c'ons and sincerity, she approued of their proceedings, willinge them to meet frequently and to continew dilligently their consul-

IV.

Z



tations for the publique good ; w<sup>th</sup>all acquaintinge them, that the Ennemy was vpon the ffrontier, and that the King wanted mony, wherefore they might doe well to bringe their resolutions to maturity w<sup>th</sup>in the space of 8 dayes : since w<sup>ch</sup> satisfactory answere the Parliament is uery busy in finding meanes how to reforme the abuses in the gouernment chiefly in that of the Kings reuenews, in which worke the rest of the Parlements of ffrance will doubtlesse comply w<sup>th</sup> this of Paris. And some great Ministers may perhaps be sacrificed to the people, who have already confessed their feares by disfurnishinge their houses of their choicest moueables.

Heere is all possible care taken to furnish the Prince of Condé w<sup>th</sup> mony, and heere is also much seeking after horses to sende to him, wherewith to remount his Caualiers ; the Prince is w<sup>th</sup> his army neere Guize, where he hath lately arrested a gent' of Piccardy (whose name is Ragny) for hauing giuen intelligence to the Spaniard, and hauing drawne great pensions from them any time this 6 or 7 yeares.

The ffrench ffeet consistinge of 13 shippes and 19 gallies hath presented it selfe vpon the coast of Naples, but as yet w<sup>th</sup>out any success at all.

This weeke hath safely brought hither Mr. Langton, with all your noble tokens, for all which (particularly for the rare booke to mee) I render you my hearty acknowledgements, as also your two letters of 15. & 19. June, containinge (as allways of late) feares and hopes. God in his mercy direct thinges to some tolerable end or other. I wrote to Mr. Spencer this day seauenight, as to you also ; and hope it went safe, though I find some of the former Post (none of mine, for I wrote nott) were intercepted. Our Prince beinge disappointed of the somme of money hee expected from the French for his iourney, goes the beginninge of the next weeke to Callice, butt with lesse traine than hee intended, which is all I can say to you of that matter, onely that all his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Priue Councillors in France haue orders to attend his High<sup>ness</sup> at Callice : my Lord Treasurer, Lord Bristoll, Sir Ed. Nicholas, are on their way thither.

Our best respects to the good company with you in the Country : where I hope you injoy yourselves, and amongst other

diuertisments with that of haymakinge, the season for which now approaches ; and ought (yf you haue there had soe wett a growinge time as here) to afford you store of exercise. Farewell, D. S.

Yours for euer.

Paris 4. July 1648.

From Sir Ric: Browne.

S<sup>r</sup>,

I know not yet what judgment to make, or what the euent will bee of the affaires now in agitation betweene our Royall and our pleading Pallace heere. For notwithstanding that the exiled members of the Parliament be restored ; that the reuocation of the Intendants out of the Prouinces bee resolved (three onely expected) namely, in the Lyonnois, in Champaigne, and in Piccardy, where their employment is restraned onely to the affaires of the armies, and that y<sup>e</sup> Queene hath condescended to y<sup>e</sup> erection of a Chamber of Justice, as they terme it, w<sup>ch</sup> is to consist of a selected number of Parliament men, whereof the Kinge (to saue the reputac'on of his authority) is to haue the nomination, and is established to inquire, and informe against financiers, partisans, and others that haue misbehaued themselves : yet it will be a difficult matter to reconcile other differences, for there is much dispute about the remittinge y<sup>e</sup> arrears of the Tailles of y<sup>e</sup> yeares 44, 45, and 46, and about abatinge of the 8<sup>th</sup> part of the Tailles of the yeare 47, and the fourth part of 48 and 49 ; about the regulating the impositions vpon the entry of merchandises, about the reuokinge those Edicts by which the rents vpon the Towne house and the wages of Officers are diuerted to the Kings vse, and generally whatsoever almost hath passed w<sup>th</sup>out the verificac'on of the Parliament, is subject to question. Nor is the Counsell altogeather compliant w<sup>th</sup> the Court of Parliament, hauing lately by their arrest cashiered an arrest of Parliament against the Dutchesse of Aiguillon. Nor is the Parliament vndiuided in ittselfe, the Kinge hauinge a party there amongst whome the S<sup>r</sup> Boulanger, Conc<sup>t</sup>. in the first



Chamber, two daies since pleadinge very earnestly on the Kings side, in behalf of the Partisans in whose handes he is sayd to haue great sum'es of money, fell downe dead in the House, wherevpon the Duke of Orleans retired, the meeting dissolued, and the people conclude this blow to bee a judgment of God vpon him for defendinge soe bad a cause.

Mars<sup>ll</sup> de Gramont is come hither, whose privat businesse being not yet knowne, what appears is that he hath addressed himselfe to the Parliament to acquainte them w<sup>th</sup> the necessities of the army, and to demand supplyes of them, seeing all other meanes of raysinge monyes are now, by their stirringe, soe disordered, that the new sur-intendant can neither by intreatyes or threats dispose the partizans to aduance one penny till they see farther what settlement these disputes will produce.

The french fleet is returned from the coast of Naples (not hauinge made any impression at all vpon that people) to Piombino & Portolongone. Nor doe I heare that Prince Thomas is yet embarqued.

My Lord Jermin went hence towards Callice Munday last. The Queene is returned to St. Germaines. My Lord Marq<sup>s</sup> of Ormond prepares for Irland. And my L<sup>d</sup> Marq<sup>s</sup> of Newcastle goes next weeke towards Holand by the way of Flanders, with his Lady, &c. God blesse you and vs. And send vs a happy meetinge.

Yours euer to loue and serue you.

Paris, 18 July 1648.

From Sir R<sup>t</sup>. Browne.

S<sup>r</sup>,

The businesse of the Parliament this weeke hath been to deliberate vpon, and examine the declaration w<sup>ch</sup> the King brought them, hauinge appointed fower of their members to make report thereof vpon the 16<sup>th</sup> of this moneth; in the mean tyme they make great difficulty to obey that part thereof, wherein the King commaundes them not to assemble any more in the Chambre St. Lewis;



and this notwithstanding that the Duke of Orleans hath seuerall tymes beene w<sup>th</sup> them to maintaine the King's authority, and to vrge the conueniency, yf not the necessity, of their obedience ; so that, by what yet appeares, the Parlam<sup>t</sup> yf they meete not in the Chambre St. Lewis yet they will doe their businesse in some other place, and perhaps at last make a foule house ; for that is certaine, that some other Parlements of ffraunce doe manifestly declare and followe their example.

The Prince of Condé findinge great difficultyes in the reliefe of Tourné<sup>1</sup> is encamped at Bethune, there expectinge the succors y<sup>t</sup> Erlack, Vaubecour, and others are to bring to him.

At Naples the affaires betweene the King and people (ill satisfied w<sup>th</sup> the Spaniards non-performance of treaty, and murmoring by reason of the scarcety of bread) are againe fallen into great disorder ; insomuch as it is thought the ffrench ffleet may therevpon make yet an other journey to attempte some new impression in that Kingdome. The newes of the seidge of Cremona is confirmed, not w<sup>th</sup>out hopes of the speedy takinge thereof.

The Marquis of Ormond is vpon his departure for Irland. Wee are here, God be prayesd, in good health. Butt when will our deare Brother William come ? I am glad to heare our cottage hath beene dignified with such good company as your brother, to whom I longe to present my seruice. Our honest cousin Stefens (who will well deserue your acquaintance, and whom I recommend vnto your affection) will perhaps by that time these come to you, bee arriued. Which yf hee bee, I pray present my seruice to him, and soe with our relatiue cordiall affections, I rest

Yours euer.

Paris, 8 Aug<sup>th</sup> 1648.

Our Court wants money, and liues very quietly at St. Germaines : where no peere appeares but my Lord Jermin. The Lord Marq. of Worster, the Lords Digby & Hatton, though yett in France, yett liue for the most part in Paris.

From Sir Ri. Browne.

<sup>1</sup> Which is lost.

Sr,

Since y<sup>e</sup> Com'ittinge of the King's declaration to fower Members of the Parlament, to bee by them examined w<sup>th</sup> order to make reporte thereof on Munday next, the Parlament hath followed theire ordinary course of businesse, and this interim seemes to bee a kind of truce betweene the Royall and y<sup>e</sup> pleading Pallace.

The losse of Tourné hath not yet exasperated y<sup>e</sup> Prince of Condé into any newe vndertakinge against the Spaniard, w<sup>ch</sup> now vppon y<sup>e</sup> joyninge of Erlack's troops vnto him, it is expected hee shoulde, soe that probably wee shall soone heare of his remoue from Bethune. In this stationary, or rather retrograde, condition of the ffrench affaires in fflanders, the certaine expectation of the taking Cremona, and the weaknesse of the Spaniard in Catalonia, are very considerable supports ; but aboue all, the relaps of Naples into (as they heere thinke) a more desperate state than euer, doth raise theire mindes, and giues here great hopes of the losse of that Kingdome to the Spaniard. In order to w<sup>ch</sup> the ffrench fleet hath set saile for L'Abruzzo, there to joyne w<sup>th</sup> the Conte de Conuersano, who hath reuiued y<sup>t</sup> rebellion and is at the head of a considerable army.

The Com'andeur de Souuray prepares for his journey into Holland, in quallity of Ambassador from the Religion of Malta, there to demande restitution of the Com'andaries, w<sup>ch</sup> the States of Holland doe possesse.

The Duke of Beaufort (who 'tis thought hath not beene out of ffrance) attended w<sup>th</sup> 40 or 50 horse, hath lately (as is saide) appeared in Brittany, wherevppon there are some troopes sent thither, and into Normandy, to secure those Provinces. And to Card<sup>ll</sup> Mazarin they speake of giuiuge a guard of 100 horse, for the safety of his person.

The Marquiss of Ormond two daies since begane his journey towards Ireland.

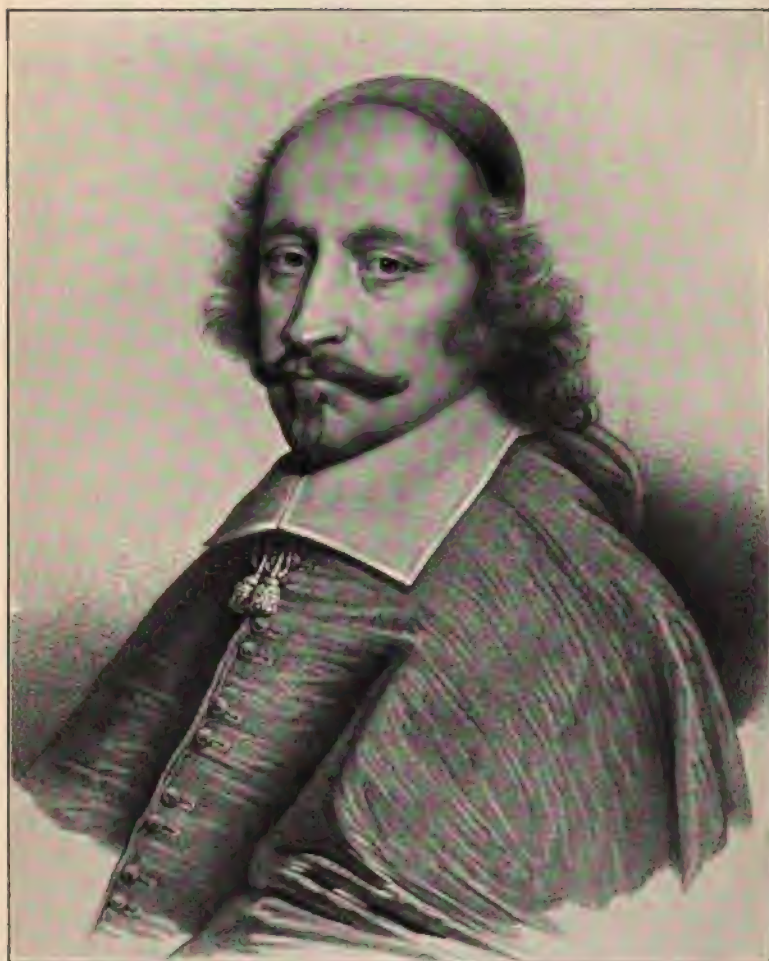
Thanks for yours of 28 & 31. most wellcome. All your relations here salute you most cordially. To my brother yff nott com away, & to my cousin S<sup>t</sup>. yf arriued, present my loue and



CAROLUS LINNAEUS







CARDINAL MAZARIN.

1

2

3

4



service, the like to all the good company with you. Farwell, my deare S.

Yours for euer louinge.

Paris. 15 Aug. 1648.

From Sir Ri: Browne.

S<sup>r</sup>,

Yf thorough the difficult and hazardous passage, these lines come safe to you, they will conuey my serious and hearty congratulations of that condition you are now in neere his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, wherein his gracious fauour and your owne merit haue concurrently placed you. Though I haue receiued noe letter from you since your arrivall in Schotland, yett I enjoy the fruits of your care and kindnesse towards mee, witnesse the two warrants of his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, dated y<sup>e</sup> 4 Aprill 3<sup>o</sup> Car. 1651, directed to Prince Rupert and to Mr. Windam in my behalfe, for which, as I render all humble acknowledgements to my most Gracious and Royall Maister, soe, I giue you also my hearty thanks for beinge soe happily instrumentall in a concernment of mine, though hithertoo neyther of them haue proued any way aduantageous unto mee, for I can giue noe account where Pr. Rupert is since his comminge into the Ocean, and takinge some rich shippes belonginge to the Kinge of Spaine, and to the Genoese : And when I addresse any demands to Mr. Windham, hee makes mee noe returne butt these kind of warrants, such as the inclosed, of which he hath many. Soe that unlesse his Ma<sup>ty</sup> be pleased eyther to thinke of some other way of supply for mee, or direct some more effectuall commands to Mr. Windam, your kindsman and his family must (for ought I see) begge bread (or starue) in the streetes of Paris. In March last Mr. Windam assigned mee a thousand guilders of Dunkirke money, which makes little aboue fourescore pistolls here. Butt the man (one John Arden) in whose hands he had deposited the prize goods, out of which this summ was to bee raysed, is soe insoluent that he lyes in prison eyther nott able or not willinge to giue any satisfaction. The truth of this will bee confirmed to you by word of mouth by Mr. Edgman, of whose

safe arriuall with you, and returne into these parts, I should be gladd to heare.

The affaires of this kingdome are in a dubious condition, occasioned chiefly by reason of some jealousies betweene the Queene Regent and the Princes; to which the neere approachinge majority (the 6<sup>th</sup>. 7<sup>th</sup>.) will, in probability giue a period, one way or other, by a more firme settlement of the authority, ministry, and direction of affaires. As for the aspect towards vs, all I can say to you is, it will bee answerable to the successe of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> affaires in schottland, vpon which they here looke as the North Pole-starre by which they intend to steere. Our good Queene spends much of her time of late in a new monastery at the end of Queene Mother's Cours (formerly the faire and pleasant house of Mar<sup>l</sup> Basompeere at Challiot) of which shee is the titular foundresse; and the sweete Duke of Yorke doth here subsist vpon the allowance of one thousand crownes a month payd him from this state, beinge greatly esteemed by all for his comelinesse and personall dexterity, in his behaiour and exercises.

Amongst all the publike and priuat calamities wherwith it hath pleased God to visit my poore family, wee yett (by His gracious blessinge and mercy) injoy our healths, and the hopes of a better condition, when eyther our humiliations, or our enemies sinnes shall moue the Divine power to looke more fauourably vpon vs; in order to the obtaininge wheroff I yett make shifte to keep vp a chappell and the English Liturgie in my house, where, by ordinary and extraordinary deuotions wee implore Gods blessinges vpon his Ma<sup>ties</sup> person and just cause. To that diuine Omnipotency recommending you (with all our cordiall and kind salutes) I rest, Dear cousin,

Y<sup>r</sup> most affectionate kindsman  
and faithfull humble seruant,

R. BR.

Paris, 19 Aug. 1651.

I pray present my seruice to all such worthy friends of mine of our owne nation, in whom you find any memory of, or kindnes for, mee. Butt, faile nott to render mee most louinge and most respectfull to my noble friend to me still (for I know nott his new titles) Mr. William Murray.

Postscript. Extract of a letter from Nantes. 15<sup>th</sup> Aug<sup>r</sup>. Prince Rupert is arriued with his prizes in Portugall, 15 leagues from Lisbon, and there hee fitts his shippes with some others that belonge to the Kinge of Portugall, to goe against the Kinge of Spaines gallions. This is written by a good hand from Lisbon.

Wee heere hope the newes of Schottland, and the defeat in Fife, is nott soe bad as the London prints would make vs beleue. I pray God send us some comfortable tidings, and bless his Ma<sup>ty</sup> with victory and successe in all his undertakings.



## ADDENDUM.

P. 289.

FROM this mention of Mr. Morrice's escape, it should seem as if there had been a report that a Royalist of that name, who in fact was put to death in 1649, had made his escape, and had remained in Ireland. A Mr. Morrice had got possession of Pomfret Castle, and had held it some time for the King ; it was besieged and taken by Lambert ; this gentleman had made his escape before the surrender, but was afterwards seized and was executed at Lancaster, as Whitelocke tells us. His story, as given by Lord Clarendon, is curious, and being short, may be worth repeating in this place :

"A young man, in the beginning of the war, had been an officer in the King's army, but engaged in the Parliament army with some circumstances not very commendable. By his courage and pleasant humour, he made himself very acceptable, and obtained a commission as Colonel ; but being a free speaker, and living licentiously, he was left out in new modelling the army, but not without compliments. He had a competent estate in Yorkshire, to which he went, and resided there. As he grew older, he repented of having left the King's service, and meant to take an opportunity of returning to it. His humour was so chearful and pleasant, and he mixed so much with men of all parties, that he had great weight with all of them. The Governor of Pomfret Castle was his most intimate and particular friend, and was so fond of him that he was never easy without him ; he was continually at the Castle, and the same bed served him. He now concerted with the King's party to surprize the Castle, and he so artfully managed with the

Governor, telling him that there was such a design, that he mixed with those concerned, in order to communicate every thing to the Governor, that he completely lulled that gentleman to sleep, and made him inattentive to notices which he received from other quarters. He also ingratiated himself with many of the soldiers, and at length effected his purpose. Cromwell was then gone for Scotland, so that they had time to repair the fortifications, and collect a good garrison. Cromwell ordered Rainsborough to go with a few troops to keep them in check ; and whilst he lay at Doncaster, 10 miles from Pomfret, they sent 20 picked men, who by the most dextrous management actually surprized Rainsborough in his bed, and mounted him on a horse ; but when he found how few there were who had surprized him, he called to his soldiers, and then the captors finding they could not carry him off, actually killed him, and then all made their way back to the Castle.

" At length Lambert was sent to besiege the Castle ; the garrison made a most gallant defence, but finding no hopes of relief, they at length offered to surrender, if they might have honourable conditions. Lambert said, they were gallant men, and he would do all he could to preserve them ; but Col. Morrice and five more of those who had destroyed Rainsborough, must be given up, and he could not save their lives. The garrison said they never would deliver up any of their companions, and desired six days, that these six might deliver themselves as well as they could, the rest being at liberty to assist them. Lambert generously consented. The garrison made several sallies to effect the desired escape, in one of which Morrice and another escaped ; in another sally two more got away ; and when the six days were expired, and the other two remained in the castle, their friends concealed them so effectually, with a stock of provisions for a month, that rendering the castle, and assuring Lambert that the six were all gone, and he was unable to find them after the most diligent search, and had dismantled the castle, they at length got off also.

" April 1649. Col. Morris, late Governor of Pomfret Castle, and one Cornet Blackburn, who had a hand in the death of Col. Rainsborough, and who were excepted persons on the surrender of the Castle, were taken at Lancaster in disguise.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Whitelocke's Memorials, p. 382.

"Aug. 1649. They were arraigned at York before Baron Thorp and Judge Puleston, for levying war against the kingdom. They made a stout defence on points of law, all of which were over-ruled, were found guilty, and Morrice being manacled with irons, complained of a soldier being so treated, but got no relief.<sup>1</sup>

"Before the end of the month Morrice was executed.<sup>2</sup> It is not said whether Blackburn suffered."

<sup>1</sup> Whitelocke's Memorials, p. 405.

<sup>2</sup> Id. p. 407.



## INDEX.

*Where the letter n is attached to a figure, the passage will be found in a note on the page referred to ; the letter m signifies the margin.*

- ABBEVILLE, notice of, i. 42.
- Abbot, Dr. George, Archbishop of Canterbury, his Hospital, ii. 48 ; family of, iii. 476 ; portrait of, 444.
- Mr., an eminent Scrivener, ii. 332 n ; condemned as a loyalist, ii. 357, 358.
- Abdy, Mr., i. 264.
- Abell, John, his counter-tenor voice, ii. 390.
- Abingdon, Montague Bertie, Earl of, Lieutenant of the Tower, displaced, iii. 172.
- Academies at Richelieu, i. 83 ; at Paris, ii. 13.
- Acetaria*, 1699, by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxxx, cxvii ; iii. 147, 190, 192 ; 196.
- Acoustics, &c., letter on, iii. 363.
- Act at Oxford, 1654, ii. 54 ; 1664, 170 ; 1669, 238-240.
- Acton, Sir William, Lord Mayor of London, 1641, displaced by the Parliament, iv. 74 n.
- Acts of the Apostles, MS. of, i. 165 ; of the Council of Basil, ii. 55.
- Addresses to the King, origin of, iii. 137.
- Adolphus, Prince (brother to King of Sweden, 1654), proposes for Princess Sophia of Bohemia, iv. 215.
- Adriatic Gulph, notice of the, i. 234.
- Adscomb, Surrey, Mr. Draper's house at, iii. 150, 162, 166.
- Adventures of Five Hours*, a play, 1662, ii. 156, 157.
- Æmiliana, Margaret, i. 255.
- Ætna, Mount, eruption of, 1669, ii. 114 n, 242.
- Agates, &c., curious, i. 44, 98, 257 ; ii. 74, 75.
- Agrippina, Julia, mother of Nero, her sepulchre, i. 190.
- Ague, cure for the, ii. 391.
- Aid, royal, distribution of, 1665, iii. 322, 323.
- Aiguillon, Duchess of, iv. 339.
- Air, excellence of the Italian, i. 95 ; experiment on, ii. 144.
- Aitzema, Leo D', his *History of the United Provinces*, 1657, i. 14 n.
- Aix, in Provence, account of, i. 90.
- Albano, tombs of the Horatii and Curiatii at, i. 193.

- Albemarle, George Monk, Duke of, various references to, ii. 140, 159, 162, 172, 176, 179, 183, 187, 189, 191, 192, 214 n, 219, 220 n, 281, 383, 398, 417; stays in London during the plague, 1665, ii. 195; appointed General at Sea, &c., 189; his victory over the Dutch fleet, 195, 196; share of a Spanish galleon, 1687, iii. 38; trials respecting an estate left by, 112, 131, 160; portrait of, iii. 444.
- See Keppel, iii. 142 n.
- Street, notice of, ii. 214 n.
- Albert Eremitano, bust of, i. 253.
- Alberti, Cherubino, paintings by, i. 164.
- Albury, Surrey, villa of Mr. Howard, referred to, i. 298; ii. 3, 77, 147; the grounds improved by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 225, 253; bought by Mr. Solicitor Finch, 1687, iii. 40; Mr. Evelyn desirous of possessing, 1657, iii. 203 and n.
- Alchemist, a pretended one at Paris, 1650, ii. 20, 24, and n; stories of an, 33.
- Aldobrandini, Cardinal Pietro, i. 213, 214.
- Alessandro, Signor, musician, i. 158; ii. 11.
- Alexander III., Pope (Roland, Bishop of Sienna), i. 240; painting respecting, 162.
- VII., Pope, Fabio Chighi, his intrigues with the Queen of Sweden, ii. 373 and n.
- Algardi, Alessandro, architect, i. 218.
- Al Koraun, written on a sheet of calico, ii. 56.
- Allegri, Antonio, da Corregio, paintings by, i. 60, 107, 156; ii. 153; iii. 129; sum paid for a Venus by, iii. 110.
- Allen, Capt. Sir Thomas, ii. 179, 180 n, 182, 263.
- Allestree, Dr. Richard, Dean of Westminster, ii. 122, 132, 239, 240; sermons of, ii. 309, 358.
- Alleyn, Edward, College at Dulwich founded by, ii. 314.
- Allington, William, Lord, ii. 261; his house at Horseheath, 248 and n.
- , Rev. John, preaches against regicides, ii. 69.
- Allix, Dr. Peter, account of, iii. 9 and n, 24.
- All Souls' College, Oxford, painting in the chapel of, ii. 170.
- Allybone, Sir Richard, Justice of the King's Bench, a Papist, iii. 49.
- Almont, Sir James Livingstone, afterwards Earl of Callendar and Lord, iv. 97 and n.
- Alois, *Planta*, its peculiarities, iii. 358.
- Alps, journey over the, 1646, i. 278.
- Alstedius, John Henry, referred to, ii. 25, 168; iii. 115.
- Alston, Dr., President of the College of Physicians, 1664, ii. 168.
- Althorp, Northamptonshire, seat of Lord Sunderland, ii. 312; iii. 51, 53, 125; earthquake at, iii. 91.
- Amazons in Persia, ii. 369.
- Ambassadors (*see* Embassies), encounter for precedence between the French and Spanish, 1661, ii. 135; iii. 195; narrative by Mr. Evelyn vindicating the King and his Servants, ii. 480 n; reprint of, 485-491; French and Spanish apply for



Ambassadors—*continued*.

- Irish soldiers, 1641 ; iv. 72 n, 84 ; tumults against the French, n, *ibid.* ; foreign, ordered to give up priests who were the King's subjects, 122 n ; Venetian, and the agent of the Duke of Florence, offended by the Parliament, 139 ; instructions to Sir Richard Browne, ambassador to France, 230-232 ; sent to France and Holland by the Parliament, 233 ; seat of the English disfigured at Charenton, 316.
- Amber, spider, &c., enclosed in, ii. 393.
- Amboise, Castle of, i. 78 ; Cardinal George D', his tomb, 65, 90.
- Ambrose, St., quoted, iii. 231.
- Ambrosian library at Milan, i. 273.
- Ammanati, Vincenzo, architecture of, i. 202.
- Amphitheatre at Venice, i. 88 ; at Perigueux, 92 ; of Vespasian, 134 ; at Verona, 266.
- Amsterdam, account of, 1641, i. 19-22.
- Anabaptists, their objection to oaths, ii. 94 ; increase of, 95.
- Anatomy, school of, at Leyden, i. 24 ; at Padua, 253, 260 ; at Oxford, ii. 56.
- Anchor, method of casting in Acts, i. 21 ; illustrated, ii. 432.
- Anchorite of Mount Calvary at Paris, ii. 8.
- Anderson, Sir Richard, ii. 374, 405.
- Andoyne, Abbot of, i. 36.
- Andrews, Dr. Launcelot, Bishop of Winchester, ii. 72, 348, 412.
- Angelico, an apothecary at Vincenza, i. 265.
- Angeloni, Signor, his medals, &c., i. 128, 193.
- Anglesea, Arthur Annesley, Earl of, Viscount Valentia, ii. 126, 232.
- Anio, cascade of the, i. 216.
- Anjou, Gasto Jean-Baptiste, Duke of, performs in an Opera, 1651, ii. 23 ; his embassy to Charles II., 116.
- Anne, of Denmark, Princess, afterwards Queen, ii. 464, 480 n ; iii. 45, 64, 68, 79, 123 ; her marriage, 213 *bis* ; refuses to dismiss Lady Marlborough, 101 ; William III. reconciled to, 119 ; entertained, when Queen, at Oxford, &c., 162 ; goes in procession to St. Paul's Cathedral, 163, 168, 169.
- of Austria, Queen Regent, iv. 344 ; message to Parliament of Paris, 337 ; agrees to erection of a Chamber of Justice, 1648, 339.
- Annunciata—Annunciata, churches of, i. 99, 109, 223.
- Antenor, founder of Padua, inscriptions to, i. 247.
- Anthonio, Capt., iv. 247, 276, 277, 287, 291 ; Sir Richard Browne's opinion of, 293, 296.
- Antibes, i. 93.
- Antichrist, final destruction of, iii. 75.
- Antoninus, Marcus Aurelius, Emperor of Rome, his baths, i. 196 ; column of, 200 ; his palace, *ibid.*
- Antonio Marco, singer, i. 218 ; an enameller, &c., at Paris, ii. 33.
- Antwerp, account of, 1641, i. 30-32.
- Apennines, passage over the, 1645, i. 229.



- Apiaries, transparent, notice of, ii. 57.
- Apollo, Temples of, i. 189.
- Apology for the Royal Party*, 1659, by Mr. Evelyn, i. xlii, cvii ; ii. 108 ; iii. 189, 195.
- Aponius, Peter, bust of, at Padua, i. 253.
- Appian Way, its extent, &c., i. 174, 175.
- Aqua Claudia, i. 208.
- Aqua Paula, fountain of, i. 172.
- Aquapendente, town of, i. 115.
- Arabian horses, account of some, ii. 437, 438.
- Ara, Cœli, church of, at Rome, i. 123, 160.
- Arc, Joan of, her statue, i. 75.
- Archæologia*, cited, ii. 320 n, 422 n.
- Architects in Rome, 1645, i. 218.
- Architecture, Parallel between Ancient and Modern*, 1664, by Mr. Evelyn, i. liii, cxii ; ii. 168, 171, 173 ; his directions for reprinting it, iii. 464 ; iv. 8, 9 ; M. D'Aviler's work on, 9, 10.
- Arconati, Cavaliero Galeazzo, his gift to the Ambrosian library, i. 273.
- Arden, John, conduct to Sir Richard Browne, iv. 343.
- Aretino, Pietro, epigram on, i. 251 n.
- Argyle, Archibald Campbell, Marquis of, ii. 84, 89 ; his son, 144 ; his rebellion, ii. 465 ; executed, 468 ; notices of, iv. 96, 97, 107, 125.
- Arlington, Sir Henry Bennett, Earl of, Secretary of State, various references to, ii. 136, 137, 143, 164, 172, 179, 181, 191, 198, 214, 220, 222, 235, 236, 237, 245, 247, 251, 253, 257, 260, 261, 263, 265, 266, 276, 283, 284, 289, 292, 294, 295, 300, 421 ; iii. 376, 377 ; Lord Chamberlain, ii. 319, 321, 325, 331, 355, 356, 420, 450 ; disappointment of being Lord Treasurer, ii. 275 n ; mulberry garden granted to, ii. 52 n ; his daughter, 284, 356 ; Goring House burned, ii. 303 ; his pictures, 323 ; rebuilt Euston church and parsonage, 326 ; his seat at Euston, 326-329 ; life and character, 329, 330 ; letters to, referred to, iv. 201 n, 205 n, 211 n, 224 n ; mentioned, 246 n ; died a Roman Catholic, iii. 1.
- Countess of, ii. 290, 406, 419 ; iii. 16, 29.
- House and Street in London, historical notice of, ii. 180 n, 366.
- Armourer, Sir James and Sir Nicholas, ii. 221, 222 ; iv. 219.
- Armoury at Genoa, i. 98 ; the Pope's in the Vatican, 166 ; at Florence, 225.
- Armstrong, Sir Thomas, ii. 209 ; his execution, &c., 433 and n ; iii. 128 and n.
- Army, proceedings for disbanding the, 1641, iv. 71 and n, 84, 85, 109, 110 and n ; money wanted for do., 72 ; provisions for the payment of, *ibid.* 82, 121 ; disbanded soldiers of, permitted to serve the States only, 84 ; tumults of the troopers, &c., 99, 101 ; Privy Council issues orders concerning, 103 ; guard of, kept at the Parliament Houses, 113 ; soldiers sent to Ireland, 124, 125, 132, 134 ;

Army—*continued*.

design of gaining the army for the King, 119, 120 ; increased and marched into Oxfordshire, 148 and n ; advancing to England, *ibid.* ; state of the Royal forces, 155, 187, 188 ; rebel army, 1648, i. 297, 298 ; expels the Parliament, ii. 107 ; Parliament's firmness in limiting the, iii. 141.

Arno, notice of the river, i. 102, 104.

Arnold, Michael, a brewer, against the seven bishops, 1688, iii. 49.

Arpino. *See* Cesari.

Arran, James Hamilton, Earl of, ii. 298, 476, 478 ; his marriage, iii. 42, 53.

— Lady Anne Spencer, Countess of, her death, iii. 461.

Arras, Spaniards defeated before, 1654, iv. 209 and n.

Arsenal at Florence, i. 227 ; at Venice, 249 ; at Geneva, 292.

Arundel, Capt. William, iv. 303.

Arundel and Surrey, Thomas Howard, Earl of, Earl Marshal, i. 13, 26, 35, 36, 37, 38, 197, 263, 268, 273 ; his last sickness, &c., 263 and n ; medals, &c., of, iii. 442.

— Henry Frederick Howard, Earl of, and Elizabeth Stuart, his Countess, 1649, i. 298 ; ii. 5 ; iv. 195 m.

— Henry Howard, Lord, married to Lady Mary Mordaunt, 1677, ii. 325 ; alluded to, 1680, 379.

— Earl of, Manor of Worksop belonging to, ii. 66.

Arundel of Wardour, Lord, 1660, ii. 109 ; 1664, 165, 260, 265, 441, 453, 466 ; 1687, Privy Seal, iii. 32.

Arundel House, various references to, ii. 90, 138, 139, 141, 147, 159, 214, 218, 227, 298 and n, 339. *See also* Howard and Norfolk.

— Street, notice of, ii. 299 n.

Arundelian Library, procured for the Royal Society by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxi ; ii. 214, 340.

— Marbles, procured by Mr. Evelyn for the University of Oxford, i. lxi ; ii. 225, 240.

Ascension-day, ceremony on, at Venice, i. 236 ; sports of Ascension-week, 243.

Ashburnham, Col., referred to, iv. 165 n ; Parliament sequesters the pay of, &c., iv. 75, 76 n, 93.

— Mr., ii. 224.

— Mr. John, iv. 147 n, 183 and n, 184, 185.

Ashley, Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper, Lord, 1671-72, ii. 261, 275.

Ashmole, Elias, Windsor Herald, ii. 79, 93, 102, 388 n, 470 ; his library, museum, portrait, and collection of coins, ii. 93 and n, 102, 336 and n ; iii. 441.

Ashted, Surrey, seat of Sir Robert Howard at, ii. 431.

Ashton, John, executed, 1691, iii. 92.

Ashurst, Sir Henry, iii. 129.

— Sir William, a subscriber, &c., to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 132 n, 134 n.

Ash Wednesday, observance of neglected in England, ii. 50.

Astley, Sir Jacob, Parliament sends to Ireland, 124 ; examined on O'Neal's affair, iv. 139.



- Atkins, Sir Jonathan, ii. 298.  
 — Sir Robert, Puisne Justice of the Common Pleas, ii. 353 n ; iii. 42 n.  
 Atterbury, Dr. Francis, Bishop of Rochester, iii. 158 and n.  
 Attorneys, number of reduced, iii. 149.  
 Atwood, Mr., iii. 42 n.  
 Aubert, Mr., employed by King Charles I. in confidential service, iv. 335.  
 Aubigny, Lord, Almoner to the Queen, ii. 31, 141, 142, 165 ; his character, 141.  
 Aubrey, John, his *History of Surrey* referred to, 221, 222 n.  
 Audley End, Essex, palace of the Earl of Suffolk, ii. 72, 249, 331, 418 n.  
 Auger, Sir Anthony, ii. 222.  
 Augier, Mr., Parliament sends him as agent to France, 1642, iv. 233 and n.  
 Augustine, St. D. Aurelius, citation from, iii. 231.  
 Augustus Octavianus Cæsar, Emperor of Rome, his aqueduct, i. 172 ; Temple of, at Puteoli, 187 ; Obelisk of, 204 ; his Mausoleum at Rome, *ibid.*  
 Aungier, Lord, ii. 74, 336.  
 Aurelius, Marcus, equestrian statue of, i. 121.  
*Aurum Potabile*, prepared by M. Roupel, ii. 48.  
 Austen, Col., a subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.  
 Austria, Don John of, iv. 314 and n.  
 Avernus, Lake, at Naples, i. 188.  
 Aviaries and Menageries, notices of various, i. 31, 34, 35, 63, 98, 129, 137, 208, 212, 216, 254 ; ii. 51, 84, 177, 178.  
 Avignon, account of, i. 89.  
 Axtell, Daniel, regicide, executed, ii. 118.  
 Aylesbury, Robert Bruce, Earl of, ii. 398 ; iii. 62.  
 — Sir Thomas, iv. 245 and n.  
 Ayliffe, Capt., ii. 181 n.  
 Ayscue, Sir George, captured by the Dutch, ii. 195.  
 BACKHOUSE, Sir William, iii. 6 n ; iii. 317 n.  
 Bacon, Sir Edward, ii. 326.  
 — Sir Francis, Viscount St. Alban, various references to, i. 98 ; ii. 165, 169 ; iii. 439, 443.  
 — Dr., at Rome, i. 117.  
*Bacula*, Treatises concerning, iii. 190 n, 372-374, 398.  
 Baden, Louis-Guillaume, Prince of, in London, 1694, iii. 112.  
 Baglione, Cavaliere Giovanni, paintings by, i. 120, 198.  
 Bagni di Tritoli, i. 189.  
 Bagnios at Venice, i. 235.  
 Baiaæ of the Romans, i. 183, 187, 190, 191.  
 Baker, Mr., his house on Epping Forest, ii. 242, 403.  
 — Capt., attempted the Northwest Passage, ii. 321.  
 — George, his *History of Northamptonshire* cited, ii. 315 n.  
 — Sir Richard, his *Chronicle* referred to, iii. 178.  
 Baldarius, Andrea, i. 252.  
 Baldassare. *See* Peruzzi.  
 Baldere, Dr., sermon of, ii. 123.  
 Ball, Sir Peter, ii. 141.  
 Ballad on the Queen Mother burned, 1641, iv. 75.  
 Ballard, George, his *Memoirs of Learned Ladies* referred to, ii. 235 n.



- Ballatine, Sir William, iv. 107 and n, 111; raised to the peerage, 107 n.
- Balle, Dr. Peter, his gift to the Royal Society, ii. 163.
- Balls Park, Hertfordshire, i. 40 n.
- Bamfield, — iv. 212.
- Banbury, Nicholas Knollys, Earl of, 1645, robbed in Italy, i. 173.
- Bancroft, Dr. Richard, Archbishop of Canterbury, his library, ii. 72.
- Bandinelli, Baccio, productions of, i. 106, 109, 224.
- Banditti in Italy, i. 173, 269; in France, ii. 23.
- Bank, for the poor in Padua, i. 253; of England established, 1694, iii. 114, 117, 134.
- Bankes, Sir John, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, 1641, iv. 72, 73, and n, 77, 78 m, 82.
- Lord, proposed as Speaker of the House of Peers *pro tempore*, 1641, 113.
- Banks, Sir John, an opulent merchant, ii. 321.
- Banqueting-house, touching for the Evil at the, ii. 115; creation of Peers there, 126; lottery held there, 166; auction of pictures at the, iii. 109.
- Bansted, Surrey, Roman medals, &c., found near, ii. 103.
- Baptism of a Turk and a Jew, i. 204; private, censured, iii. 74.
- Baptist, Signor Giovanni, musician, ii. 434, 441.
- Baptistery of San Giovanni, i. 102; of St. John Baptist, 146.
- Bar, defects in educating for the, iv. 23.
- Baratarius, Nicholas, architect, i. 243.
- Barbadoes, ii. 147, 184; conspiracy of Negroes at, 1693, iii. 107; trees, plants, &c., there, iii. 404.
- Barberini, Cardinal Francesco, his courtesy to the English, i. 146, 213.
- Palazzo, i. 124, 199.
- Barclay, John, his *Icon Animarum*, 1614, ii. 45 and n, 234 n.
- Lord George, mechanical occupations of, iii. 319.
- Mr. John, iv. 104, 106, 121, 137, 157.
- Bargrave, Dr. Isaac, Dean of Canterbury, ii. 279 and n.
- Barill, Mr., i. 297.
- Barillon, Mons., French Ambassador, 1685, iii. 13.
- Barlaeus, Gaspar, *Historia Rerum in Brasilia*, 1647, iii. 403.
- Barlow, Dr. Thomas, Bishop of Lincoln, ii. 55, 170, 226, 227, 239, 310; iii. 291.
- Francis, painter, notices of, ii. 82, 384; iii. 222 n; letter to Mr. Evelyn on dedicating a plate to him, iii. 222; answer to same, 223.
- Mrs., alias Walters, various notices of, ii. 7, 472, 473 n.
- Barnaby, Mr., iv. 26.
- Baron, Bernard, engraving from Titian by, ii. 101 n.
- Baronius, Cæsar, his sepulchre, i. 126.
- Barrow, Dr. Isaac, Bishop of Chester, sermon by, ii. 309 and n.
- Bartholomew Fair, 1648, i. 298.
- Bartolomeo. See Porta.
- Signor, musician, ii. 358, 391, 453.
- Barton, Mr. John, his death, ii. 47; referred to, iii. 202.

- Basil, Council of, original acts of the, ii. 55.  
 Basilisco at Ghent, i. 36.  
 Basire, Dr. Isaac, ii. 138, 152.  
 Bassano. *See* Ponte.  
 — Domenico, and his daughter, musicians, i. 259.  
 — Veronese, paintings of, i. 156.  
 Bassompierre, François de, his palace, i. 46; iv. 344.  
 Bastille at Paris, i. 53.  
 Bath, visit to, 1654, ii. 53.  
 — City of, given up by Prince Rupert, 1645, iv. 164, 166.  
 — John Grenville, Earl of, various references to, ii. 126, 321, 333, 398, 406, 444 and n, 450, 466; iii. 41; trial with, concerning an estate left by the Duke of Albemarle, 112, 131, 160; his death, 160.  
 — Henry Bouchier, Earl of, summoned by the Queen, 1641, iv. 100.  
 — Knights of the, ceremonies of their creation, 1661, ii. 125.  
 Bathurst, Dr. Ralph, Dean of Wells, ii. 193, 214, 225, 306 n; iii. 354; iv. 56 and n; his death, iii. 168.  
 — Mr., a merchant, ii. 309.  
 Bauli, notice of, i. 190.  
 Bavaria, Duke of, iv. 252, 253, 255.  
 Baxter, Lieutenant of the Tower, 1657, iii. 227 n.  
 Bayley, Dr., Vice-Chancellor of Oxford, 1636, iii. 175.  
 Baynards, at Ewhurst, Surrey, i. 297; described, ii. 91 and n.  
 Baynton, Sir Edward, his house at Spy Park, ii. 58.  
 Beach, Sir R., ii. 481.  
 Beale, Dr., letters of Mr. Evelyn to, on his *Acetaria*, and Hortulan collections, iii. 190-192; on philosophical subjects, and the means used for preserving his health, iii. 361-366.  
 — a tailor, discovers a plot against the Parliament, 1641, iv. 139.  
 Bear-garden, sports at the, 1670, ii. 245.  
 Beauchamp, Lady, ii. 79.  
 Beaufort, Henry Somerset, first Duke of, his house at Chelsea, ii. 346 n, 415; death of, iii. 148 and n; his family, ii. 402; iii. 7.  
 — Edward Somerset, Duke of, proceedings of, in Brittany, 1648, iv. 342.  
 Beaugensier, notices of, iii. 226 and n.  
 Beaumont, Francis, iii. 444.  
 — Herbert Van, iv. 228.  
 Beauvais, town of, i. 43.  
 Becher, Mr., ii. 230, 300.  
 Beckford, Lady, ii. 361, 381.  
 Bede, Venerable, MS. of, in the Bodleian Library, ii. 55.  
 Beddington, seat of the Carews, i. 6; ii. 103; iii. 154 and n.  
 Bedford, William Russell, Earl of, ii. 126, 231, 409, 441; protests against an order in the Commons, 1641, iv. 85 n.  
 — House, Bloomsbury, ii. 177 n.  
 Bedloe, William, a witness against Sir George Wakeman, ii. 352.  
 Bedsteads, splendid ones noticed, i. 98, 128, 258; ii. 146.  
 Befort, Monsieur, iv. 205 n, 206.  
 Belin, Mr., ii. 168.  
 Belinge, Col., iv. 330.  
 Bella, Stephano della, engraver ii. 12.



- Bellarmino, Cardinal Robert, his sepulchre, i. 125.
- Bellasis, Henry Lord, ii. 157, 171, 231 ; iii. 31.
- Governor, iv. 175 n.
- Bellcar, pictures possessed by, ii. 2.
- Belle Cour at Lyons, i. 87.
- Bellini, Giovanni, master of Titian, his portrait, ii. 120.
- Bells, various notices of, i. 22, 23, 65 ; ii. 69.
- Belluccio, Dr., of Sienna, i. 221.
- Belsize House, Hampstead, notice of, ii. 166 n.
- Belvidere Gardens, i. 167.
- Belvoir Castle, Lincolnshire, ii. 65.
- Bembo, Cardinal Pietro, i. 205.
- Benbow, John, Admiral, iii. 130, 136 n ; his gallantry and death, 164.
- Benedict VII., Pope, i. 206.
- Benetti, an artist in *Pietra Comessa*, i. 107, 227.
- Benevento, statue by, i. 109.
- Benlowes, Edward, references to, and notices of, ii. 70 and n.
- Bennett, Mr., allusions to, iv. 281 and n, 283, 290.
- Mrs., sister to Lord Arlington, ii. 164.
- Benson, Henry, M.P. for Knaresborough, 1641, Catholic protections sold by, iv. 122 n.
- Bentivoglio, Cardinal Guido, his gardens, &c., i. 206 ; Castle Bentivoglio, 233.
- Bentley, Dr. Richard, various references to, ii. 349 n ; iii. 113, 119, 136 n, 138, 478 ; iv. 11, 18, 29 ; delivers the Boyle lectures, iii. 102, 106, 111, 113 ; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, concerning a new edition of the *Sylva*, iv. 13 ; on the library in St. James's Park, 14.
- Bentley, Mr., a Bookseller, 1697, iv. 13.
- Bergamo, Damiano di, inlaying by, i. 230.
- Bergen-op-zoom, i. 29.
- Berkeley, George, first Earl of, various references to, ii. 103, 106, 107, 112, 151, 163, 198, 294, 303, 395, 412 ; ambassador to France for the treaty of Nimeguen, ii. 315, 319 ; seized with apoplexy, *ibid.* ; sets out for France, 316 ; commits his affairs to Mr. Evelyn, 317, 318, 321, 324.
- of Stratton, John, Lord, his house in London, ii. 285.
- Lord, bombards Dieppe and Havre, 1694, iii. 117.
- Lady, property of, from Berkeley Gardens, ii. 433.
- Sir John, iv. 246 and n ; danger from the Parliament, 93 and n ; arrested, 94 n ; sent to the Tower, 109 ; political intrigue of, 165 and n.
- Sir Robert, Puisne Justice of the King's Bench, his portrait, iii. 444 ; grandson of, ii. 421 ; examined by House of Peers, 114 ; sentence passed on him, 114 n.
- Mr. Arthur, iv. 123, 126.
- Sir Charles, ii. 135, 157.
- Mr. (son of Lord Berkeley), ii. 82, 83 ; iii. 211 n.
- House, described, ii. 194, 286 and n ; gardens of, built over, ii. 433 ; residence of Princess Anne, 1696, iii. 119.
- "Berkeley Castle," East India-man, sunk, iii. 113.
- Berkenshaw, Mr., musician, ii. 167.
- Berkshire, Charles Howard, Earl of, ii. 237, 313, 450.



- Berkshire, Thomas Howard, Earl of, iv. 155.  
 — or Cleveland House, ii. 213 and n.
- Bernini, Giovanni Lorenzo, sculptor and architect, i. 218 ; works of, 124, 128, 143, 145, 197, 224 ; ii. 10 ; instance of his various talents, 143.
- Bertie, Mr., ii. 195.
- Berwick, James Fitz-James, Duke of, engaged in the conspiracy, 1696, iii. 127.  
 — Garrison of, Parliament considers about paying off, iv. 83 ; jealousy respecting, 109 and n.
- Bestland, Cantlo, engraving by, iii. 108 n.
- Betchworth Castle, ii. 74.
- Betterton, Thomas, his theatre in Dorset Gardens, ii. 254 n.
- Beveridge, Dr. William, anecdote of, iii. 94.
- Beverley, notice of the town of, ii. 68.
- Bewdley, King Charles I. visits, iv. 152 n.
- Bianchi, a singer in Rome, i. 218.
- Bible, English MS. in the Bodleian Library, Oxford, ii. 55 ; various versions of the, 77.
- Biblia Polyglotta*, by Bishop Walton, ii. 46.
- Bickerstaff, Sir Charles, purchases Pilton, ii. 432.
- Bickerton, Mrs. Jane, daughter of Sir Robert, notices of, ii. 269 and n, 334 n, 337 n.
- Biddulph, Sir Theophilus, ii. 156.
- Bie, Jacques de, and Sieur de Bizot, their *Histoire Metallique*, iv. 4.
- Billiards, Portuguese manner of playing, ii. 360.
- Bills, Parliamentary, tacked to Money Bill, contested, iii. 151.
- Bindley, Mr. James, ii. 137 n.
- Biographia Britannica*, referred to, ii. 29 n, 175 n ; ii. 431 n ; iii. 85 n, 170 n, 192 n.
- Biographia Dramatica*, referred to, ii. 106 n.
- Birch, Dr. —, sermon by, against Papists, iii. 29.
- Birds, Royal Collection of, in St. James's Park, ii. 177.
- Birkenhead, John, his reply to the Jesuits, iii. 210.
- Bishopricks, proceedings for filling up those vacant, 1641, iv. 89, 96, 99 m and n, 113, 128, 129, 141 ; Parliament dislikes the measure, 114 and n, 116, 120.
- Bishops, impeached, proceedings against, 1641, iv. 69 n ; summoned by the Queen, 100 ; pamphlet against, 114 n ; King Charles's directions about a pardon for them, 114 m, 131, 135 ; proceedings in Parliament concerning, 112, 114, 116, 120, 129, 135 and n, 140 ; Parliament endeavours to take away their votes, 1641, 110, 112, 116 ; popular outcry against, 116 n ; inattentive to the Church at the Restoration, ii. 276 ; the six Bishops petition James II. against his declaration for liberty of conscience, iii. 47, 48 ; sent to the Tower, 48 ; trial of, 49 ; called upon to reconcile matters on the expected invasion, 1688, 55 ; the Bishops and Convocation at variance, 1701, 158.

- Blackburn, Cornet, Parliamentary generals bring him to trial, 1649, iv. 347.
- Blackheath, camp at, 1673, ii. 292 ; 1685, 473 ; 1690, iii. 89 ; fair on, 1683, ii. 404.
- Blacksmiths, ingenious works of, ii. 58.
- Blackwall, Dr. Boyle, lecturer, iii. 147.
- Blaew, William Jansen, i. 22.
- Blague, or Blagg, Mrs., ii. 237, 284, 305 *bis* ; marriage of, 309, 340-343. *See* Godolphin.
- Blake, Admiral, Robert, iv. 219, 240.
- Blandford, Dr. Walter, Bishop of Worcester, ii. 286.
- Blathwaite, Mr., Secretary at War, &c., iii. 40.
- Blechingly, Surrey, house of Henry VIII. at, ii. 77 ; sale of the manor of, 324.
- Blenheim, thanksgiving for the victory of, iii. 168 and n.
- Blois, notice of the town, &c., of, i. 76, 77.
- Blood, Colonel, account of, ii. 259.
- Bloomsbury Square, building of, ii. 177 ; Montague House erected in 319, 356 ; iii. 16.
- Blount, Sir Henry, ii. 107.
- Col. ii. 42, 75, 83, 93, 107.
- Bobart, Jacob, a botanist, and a descendant of, ii. 171 and n.
- Bodleian Library, Oxford, curiosities of the, ii. 55.
- Boet, Dr., ii. 20.
- Boggi, a sculptor, i. 144.
- Bohemia, Elizabeth, Princess Palatine and Queen of, i. 15 ; iv. 106 n, 112 n, 199 n ; letters (Aug. 1654 ; Jan. 1654-5), 208-226 ; character of her writing, 208 n ; her cypher, 211, 229 ; spleen against Queen Christina, 208, 210 and notes, 216, 222 ; fond of shooting, 209, 213, 215 ; Prince Adolphus of Sweden proposes for her daughter Sophia, 215 ; travels to see Queen Christina, 217, 218 ; gaiety at the Hague, 223 ; at a royalty at Tilling, 225 ; solicits a commission for Killebrew, 225, 226 ; Sir Richard Browne sent to, 1640, 228 ; her funeral, ii. 143 and n.
- Sophia, Princess of, daughter of preceding, Prince Adolphus of Sweden proposes for her in marriage, iv. 215.
- Bohun, Dr. Ralph, tutor to Mr. Evelyn's son, ii. 186, 214, 254 ; letter to, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 135 n ; living presented to him, iii. 157 ; Dr. Bathurst's legacy to, 168 ; character of Mrs. Evelyn by, iv. 49-54 ; notice of, 49 n ; sermon by, ii. 324 ; letters of Mrs. Evelyn to, iv. 55, 56, 57, 59, 61.
- Mr., his house and garden at Lea in Surrey, ii. 355, 397, 416.
- Bois-de-Boulogne, muster of gens d'armes in the, i. 73 ; referred to, ii. 12.
- Bois de Vincennes, Palace of, i. 53 ; ii. 11.
- Bois-le-Duc, fortifications, &c., of, i. 26.
- Bologna, descriptive account of, i. 229-231 ; Torre d'Assinello and churches, 230 ; palace of the Legate, *ibid.* ; Dr. Montalbano, St. Michel in Bosco, 231 ; religious houses, &c., 232 ; observations on, 233.



- Bologna, Baldassa di, painting by, i. 130.  
 — Giovanni di, sculptures of, i. 46, 108, 109.
- Bolognesi, Giovanni Francesco Grimaldi, called Il Bolognesi, painting by, i. 199.
- Bolsena, Lake of, i. 115.
- Bolton, Dr., his Consecration Sermon, ii. 155.
- Bombardment, a cruel species of warfare, iii. 123, 124.
- Bombs, experiments made upon, iii. 34.
- Bommell, town of, i. 17.
- Bond, Sir Thomas, his house at Peckham, ii. 320, 385.
- Bonifacio, Father, at Venice, i. 262.
- Bonnes Hommes, convent of, at Paris, i. 59; ii. 20.
- Books, various particulars concerning, i. 9 and n, 44, 166 n, 293; ii. 55, 56, 57, 67, 71, 166, 340.
- Booksellers, at Geneva, i. 290; loss of, by the fire of London, iii. 344; their edition of the classics censured, 347.
- Boord, Mad. de, censures the carving of Gibbon, ii. 258.
- Booth, Sir George, created Lord Delamere, ii. 126.  
 — Mr. ii. 16.
- Borell, Peter, work of, referred to, iii. 224.  
 — Mynheer, Dutch Ambassador in France, friend to Charles II. in exile, iv. 250 and n, 251, 256, 261, 262, 322.
- Boreman, Sir William, Clerk of Green Cloth, iii. 13.
- Borghese, Cardinal Scipio, houses of, i. 156, 214.
- Borghesi, Villa, i. 136-138, 212.
- Borromeo, Cardinals St. Charles and Frederick, ii. 301; burial-place, i. 270; munificence of, 271, 273.
- Boscawen, Mr., ii. 474; his daughter, iii. 134, 159.  
 — Mrs., ii. 341.
- Bosio, Antonio, his *Roma Sotterranea*, 1632, i. 211.
- Boswell, Sir William, iv. 106, 212; resident at the Hague, 106 n, 230.
- Boucharvant, Abbess of, ii. 24.
- Bouillon, Duke and Duchess of, i. 208.
- Boulanger, Sieur, counsellor, his sudden death, iv. 339.
- Boulogne, account of, i. 42.
- Bourbon, L'Archambaut, i. 86.
- Bourdeaux, 1653, iv. 279, 280, 286.
- Bourdon, Sebastian, his portrait of Mrs. Evelyn, ii. 3, 38; iv. 318.
- Bourges, account of, i. 84.
- Bowles, Sir John, ii. 423.
- Bowyer, Sir Edward, ii. 222; his seat at Camberwell, 92.
- Boyle, Richard, first Earl of Cork, ii. 168; iv. 83; anecdotes of, 39, 40.  
 — Hon. Robert, various references to, ii. 83, 107, 124, 144, 147, 170, 318; iii. 58, 88, 101, 106, 211 n; iv. 32, 33; experiment by, ii. 144; elected President of the Royal Society, ii. 374; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, on his *History of Trades*, and Ray's work on *Flowers*, iii. 192; enclosing certain Treatises of Arts, iii. 234-236; on *Essences of Roses*, 255; on his works on *Gardening*, 260-267; on a plan for a Mathematical College, 261-267; on



Boyle—*continued.*

- Mr. Boyle's *Seraphic Love*, 267-274; on a varnish and books of Mr. Boyle's, 280; on several new publications, 290; his death, and Bishop Burnet's funeral sermon, i. lxxv; iii. 99; particulars of him, communicated from Mr. Evelyn to Mr. Wotton, 479-487; iv. 1, 18, 19, 28, 29, 30-36, 38.
- Mr., killed in a sea-fight, iii. 392.
- Boyle Lecture, various notices of the, iii. 102, 106, 111, 119, 126, 129, 147.
- Boyne, battle of the, iii. 88, 90.
- Bracciano, Duke di, his house, i. 159.
- Bradshaw, George, of Balliol College, Oxford, i. 8.
- John (Regicide), ii. 1, 5, 17 n, 43.
- Bramante. *See* Lazzori.
- Bramhall, Dr. John, Archbishop of Armagh, ii. 116; iii. 20; iv. 270 n.
- Bramstone, Francis, Baron of the Exchequer, iii. 444; his son, i. 257, 259; ii. 231.
- Brandenburg, George William, Elector of, 1651, iv. 221.
- Elizabeth Charlotte, Electress of, 1654, iv. 226.
- Duke of, his present to the Royal Society, 1682, ii. 393; to the Queen, 1693, iii. 110.
- Brandon, Lord, Charles Gerard, trial and pardon of, iii. 11.
- Charles, Duke of Suffolk, painting of, ii. 338.
- Bray, Sir Edward, ii. 91 n.
- William, F.S.A., *History of Surrey* referred to, ii. 3 n, 169 n, 213 n, 221 n, 385 n, 439 n,

Bray—*continued.*

- 460 n; iii. 20 n, 41 n, 79 n, 106 n, 149 n; iv. 44 n, 62 n, 70 n, 78 n, 301 n; great age of, iii. 362 n.
- Brazen Tables at Lyons, i. 88.
- Breakwater at Plymouth, i. 99 n.
- Breames, Sir Richard, ii. 212.
- Breda, ship of war, blown up, iii. 91.
- Brederode, family of, i. 26; ii. 329.
- Brederoke, F.S.A., iv. 213.
- Brenta, fine country on its banks, i. 246.
- Brentford, Patrick Ruthen, Earl of Forth, iv. 214.
- Battle of, i. 39.
- Brereton, Lord, ii. 221.
- Mr. —, son of Lord Brereton, ii. 107.
- Brescia, account of, i. 265, 268.
- Brest, proceedings concerning the harbour of, iv. 288, 296, 299, 306, 309.
- Bret, Colonel, ii. 386.
- Bretagne, claims of the Admiralty of, on King Charles's prizes at Brest, iv. 287, 309.
- language, its great resemblance to the Welsh, ii. 310.
- Breton, Dr. John, sermon by, ii. 243.
- Mr., Vicar of Wotton, sermons by, ii. 137; his death, funeral sermon, and Mr. Evelyn's regret for, 273; iv. 61.
- Brett, Sir Edward, ii. 188.
- Brevell, Mons., ii. 272.
- Brevent, Dr. —, Dean of Durham, ii. 14.
- Breughel, Peter (called the Old), painting by, i. 34; ii. 242.
- John (called Velvet Breughel), i. 34, 273, 297; ii. 2.
- Brick Close, Deptford, granted to Mr. Evelyn, ii. 231.

- Brideoak, Dr. Ralph, Bishop of Chichester, ii. 309, 318.
- Bridgeman, Sir Orlando, ii. 261, 287, 321, 466; iii. 444; iv. 100 and n, 147 n.
- Mr., Clerk of the Council, his death, iii. 143.
- Mrs., ii. 426.
- Bridges, various particulars concerning, i. 46, 47, 62, 65, 68, 84, 87, 89, 102, 104, 113, 115, 181, 187, 208, 215, 266, 280, 292, 294; ii. 16, 67.
- Bridgewater, Parliament captures, 1645, iv. 164, 165 n.
- Francis Egerton, Duke of, his improvements, ii. 229 n.
- Brienne, Mons. le Comte de, iv. 250 and n, 313, 315.
- Brightman, Thomas, an expounder of the Revelation, iii. 88.
- Brill, Paul, paintings of, i. 60, 151, 164.
- Briloft, curious mechanism at the, i. 21.
- Brindley, James, engineer, notice of, ii. 229 n.
- Brisbane, Mr. —, Secretary to the Admiralty, 1681, ii. 381, 421.
- Bristol, ii. 53; St. Vincent's Rock at, 54; Prince Rupert surrenders, iv. 172, 173, 175 and n, 188.
- George Digby, Earl of, ii. 142, 146; iii. 444; his house and library at Wimbledon, ii. 143, 334, 335; house of, in Queen Street, 260.
- Countess of, ii. 415; iii. 52; her house at Chelsea, ii. 346, 349, 357, 414.
- John, Lord Digby, Earl of, summoned by the Queen, 1641, iv. 100; votes against "Instructions" to Commissioners at Edinburgh, 133; various references to, 110 and n, 136, 257 and n, 314 and n, 317 and n, 338.
- Brochi, Vincentio, sculptor, i. 227.
- Brodrick, Sir Alan, ii. 307; iv. 37.
- Broghill, Richard Lord, Plays by, ii. 180, 210 and n.
- Bromley, Mr. John, his house at Horseheath, ii. 248 n.
- Sir George, *Royal Letters*, 1787, referred to, iv. 106 n, 107 n, 129 n, 142 n, 208 n, 209 n, 213 n, 222 n, 229 n.
- Brompton Park, rare plants in, iii. 114.
- Bromwich, Dr., iv. 89.
- Bronzine, Agnolo, paintings by, i. 107, 226.
- Brooke, Francis Greville, Lord, his house at Warwick, ii. 62.
- Lady, her garden at Hackney, ii. 51.
- Seat of Lady Camden, ii. 64.
- Brooks, W., architect of the London Institution, ii. 285 n.
- Broomfield and Deptford, Kentish loyalists meet in, i. 297.
- Brouages, M., iv. 281.
- Brounker, William, Viscount, First President of the Royal Society, ii. 131, 150, 164, 325, 333; iii. 44, 481.
- Mr. Henry, ii. 261, 372; his house at Sheen, 339.
- Brown, Mr. —, detained in Holland, iii. 417.
- Sir Adam, of Betchworth, ii. 348, 460; iii. 164 n.
- Sir Ambrose, of Betchworth, ii. 74, 102.
- Sir Richard temp. Elizabeth and James I., ii. 401.



Browne, Serjeant, —, a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.

— Sir Richard, Ambassador to France, father-in-law of Mr. Evelyn, various references to, i. lxxvii, 45, 295; ii. 4, 12, 13, 14, 15 n, 23, 28, 31 and n, 35, 36, 44, 45, 113, 120 n, 121, 230, 257, 260, 297, 310; iv. 194 n, 195, 209 and n, 246 n, 250 n, 285; uncle to the Countess of Caernarvon, iv. 129 n; letter of thanks to, from Elector Palatine, 1643, 145; King Charles I.'s instructions and letters to, on his being sent to Elector Palatine, 1641, 228; on his going Ambassador to France, 230-232; directing him to revive claim to remainder of Queen Henrietta's dowry, 232; about the Parliament's agent in France, 1642, 233; on Queen Henrietta's Capuchins, 234; transports arms, &c., to King Charles I, in England, 1643, 334; baronetcy conferred on, 1644, *ibid.*; Correspondence with Sir Edward Hyde on affairs of Charles II. and of Europe, 1646-1659, 237, 243-325; great distress, 253, 263, 312, 332, 333, 334, 336, 337, 338, 343, 344; indebted for rent at Paris, 272, 276, 277; rent discharged by Sir R. Foster, 280, 282, 285, 287; his enemies, 256 n, 293 n; difficulties of the correspondence, 254, 260; warned of Mr. Holder, 269; sends a present to Charles II. at Paris, 292; sends money to Charles II., 294, 295, 298, 299, 300, 307; sends a present of money to Sir Edward

Browne—*continued.*

Hyde, 299, 300; desires instructions about Cromwell's minister at Paris, 1656, 313; about his continuing at Paris, 318, 320; anxious lest Charles I. should dispose of Says Court, his seat, among other Crown lands, 239; keeps up service of the English Church, 287 n, 344; extracts from letters to Sir Edward Nicholas, Lord Digby, Lord Jermy, &c., 327-345; his support of the Church while abroad, i. 14, 29 n, 401; disappointed of the wardenship of Merton College, Oxford, ii. 124; resigns the clerkship of Council, 272; master of the Trinity House, 289; his death and funeral, ii. 400; eulogium on, 400-402; debts owing to, from the Crown, iii. 37; dispatches of, iii. 409; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the death of his son, 244.

— Lady, ii. 41; her death, 45.

— Sir Thomas, ii. 268; his curiosities, 270.

Brownists, accuse King Charles I. of Popery, 1641, iv. 88; founder of the sect, 89 n; object to Common Prayer, 89.

Brownrigg, Dr. Ralph, Bishop of Exeter, iv. 89 m and n, 99 n, iii. 444.

Bruce, Robert, Lord, i. 245; ii. 82, 426.

Bruges, notice of, i. 36.

Brunker, Mr., iv. 114.

Brussels, account of, i. 32-35; ii. 326.

— *The late news from Brussels unmasked*, 1660, i. cvii; ii. 110 and n; iii. 195.



- Buat, Mons., brother to Admiral Van Tromp, ii. 213.
- Bucentaur, the Doge's vessel at Venice, i. 250.
- Buchanan, George, portrait referred to, ii. 234 n.
- Buckhurst, Thomas Sackville, Lord High Treasurer, iii. 443.
- Buckingham, George Villiers, First Duke of, ii. 79 and n, 86; iii. 443; impeached by Lord Bristol, iv. 110 n; referred to, 146 n, 217 n.
- George Villiers, Second Duke, ii. 8, 64, 172, 232, 261, 271, 334, 358; his *Rehearsal* performed, ii. 272 and n; his glass-work, 322; seat of, at Clifden, 354; his estate at Helmsly, iii. 131 and n.
- Duchess of, 1686, iii. 24.
- house erected, ii. 51 n.
- Buckle, Sir Christopher, ii. 103.
- Buda, thanksgiving on the capture of, 1686, iii. 26, 426.
- Buffaloes at Pisa, i. 103.
- Bulkeley, Sir Richard, chariot invented by, iii. 8.
- Mr., a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.
- Bull, Mr. —, F.R.S., ii. 131.
- Bullen, Mr., iv. 280, 324.
- Buonarroti, Michel Angelo, architecture of, i. 118, 123, 129, 130, 133; paintings by, 60, 61, 107, 150, 163, 170, 225; iii. 131; sculpture, &c., of, i. 106, 108, 145, 150, 152, 205, 224, 226, 229.
- Burghers, Michael, engraving by, ii. 171 n.
- Burial in Churches censured, ii. 402; iii. 74.
- Burleigh, Robert Cecil, Lord, picture of, in mosaic, i. 39; portraits and letters of, referred to, iii. 443; iv. 26.
- Burleigh, William Cecil, Lord, iv. 131.
- Burleigh on the Hill, ii. 64 and n; garden at, ii. 442; fire at, iii. 171.
- Burlington, Earl of, 1682, ii. 398; iii. 58, 481; iv. 18.
- Burnet, Dr. Gilbert, Bishop of Salisbury, Mr. Evelyn contributes to his *History of the Reformation*, ii. 381; iv. 26; his preaching, ii. 304; sermons by, ii. 394; iii. 68, 73, 85, 137, 150; funeral sermon for Mr. Boyle, 99; *Pastoral Letter* burned, 107; portrait, 77; various references to, ii. 197 n, 277 n, 289 n, 293 n, 350 n, 364, 370 n, 410 n, 442 n; iii. 19 n, 22 n.
- Burrow Green, Cambridgeshire, Mr. Hingsby's house at, ii. 247 and n.
- Burton, Mr. Sheriff, of Surrey, ii. 423.
- Mr., of Honson Grange, ii. 449.
- Robert, *History of the Civil Wars* cited, 175 n, 234 n.
- Bury St. Edmunds, Suffolk, Abbey and Town of, ii. 325.
- Busby, Dr. Richard, theatrical performance of, iii. 176 n.
- Bushell's Wells at Enstone, Oxfordshire, ii. 169 and n.
- Butler, Mrs., ii. 305 n.
- Byron, Sir John, first Lord, ii. 33; family seat at Newstead Abbey, 66; iv. 139 n.
- Lord, 305 n.
- CABINETS, of inlaid leather, ii. 24; Indian, 146.
- Cade, Dr., a Commissioner of Greenwich Hospital, iii. 132 n.

- Cadiz, bombardment of, 1695, iii. 123.
- Caen, Town and Abbey of, i. 67.
- Caernarvon, Robert Dormer, Earl of, Queen Henrietta directs him to attend in Parliament, iv. 129, 137; killed at the battle of Newbury, 129 n.
- Charles Dormer, Earl of, i. 288.
- Cæsar, C. Julius, Emperor of Rome, obelisk erected to, i. 139, 140.
- Augustus Octavianus, Emperor of Rome, i. 201. *See* Augustus.
- Cagliari, Paolo, called Veronese, paintings by, i. 60, 61, 226, 241, 248; ii. 153.
- Cajetan, Cardinal, his palace, i. 202.
- Calais, notices of, i. 41; ii. 6.
- Calcography, History of*, by Mr. Evelyn, 1662, various notices of, i. cix; ii. 122, 147 and n.; iii. 190, 195, 448, 465.
- Caldwell, Mrs., married to Mr. George Evelyn, i. 11; iii. 145 and n.
- Caligula, C., Emperor of Rome, bridge of, i. 187.
- Calista*, a comedy performed at Court, 1674, ii. 305; account of it, *ibid.*
- Cambridge, descriptive remarks on the colleges, &c., 1654, ii. 70-72.
- Camden, William, Clarenceux King of Arms, iii. 296, 444; iv. 21; his *Britannia*, edition of 1695, additions to Surrey, furnished by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 120.
- Lady, her seat at Brook, ii. 64.
- Camomile-flowers, fumes of, for the head-ache, ii. 4.
- Campania, notice of, i. 176.
- Campanile, at Pisa, i. 101.
- Campion, Edmund, his portrait, i. 198.
- Campo di Fiori, at Rome, i. 199.
- Martio, at Vincenza, i. 266.
- Martius, at Geneva, i. 290, 292.
- Santa, at Pisa, i. 102; at Rome, 159.
- Scelerato, at Rome, i. 131.
- Vaccino, at Rome, i. 119, 120.
- Can, Dr., sermon by, ii. 432.
- Canary Merchants desire a new charter, ii. 172.
- Cannes, notice of the town of, i. 93.
- Cannon, of leather, i. 42; remarkable one at Ghent, 35; at Havre, 67; at Venice, 249, 250.
- Canterbury, Archbishop of, House of Peers makes order about his jurisdiction, iv. 113.
- Cathedral, notices of, i. 37; ii. 176.
- Capel, Arthur, Lord, ii. 79; his trial and death, 1649, 2, 3 and n, 114, 363; referred to, iv. 119 n, 147 n.
- Sir Henry, afterwards Lord Capel of Tewkesbury, ii. 218, 349, 475; iii. 101, 110; his house at Kew, ii. 339, 421; iii. 45.
- Arthur, created Earl of Essex, 1661, ii. 126.
- Capellus, Mons., iii. 77.
- Capitol at Rome described, i. 120-123.
- Caprarola, palace of, near Rome, i. 219.
- Capua, notice of, i. 176.
- Capuchins of Rome, i. 200; Queen Henrietta's cloister of, complained of, iv. 71 n; recommended to be dissolved, 1641, 90; proceedings in Parliament about, 122 and n, 234.



- Carabines, manufactory of, at Brescia, i. 268.
- Caracci, Agostino, gallery painted by, i. 118.
- Annibale, paintings of, i. 125, 170, 200, 220, 231, 232; ii. 120, 133.
- Ludovico, fresco-painting by, i. 231.
- Caravaggio, Polydore Caldara, i. 126, 203.
- Cardenas, Don Alonzo, Spanish Ambassador, 1641, iv. 73 and n. 183 n.
- Cardi, Ludovico, called Cigali, i. 60.
- Cardigan, Thomas Brudenell, Earl of, his creation, 1661, ii. 126.
- Cardinal's hat given at the Vatican, i. 138.
- Carew, family and seat at Beddington, ii. 103; iii. 116, 154 and n.
- Mr., a performer on the harp, ii. 5.
- John, regicide, executed, ii. 118.
- Carle, Dr. Walter, Bishop of Winchester, his vote taken away, 1641, iv. 114 n.
- Carlingford, Lord, ii. 260; new fuel projected by, ii. 221.
- Carlisle, James Hay, Earl of, iii. 443.
- Charles Howard, Earl of, his creation, 1661, ii. 126; complained of by the Court of Muscovy as Ambassador, ii. 157 n.
- Garrison of, Parliament pays off, 1641; iv. 83; surrender of 1645, 173 n.
- Lucy Percy, Countess Dowager of, iv. 92; character of, 92 n.
- James Hay, first Earl of, iv. 92 n.
- Carmarthen, Thomas Osborne, Lord, 1701, iii. 82, 157.
- Carnivals at Naples, i. 181; at Rome, 207; at Venice, 246, 259.
- Caroline of Brandenburg, Queen of George II., ii. 218 n.
- "Carolus Quintus," a captured vessel, ii. 185.
- Carr, Sir Robert, ii. 164; pilloried for a libel, ii. 228.
- William, Lord, of Cessford, iv. 82, 87 and n.
- Carrara, marble quarries at, i. 101.
- Carshalton, Surrey, ii. 103.
- Carte, Thomas, *Life of James, Duke of Ormond*, referred to, iv. 207 n. 218 n.
- Carteret, Sir George, Treasurer of the Navy and Vice-Chamberlain, ii. 7, 116, 142, 149, 154, 162, 261; iii. 28; iv. 239, 246 and n. 247, 249 and n. 255 and n. 264, 265, 268, 269, 272, 276, 277, 278, 279, 293, 306, 325; services to Charles II., 1651, 249 n; 1652, 255 n; 1653, 274 n; Sir Richard Browne's and Sir Edward Hyde's friendship for, 279; his daughters, ii. 154, 159.
- Carthusian Church and Monastery, i. 179.
- Cartwright, Colonel, ii. 263.
- Dr., Archdeacon of St. Alban's, his library, iii. 50.
- Dr., Dean of Ripon, Sermon by, iii. 24.
- William, his *Royal Slave*, iii. 415 n.
- Cary, Patrick, brother of Lord Falkland, i. 117.
- Mrs., ii. 77, 90.
- Casaubon, Isaac, hints for a Treatise *De Baculis*, left by, iii. 371, 372.



- Casaubon, Dr. Meric, correspondence of, with Mr. Evelyn on his father's Treatise *De Baculis*, &c., iii. 371, 372, 374, 398.
- Cascade of the Anio, i. 216.
- Cashibury, Hertfordshire, seat of the Earl of Essex, ii. 361-363.
- Casimir, John II., King of Poland, 1654, iv. 221, 222.
- Castel-Franco, Giorgione del, i. 237.
- Castel-Mellor, Count di, his character, &c., ii. 334, 470.
- Castile, Don Michael de, iv. 319, 320.
- Castillion, Dr., Prebendary of Canterbury, Sermon of, ii. 320.
- Castle, Mrs., her marriage, ii. 423.
- Castlehaven, Lord, ii. 398, 406.
- Castlemaine, Lady, satire on, &c. ii. 229.
- Castlenau, Marquis of, iv. 246 and n. 264, 270, 271, 279, 297, 369; admits Charles II.'s cruisers into France, 1653, 270.
- Castles, notices of, various, i. 16, 27, 39, 41, 42, 59, 66, 68, 77, 78, 81, 84, 89, 93, 178, 194, 268, 284, 285.; ii. 6, 65, 66, 479. See Fortifications.
- Cat, singular kind of, probably the Moccock, ii. 92.
- Cats, remarks on the sight of, iii. 363.
- Cataline*, tragedy of, ii. 233.
- Catanea, earthquake at, 1693, iii. 107, 469.
- Catharine, Infanta of Portugal, Queen of Charles II., various references to, ii. 145, 147, 166, 194, 209, 217, 245, 258, 345, 407; iii. 57; arrival of, ii. 139, 145; her person, 145; furniture of, 146; procession on the Thames in honour of, 150;
- Catharine—*continued*.  
her toilet, 146, 291; birth-day of, 1668, ii. 232; 1672, 288; 1684, 436; grief on Charles's death, 444, 448, 451, 452; remains in England, iii. 48.  
— Hall, Cambridge, ii. 72.
- Cathedrals, notices of, *in England*, i. 37, 39; ii. 53, 59, 61, 62, 67, 68, 70, 480; *abroad*, i. 30, 33, 43, 48, 61, 85, 87, 88, 90, 92, 102, 111, 179, 220, 269, 270, 292, 294; St. Peter's at Rome, 138-146; St. John Lateran, 146-150.
- Catta Malata, equestrian statue of, i. 248.
- Cavalerizzo at Florence, i. 109; at Naples, 180.
- Cave, Sir Richard, iv. 229 and n.  
— Dr., sermon of, ii. 360.
- Cecil, Robert, Earl of Salisbury, his portrait and letters referred to, i. 39; iii. 433; iv. 26.
- Cedar of Bermuda, iii. 405.
- Centi Camerelli, notice of the, i. 191.
- Cercean Promontory, &c., i. 174.
- Cesare, Giuseppe, called D'Arpino, paintings, &c., of, i. 122, 126, 142, 146, 214.
- Cestius, C., tomb of, at Rome, i. 196.
- Chamberlain, Captain, iv. 278 n.
- Chambers, Mr., iv. 332.
- Chambourg, palace of the French kings at, i. 76.
- Chamois Goats, account of, i. 284.
- Champneys, Justinian, his imprisonment and portrait, iii. 158 n.
- Chandos, Duke of, carving of Gibbon bought by, ii. 255 n.
- Chanterell, portrait of Mr. Evelyn by, i. 4.

Chaplain, Dr., said to be the author of the *Whole Duty of Man*, iii. 104.  
 Chapman, Captain, iv. 247 n.  
 Chardin, Sir John, various references to, ii. 368, 421, 425, 429, 430 ; iii. 25, 37, 41, 171.  
 Charenton, Protestant Church at, i. 61 ; monument there, ii. 9 ; zealots of, disfigure chair for English Ambassador at, 1656, iv. 316.  
 Chariot invented by Sir R. Bulkley, iii. 8.  
 Charitable Uses, &c., Commission of inquiry concerning, ii. 147, 151.  
 Charité, Hospitals of La, i. 52, 87 ; ii. 12.  
 Charles I., King of England, various references to, i. 10, 11, 38, 39, 273, 288, 296 ; ii. 1, 43, 49, 65, 68, 101, 155, 357 ; iii. 28 n. 42, 106 n, 168 ; iv. 228 n, 240 ; visits Oxford with the Queen, 1636, i. 8 n ; iii. 176, 177 ; procession, 1640, to the Short Parliament, i. 10 ; on his return from the North, 11 ; on proclamation of peace, 1642, 38 ; martyrdom of, 1649, ii. 2 ; paintings, &c., dispersed, *ibid.* ; restoration of ditto, 114 ; his effigies thrown down, 5 ; daily forms of Prayer ordered by, 30 ; his burial-place, 52 ; his murderers tried and executed, 118 ; Fast on his Martyrdom ordered, 1661, 122 ; prayers used on it altered, 1689, and Dr. Sharp's sermon on, iii. 67 ; sermon on, by Stephens, 1700, 149 ; his instructions to Mr. (afterwards Sir Richard) Browne, on his going to Elector Palatine, 1640, 228-230 ;

Charles I.—*continued.*

and on his going Ambassador to France, 1641, 230 ; letters to and from Secretary Nicholas, 1641-48, iv. 69-192 ; proceedings previous to departure for Scotland, 1641, 69 n ; joyfully received at Edinburgh, 70 ; marginal answers of, to various letters, 70 and n, 71, 72, 73, 75, 76-80, 82, 85-89, 90-97, 98, 99, 101, 102-110, 112-114, 116, 117, 120, 123-126, 127, 128-135, 148, 149, 301 n ; orders the Army to be disbanded, 71 m ; engages to transport four Irish regiments for Spanish service, 73 ; directs a general pardon to be published, 76, 77, 78 ; remark on Parliament's objections to his free pardon, 78 m ; directs an inquiry into an attack on the deer in Windsor Forest, *ibid.*, 81 ; proceedings about forfeiture of Londonderry, 79 m ; sanguine about his Scottish affairs, 80 m, 86 m ; confidence in Sir H. Vane, 80, 81 n ; makes the usual allowance to merchants by Act of Tonnage and Poundage omitted by Parliament, 81 ; directs the disposal of his collar of rubies, 86 m, 91 m, 106 m, 117 ; suspected of Popery, 88 ; Sir Edward Nicholas advises him about the vacant Bishopricks, 89, 114 ; and on Common Prayer, 89 ; his directions about the Bishopricks, 89 m ; recommended to dissolve cloister of Capuchins, 90 ; refers the matter to the Queen, *ibid.* m ; his remark on Parliament inquiring into his Revenue,



Charles I.—*continued.*

91; commands certain Lords to attend in Parliament, *ibid.* m; his plans for countermining plots of the Factions, 93 m, 97 m, 101, 105 and m, 130 m, 132 m; treacherous counsellors about his person, 94, 109, 117, 128; urged to hasten to England, 85, 94, 98, 102, 103, 110, 117, 124 and n, 126, 127, 128, 130, 134; Lord Mayor, &c., desire to attend him through London, and purpose giving him an entertainment, 95, 102, 124 and m, 126, 136, 137; fills up the vacant Bishopricks, 99 m and n; honourable sentiment of, on the trial of Marquis of Montrose, &c., 98 m; advised to prorogue Irish Parliament, 103; firm in the doctrines of the Church, 104 and m, 111, 113, 170; his counsels betrayed, 109; directs Lord Bristol to renew a dispute between the two Houses of Parliament, 110 m; anecdote of, respecting Ireland, 112 n; directions on House of Peers choosing their own speaker, 113 m; supports the Bishops' votes, 114; division in his council-board, 117; letter to Queen Henrietta, with injunction to secrecy, *ibid.*; intreated by Sir Edward Nicholas to prevent his letters being disclosed, *ibid.* 128; charged with instigating Irish rebels, 122 n, 132, 139, 141, 171; directs the attendance of all Members of Parliament, 114, 123, 130, 132, 134, 137; promises protection to Sir Edward Nicholas, 126 m; endeavours to stop the

Charles I.—*continued.*

progress of Parliament's instructions to commissioners at Edinburgh, 129 m; thanks the Earl of Bristol and Lord Digby for opposing, 133 m, 134 m; anxious to stop the progress of Commons' remonstrance, 130 m; pardons the 13 Bishops, 131, 135; declares against orders of Parliament made without him, 136; gentry of Hertfordshire desire to welcome him, 139. 143; his return, 145 n; speeches by Mayors of different towns on his return from Scotland, 145 n; at Oxford, 1644, 146; his military affairs decline, 148 n; his memorial for the Treaty of Uxbridge, 152; instructs Mr. Brown to revive claim to remainder of Queen Henrietta's dowry, 1642, 232; issue of the suit for, 1644, 334; directions to Mr. Browne on the Parliament's agent obtaining an audience in France, 233; and letter to, on Parliament's treatment of Queen Henrietta's Capuchins, 234; French Queen sends money to, 1643, 334; arms, &c., sent to, 1643, from France, *ibid.*; orders a fast, for a blessing on the Treaty of Uxbridge, 1644, 148; directs Sir Edward Nicholas to talk with the Parliament's Commissioners on their rebellion, &c., 149; determines not to treat without Marquis Montrose, 147, 150; directions, &c., about treaty of Uxbridge, 149, 150, 151; his Memorial on Religion and the Militia, 151; his retreat from Oxfordshire to Bewdley, 152 n; defeats Waller



Charles I.—*continued.*

at Cropredy Bridge, 153 n ; state of his affairs before battle of Marston Moor, *ibid.*, 153 n ; directs Prince Rupert to relieve York, &c., 154 ; council of war held at Oxford daily, 153 n ; ditto on Parliament's propositions (Dec. 1644), 155-158 ; state of his army (June, 1645), and anxiety to relieve Oxford, 158, 159, 160 ; plans before battle of Naseby, 162, 163, and n ; proceedings after that battle 163 n ; determines to adhere to the propositions at Uxbridge (Aug. 1645), 167 ; his intercepted private correspondence published, *ibid.*, 168, 169, 170, 171 ; his contempt for the Parliament, 167 ; route from Bridgenorth to Newark, 168 ; constant to the Church, his friends, &c., 170 ; state of his affairs, *ibid.* ; complains that the Parliament did not publish his correspondence fairly, 171 ; his plans, &c., 172 ; displeasure at surrender of Bristol (Sept. 1645), *ibid.*, 175 ; and orders against Prince Rupert, &c., 173-175 ; orders Oxford to be cleared of disaffected, 176 ; his intention of joining Montrose, 177 ; observation on the conduct of Attorney General Sir E. Herbert, 178 ; his design to break through the rebel army to Oxford, 179 ; writes to Sir Henry Vane the younger, for his interest that he might come to London, &c. (Mar. 1646), 181, 182 ; taken prisoner by Colonel Hammond, 183 n ; promises exacted by, on his going to the Scots, 183, 191 ; directions for

Charles I.—*continued.*

the surrender of Oxford, 184-186 ; anxiety about his Cabinet, &c., 186 and n ; remarks in a Glasgow publication, on his refusing Scottish propositions, 1646, 187 n ; reasons for his sending his propositions to London, 1646, 187-189, 188 n ; letter to Speaker of the House of Peers (March 1647), for his Chaplains to attend him, 189 ; thanks Sir Edward Nicholas for his services, and recommends him to his son, 192 ; speech to Commissioners at Newport, Dec. 1648, *ibid.* ; libel against by Marsys, 194, 195 ; author of *Eikon Basiliæ*, 190 n, 194 n.

Charles II. crowned by the Marquis of Argyle, 1651, iv. 96 n ; order of the Parliament concerning his education, 1641, 119 n ; his servants examined by the Parliament, 123 ; various references to, i. 295 ; ii. 7, 8, 33, 37, 51 n, 68, 94, 96, 106 n, 109, 118, 122, 125, 131, 132, 133, 135, 136, 137, 140, 141, 142, 148 n, 151, 153, 156, 157, 158, 163, 166, 172, 174, 180, 181, 183, 184, 192, 193, 196, 197, 213, 215, 216, 217, 218, 220, 221, 231, 235, 251, 252, 254, 256, 258, 264, 267, 269, 275, 276, 280, 283, 284, 285, 290, 302, 304, 307, 322, 346, 354, 355, 371, 407, 408, 415, 416, 418, 419, 420, 438, 471, 472 n, 479 n ; iii. 15, 61, 62, 99, 111, 151, 464 ; iv. 164, 165, 167, 173, 192, 193 n, 205 n, 206 n, 208, 209, 211, 214, 215, 217, 218 and n, 219,

Charles II.—*continued.*

and n, 222, 225, 226, 227, 239, 241, 243, 244, 250 n, 251 and n, 253 and n, 256, 257 and n, 260; his tutors and residence, 165 n; letters on his affairs, 1641-1659, 243-325; goes from Jersey to Paris, 1646, 243; at St. Germain's, 1648, 341; letters of Sir Edward Nicholas on his affairs, 1649, 195-197; documents respecting his counsellors, and promise to Sir Edward Nicholas, 197; letters to the same, 1650, on his affairs in Scotland (aversion to the Presbyterians), 198; to Mrs. Twisden, about the George and seals of King Charles I., 200; to Mr. Hinton, respecting bills of exchange for his use, *ibid.*; to Sir John Grenville, to procure arms, &c., 201; accused of Popery, 247 n; expedition to Scotland alluded to, 198 n, 240, 344, 345; letter to Sir Edward Nicholas, 1652, on his affairs, 204; notices of his Court at Cologne, 224 n; anecdote of the King and Killegrew, 225 n; letter from the States of Holland, &c., concerning his residence at Tilling, 227; design of putting places in Scotland and Ireland into hands of Holland, 257; thanks Borell, Dutch Ambassador in France, for kindness, 251, 261; his answer to complaint of Venetian Ambassador against his Envoy, 258, 259; state of his affairs, 261; hopes from the German Princes, 1652, 266 n; French King and Queen pay a visit to, 269 n; indignity offered to his

Charles II.—*continued.*

cruisers at Brest, 270; English Journals caricature his Court, 270 n; 1653, reported present of the King of Denmark to, 269 n; fleet under Prince Rupert, 274 n, 275 n, 277 n; proceedings ridiculed in English Prints, 278 n, 280 n, 281 n; rich prizes taken by his cruisers, 284 n; *see* Prizes; injury to his affairs from defeat of Dutch fleet, 284 n; directions about defraying Sir Richard Browne's house-rent at Paris, 287; his distresses in exile, 1652, 253, 255, 261 n, 262 and n, 264, 266 n; 1653, 269, 273 n, 294 n; 1655, 305; letter to Sir E. Nicholas, Sept. 1653, 205-207; at Chantilly, 291, 293; Sir Richard Browne sends money to, 294, 295, 298, 299, 300, 307; 1654, designs leaving France, 302; letter to the Duke of Gloucester, on attempt to pervert his religion, Nov. 1654, 206; at Cologne, 224 n; shipping shut out from Brest, 306, 308; 1655, at Frankfort, 308 and n; anxious to get into Flanders, 310 and n; 1655-6, discharges a debt due to Mons. Marces, 307, 310; difficulty in keeping his adherents together, &c., 311; 1656, state of his affairs, 319, 321, 322; escape of, after the battle of Worcester, ii. 31, 32; iii. 410; Mr. Evelyn's letter in defence of, against a pretended paper from Brussels, ii. 111; his declaration to Parliament, &c., and address to, ii. 112; triumphal return of, to London, 113; Mr. Evelyn's correspon-



Charles II.—*continued.*

dence with Col. Morley, previous to the Restoration, iii. 180-183; *Mystery and Method of his Restoration*, 183 n; entertained at Guildhall, ii. 114; touches for the evil, *ibid.*; his speech to Parliament, 116; Peers, &c., created by, 126; account of his progress and coronation, 1661, 126-130; Mr. Evelyn's *Panegyric* on it, 130; iii. 189, 195; opens Parliament, and declares his intention of marrying, ii. 131; miniature painting presented to him by Mrs. Evelyn, *ibid.*; day of his Restoration kept, 132; sailing match with the Duke of York, 134; his design of rebuilding Greenwich Palace, 143; his marriage with Catharine of Portugal, 145; in danger at sea, 147; commends Mrs. Evelyn's writings, and explains his plan of building Whitehall, 171; his favour to the Royal Society, 149; visit to Mr. Evelyn, 158; thanks him for his *Mystery of Jesuitism*, 176; prorogues the Parliament, 1665, 179; visits the fleet after victory, 1665, 185; gracious reception of Mr. Evelyn after the plague, 191, 192; exertions and proclamation of, at the fire of London, 202, 207 n; orders thanksgiving after fight with the Dutch, 1666, 195; visits the fleet, 196; assumes the Persian habit, 210; dines in ancient state, 222; gaming and gaiety at Court, 228, 229; project for procuring a divorce, 1669, 244 and n; commands Mr. Evelyn

Charles II.—*continued.*

to write the *History of the Dutch War*, 246, 252, 256, 299, 301, 302; at Newmarket, 248, 266; at Euston, with Mad. Querouaille, 267; conduct of, to Lord Arlington, 275 n; visits the fleet, 283; attachment to Mrs. Frances Stuart, 301 n; his library at Whitehall, 369, 370; alarm of, at the Rye House Plot, 412; profligacy of his Court, 440, 448; his sickness and death, 441-444; conduct in his last hours, 444; character of, *ibid.*; iii. 1; funeral of, 449 and n; papers proving him to be a Roman Catholic, 1-4; anniversary of his Restoration neglected, 1686, iii. 22, 1692, 103; causes of his death, 118; Order of Regicides for his apprehension, 410.  
 "Charles," ship of 110 guns, launching of, ii. 229.  
 Charles III., of Spain, in England, 1704, iii. 167.  
 — V., statue of, i. 36; his horse-armour, 225; hearse, or trophy of, 230.  
 — IX., letters of, referred to, iv. 26.  
 Charles Gustavus X., King of Sweden, 1654, iv. 221, 223, 307, 316.  
 Charleton, Dr., his lecture on the heart, ii. 403.  
 — Mr., various references to, ii. 319; iii. 29, 86, 99, 442, 460.  
 Charlton, Kent, Sir H. Newton's house at, ii. 39, 48, 79, 167.  
 — Robert, of Whitton, iv. 91 n.  
 Charmont, notice of, i. 78.  
 Charnock, Robert, executed, iii. 128.



- Charter-House, London, noticed, ii. 91.  
 Charts of the British Coast, ii. 400.  
 Chasteauneuf, Mons. le, iv. 321 n.  
 Châtelets at Paris, i. 52 ; question given at the, ii. 21, 22.  
 Châtre, Claude de La, i. 85.  
 Chaucer, Geoffrey, referred to, ii. 52 ; iii. 444.  
 Chavigny, Mons. de, iv. 334.  
 Chaworth, Lord, ii. 65.  
 — Dr., ii. 161.  
 Cheapside Cross, London, destroyed, i. 40 ; ii. 63.  
 Cheke, family of, seat at Burrow Green, ii. 247.  
 Chelsea, Duke of Buckingham's house, &c., at, ii. 346 and n, 349, 357, 415 ; Apothecaries' Garden at, 474 ; Winstanley's Waterworks there, iii. 132 and n.  
 — College, prisoners of war confined at, ii. 177, 181 ; given to the Royal Society, 225, 236 ; purchased to erect the Royal Hospital, 385, 390, 394, 397.  
 Cheney, Lord, and his son, iii. 83, 103, 131.  
 Chenonceaux, Castle of, i. 84.  
 Chester, the King's intent of summoning, 1645, iv. 157 ; in danger, 188.  
 Chesterfield, Philip Stanhope, Earl of, ii. 12, 240, 247, 360.  
 Chetto di San Felice at Venice, i. 246.  
 Chetwin, Mr., sermon of, iii. 32.  
 Chevereux, Duchess of, iv. 321 n ; Parliament discovers her cypher, 142 ; anecdote of, *ibid.* n.  
 Chevreux, notice of, i. 82.  
 Chichester, Francis Leigh, Lord Dunsmore, Earl of, iv. 147 n, 155.  
 Chichley, Sir Thomas, ii. 197, 199, 200, 249.  
 Chiesa Nova, at Rome, i. 126, 156, 160, 210.  
 Chiffinch, Mr. Thomas, the King's closet keeper, ii. 139 ; letter to, from Mr. Evelyn, on making a catalogue of the King's curiosities, iii. 283 and n.  
 Child, Sir Josiah, his great wealth and seat, ii. 402.  
 Chillingworth, William, iii. 444.  
 Chilston, Kent, seat of Mr. Hales at, ii. 194.  
 Chimes, at Amsterdam, i. 21, 22 ; at Venice, 238.  
 China, curiosities from, ii. 165 ; account of, by Mr. Vander Douse, translated by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 285 ; list of books on, then published, *ibid.* n.  
 Chiswell, Richard, bookseller, iv. 26.  
 Chiswick, Lady Fox's house at, ii. 398, 405.  
 Chi Vali, licentious custom of, at Padua, i. 258.  
 Choppines of the Venetian ladies, i. 244.  
 Choquex, Mons., iv. 265, 271, 290, 297.  
 Christ Church, Oxford, ii. 56.  
 — College, Cambridge, ii. 72.  
 Christ's Hospital, at Rome, account of, i. 171, 172 ; in London, ii. 91 ; iii. 34.  
 Christina, Queen of Sweden, ii. 218 n, 372 ; iv. 208, 209, 210, 213, 216, 217, 218, 225, 226, 308 ; gives an assignation to

Christina—*continued*.

the French Ambassador, 208 ; anecdotes of, *ibid.* n ; her meeting with Prince of Condé, 219 and n ; at Brussels, 1654, 222.

Christmas Eve, ceremonies on, in Rome, i. 159.

— Day, in Rome, i. 123, 160 ; observance of prohibited, ii. 50, 74, 80, 95, 96.

Chrysostom, his *Comment on the Gospel*, i. 112 ; his *Golden Book on Education*, translated by Mr. Evelyn, 1659, i. cvi ; ii. 99 n, 103 ; iii. 189, 195, 257, 474.

Chrystal branches, ii. 10.

Church-music, dispute on, i. 17 ; alteration in, ii. 156.

Church of England, service and clergy of the, suppressed, ii. 4, 14, 25, 37, 45, 49, 50, 74, 79, 80, 88, 96, 100, 107, 113 ; innovations of the Parliament in the, 1641, iv. 83 n, 84 and n, 85 and n, 89, 110, 248 ; protested against by the Lords, 85 ; protection of, by Charles I., 104 and m, 111, 113, 170 ; service of the, kept up in France by Sir Richard Browne, ii. 9, 14, 29 n, 113 ; iv. 287 n, 344 ; collection for persecuted Ministers of the, 1658, 100 ; state of, under the Commonwealth, iii. 205-207 and n, 252 ; controversy of Papists with, ii. 113 ; iii. 287-290, 292-294, 381-389 ; recovery of the, ii. 116, 149, 244 ; missionary of the, 138 ; Asian Church's subscription to the 153 ; excellence of the, iii. 4 ; danger of, from the Papists, 50, 56 n.

Churches in Italy, measures of, i. 232.

Churchill, Francis Spencer, Baron, ii. 169 n.

— Sir Winston, iii. 100.

— Gen. made Lieutenant of the Tower, iii. 172.

— Mr., his collection of curiosities, iii. 125.

— Mrs., iii. 16.

Churchyards in Norwich, ii. 271.

Ciaconio, Alphonso, his notes on Trajan's Column, &c., iii. 408.

Cicero's Palace, i. 120, 188 ; tomb, &c., 174, 176.

Cifaccio, a famous singer, iii. 32, 36.

Cigali. *See* Cardi, Ludovico.

Circumcision, Jewish ceremony of, at Rome, i. 161.

Circus Maximus at Rome, i. 124, 151, 196, 203.

— Caracalla, i. 203.

Cisii, Signior Pietro, ii. 232.

Citolin, M., taught Mr. Evelyn to write, i. 5.

Clancarty, Earl of, iii. 53, 91.

— Earl and Countess of, iii. 53, 91, 480.

Clanricard, Ulick Bourk, Earl of, house at Summer-hill, ii. 43.

Clapham, houses at, noticed, iii. 104, 154.

Clare, Lord, ii. 65 ; protests against an order in the Commons, 1641, iv. 85 n.

— Dr., ii. 31, sermon by, *ibid.*

— Hall, Cambridge, ii. 72.

Clarendon, Edward Hyde, Earl of, Lord Chancellor, ii. 7, 23, 121, 123, 130, 138, 147, 151, 160, 163, 168, 171, 172, 174 n, 181, 194, 197, 199, 213, 214, 215, 217, 330 n, 399, 475 ; iii. 6 n ; 169, 296, 299, 302, 303,



Clarendon, Edward—*continued.*

317 n ; his *Life, History of the Rebellion and State Papers*, referred to, iv. 91 n, 92 n, 93 n, 175 n, 239 n, 240 n, 243 n, 244 n, 252 n, 253 n, 256 n, 257 n, 258 n, 259 n, 264 n, 266 n, 267 n, 277 n, 280 n, 281 n, 285 n, 288 n, *bis*, 294 n, 300 n, 301 n, 302 n, 304 n, 306 n, 313 n, 314 n, 317 n, 319 n, 323 n, 324 n ; attempts to remove him from the office of Chancellor, 1656-7, ii. 125 n ; his daughter's marriage to the Duke of York, 118 ; elevated to the Peerage, 126 ; visits Mr. Evelyn in state, 149 ; remarks by Mr. Evelyn in vindication of him against Sorbière, iii. 296, 297 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, 346, 348 ; portraits worth collecting, proposed to him by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 234 n ; iii. 444, 445 ; collection formed by, ii. 234 ; iii. 436, 444, 445 ; impeached by the Parliament, and the Seals taken from him, ii. 223, 227 ; party in Parliament, &c., against him, ii. 125 n, 224, 226, 227, 228 ; iii. 445 ; his flight, ii. 228 ; injurious charges against him, &c., 416, 417 ; his conduct contrasted with that of his supplanters, iii. 445. *See* Clarendon House, Hyde.

— Henry Hyde (Lord Cornbury), second Earl, ii. 168, 194 ; iii. 5 n, 40, 62, 78, 169, 217, 233, 237, 292, 359, 398, 406, 408, 411, 425, 426, letters of Mr. Evelyn to, on the *Mystery of Jesuitism*, ii. 174 ; hints for a course of study, iii. 316 ; congratulating him, &c., *ibid.*, 320 ; opinion

Clarendon, Henry—*continued.*

of Clarendon House, ii. 418 ; Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 475 ; his recall, &c., iii. 31 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on materials for his work on the Dutch War, 394 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the affairs of Ireland, &c., 425 ; refused to sit in council with Papists, 1688, iii. 57 ; dissatisfied at the Revolution, 429 ; opposed William's assumption of the Crown, iii. 70 ; sent to the Tower, 1690, 88 ; bailed, 90 ; confined again in the Tower, 92 ; permitted to take country air, 96 ; medals and library, 443, 444.

— Countess, ii. 121, 364, 434, 457, 470 ; iii. 5, 360.

— Edward (Lord Cornbury), third Earl, grandson of the Chancellor, iii. 7, 426 ; his account of Denmark, 1687, 41 ; goes over with some regiments to the Prince of Orange, 60.

— House built, ii. 168 and n, 194, 213, 217, 228 ; collection of pictures at, 233, 436, 443, sold and demolished, 408, 417, 433 ; Mr. Evelyn's opinion of the house, 417 n ; iii. 340 n, 341.

Clarges, Sir Thomas, iii. 178.

— Sir Walter, iii. 118 n, 152.

— Street, in London, 118 n.

Clarke, Mr., player on the Irish harp, ii. 50, 233.

— Rev. Mr., Boyle-lecturer, iii. 169.

Classics, Greek and Latin, Mr. Evelyn's proposal for correct editions of the, iii. 346, 348.

Claude, Mons., forced to quit France, iii. 9 ; his book burned in England, 21.



- Claudius, son-in-law of Mr. Hartlib, a chemical adept, iv. 31, 33.
- Clayton, Dr., Physician, ii. 111.
- Sir John and Robert, ii. 88, 296, 321, 324, 349; iii. 79 n, 122; house of, in the Old Jewry, London, ii. 286 and n; seat at Marden, 331; iii. 79 n; account of, ii. 332 n, 357.
- Sir T., warden of Merton College, ii. 124.
- Clement VIII., Hippolito Aldobrandini, Pope, palace of, i. 214.
- Dr., i. 7.
- regicide, executed, ii. 118.
- Clench, Dr., his son's early talents, iii. 64; murder of, 64 n, 100.
- Clere, Mons. St., his collections of drawings, &c., ii. 15.
- Clerk, George, Sheriff of London, loyalty of, 1641, iv. 98.
- Clerkenwell, Newcastle House at, ii. 216 and n.
- Cleve, Duke of, his heart preserved, i. 27.
- Cleveland, Thomas Wentworth, Earl of, 1662, ii. 159; lawsuit of, 211.
- Duchess, ii. 133 n, 259, 444, 448; her children by Charles II., ii. 269, 284, 322 and n, 357; iii. 19.
- House, ii. 213 n, 360.
- Clifden, Duke of Buckingham's seat at, ii. 353.
- Clifford, Sir Thomas, afterwards Lord Treasurer of the Household, ii. 172, 213, 251, 253, 257, 261, 265, 266, 279, 281, 284, 286, 394, 406; Lord Treasurer by the Duke's interest, 275 n; death of his eldest son, 259, 275 n; Exchequer closed by his advice, 1672, Clifford, Sir Thomas—*continued*. 275; inclined to Popery, 276; resigns his Treasurer's staff, 292; his engagement to the Duke of York affects his mind, 293; his life, character and, unhappy death, 213, 294, 297; iii. 393, 407; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, 303, 307, 365, 375, 378, 390, 393.
- Clocks, curious, i. 127, 138, 171, 238; ii. 119, 125, 133.
- Clotworthy, Sir John, accused of, peculation, iv. 122 n.
- Coaches in Rome, i. 141; in Naples, 192.
- Coale, Mr. Gregory, ii. 213 and n.
- Cock, Capt., Treasurer to the Commission for sick and wounded, ii. 174.
- Mr. Evelyn at law with, ii. 262.
- Mr., lottery-prize gained by, 1694, iii. 118.
- Cockerell, Mr. Samuel Pepys, original letters belonging to, iii. 406 n.
- Cockpit, play performed there, i. 297; ii. 143.
- Coffee introduced into England, i. 9; Coffee-club, iv. 27.
- Coilus, King of Britain, ii. 85.
- Coin, plan for reducing Gold, ii. 161; depreciated state of, 1694, iii. 117; difficulties in reforming it, 1664, ii. 164; 1695, iii. 126; new coinage, 1695, *ibid.*; scarcity of, 1696, 131.
- Coins, ancient, observations on Roman, i. 217; Prince Henry's collection, iii. 442.
- Coke, Sir Edward, his portrait, iii. 444; library, 451.
- Colbert, Jean Baptiste de, French ambassador, ii. 212, 231, 266, 267.

- Colchester, siege of, i. 297 ; iii. 44 ; account of, ii. 85.
- Coldbrook, at Cashiobury, in Hertfordshire, ii. 362.
- Coleman executed, 1678, ii. 345, 377.
- Colepepper, Sir John, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1641, iv. 86.
- Thomas and William, their imprisonment and portraits, iii. 158 n.
- Coligni, Admiral Gaspard, assassination of, a painting, i. 163.
- College, scheme for a Philosophical and Mathematical one, iii. 261-267.
- Collier, Mr., non-juring clergyman, iii. 129 and n.
- Collins, Dr., of King's College, ii. 71.
- Capt., sea-charts by, ii. 400.
- Arthur, his *Peerage* referred to, ii. 313 n ; iv. 74 n, 92 n.
- Cologne, Kings of, their bodies, i. 358 ; city of, addresses Charles II., ii. 115.
- Colone, Bartolomeo, statue of, i. 251.
- Colonna, Connestable, i. 149 ; wife of Colonna, iii. 144 ; Vittoria, iv. 396, 437.
- Colosseum at Rome, i. 135.
- Colours of the ancients, iii. 420.
- Colson, Mr. John, notice of, ii. 174 n.
- Columbus, Christopher, painting of, ii. 441.
- Combefis, Padre Francesco, his tract of St. Chrysostom, iii. 474.
- Comber family, of Sussex, i. 2.
- Comets, notices of several, 1680, ii. 380 ; 1682, 398.
- Cominazzo, Lazarino, carbine-maker, i. 268.
- Commerce of England, iii. 419.
- Commings, Gaston Jean Baptiste, French Ambassador, ii. 159, 172, 184.
- Commissioners and Committees of Parliament, various proceedings of, 1641, iv. 71 and n, 75, 78, 82, 83, 91 and n, 94 and n, 99, 100, 101, 104, 105, 107, 115, 122, 126, 127, 129.
- Committee*, a play by Sir R. Howard, ii. 155.
- Common Prayer, Book of, ordered by the House of Lords to be observed, 1641, iv. 85 ; opposed by the Brownists, &c., 89 ; denied being read, 1644, 148.
- Compagno, Hieronyma, sculptor, i. 248.
- Compton, Dr. Henry, Bishop of London, ii. 239, 402 ; iii. 26 ; sermon by, ii. 291 ; notice of, 291 n, 321.
- Sir Spencer, gallantry in youth, iv. 211 n.
- Sir William, ii. 135 ; surprises Compton House, 1644 ; iv. 146.
- Conally, Owen, discovers Irish Rebellion, iv. 122 and n ; Parliament reward for, *ibid.*
- Condé, Louis de Bourbon, Prince of, 1649-1652, ii. 3, 8, 11, 40 ; iv. 245 and n, 246 n, 248 n, 250 n, 251 n, 253 n, 262 n, 267 n, 272 n, 279 n, 286, 333 ; meeting with Queen Christina, 219 and n, 222 ; proceedings of, July, 1648, 338, 341, 342 ; professes friendship for Charles I., 330 ; his insurrectionary army, 1653, 289 n.
- Confederates, 1689, progress of, iii. 78.



- Conflans, bathing at, ii. 25.  
 Conopios, Nathaniel, a Greek, i. 9.  
 Conscience, liberty of, proclamation for, in Scotland, 1687, iii. 32; bishops petition the King against reading the declaration for, 47; proceedings against them for not suffering it to be read, 47, 48, 49.  
 Conservatori, apartment of the, at Rome, i. 122; procession of the, 160.  
*Consideration, Treatise on*, by Dr. Horneck, ii. 403 and n.  
 Constable of the Tower ordered to reside in the fortress, 1641, iv. 71.  
 Constantine the Great, statutes of, i. 123; arch, 136; palace, 146; obelisk, 147, 148; churches built by, &c., 206, 207.  
 Constantinople, name of an ancient coin, iv. 18 and n, 27.  
 Convention, 1689, proceedings of, as to disposal of the Crown, iii. 64, 68, 70.  
 Convents and monasteries, various notices of, i. 17, 27, 31, 33, 49, 80, 109, 113, 115, 126, 130, 173, 186, 195, 197, 203, 204, 230, 241, 248, 252, 259, 271, 274; ii. 174.  
 Conversano, Conte, iv. 342.  
 Convocation, 1690, for reforming Liturgy, &c., iii. 81, 82; 1701, notices a passage in a book of Dr. Davenant's, 157 and n; disagrees with bishops, 158.  
 Conway, Edward, Lord, ii. 335; iv. 146 n.  
 Cony, Mr., ii. 316.  
     John, Parliament  
     O'Neal's affair,  
 Cook, Dr. George, Bishop of Hereford, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.  
     — Sir Robert, ii. 18.  
     — Mr., non-juring clergyman, iii. 129 and n.  
     — John, regicide, executed, ii. 118.  
 Cooke, Col., ii. 8, 426.  
     — Capt., an excellent singer, &c., ii. 74, 88.  
     — Mr., at Cashiobury, ii. 363.  
     — Sir T., discovery about East India Company, iii. 121.  
     — Rev. Edward, pamphlet reprinted by, iii. 114 n.  
 Cooper, Samuel, portrait-painter, ii. 141.  
     — Anthony Ashley Cooper, Lord, creation of, ii. 126.  
     — Mr., surgeon, describes Mr. Evelyn's Tables of the Veins, &c., iii. 160.  
 Coque, Mons. le, iii. 80.  
 Corbeil, notice of, i. 64.  
 Cork, Richard Boyle, First Earl of, ii. 168; iv. 39.  
 Corker, James, trial of, 1679, ii. 351 n.  
 Cornaro, Hellen, a learned Italian, iii. 437.  
     — family, painting of, ii. 101 and n.  
 Cornbury, Lord Cornbury's house at, ii. 168, 169; portraits, &c., there, iii. 443-445. *See* Clarendon.  
 Cornea, Antonio di, painter at Rome, i. 218.  
 Cornelius Nepos, statue of, i. 267.  
 Cornwallis, Lord, ii. 126, 372, 439, 448.  
 Coronada, Don Juan Velasquez, i. 275.



- "Coronation" and Harwich ships lost, iii. 98.  
 — of King Charles II., ii. 126-130.  
 Corpus-Christi day in Paris, i. 295, 296; ii. 24.  
 Correggio. *See* Allegri.  
 Corsica, Island of, i. 94.  
 Cortona, Pietro Berretini di, paintings, &c., by, i. 124, 127, 218, 227.  
 Cortone, Dr., of Verona, i. 267.  
 Cosin, Dr. John, Dean of Peterborough, afterwards Bishop of Durham, ii. 11; notice of him, 29 n; officiated in the English Chapel at Paris, 14, 24, 29, 30 n; occasion of publishing his *Offices*, 29, 30; Mr. Evelyn treated with him for the purchase of his library, 38; iii. 451; letter on that subject, iii. 451 n; alluded to, ii. 72, 158, 232, 244; iv. 287 and n.  
 — John, son of the Bishop, perverted to Popery, ii. 33, 38.  
 Cosmo II., Grand Duke of Florence, fine statue of, i. 225.  
 Cotterell, Sir Charles, ii. 232, 387; iv. 208, 210, 225; his son, ii. 281.  
 Cottington, Sir Francis, Lord, summoned by the Queen, 1641, iv. 100; referred to, ii. 7, 23, 108, 157 n; King Charles I. requires his presence in Parliament, 137; portrait, iii. 443.  
 Cotton, Sir John, i. 64; a great Grecian, ii. 197; library, 229; his relict, i. 4 n, 11 n; iii. 145.  
 — Sir Robert, ii. 197; MSS. collected by, 229; portrait, iii. 444; medals of, 442.  
 Cotton, Lady, christening of her daughter, i. 298; birth of a son to, ii. 38; death and funeral, 167; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the death of her infant, iii. 284.  
 Courland, Duke of, iv. 151.  
 Course in Paris, i. 55; at Vincenza, 266; in Milan, 275.  
 Court of Vulcan, i. 185.  
 Courts in Venice, i. 241.  
 Covell, Dr. John, iii. 126 and n.  
 Covenant, Scotch, i. 40; burnt, ii. 132; ordered to be abjured, 149.  
 Covenberg, F., painting by, i. 26.  
 Covent Garden, Church and Piazza of, copied from Leghorn, i. 104.  
 Coventry, city of, notice of, ii. 63; address to James II., thanking him for liberty of conscience, 1687, iii. 39.  
 — Thomas, Lord, summoned by the Queen, 1641, iv. 100.  
 — Henry, iii. 392, 394.  
 — Sir William, secretary to James, Duke of York, &c., ii. 8, 107, 157, 185, 191, 222, 319; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, iii. 327, 394.  
 Cowley, Abraham, ii. 158, 163, 372; iii. 463 n; iv. 201 n; his death and funeral, ii. 222; iii. 456; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, ii. 214 n; iii. 349-351; letter to Mr. Evelyn respecting his verses on Royal Society, 351; about treaty of Breda, 205 n; portrait, iii. 444.  
 Cowper, Mr. William (afterwards Earl Cowper), made Lord Keeper, iii. 171 and n, 172.  
 Cox, Captain of the "Charles," ii. 230, 277.

- Cox, Sir John, iii. 404.  
 Coxhall, Rev. Mr., of South Maling, i. 5.  
 Craddock, Dr., Provost of Eton, ii. 353, 355; sermon of, iii. 19.  
 Crafford, John, notice of, i. 10.  
 Cranbourn Lodge, ii. 300; iii. 28.  
 — Lord, ii. 386.  
 Cranmer, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, i. 444.  
 Crane, Mr., Clerk of Green Cloth, ii. 119, 120, 121.  
 Craven, William, Lord, ii. 263; house at Caversham, 52.  
 Creighton, Dr., sermons by, ii. 9, 158, 297, 321, 475.  
 Cressy, Deane, answer to Dr. Pierce, his, ii. 160 and n; iii. 287, 292.  
 Crevecœur, Marquis de, ii. 22.  
 Crewe, Bishop of Durham, iii. 15, 25, 26 n, 28 n.  
 — Sir Clepesby, i. 297.  
 — Thomas, Lord, creation of, ii. 126.  
 — a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.  
 Crispe, Sir Nicholas, projects of, ii. 79, 143.  
 — a confidential servant of King Charles I., iv. 91m and n.  
 Croft, Dr. Herbert, Bishop of Hereford, *Naked Truth* by, ii. 317; referred to, 236.  
 Crofts, Lord, ii. 7, 325.  
 — Mr., iv. 270 n, 334; Parliament discovers his cypher, 142; accounts of him, *ibid.* n.  
 Crombe, Col., i. 27.  
 Cromer, — musician, ii. 156.  
 Cromwell, Thomas, Earl of Essex, portrait, iii. 444.  
 — Oliver, iv. 161 n, 189, 198 n, 205 n, *bis*, 208 n, 210 and n, Cromwell, Oliver—*continued.*  
 212, 214, 217 n, 219, 223, 226, 267 n, 288 n, 298, 300 n, 305 and n, 308 and n, 310, 313, 315 and n, 316, 320; dissolves Long Parliament, 210 n, 281 and n; assumes the Protectorate, 210, 212, 298; his Parliament, 1654, and its dissolution, 213 and n; procures Charles II.'s cruizers to be shut out from Brest, 1655, 306, 308; sends a squadron to the Indies, 309; murders by his guards, i. 297; Act of Oblivion, ii. 38; feasts with Lord Mayor on Ash Wednesday, 50; prohibits ministers of the Church from preaching, &c., 80; death and funeral, 103, 104; disinterment, 123; allusions to, 36, 37, 51, 54, 76, 86, 87, 88, 90, 91, 133, 282, 472; iii. 137, 142, 178.  
 — Richard, ii. 106.  
 Croone, Dr., letter of Mr. Evelyn to, iii. 286.  
 Cropredy Bridge, battle of, 1644, iv. 153 n.  
 Cross, fragments of the, i. 144, 147, 206; of St. Edward discovered, ii. 478; iii. 184.  
 Crowder, Rev. Mr., ii. 30 n.  
 Crowe, Sir Sackville, ii. 181.  
 Crowne, John, masque by, at Court, 1674, ii. 305 n.  
 Crowther, Mr., iv. 324.  
 Croydon Church, monuments in, iii. 154 and n.  
 — Dr., ii. 24.  
 Crusca, Academy de la, i. 226; iii. 454.  
 Crypt of St. Peter's at Rome, i. 159.  
 Cudworth, Dr., sermon of, ii. 347.



- Culpeper, Col., attack on the Earl of Devon, ii. 469.  
 — Lord, ii. 188, 194, 261.  
 Culpepper, John, Lord, iv. 147 n, 152, 155, 174, 303 and n; letter of James Duke of York to, 1650, 203.  
 Cumberland, Dr. Richard, Bishop of Peterborough, iii. 93, 95 and n.  
 — Henry Clifford, Earl of, referred to, iv. 173 n; summoned by the Queen, 1641, 100.  
 Cuna, city of, i. 189.  
 Cuperus, Gisbertus, on the colours of the ancients, iii. 420.  
 Cupid and Psyche, Raffaele's painting of, i. 158.  
 Cupola, curious effects of one on the voice, i. 102.  
 Curiosities, notices of various collections of, i. 24, 43-45, 51, 60, 61, 72, 98, 106, 108, 118, 125, 127, 128, 138, 151, 170, 221, 224, 225, 257, 275, 284; ii. 15, 23, 25, 56, 94, 119, 120, 152, 165, 270, 311; iii. 29, 86, 99, 125, 154, 283, 442.  
 Curtius, Sir William, President for Charles II. at Frankfort, ii. 25, 168; notice of, iv. 210, 216.  
 — M., his place of sacrifice, i. 119.  
 Custance, Capt., knighted, ii. 185.  
 Custom-house, rebuilt after fire, ii. 265.  
 Cutler, Alderman Sir John, patron of Deptford, ii. 105, 274, 279.  
 Cypher, various letters in, with interpretations, iv. 148, 149, 157, 158-160, 161, 163, 164-166, 167, 172, 177, 178, 179, 186, 198, 251, 256-258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 269; notices  
 Cypher—*continued.*  
 concerning various cyphers, 164, 167, 169 *bis*, 186, 275.  
 Cypress Tree, remarkable one, i. 267.  
 Cyril, patriarch of Constantinople, i. 9.  
 D'ADA, Ferdinand, Count, Pope's nuncio, iii. 14 and n, 42 and n.  
 Daincourt, Lord, ii. 305 n.  
 D'Ameron, Mons., iv. 224.  
 Dampier, Capt. William, notices of, iii. 140 and n.  
 Danby, Thomas Osborne, Earl of, Lord Treasurer, ii. 388; iii. 82, 407 and n, 453; imprisonment of, ii. 428.  
 Danes, their title to dominion of the sea, &c., iii. 415-417.  
 Dangerfield whipped for perjury, ii. 468.  
 D'Anguien, Duke, 1644, iv. 337.  
 Darcy, Edward, Mr. Evelyn's sister unhappily married to, i. 5; her death, 6.  
 Darien, Scotch book about the colony of, iii. 148 and n; Parliament votes against the Scotch settling in, 149.  
 Darneford, Magna, farm so called, ii. 60.  
 Darnel, Rev. Mr., sermon by, ii. 79.  
 Dartmouth, Lord, fair on Blackheath procured by, ii. 404; master of the Trinity House, 405, 432, 474.  
 Davenant, Sir William, plays, &c., by, ii. 106 n, 138 n, 156 n.  
 — Dr. Charles, iii. 110; Convocation displeased by a book of his, 157 and n.  
 D'Aviler, Mons., his book on Architecture, iv. 9-11.



- D'Avinson, Dr., of Paris, ii. 9.  
 Davis, Lieut., ii. 181 n.  
 — Mrs., ii. 211 n, 305 n.  
 Daun, M., iii. 110.  
 Deal, Kent, agricultural customs of, iv. 44.  
 Dean Forest, planting of, suggested by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 154.  
 — West, Wiltshire, descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedigree*.  
 Deane, Sir Anthony, ii. 392 ; mode of building men-of-war described by, 391 ; conversation respecting frigates, fire-ships, &c., iii. 83, 87.  
 — Mr., iv. 292.  
 De Brie, —, iv. 225.  
 De Camper, Mons., iv. 278.  
 Declaration from King Charles I., 1641, iv. 76, 77 ; from the Parliament against Superstitious Rites, &c., 83 n ; of the Commons against the Lords, 85, 86, 89, 91 ; of ditto on the State of the Kingdom, 123 ; of ditto on the Army for Ireland, 126 n, 132, 137 ; from King Charles I. against Orders in Parliament made without him, 136 ; of the House of Commons on ill counsels, 130, 137, 141 and n, 144 ; of Freedom of the Ports, 320.  
 Decoy in St. James's Park, 1665, ii. 178, 179.  
 De Creete, painter, ii. 59.  
 Dedham, Essex, notice of, ii. 85.  
 Deepden, at Dorking, Surrey, ii. 77 and n, 167.  
 Deering, Sir Edward, and his daughter, ii. 364.  
 D'Harcourt, Count, Grand Ecuyer of France, ii. 27.  
 Delabarr, paintings possessed by, ii. 5.  
 Delamere, Henry Booth, Lord, 1688, iii. 60.  
 De l'Angle, M., minister of Charenton, ii. 407.  
 De Larrey, Isaac, his character of Duke of Richmond, iv. 87 n ; of Lord Warwick, 119 n ; of Sir Henry Vane, jun., 182 n ; of Sir Edward Nicholas, 196 n.  
 Del Camp, M., his equestrian academy, ii. 11.  
 Delft, church and senate-house of, i. 18 ; explosion at, 1654, iv. 216.  
 Delichio, Busqueto, bending tower built by, i. 221.  
 Demalhoy, Mr., ii. 300.  
 Denbigh, Basil Fielding, Earl of, 1664, ii. 169.  
 Denham, Sir John, ii. 51, 81, 137.  
 Denmark, resident of the King of, ii. 116 ; Ambassadors from, 118, 123 ; tyranny exercised in, 1687, iii. 40.  
 — Prince George of, 1662, ii. 153 ; married to Princess Anne, 413, 414 ; allusions to him, ii. 438, 439 ; iii. 40.  
 — Christian IV., King of, iv. 151 ; reported present of, to Charles II., 269 n.  
 Deptford, monument at, ii. 160 n ; iii. 480 and n ; plague at, ii. 186, 193, 198, fire in dockyard, 219 ; church built, iii. 144.  
 Derby, James Stanley, Earl of, executed, ii. 31 ; 1649, iv. 195 m ; portrait, iii. 444.  
 — William George Richard Stanley, Lord, 1689, iii. 66, 71.  
 — Countess of, ii. 322, 368.  
 — House, notice of, ii. 104.  
 De Rosny, Mr., his talents, iv. 61

- De Ruyter, Admiral Michael  
Adrian, his commission to  
Guinea, iii. 392.
- Descartes, René, iii. 438, 479,  
484 and n, 485 and n.
- Desguynes, Connestable de, iv.  
319.
- D'Espagne, Mons., ii. 87.
- D'Este, Palace of, i. 215.
- D'Estrades, Marshal, obliged  
James II. to dismiss Protes-  
tants, iii. 74.
- Devereux, Lord, house at Ips-  
wich, ii. 86.
- De Vic, Sir Henry, i. 35 ; ii. 133,  
216 ; iv. 146 n, 217 n, 220,  
222 and n, 320.
- Devonshire, William Cavendish,  
Earl of, afterwards Duke, sum-  
moned by the Queen, 1641,  
iv. 100 ; 1652, ii. 39, 148 ;  
iii. 70, 110, 133, 142 ; Col.  
Culpeper's assault on, ii.  
469.
- Christian, Countess of, 1662,  
ii. 148 n ; 1686, iii. 16.
- De Wit faction in Holland, pro-  
ceedings, 1654, iv. 217 and n,  
256 n.
- "Diamond" and "Ruby" ships  
launched, ii. 37.
- Diana, Baths of, &c., i. 190, 195.
- Dichley, Sir Henry Lee's seat at,  
ii. 169.
- Dickinson, Dr. Edmund, account  
of, iii. 169 and n.
- Dieppe, i. 66 ; bombarded, iii.  
117.
- Digby, George, Lord, referred to,  
iv. 110, 133, 151, 155, 165,  
167, 168, 175 n, 177, 179,  
239 ; letters to, 334, 335, 336,  
341 ; opposes "Instructions"  
to Commissioners at Edin-  
burgh, 133 ; King Charles  
thanks him, *ibid.* ; Prince Ru-
- Digby, George, Lord—*continued.*  
pert, &c., quarrel about defeat  
at Sherbourne, 175 n.
- John, Earl of Bristol, por-  
traits, ii. 441 ; iii. 444.
- Sir Everard, ii. 345.
- Sir Kenelm, i. 27 ; ii. 32,  
51, 56, 133 ; Mr. Evelyn's  
opinion of him, &c., ii. 31,  
246 ; portrait, 441 ; library,  
334 ; iii. 453.
- Mr. J. (son of Sir Kenelm),  
i. 263.
- Digesters, Papin's, bones dis-  
solved by, ii. 394.
- Dillon, Capt., in navy of Charles  
II. in exile, iv. 303, 304.
- Diocletian, C. Valerius Aurelius,  
Emperor of Rome, bath of, at  
Rome, i. 129.
- Diodati, Signior John, i. 287,  
289, 291.
- Dishington, Sir T., iv. 332.
- Diskvelt, Mynheer, Dutch Am-  
bassador, iii. 37.
- Dissenters, Act of Indulgence for,  
iii. 77.
- Dives, Sir Lewis, adventures of,  
ii. 25, 32.
- Diving bell, trial of, 1661, ii.  
132.
- Dobson, William, paintings by,  
ii. 337 n, 440.
- Dodd, Charles, his *Church His-*  
*tory* referred to, iii. 252 n.
- Doge of Venice, his espousal of  
the Adriatic, i. 236, 250.
- Dogs, market of, at Amsterdam,  
i. 20 ; use of, in Holland, 35 ;  
in Bologna, 232 ; spaniel lost  
by Mr. Evelyn, 294 ; mention  
of, ii. 149.
- Dolben, Dr. John, Bishop of  
Rochester, ii. 333 n ; house at  
Bromley, 242 ; Archbishop of  
York, 414 ; iii. 15 ; death of, 19.



- Dolman, Mr. Thomas, iv. 214 and n.
- D'Olonne, Count, ii. 27.
- Mr. Justice, ii. 353 n.
- Domenico, Zampieri, called Domenichino, paintings by, i. 232.
- Donatelli, statue by, i. 109.
- Doncaster, notice of, ii. 66.
- Donghi, Cardinal, i. 113.
- Donna, Count, Swedish Ambassador, ii. 229.
- Donne, Dr. John, iv. 55 ; portrait, iii. 444.
- Donnington, notice of, ii. 52.
- Dorchester, Henry Pierrepont, Marquis of, ii. 65, 218 ; iii. 141.
- Countess of, ii. 337 n ; iii. 15.
- Dorell, Mr., ii. 102.
- Major, ii. 284.
- Dorilaus, Isaac, funeral of, ii. 5.
- Dormitory of St. Michael, i. 232 ; measure of, *ibid.*
- Dornavius's *Amphilheatrum*, &c., iii. 349 n.
- Dorset, Charles Sackville, sixth Earl of, ii. 293 ; iii. 15, 70, 122, 133 n.
- Countess of, 1657, ii. 95.
- Edward Sackville, Earl of, iv. 160.
- Dort, notice of the town of, i. 15, 19.
- Dove, Dr., sermons by, ii. 356, 440.
- Dover, Earl, 1687, iii. 31, 61, 98 ; his daughters, ii. 90.
- Countess of, 1686, iii. 16.
- Castle, prisoners of war at, ii. 176, 183 ; iii. 306.
- Douglas, Marquis of, estates in France, iv. 331.
- Mr., iv. 259.
- Colonel, a commander for the French King, 1643, iv. 331 *bis*.
- Douglas, Lieut.-Gen., iii. 82.
- Douw, Gerard, painting by, ii. 120.
- Downes, Mr., funeral of, ii. 9.
- Downing, Sir George, character of, ii. 198 ; minister in Holland, 256 ; iii. 394.
- Doyly, Sir William, ii. 172, 193, 199, 209.
- Drake, Sir Francis, painting of his action, in 1580, ii. 86 ; letters, iv. 26.
- Draper, William, married Mr. Evelyn's daughter Susanna, iii. 108 ; Mr. Evelyn's character of his daughter, 108 ; their mutual happiness, 136 n ; Adscumb House, &c., bequeathed to him by Lady Temple, 150 ; the house rebuilt, 162, 166 ; Treasurer of Greenwich Hospital, 135 n, 166 ; allusions to, 124, 162.
- Mrs., mother of the preceding, iii. 137 n ; her death 157 and n.
- Drayton, Dr., works referred to, iii. 254.
- Drebbell, chemist, ii. 198.
- Dress, various notices concerning, i. 50, 91, 100 and n, 138, 153, 154, 162, 164, 193, 209, 213, 218, 222, 231, 233, 244, 245, 261, 285, 291 ; ii. 27, 52, 145, 165.
- Drogheda taken, 1649, ii. 9 ; surrendered, iii. 89.
- Dryden, John, plays by, ii. 158 and n, 163 and n, 215 ; iii. 112 ; alluded to, ii. 300, 406 ; said to go to mass, iii. 15.
- Dryfield, Sir John Prettyman's house at, ii. 61.
- Dublin surrendered, iii. 89 ; earthquake at, 91.



- Du Bois, paintings possessed by, ii. 2, 17.  
 — John, his election, ii. 17, 407.  
 Du Bosse, Abraham, engraver, ii. 10.  
 Ducal Palace at Geneva, account of, i. 98; at Venice, 242.  
 Ducy, Sir William (afterwards Lord Downe), ii. 107, 167; paintings possessed by, ii. 2, 51.  
 Duel, fatal one, 1694, iii. 114.  
 Duarte, Signior, merchant of Antwerp, i. 32.  
 Dugdale, Sir William, Garter King of Arms, ii. 83, 108, 340; his great age, 463; portrait, iii. 444.  
 — Stephen, a witness against Lord Stafford, ii. 376.  
 Duke, Dr., ii. 189.  
 Dull House at Amsterdam, i. 20.  
 Dulwich College, ii. 314.  
 Dumblaine, Peregrine Osborne, Viscount, ii. 305 n, 424 n; his wife, 424.  
 Du Menie, chemist, fraud of, ii. 24.  
 Dunbarton, George Douglas, Earl of, iii. 22.  
 Duncan, Rev. Dr., ii. 30 n; sermon of, ii. 20.  
 Duncomb, Goldsmith, estate of Duke of Buckingham purchased by, iii. 131.  
 — Sir Sanders, i. 7; introduced sedans into England, 192.  
 — Rev. Mr., of Albury, his sermons, iii. 117, 123.  
 — Rev. William, Rector of Ashted, iii. 121, 137.  
 — Mr., ii. 324; one of the Lords Justices in Ireland, iii. 110.  
 Duncombe, Mr. Anthony, iii. 138 n.  
 — Charles, parliamentary proceedings against, iii. 138 and n.  
 — Sir John, ii. 197, 198, 261, 388; Burnet's character of him, ii. 197 n.  
 Dundas, Lord, ii. 313 n.  
 Dundonald, Archibald, Cochrane, Earl of, his scheme of charring sea-coal, ii. 87 n.  
 Dunkirk, i. 51; Louis XIV. before, 1671, ii. 259.  
 Dunluce Castle, in Ireland, iv. 132 and n.  
 Dunsmore, Francis Leigh, Lord, King Charles I. requires him to attend Parliament, iv. 137.  
 Dunstall, John, engraver, ii. 213 n.  
 Duport, Dr. James, Greek Professor, ii. 132; sermon of, 285.  
 Duppa, Dr. Brian, Bishop of Chichester, ii. 371; portrait, iii. 444; his translations, iv. 99 n; tutor to Prince Charles, 165 n.  
 Du Prue, performer on the lute, ii. 358.  
 Durance river, i. 90.  
 Durante, painting of, i. 198.  
 Duras, Lewis (Earl of Feversham), ii. 315, 439.  
 Durdans, at Epsom, ii. 102, 151, 186, 294.  
 Durell, Dr., Dean of Windsor, ii. 14, 347, 406; translation of the Liturgy into French, ii. 244.  
 Dürer, Albrecht, drawings by, i. 60; prints, 72; carvings, 107, 223; ii. 77; paintings, i. 150, 156, 223, 225; ii. 77.  
 Dutch, their traffic in pictures, i. 18; avarice of, ii. 108; embassy to congratulate William

Dutch—*continued.*

- III., iii. 77 ; jealousy concerning the Spice Islands, iii. 404, 405 ; toll for the fishery in Scotland refused by the, 417.
- Bishop, humorous story of, i. 116.
- Boy, phenomena in the eyes of, 1701, iii. 157.
- Fleet, first action of the, 1664, ii. 180 n ; daring enterprise, 1667, in the destruction of ships at Chatham, &c., ii. 218, 219 ; scheme of the action. iii. 409 and n ; completely block up the Thames, ii. 219, 220, 222 ; encounter with, 222.
- Vice-Admiral of the, capture and misfortunes of, ii. 188.
- War, vigorous prosecution of, on both sides, 1665, ii. 180 ; Mr. Evelyn's occupation with the, iii. 191 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to Sir T. Clifford respecting libels on England in relation to, and recommending the compiling of a History of it, iii. 365-369 ; Mr. Evelyn requested by his Majesty to write the History ; his progress, &c., ii. 183, 235, 246, 252, 253, 256, 264, 284 ; impeded by the publication of a Dutch folio, and the multitude of papers, &c., on the subject, iii. 375-378 ; the History divided into three parts ; brief account of them, and of the preface, 378-381 ; great extent of the work, 381 ; progress hindered for want of official papers, &c. ; necessity of the work for the injured honour of the country, 390-393 ; other papers on the subject alluded to, 394 ; the design laid aside, ii. 301 and n ;

Dutch War—*continued.*

- the MS. (as far as completed) communicated to Mr. Pepys ; observations respecting it ; the work left unfinished, iii. 406, 407.
- EARLE, Dr. John (afterwards Bishop of Salisbury), i. 295 ; ii. 7, 31 n ; sermon of, 121 ; consecration, character, and works of, 155 ; with King Charles II. in exile, iv. 210, 252, 294.
- Earnley, Sir J., iii. 31.
- Earth and Vegetation*, Mr. Evelyn's *Discourse of*, 1675, i. lxix, cxv ; ii. 309 ; iii. 191, 196.
- Earthquakes,—in England, 1687, iii. 37 ; at Althorpe, &c., 1690, 91 ; in Jamaica, 1690, and in all parts of Europe, 105 ; at Catanea and Malta, 1693, 107 ; at Portland, 1696, 126 ; at New Batavia, 1699, 144 ; at Rome, 1703, 165 ; Mr. Evelyn's letter on Earthquakes and their causes, iii. 467-472.
- Easter in Rome, i. 210.
- Eastern languages, confined information of the, ii. 77.
- East India Company, union of, &c., 1657, ii. 94 ; prosperous, 399 ; probable dissolution, iii. 78 ; transactions in Parliament respecting, 101, 141.
- Dutch, ii. 188, 230 ; their palace at Antwerp, i. 32 ; account of the Company, 1656, ii. 89 ; yachts introduced by the, 134.
- Scotch, iii. 131.
- Eaton, Judge, ii. 6.
- Ecclesiastical affairs, Commission for, 1686, iii. 25.
- Echo, remarkable one, i. 62.
- Eclipse of the Sun, 1652, ii. 39.



- Edgehill, battle of, i. 39.
- Edgman, Mr. William, iv. 281, 294, 299, 343; fidelity to Sir E. Hyde, 252 and n.
- Education, Academic, defects of, 1699, iv. 23-25.
- Edward the Confessor, King of England, crucifix and gold chain found in his coffin, ii. 478 and notes; iii. 184-186.
- VI., King of England, portrait of, ii. 2; MS. exercises of, ii. 370.
- Prince, ii. 10; iv. 337.
- Edwards, Rev. Mr., of Denton, iii. 116.
- Egyptian Antiquities, given to Mr. Evelyn, i. 256.
- Eikon Basiliæ*, arguments that it was written by Charles I., iv. 190 n, 194 n; malicious French translation of, 194, 195.
- Eleanor of Provence, Queen of Henry III., ii. 68.
- Elector, Charles of Bavaria, Prince Palatine of the Rhine, referred to, ii. 10; iv. 69 n, 74 and n, 199 n, 208 n, 233 n, 257 and n; Sir Richard Browne sent to him, 1641, 228; letter of thanks to Sir Richard Browne, 145; joins the Parliament, 146 n, 228 n; comes to London, 1644, 337; ingratitude to Charles I., 257 n.
- Eliot, Mr., of the Bedchamber, ii. 266.
- Elizabeth, Queen of England, Dutch hospital founded by, i. 19; portrait of, ii. 2; head of, cut in sardonyx, 45; her effigy unhurt by the fire, 1666, 206; referred to, 86.
- Princess, daughter of Queen of Bohemia, iii. 438.
- Ellesmere, Sir Thomas Egerton, Lord, Lord Chancellor, iii. 443.
- Elliot, Mr. Thomas, iv. 111, 113, 171; notice of, 113 n.
- Ellis, Mr., a scrivener, ii. 332 n.
- Ellowes, Sir John, iii. 383.
- Eltham Palace, dilapidated state of, ii. 83.
- Sir John Shaw's house at, ii. 166.
- Elysian Fields, notice of the, i. 191.
- Elysium Britannicum*, Mr. Evelyn's collections for that work, iii. 190, 192; plan of the contents, 192-194.
- Elzevir Printing-office, at Leyden, i. 24.
- Emanuel College, Cambridge, ii. 72.
- Embalming, new-invented method of, ii. 393.
- Embassies and Ambassadors attend Charles II. on his restoration, ii. 114, 115, 117. For other particulars relating to, see their various names and countries.
- Emerald, remarkable one, i. 99 n.
- Employment, Public, and an active Life preferred to Solitude*, published by Mr. Evelyn, 1667, i. lxii, cxiii; ii. 214 and n; iii. 85, 190, 196; his letter to Cowley respecting, ii. 214 n; iii. 349, 351.
- Enfield Chace, Lord Coventry's lodge in, ii. 319.
- England, political state of, 1646, iv. 222 n; 1652, 248; 1653, 291, 298.
- England, a character of*, 1659, i. xli, cvii; ii. 121 and n; iii. 194.



- England, New, proceedings in the colony of, 1671, 1672, ii. 261, 262, 264, 273; increase of witches in, iii. 106.
- English language, Mr. Evelyn's plan for improving the, iii. 309-312; society for, recommended by, 1686, 454, 455; such a society begun in 1665, 456.
- Portraits collected by Lord Clarendon, ii. 234 and n; iii. 436, 443, 444; others worthy of being preserved, ii. 234 n; iii. 444; portraits by Holbein and others, 438.
- Enhydros, stone so called by Pliny, i. 151.
- Enstone, Oxfordshire, Bushell's Wells at, ii. 169.
- Epicteti Enchiridion*, consolation in, iii. 300.
- Epiphany, ceremony on the, at Rome, i. 160.
- Epping Forest, Earl of Norwich's house on, ii. 242.
- Erasmus, Desiderius, statue and birthplace of, i. 15; portrait of, by Holbein, ii. 77.
- Eremitano, Albert, head of, i. 253.
- Erizzo, Francisco, Doge of Venice, treatment of King Charles II.'s Ambassador, 1652, iv. 258 and n.
- Erlack, —, iv. 341, 342.
- Erskine, Mr., Master of the Charter-house, ii. 386.
- Erwin, or Irvine, James Campbell, Earl of, a commander for the French King, 1643, iv. 331, *bis*.
- Esdras, ancient books of, i. 230.
- Essex, Robert Devereux, Earl of, Lord General of the Parliament, his estimate of the debts of the army, iv. 72; Scottish
- Essex, Robert Devereux—*continued*.  
forces stated by, 82 n; pursues the Royal army, 153 n; Lord Chamberlain, 1641, Charles I.'s directions to, 127 m, 143; letter to Prince Rupert, granting a pass to Royal Commissioners to the Parliament (1644, Dec.), 155.
- Arthur Capel, Earl of, his creation, 1661, ii. 126; his house, &c., at Cashiobury, 361-363; character, &c., of, and his countess, 363; alluded to, 355, 380; not acquainted with the marriage of Lady Ogle and Mr. Thynne, 386; committed to the Tower, 409; his death, 409, 410 and n, 428.
- petition brought from, i. 297.
- House, notice of, ii. 287. and n.
- Essling, Mons., of Paris, his gardens, i. 64.
- Estampes, town of, i. 74.
- Estcourt, Sir William, killed, ii. 439 n.
- Este, Palazzo D', at Tivoli, i. 215.
- Lucretia D', a philosopher, iii. 396.
- Princess Mary Beatrice D', married to James Duke of York, ii. 298 n.
- Eucharist, doctrine of the Church of England on the, iii. 381-389.
- Evans, Rev. —, ii. 324.
- Eve, statue of, i. 242.
- Evelyn, origin of the family of, and arms, i. *Pedig.* xvi; French branch of, ii. 245; pedigree of, at Wotton, iii. 194.

- Evelyn, Anne, daughter of Richard of Woodcote, marriage of referred to, ii. 233 and n.
- Sir Edward, cousin of John, elected M.P., ii. 461; his death, iii. 103.
- Eleanor, mother of John, i. 1; her character, 2; death of, xix, 7; epitaph on, xcvi.
- Eliza, sister of John, i. 1, 5; ii. 232; *see* Darcy; her death, i. xix, 6.
- Elizabeth, second daughter of John, birth of, ii. 225; her marriage and death, 474.
- the late Sir Frederick, iii. 78 n
- George, grandfather of John, i. xvi. 4; epitaph on, xcv.
- George, elder brother of John, birth of, i. 1; letter to his father Richard, descriptive of the visit of Charles I. to Oxford, 1636, 8 n; iii. 175-177; his marriage, i. 10; his brother John's present to his daughter at her christening, 298; improvements by, in the garden at Wotton, ii. 37; birth of a son to, 39; letter from John Evelyn on the death of his son Richard, iii. 219-221; death of his second wife, Lady Cotton, ii. 167; prevented from becoming a candidate for Surrey, 1685, ii. 460; deputy-lieutenant of the county, iii. 112; his death, 144; character of and particulars of his family, 144, 145; his property, 146, 156; various allusions to, i. 297; ii. 2, 20, 37, 47, 73, 74, 189, 348.
- Capt. George, son of Sir John, and cousin of John, a great traveller, his skill in architecture, ii. 3, 47.
- Evelyn, George, of Nutfield, cousin of John, Deputy Lieutenant of Surrey, iii. 112; his family, 117; daughter of, married, 119; death of, 144.
- George, son of George, and nephew of John, ii. 39; his travels, marriage, and death, iii. 145 and n; daughters of, *ibid.*
- George, 4th son of John, birth of, ii. 92; his death, 99.
- Jane, sister of John, married to William Glanville, birth of, i. 1; death of, ii. 33; allusions to, i. 13, 296; ii. 6, 18.
- Jane, grand-daughter of John, iii. 98, 100.
- Sir John (sen.), his monument at Godstone, ii. 332.
- Sir John, of Godstone, cousin of John, ii. 3 n, 4, 6, 49, 163 and n, 331; iii. 153; his house at Godstone, inferior to what was first built by his father, ii. 102; his 41st wedding day, 108.
- Sir John, of Deane, in Wiltshire, ii. 6; iii. 38; his daughter, Mrs. Pierrepont, ii. 6; iii. 141.
- EVELYN, John, his life and character, by Mr. H. B. Wheatley, F.S.A., and pedigree, i. xiii, ci, ciii; (1620) his birth, i. 1; early life of, xvii; (1624) received his first instruction under Mr. Frier, xviii, 4; (1625) passed his childhood at Lewes, with his grandfather, 4; (1626) his picture painted by Chanterell, xviii, 4; (1628) taught to write by M. Citolin, and sent to the Free School at Southover, xviii,



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

5 ; (1631) begins to record remarkable circumstances, xviii, 5 ; his Diary mentioned, iii. 194 ; iv. 80 n ; (1636) admitted of the Middle Temple, xix, 8 ; (1637) entered a Commoner of Balliol College, xix, 8 ; presents books to its library, 9 ; (1639) studies music, and visits various parts of England, xx, 10 ; (1641) his portrait painted by Vanderborcht, xxi, 13 ; makes a tour through various parts of Holland and Flanders, xxi, 14 ; volunteers before Genappe, xxi, 14 and n, 16 ; at the Court of the Queen of Bohemia, 15, 16 ; at the fair of Rotterdam, 18 ; matriculated at Leyden, 23 ; at Bois-le-Duc, 26 ; at Williamstadt, 28 ; leaves Holland, *ibid.* ; arrives in London, xxi, 38 ; elected one of the Comptrollers of the Revellers at the Middle Temple, but declines, 38 ; (1642) a royal volunteer at the battle of Brentford, xxii, 39 ; (1643) improves the house at Wotton, xxii, 40 ; sends a horse accoutred to the King at Oxford, *ibid.* ; embarks for France, xxii, 41 ; his remarks during his travels in that kingdom, 1643-44, xxiii, 42, 93, (1644) travels to Normandy, 64 ; attacked by robbers, 74 ; arrested by his valet, 82 ; establishes two of his relations at Tours, 83 ; sets out for Italy, xxiv, 84 ; embarks at Cannes, 93 ; sails down the Mediterranean, 94 ; his perilous situation, *ibid.* ; arrives at Genoa, xxiv, 95 ; account of his travels, 1644-46, in

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

various parts of Italy, xxiv-xxviii, 95-278 ; his treatise *Of Liberty and Servitude*, published in 1644 and 1649, cv ; ii. 1 ; iii. 189 ; blessed by the Pope, i. 213 ; travelling expenses of, xxix, 219, 263, 293 ; his illness from bathing at Venice, 235 ; disappointed of a voyage to the Holy Land, xxvi, 246 ; matriculated at Padua, 254 ; accompanies the Earl of Arundel to the gardens of Mantua, *ibid.* ; contributes to Father Kircher's *Obeliscus Pamphilius*, 256 ; ii. 83 ; elected Syndicus Artistarum at Padua, but declines, i. xxvi, 256 ; studies at Padua, *ibid.* ; obliged to arm there in self-defence, 258 ; his illness from drinking wine cooled with ice, xxvi, 258 ; learns the theorbo, 158, 259 ; receives a present from the Nuns of St. Catharine at Padua on his birthday, xxvi, 259 ; entertains the British residents in Venice, *ibid.* ; (1646) fired at by a Venetian in his gondola, 260 ; studies surgery at Padua, xxvi, 260 ; obtains a Spanish pass, 262 ; with the Earl of Arundel at Padua, 263 ; adventure with a Scotch Colonel, xxviii, 269 ; journey over the Alps into Switzerland, 1646, xxviii, 278 ; detained at Mount Simplon, 281, 284, 286 ; catches the small-pox, xxix, 287 ; crosses the Lake of Geneva, xxviii, 289, and joins in the exercises of the Campus Martius, 292 ; sails down the Rhone, and arrives in France, 1647, 293 ;



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

learns High Dutch and Spanish at Paris, 295 ; attends a course of Chemistry, and learns the lute, *ibid.* ; marries Mary, the daughter of Sir Richard Browne, Ambassador at Paris, xxix, 295 ; returns to England, xxx, 296 ; visits King Charles I. at Hampton Court, *ibid.* ; (1648) buys the Manor of Hurcott, xxxi, 297 ; his portrait painted by Walker, *ibid.* ; gives a present to his niece Mary, daughter of his brother George, at her christening, 298 ; (1649) narrow escape of, ii. 1 ; studies Chemistry, *ibid.* ; corresponds with Sir Richard Browne, 4 ; illness of, manor of Warley bought by, *ibid.* ; sets out for Paris, 1649, i. xxxiii ; ii. 6, 7 ; remarks during his residence in France, 1649-50, 7-16 ; with King Charles II. at St. Germain's, i. 295 ; ii. 7 ; presented, at an audience with the French Regency, 10 ; (1650) perilous adventure of, in company with Lord Ossory, 12, 13 ; his portrait drawn and engraven by Nanteuil, i. xxxiii ; ii. 14 and n ; sails for England, 1650, i. xxxiv ; ii. 17 ; his pass from Bradshaw, 17 n ; in danger from the Rebel army, 18 ; returns to France in two months, *ibid.*, 19 ; remarks during his stay there, 1650-52, 19-35 ; resolves to return to England, 32, 33 ; (1651) letter of Dr. Cosin to, on his proposal of purchasing Dr. C.'s library, i. xxxvi ; ii. 38 ; iii. 452 and n ; at an audience of Sir Richard Browne with Louis

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

XIV., i. xxxiv ; ii. 28 ; character of his letters, iii. 201 ; letter to Lady Garret, on the loss of a present sent to him, iii. 201 ; (1652) returns to England, i. xxxv ; ii. 34 ; motives for settling in England, 36, 37 ; his *State of France*, 1652, iii. 195 ; settles at Says Court, Deptford, ii. 37, 76 ; improves the garden at Wotton, 37 ; urged to publish his letter to Bishop Cosin's son, 38 ; letter to Mr. Thurland, on his legal affairs, and desiring to purchase the seat at Albury, iii. 202 ; goes to Rye to receive his wife, ii. 40 ; robbery committed upon, near Bromley, 41, 42 ; birth of his first son, Richard, i. xxxvi ; ii. 45 ; discharges all his debts, 48 ; (1653) arranges the garden at Says Court, 46 ; purchases ditto, i. xxxvi ; ii. 44, 46, 47 ; birth of his second son, John, i. xxxvii ; ii. 49 ; (1654) death of ditto, 50 ; binds his servant apprentice, 51 ; letter to Dr. Jeremy Taylor, consoling him in his imprisonment (Feb. 1654-55), iii. 203 ; journey into Wiltshire, &c., 1654, ii. 52-73 ; birth of his third son, John, 75 ; attends a private meeting of the Church of England in London, 74 ; (1655) 76, 79 ; (1656) 87 ; (1657) 88 ; (1655) applies to Dr. Jeremy Taylor as his spiritual adviser, 76 ; letter to Dr. Jeremy Taylor on the disastrous state of the Church, iii. 205 ; visits Abp. Usher, ii. 77 ; conversation with Oughtred, 78 ; catechises

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

his family, 79 ; letter from Dr. Jeremy Taylor, commending his piety (Nov. 1655), iii. 208 ; visits Hartlib, ii. 80 ; takes cold, *ibid.* ; attends a farewell sermon, on the prohibition of the Church Ministers, 80 ; (1656) takes cold, 81 ; procures ordination for Mons. Le Franc, whom he had converted, 83 ; publishes his *Essay on Lucretius*, 1656, i. xxxvii ; ii. 84 ; iii. 189, 195, 212, 218 ; letters of Dr. Jeremy Taylor to, on the depressed state of the Church, his *Cases of Conscience*, 209 ; thanking him for his hospitality, and imposing a task on him for publishing his *Lucretius*, 212 ; to Dr. Taylor, on his desire of retirement from the world (April, 1656), i. xxxviii ; iii. 212 ; from the same, concerning Mr. Thurland, *Lucretius*, &c., 216-218 ; visits the Dutch Ambassador, ii. 84, 89, 94 ; journey to the North-east of England, 1656, 84, 85 ; letters to George Evelyn, on the death of his son Richard, iii. 219 ; of Barlow, the painter, on dedicating a plate to him, 222 ; answered, 223 ; to Mr. Maddox, on behalf of Dr. Needham, with hints for travellers in France and Italy, 224-227 ; to Lieutenant of the Tower, on account of Dr. Taylor, 227 ; to Mr. Thurland, on his *Treatise on Prayer*, 228 ; from Dr. Taylor, on the loss of his children, 233 ; to Hon. Robert Boyle, inclosing some of his unpublished *Treatises*, &c.,

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

234 ; to Dr. Jeremy Taylor, sending him a present, &c., 236 ; Dr. Taylor's acknowledgment for, 237 ; falls from his coach, ii. 91 ; soldiers quartered on, *ibid.* ; birth of his fourth son, George, 92 ; uses his interest about the living of Eltham, *ibid.* ; letters, to Dr. Jeremy Taylor to christen his son, iii. 238 ; of Dr. Taylor, complying with his request, 239 ; from ditto, on the immortality of the soul, 240 ; subscribes to the stock of the English East India Company, ii. 95 ; surprised with many others in Exeter Chapel by the military, 95, 96 ; (1658) his grief at the death of his eldest son, Richard, 96 ; letter to Sir Richard Browne on that occasion, iii. 244 ; death of his son George, ii. 99 ; letter of Dr. Taylor on those afflictions, iii. 245 ; from ditto, concerning a living, and the lawfulness of interest, 248 ; publishes a translation of *St. Chrysostom on Education*, 1659, i. xxxix ; ii. 99 n, 103 ; iii. 189, 195 ; summoned by Commissioners for new Foundations, ii. 104 ; letter to Mr. Thurland, recommending a person to travel with Lord Percy, iii. 249 ; publishes his *French Gardener*, 1658, i. xl ; ii. 105 and n, iii. 189, 195 ; (1659) his intimacy with Hon. Rob. Boyle, ii. 107, 117, 124 ; comes to lodge in London, 107 ; extracts from letters to Mr. Boyle on his *History of Trades*, and on the culture of Flowers and *Sylva* (1659), iii.



Evelyn, John—*continued*.

192, 260; publishes his *Apology for the Royal Party*, 1659, i. xlii; ii. 108; iii. 189, 195; letter to George Tuke on his brother becoming a proselyte to the Romish communion, 252; treats with Col. Morley to bring in the King, ii. 109; account of the negotiation, and letters to Morley, urging him to the enterprise, i. xlii; iii. 178–183; letters from Dr. Taylor on the literature, &c., of England, 253; to Robert Boyle on *Essence of Roses*, 255; from Dr. Taylor, on literary subjects, 256; to Robert Boyle, on a Mathematical College, 261; i. xli; on his *Seraphic Love*, iii. 267; from Dr. Taylor, on religious subjects, and Mr. Evelyn's writings, 274; (1660) 275; to Dr. Wilkins on the anatomy and the vegetative motion of trees, 277; illness of, ii. 111; publishes his *News from Brussels Unmasked*, 1660, in defence of the King, i. xlii; ii. 110 and n; iii. 95; procures Col. Morley's pardon, ii. 112; solicited to go and invite over the King, *ibid.*; presented by the Duke of York to the King at the Restoration, 112; invited to accept a commission for a troop of horse, but declines, 116; presented to Anne, Duchess of York, 121; his *Character of England* presented at Court, *ibid.* and n; iii. 194; i. xli; (1661) chosen a member of the Philosophical Society (afterwards the Royal Society), i. xliii; ii. 122;

Evelyn, John—*continued*.

presents his *Circle of Mechanical Trades* to the Society, 122; and his *Relation of the Peak of Teneriffe*, 124; Prince Rupert shows him the method of Mezzotinto, 123, 124; declines the honour of Knight of the Bath, 125; presents his *Panegyric on the Coronation* (1661) to the King, 130; iii. 189, 195; discourses with Charles II. about the Royal Society, &c., ii. 132; and presents his *Fumifugium* (1661) to the King, i. xlv; ii. 134 and n, 135; iii. 190, 195; letters to Mr. Boyle with that tract, 280; from Dr. Taylor on his works, 281; to Mr. Chiffinch on a catalogue of the King's curiosities, 283; sails down the Thames with the King (on a wager between the King and Duke of York's pleasure boats); his discourse with the King, ii. 134; commanded to draw up a relation of the *Encounter of the Spanish and French Ambassadors*, 135, 136; iii. 195; reads it to the King, ii. 136; the *Narrative* reprinted, 485; his *Translation of Gaspar Naudæus concerning Libraries*, i. xlvii; ii. 138; iii. 189, 195, 465; receives the thanks of the Royal Society for a compliment in it, ii. 139; James, Duke of York's discourse with, *ibid.*; his *Tyrannus, or the Mode*, 1661, i. xlvii; ii. 140; iii. 190, 195; (1662) holds the candle while King Charles's head was drawn for the new coin, ii. 141; Duke of York pays a visit to him, 142; attends the King, and talks with



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

him about the Palace at Greenwich, 143 ; appointed a Commissioner for improving streets, &c., in London, i. xlviii ; ii. 144, 159 ; attends Prince Rupert to the Royal Society, 144 ; presents his *History of Chalcopy* (1662) to the Royal Society, 122, 147 ; iii. 190, 195 ; made a Commissioner for Charitable Uses, ii. 147, 149, 151 ; visit of the Queen Mother to, 149 ; Lord Chancellor Hyde's visit to, *ibid.* ; nominated by the King, of the Council of the Royal Society, *ibid.* ; sails down the Thames with the King and Queen, 150 ; letters to Lady Cotton on the death of her infant, iii. 284 ; to Mr. Vander Douse, on translating his *Relation of China*, 285 ; petitions the King about his own concerns, and goes with him to Mons. Febure, ii. 152 ; presents his *Sylva* to the Royal Society, 153, 163 ; at Court, 152, 153 ; suggests the planting of the Forest of Dean with oak, 154 ; (1663) the King pays him a visit at Says Court, 158 ; his house broken open, *ibid.* ; letters to Dr. Croone, offering him the situation of travelling tutor to the Howards of Norfolk (July, 1663, iii. 286 ; to Dr. Pierce on his Sermon, and Cressy's Reply, recommending answer, ii. 160 ; iii. 287, 292 ; to Mr. Boyle on literary subjects (1664), 289 ; made a Commissioner of the Mint, ii. 161, 164 ; death of his son Richard, 164 ; letter to George Evelyn on expenses of his travels in Italy, iii. 145

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

n ; (1664) with the King, ii. 163 ; subscribes to Sir Arthur Slingsby's Lottery, 166 ; goes with Lord Cornbury into Oxfordshire, 168-170 ; King Charles commends his *Parallel of Ancient and Modern Architecture*, 1664, and his *Sylva*, ii. 171 ; the former referred to, ii. 168 n, 173 ; iii. 189, 464 ; iv. 9 ; references to his *Sylva*, 1664, &c., ii. 153, 154, 163, 243 ; iii. 190, 195, 463 ; appointed a Commissioner for Sick and Wounded, i. liii ; ii. 172 ; iii. 290 ; proceedings in that office, ii. 173, 176, 179, 180, 182, 183, 184, 185, 187, 188, 191, 192, 194, 196, 197, 198, 199, 203, 211, 212, 221, 223, 229, 272, 277, 281, 283, 284, 285, 297 ; Letter to Dr. Sprat, on Sorbière, and his *Voyage* to England, and a vindication of Lord Clarendon from his aspersions, iii. 294 ; Queen Mother's compliment to, for his book on *Architecture*, ii. 173 ; (1665) publishes a Part of the *Mystery of Jesuitism*, 1664, i. lvii ; ii. 174 and n, 175, 176 ; iii. 189, 196, 299 ; presents a copy of it to Lord Cornbury, ii. 174 n ; King Charles commends it, 176 ; his *Kalendarium Hortense* published, 1664, iii. 190, 195, 463 ; visits the Royal Menagerie in St. James's Park, ii. 177 ; letters to Lord Cornbury on the Lent Fast, and recommending the closing of the theatres, iii. 299-303 ; to Sir Thomas (afterwards Lord) Clifford, on the affairs of the sick and wounded, 303 ; to Dr.

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

(afterwards Sir Christopher) Wren, to desire him to recommend a tutor for his son, 304 ; to Duke of Albemarle, on the affairs of the sick and wounded, 306 ; to Sir Thomas Clifford, on the same subject, 307 ; to Sir Peter Wyche on the English language, 309 ; to Lord Cornbury, with hints for a course of study on history, 313 ; entertained on board the fleet at the Nore, ii. 185 ; sends his family from London on account of the plague, but remains there himself, 186 ; passes through the infected parts of the City, 186, 187 ; letters to Lord Cornbury, congratulating him on his marriage ; his own critical state as Commissioner for sick and wounded, iii. 316, 321, 322 ; of Sir Philip Warwick to, on the same subject, 322 ; Mr. Evelyn's answer, 324 ; to Sir Wm. Coventry on the same subject, 327 ; to Mr. Pepys, inclosing a plan of his proposed Infirmary, 329-340 ; to Lord Cornbury in praise of Clarendon House, 340 ; to Dr. Wilkinson *Tillotson's Rule of Faith*, &c., 342 ; (1666) graciously received, and his services acknowledged, by King Charles and the Duke of York, ii. 191, 192 ; his plan for an Infirmary for sick and wounded, 192 ; iii. 329-340 ; presents a Part of *Mystery of Jesuitism* to the King, ii. 192 ; commanded by the King to recommend a Justice of Peace for Surrey, 193 ; elected of the Council of the Royal Society, but declines, *ibid.* ; with

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

Prince Rupert at the Nore, 196 ; made a Commissioner for the farming and making of saltpetre, i. lviii and n ; ii. 197 ; a Commissioner for repair of old St. Paul's Cathedral, i. lviii ; ii. 199 ; witnesses the awful fire of London, 200-207 ; passes over the ruins, 204-207 ; presents his plan for rebuilding London to the King, 209 ; i. lix and n ; iii. 194 ; overturned in his carriage, ii. 212 ; letter to Sir Samuel Tuke on the death of his Lady ; on the fire of London, and noticing his plan for rebuilding the City, 209 n ; iii. 343 ; Persian habit assumed by the King, which he had recommended in his *Tyrannus*, ii. 210 ; letter to Lord Clarendon on correct editions of school classics, 346 ; library and MSS. of the Earl of Arundel, given to the Royal Society by his means, ii. 214, 340 ; (1667) publishes his *Public Employment preferred to Solitude*, 1667, i. lxii ; ii. 214 and n ; iii. 85, 190, 196 ; letter to Mr. Cowley on that subject, and recommending him to write a poem on the Royal Society, iii. 349 ; visits the Duke and Duchess of Newcastle, ii. 216, 217, 218 ; letter of Cowley on his Poem on the Royal Society, iii. 351 ; conducts the Duchess of Newcastle to a meeting of Royal Society, ii. 218 ; with King Charles II., 217 ; commanded by his Majesty to search for peat, 219 ; his receipt for making *houllies* (a mixture of charcoal and loam) tried, 221 ; letter to



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

Henry Howard of Norfolk, soliciting the *Marmora Arundeliana* for the University of Oxford, ii. 240; iii. 352 and n, 353; obtains the Arundelian Marbles, i. lxi; ii. 225, 240; letter to Dr. Bathurst on that subject, iii. 354; University in convocation presents its acknowledgments to, ii. 226, 227; gives the Royal Society his Tables of Veins and Arteries, i. 261; ii. 227; letter to Earl of Sandwich, on Spanish horticulture, iii. 355; (1668) gives a quantity of bricks towards building a College for Royal Society, ii. 229; letter to Dr. Joseph Glanvil, thanking him for a compliment in his *Ne plus ultra*, iii. 356; lease of land granted to, by the King, who discourses with him on several subjects, ii. 231; letters to the Earl of Sandwich, on Spanish horticulture, iii. 358; to Dr. Beale on Optics and Acoustics, &c., 360; publishes his *Perfection of Painting*, 1668, i. lxiv; ii. 231 and n; iii. 189, 196, 465; list of great men whose portraits he recommended Lord Clarendon to procure, ii. 234 n; iii. 444, 445; (1669) letter to Sir Thomas Clifford, on a libel on England, published by the Dutch, 365; presents his *History of the Three Great Impostors* (1669) to the King, ii. 235 and n; iii. 190, 196; letter to Lord Henry Howard of Norfolk, to permit the Royal Society to exchange some of the MSS. given by, for mathematical and other scientific

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

books, 369; degree of Doctor conferred on him by the University of Oxford, ii. 240; letters to Dr. Meric Casaubon, enquiring whether his father left a treatise *De Baculis*, &c., iii. 371; of Dr. Casaubon in answer, 372; his affliction on account of his brother Richard, ii. 233, 242, 243; (1670) solicits the office of Latin Secretary, 244; pressed to write the History of the Dutch War, i. lxxv; ii. 235, 246, 299; draws up a Draft of the History, 251; the King orders official documents to be given to him for the History, 252, 253, 256, 265, 284; letters to Lord Clifford, inclosing a Synopsis of the History, &c., iii. 375; contents of the first and second books, and Introduction, &c., (1671) 378-381; to Father Patrick on the doctrine of the English Church concerning the Eucharist, 381; complains of want of co-operation, 390; introduces Gibbon the carver at Court, ii. 254, 255 n, 256; appointed on a Council for Foreign Plantations, 257, 259; attends the meetings of, 260, 262, 263, 271, 273, 274, 279, 284, 287, 288, 291, 293; entertained by the Trinity Company on passing a fine of land for their Alms-house, 260; his law-suit with Mr. Cock, 262; dines with King Charles II. at Euston, 266; (1672) lease of Says Court granted to, by the King, 272; with the King about the fleet, 279, 281; conversation with Lord Sandwich, and re-



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

flections on his death, 281, 282; reads the first part of his Dutch War to Lord Clifford, 284; chosen Secretary of the Royal Society, 288; Letters, to Lord Clifford, returning documents consulted for the Dutch War, ii. 294; iii. 393; to Lord Cornbury, desiring the perusal of Sir Geo. Downing's Dispatches for the Dutch War, &c., 394; (1673) sworn a younger Brother of the Trinity House, 289 n; takes the sacrament and oaths as ordered by Parliament, 291; Lord Clifford's prophetic farewell to, 295, 296; charitable works of, 299; (1674) his *Navigation and Commerce, their Original and Progress*, 1674 (the preface to the History of the Dutch War), commended by King Charles II. but publicly recalled, i. cxv; ii. 301 and n, 302; iii. 196; letters, to the Duchess of Newcastle on a present of her Works, iii. 395; to Dr. Meric Casaubon, consoling him in his affliction from the stone, and on his own translation of Lucretius, 398; (1675) his character of Sir William Petty, ii. 305, 306; his *Discourse of Earth and Vegetation*, 1675, i. lxix; ii. 309; iii. 190, 196; Lord Berkeley confides his estates and property to, ii. 315; (1676) 318, 321, 324; the Queen entertained at Says Court, 319; a copy of *Marmora Oxoniensia Arundeliana* presented to him by the University, *ibid.*; serious consequences of a fall to him, 323; (1677) becomes a trustee for Lord Mordaunt, 324;

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

(1678) his friendship for Mrs. Godolphin, 340-343; (1679) appointed one of the executors of Lady Mordaunt, 359, 364; his *Acetaria*, part of the *Elysium Britannicum*, iii. 190; success of his *Sylva*, &c., 191, 195; contents of his *Elysium Britannicum*, 192; treats for marriage of his son with daughter of Sir John Stonehouse, ii. 359; (1680) last conversation of with Lord Ossory, &c., 365; letters to the Countess of Ossory on his death, iii. 399; (1681) to Mr. Pepys, on his escape from shipwreck, 400; to Dr. Morley, Bp. of Winchester, on the late Duchess of York deserting the Church of England, and accusing him, ii. 395; iii. 401; to Mr. Wm. London, on his proposed History of Jamaica, &c., 402; Earl of Essex vindicates himself from an injurious report, ii. 386; letters to Mr. Pepys, inclosing his History of the Dutch War, with particulars respecting it, his *Discourse of Modern Languages*, and titles of a multitude of papers sent to Mr. Pepys, iii. 406; (1682) consulted by Sir Stephen Fox about Chelsea Hospital, ii. 390, 394; attacked with ague, and settles his affairs, 391; letters to Dr. Fell, recommending answers to be written to the *Histoire Critique*, and other atheistical books, iii. 410; to Mr. Pepys, on the Dominion of the Sea and the Fishery, claimed by the English, and on English commerce, 414; seized with a fainting fit, and declines standing

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

the election for President of Royal Society, ii. 399 ; disposes of his East India adventure, 399 ; (1683) his account of Sir Richard Browne, 400–402 ; communicates to Dr. Plot a list of his works, iii. 189, 190 ; plants his walks at Says Court, ii. 404 and n ; iv. 43 ; declines a lucrative employment from conscientious motives, ii. 419 ; attends the King on a visit to the Duchess of Portsmouth, 419 ; visits the Lord Danby in the Tower 424 ; (1684) consulted by Dr. Tenison about erecting a Public Library, 429 ; his *Account of the Winter of 1683–4*, published in *Phil. Trans.*, 431 ; consulted about building over Berkeley Gardens, 433 ; (1685) assists in proclaiming James II. on the death of Charles, 449 ; his affliction on the death of his daughter Mary, 452 ; his *Mundus Muliebris* (1690) referred to, 455 and n ; death of his daughter Elizabeth, iii. 474 ; melancholy reflections on the deaths of his daughters, i. lxxiii ; iii. 474 ; James II.'s gracious reception of, *ibid.* ; accompanies Mr. Pepys to Portsmouth to attend on James II., 475 ; letters to Mr. Pepys, on the colours of the Ancients, &c., iii. 420 ; of Mr. Pepys, about papers tending to prove Charles II. a Roman Catholic, 422 and n ; iii. 1, 2, 3 ; his portrait taken by Kneller, 5 ; appointed a Commissioner of Sewers, 11 ; and a Commissioner for executing the office of Privy Seal, i. lxxiii ; transactions, iii. 13, 14,

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

(1686) 15, 16, 20, 21, 22, 31 ; takes the test, 17 ; tedious lawsuit against, *ibid.* ; Sir Gilbert Gerrard proposes to marry his son to Mr. Evelyn's daughter Susanna, 17 ; refuses the Privy Seal for Printing Missals, 18 ; and declines attendance, 19 ; refuses Privy Seal for printing Popish Books, &c., 22 ; in attendance on James II. on his birth-day, 1686, 27 ; letters, to Lady Ann Spencer, Countess of Sunderland, inclosing a catalogue of religious books for her use, iii. 424 ; to Henry, Earl of Clarendon, on the affairs of Ireland, &c., 425 ; (1687) reflections of, on King James's (attempted) introduction of Popery, iii. 31 ; Commissioners for Privy Seal dismissed, 32 ; particulars relating to his lawsuit, which was terminated by the favour of James II., 35, 36, 37, 40 ; appointed a Governor of St. Thomas's Hospital, 41 ; (1688) petitions to be allowed charges as a Commissioner of sick and wounded, 46 ; letter to Abp. Sancroft, detecting machinations of the Jesuits, 55 n ; prayer on the anniversary of his birth-day (68th year), 58 ; letters to his son about return of James II. to Whitehall (1688), and consequent proceedings, &c., iii. 427 ; to the Countess of Sunderland of moral advice, 431 ; to Lord Spencer on Collections of English Letters, 434 ; (1689) Archbishop Sancroft thanks him for his letter, iii. 63 ; his examination of the extra-



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

ordinary talents of Dr. Clench's son, 64; his remarks on Queen Mary II., 69; conversations with Abp. Sancroft and Bp. Lloyd, 73, 77; his portrait taken again by Kneller, 78; letter to Mr. Pepys on a compliment paid him, . . . on painters, &c. . . coins, . . . Lord Clarendon's collection of portraits, . . . on prints. . . public libraries in Paris, and in England, . . . Society for improving the English language recommended, iii. 435; Mr. Pepys' answer to, 457; continuation of his former letter—on dreams, 458; prayer on his birth-day, 1689, iii. 80; (1690) conversation with Mr. Pepys on the Navy, 83; dines with Sir G. Mackenzie, against whom he had written his *Essay on Public Employment*, 85 and n; Conversation with Dr. Lloyd, 85, 87, 88; letter to Lady Sunderland, consoling her on the death of her daughter, the Countess of Arran, 460; becomes one of the bail for Lord Clarendon, iii. 90; letter to the Countess of Sunderland, on his *Kalendarium Hortense, Sylva, Parallel of Architecture*, &c., 463; (1691) encourages Dr. (afterwards Sir) Hans Sloane to write a History of Jamaica, iii. 93; conversation with Abp. Sancroft, 94; letter to Mr. Anthony à Wood, communicating particulars of Mr. Welles, and of himself and publications, for the *Athenæ Oxonienses*, 465; (1692) at the Funeral of Mr. Boyle, iii. 99;

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

a trustee for the Boyle Lecture, 101, 111; his opinion of Dr. Bentley's Boyle Lecture, 102; letter to Dr. Tenison on Earthquakes and their causes, 467; (1693) Mr. Draper's marriage with his daughter Susanna, i. lxxvi; iii. 108; declines Presidentship of the Royal Society, 111; letters to Dr. Plot on Coins, 473; answer, *ibid.*; to Lord Spencer on his making a tour through England, 474; (1694) his Translation of M. de la Quinteneye's *Complete Gardener*, 1693, i. lxxv; iii. 196; Duke of Norfolk's kindness for the Evelyn family, 112; goes with his family to live with his brother at Wotton, 115; letters to Bp. Gibson, communicating particulars for his edition of the *Britannia*, 475; to Dr. Tenison, communicating information relative to Abp. Laud, to Mr. Wharton's Life, &c., 476; to Mr. Benjamin Tooke, sending him the copy of his *Essay on Medals* (1697) to print, &c., 478; the work referred to, iii. 190, 196, 465; his conversation with Marquis of Normandy, about Charles II., iii. 118; Treasurer of Greenwich Hospital, 119, 135 n, 156 and n; his account of the death of Q. Mary, 119, 120; furnished the additions to Surrey in *Camden's Britannia* (1695), i. lxxvii; iii. 120; one of a Committee to survey Greenwich House, &c., 122, 132; his intimacy with Dr. Tenison, 119, 123, 125; interests himself about the Royal Library at St. James's, 125, (1696) 138;



Evelyn, John—*continued.*

letters to Mr. Wotton, containing an account of Hon. Robert Boyle, for his intended life, iii. 479; from Mr. Wotton in answer, and sending him his abridgment of Scilla's book on Shells, iv. 1; from the same, thanking him for recommending him to the Archbishop of Canterbury, 2; settles the Boyle Lecture in perpetuity, iii. 129; lets his house at Says Court to Adm. Benbow, i. lxxvii; iii. 130; letter to Lord Godolphin, on English Historical Medals, Council of Trade, enlarging of London, scenes at elections, iv. 3; first stone of Greenwich Hospital laid by him, and others, iii. 132; letters, to Mr. Place about reprinting his *Parallel of Architecture*, iv. 8; to Mr. Wotton, on his *Sylva*, and on the husbandry and gardening of the ancients, 11; (1697) letter to Dr. Bohun, noticing his employments, &c., at Wotton, his grandson, and daughter Draper, iii. 135 n; letter to Dr. Bentley, on his *Sylva*, and *Parallel of Architecture*, iv. 13; goes with the Surrey Address of congratulation for peace to K. William III., iii. 137; letters to Dr. Bentley on his proposal for erecting a new library in St. James's Park, iv. 14; (1698) to Dr. Godolphin, with an account of his *Treatise on Medals*, 15; from Mr. Wotton, concerning his intended life of Boyle, 18; from the same on Medals, 19; to Mr. Henshaw, introducing Dr. Hoy, 21; his house at Says Court let to Peter

Evelyn, John—*continued.*

the Great, i. lxxvii; iii. 139 and n; (1699) affliction for the loss of his son, 141; regret for his brother Richard's death, 144; letter to Dr. Nicholson, on education for the Bar, the *Historical Library*, ravages committed in the Paper office, original letters in his possession, iv. 23; (1700) his *Acetaria*, 1699, referred to, i. lxxx; iii. 146, 190, 196; settles at Wotton, 149; his prayer on completing his 80th year, 154; his concern for the illness of his grandson, 155; (1701) subscribes towards rebuilding Oakwood Chapel, at Wotton, 159; holds his courts in Surrey, 160; (1702) his Tables of Veins and Arteries ordered to be engraven by the Royal Society, 160; letters from Mr. Wotton concerning his intended Life of Boyle, iv. 27, 29; elected a member of Society for Propagating Gospel in Foreign Parts, iii. 162; pious examination of himself on completing his 82nd year, 162; (1703) resigns the Treasurership of Greenwich Hospital to his son-in-law Draper, 166; account of his Treasurership, 156 n; recollection of himself at, 83, 166; letters from Mr. Wotton with queries for his Life of Boyle, iv. 30; answer to, with anecdotes of Hartlib, Boyle, Sir W. Petty, Sir Geoffrey Fenton, &c., 32; Wotton's reply to, 42; (1705) conversation with Dr. Dickinson about Philosopher's Elixir, 34; Duke of Marlborough's condescension to, iii. 170; his sickness,

Evelyn, John—*continued*.

i. lxxxii; iii. 172; his death, *ibid.*; Christmas hospitality to his neighbours, ii. 174, 235, 299; his piety at that season and on his birth-day, *see* at the close of each year, and Oct. 31; list of his published and unpublished works, i. cv–cxxxviii; iii. 189, 190, 194; etchings by, 196; his monument and epitaph, i. xcv.

— John-Stansfield (second son of John), birth, ii. 49; death, 50.

— JOHN (third son of John), birth, ii. 75; presented to the Queen Mother, 120; alluded to, 147, 186, 212, 334; entered of Oxford University, 214, 236; admitted of Middle Temple, 279; published a translation of Rapinus' *Hortorum*, 288 and n; his interview with the Bishop of Chichester, 290; a Younger Brother of the Trinity House, 291; went with Lord Berkeley into France, 316; return of, 319; his marriage, 359; sent into Devon by Lords of the Treasury, iii. 41; Commissioner of Irish Revenue, 102, 105; his death and burial, 141.

— John (grandson of John), birth, ii. 392; at Eton, iii. 103; entered of Oxford, 141; attacked with small-pox, 155; quits college, 160; Commissioner of prizes, 159; treaty for marriage, Treasurer of stamp duties, 168.

— John (son of George and nephew of John), marriage, ii. 361, 380.

Evelyn, John, of Nutfield, M.P., his death, iii. 163.

— Martha (daughter-in-law of John), thrown out of her coach, iii. 43.

— MARY (daughter of Sir Richard Browne, and wife of John Evelyn), marriage with and references to, i. *Pedig.* 295; ii. 3, 7, 12, 16, 25, 39, 40, 41, 46, 52, 53, 54, 56, 61, 70, 75, 81, 95, 105, 107, 147, 167, 178, 186, 217, 260; portrait, ii. 3, 15, 35, 38; Charles II.'s condescension and promise to, 119, 125; Princess Henrietta thanks her for her *Character of England* she had presented, 121; presents a copy of a miniature by Oliver to Charles II., 131; character of her by Dr. Bohun, iv. 49; letters to Dr. Bohun on epistolary writing, 55; on Dryden's *Siege of Grenada*, 56; on female accomplishments and duties, 57; to Lady Tuke, and to Mr. Bohun, on the death of Sir S. Tuke, iii. 252; iv. 59; to Mr. Bohun on the death of Dr. Breton, 61; to Lady Tuke on the death of her own daughter Mary, 62; to her son, exhorting him to a virtuous life, 64; extract from her Will, containing a character of Mr. Evelyn, 65; her epitaph, i. xcvi.

— Mary (daughter of John), ii. 300, 348, 391, 441; birth of, 188; her death by the small-pox, 452; her monument and epitaph, i. xcix.

— Mary, Lady Wyche (niece of John, and daughter of George), John Evelyn presents



Evelyn, Mary, Lady Wyche—  
*continued.*

her with a piece of plate at her christening, i. 298 ; marriage, iii. 103. *See* Wyche.

— Mary (niece of John, and daughter of Richard), marriage of, ii. 246.

— Martha-Maria (grandchild of John), birth, ii. 409; death, 415.

— Richard (father of John), his marriage and family, i. 1 ; his person and character, i. 2, 12 ; fined for declining knight-hood, i. 2 n ; High Sheriff of Surrey and Sussex, i. 1, 6 ; sickness and death, 12 ; epitaph on, i. xcv.

— Richard of Woodcote (brother of John), birth, i. 1 ; chamber-fellow with his brother John at Oxford, 10 ; alluded to, 297, 298 ; ii. 75, 167, 246 ; marriage, i. 298 ; his house called Baynard's, 297 ; ii. 91 ; afflicted with the stone, 232, 233, 237, 242 ; his death and funeral, 244.

— Richard (son of John), birth and christening, ii. 45 ; death, 96 ; his remarkable early talents and piety, 96-100 ; his early death alluded to, iii. 66 ; letters occasioned by his death, 244 ; monument and epitaph of, i. xcvi. — Another son Richard, death and burial of, ii. 164.

— Richard (grandson of John), birth, ii. 380 ; death, 385.

— Richard (nephew of John), his death, iii. 219 n.

— Susanna (daughter of John), birth of, ii. 236 ; marriage, i. lxxv. ; iii. 108 ; character and accomplishments, *ibid.*, 109 ; *see* Draper.

Evelyn, Sir Thomas, ii. 380.

— William, of St. Clere (son of George of Nutfield), assumed the name of Glanville, iii. 161 ; his issue, 161 n.

— (cousin of John), house near Clifden, ii. 354.

— family, epitaphs of, i. xcvi.

— Mons., a French physician, ii. 245.

*Evening Lover*, a play, ii. 230 and n.

Everard, Mrs., a chemist, ii. 17.

Eversfield, —, of Sussex, his daughter, ii. 361, 380 ; iii. 146.

Everston, Capt. Cornelius, taken prisoner, ii. 180 and n ; his liberty restored by Charles II. on account of his father's services, 180 and n, 181, 303.

Euganean Hills, notice of the, i. 264.

Euston, Suffolk, Lord Arlington's seat at, Charles II.'s frequent visits, 1671, ii. 266 ; splendid entertainment at, 267 ; the house and garden described, 268, 326 ; church and parsonage house rebuilt by Lord Arlington, 248, 326, 328.

*Examen of the Assembly's Confession of Faith*, iii. 253.

Exchange at Amsterdam, i. 20 ; at Paris, 50 ; Merchants' Walk at Genoa, 98 ; at Venice, 237.

— the Royal, the King's statue at, thrown down, 1649, ii. 5 ; new building of the, 298.

Exchequer shut up, 1672, ii. 275, 293 and n.



- Excise, &c., continuance of, ii. 116; duties let to farm by James II., 450; Scots grant them for ever, 463.
- Executions (see Question) at Rome, i. 218; at Venice, 252; in Switzerland, 291; in England, ii. 39.
- Exeter College, Oxford, comedy performed at, 1637, i. 9.
- Chapel, communicants at, surprised, 1657, ii. 95.
- Earl of, garden at Burleigh, ii. 64 n. 422.
- Parliament's terms of capitulation to, alluded to, iv. 184, 185, 186; siege of, 188.
- Exhalation, fiery, account of, 1694, iii. 113.
- Exomologetis*, by Dean Cressy, ii. 161 n.
- "Experiment," new invented ship so called, ii. 306.
- Exton, Dr., Judge of the Admiralty, ii. 161.
- Eye of a Dutch boy, phenomenon in, iii. 158.
- Eyes, receipt for strengthening, iii. 362; wax taper at night recommended, &c., 363.
- Eyre, Mr. Justice, a subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- FAIRFAX, Major, ii. 67 n; character of, 331.
- Sir Thomas, Lord, referred to, iv. 154 n, 160 n, 161 n, 164, 165 n, 183 n, 184 n, 188, 189, 306.
- Faith, Assembly's Confession of, iii. 254.
- Faithful Post*, 1653, journal so called, iv. 284 n.
- Faithful Scout*, 1653, journal so called, iv. 289 n.
- Faithorne, William, his portrait of Catharine, Queen of Charles II., ii. 145 n.
- Falconberg, Thomas Belasyse, Viscount, ii. 333, 406.
- Falkland, Lucius Cary, Lord Viscount, 1641, iv. 86 n; supports King Charles I.'s right to elect officers, 116; portrait, iii. 444.
- Lord (Treasurer of the Navy), ii. 406, 434, 458; death and account of, 116.
- Lady, ii. 456; iii. 116.
- Fallen Angels, iii. 231.
- Falmouth, Charles Berkeley, Earl of, ii. 135 and n; iii. 393.
- Family of Love, address to the King, 1687, iii. 39.
- Fanelli, statues in copper by, ii. 146.
- Fans from China, ii. 165.
- Fanshaw, Sir Simon, his collection of coins, iii. 442.
- Fanshawe, Sir Richard, allusions to, ii. 36, 74, 128, 148; iv. 204.
- Farnese, Palace at Rome, account of, i. 118, 169, 194, 208.
- Cardinal Alessandro, i. 150, 219.
- Farnham, produce of hop-ground at, iv. 44 n.
- Farrande, iv. 264.
- Farringdon, Mr., funeral of, ii. 223.
- Town of, ii. 58.
- Father John, at Rome, i. 117.
- Faubert, Mons., riding-master, his academy, &c., ii. 385, 397, 439.
- Faulkner, Thomas, his *History of Chelsea*, cited, ii. 346 n.
- Faustina, temple of, i. 120.
- Fay, Governor of Portsmouth, ii. 109.
- Fearne, Dr., ii. 109.

- Fabre, Mons.*, his chemical experiments, &c., i. 295 ; ii. 32 ; Sir W. Raleigh's cordial prepared by, 152.
- Feil, Dr. John*, Bishop of Oxford, 132, 170, 240 ; sermon in blank verse, 178 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, recommending answers to atheistical books, iii. 410 ; death of, iii. 25 and n.
- Felton, Sir John*, ii. 326.
- Sir Maurice, iii. 32, 38.
- Sir Geoffrey, iii. 31, 39.
- Fenton*, letters and journal of, iii. 409 ; iv. 26.
- Fenwick, Sir John*, taken, iii. 131 and n ; executed, 135.
- Mr., and his wife, cause between, iii. 164 and n.
- Ferdinand I.*, Grand Duke of Florence, chapel of, i. 226.
- Ferguson, Robert*, conspirator, ii. 409, 411, 469, 471.
- Feria, Duke of*, i. 273.
- Fermor, Sir William* (afterwards Earl of Pomfret), ii. 349, 381 ; iii. 101 ; some of the Arundelian statues purchased by, now at Oxford, iii. 92.
- Ferrara*, notice of, i. 233.
- Ferrarius, Dr.*, of Milan, i. 270, 272.
- Ferrers, Barons*, their tenure at Oakham, ii. 64.
- Ferte Imbault, Mons. de la*, zeal for the Parliament, &c., iv. 331, 332.
- Fête Dieu*, at Tours, i. 80.
- Feversham, Lewis de Duras*, Earl of, ii. 315, 439, 444 and n ; 468, 476 ; taken prisoner, iii. 61.
- Fiammingo, Ger.*, picture by, i. 130 ; sculpture, 144, 218 ; ii. 15.
- Fiat, Mons.*, ii. 55.
- Field, Bishop of Oxford*, i. 5.
- Capt., iii. 418.
- Finnis, Dr.*, sermon of, ii. 437.
- Fiscle, Gen. d'l.* painting by, i. 205.
- Fifth - Monarchy - Men*, sermon against, ii. 90 ; insurrection of, 122.
- Filmer, Sir E.*, ii. 424.
- Finale*, notice of the shore of, i. 94.
- Finch, Sir John*, Lord Keeper, in Holland, 1641, i. 15, 20 ; letter of Charles I. to, iv. 81 ; referred to, 78 m, 82, 83, 91, 94, 103 bis, 104 and m, 106 n, 109, 111 bis, 113, 114, 117, 121, 123, 125, 126, 129, 130, 131, 132, 134, 136, 137, 140.
- Sir John, afterwards Lord Chancellor, and Earl of Nottingham, ii. 172, 261, 378.
- Mr. (son of Lord Chancellor), afterwards Earl of Aylesford, ii. 349 ; iii. 17 and n ; James II.'s speech to the Council on his accession, taken down in writing by, ii. 446 n ; iii. 40 ; Burleigh on the Hill bought by the family of, ii. 65 n.
- Fioravanti*, a painter in Rome, i. 218 ; ii. 15.
- Fire-eater*, performances of a, ii. 286.
- Fire-ships*, appalling nature of, iii. 84.
- Fireworks at Rome*, 1644, i. 154, 155 ; in St. James's Square, 1695, iii. 125.
- Firmin, Mr. Thomas*, account of, iii. 79 and n.
- Fish*, horn of one presented to Royal Society, ii. 165 ; sight and hearing of, iii. 364.
- Fisher, Dr. John*, Bishop of Rochester, portrait of, iii. 444.



- Fishery, on the right of, iii. 414.  
 Fish-ponds, various references to, i. 40, 55, 63, 70, 129, 131, 158, 216, 289.  
 Fitzgerald, Lady Catharine, ii. 434.  
 Fitz-Harding, Lord, instructions for Holland, iii. 392; death of, ii. 294.  
 Fitz-Harris, Lord, Treasurer of the Household, ii. 294.  
 Fitzpatrick, Col., iii. 37.  
 Fitz-Roy, Lady Anne, ii. 322 n.  
 Flagellants at Rome, i. 210.  
 Flamel, Nicholas, i. 71.  
 Flamerin, Mons., ii. 436.  
 Flamsted, Dr. John, astronomer, ii. 322, 414, 434.  
 Flanders, apprehensions of the French army in, iv. 212.  
 Fleet, engagement with the Dutch, 1665, ii. 180 and n, 181, 182; victory over the Dutch, June, 1665, 183; Charles II. visits the English fleet at the Nore, 185; victory over the Dutch, June, 1666, 194, 195; various particulars of the, 194, 199; mangled state of the English fleet, 196; English and French, united fleets, 1672, 279.  
 Fleetwood, Dr. James, Bishop of Worcester, sermon by, ii. 318.  
 — Sir George, his report of Cromwell's dissimulation, iv. 212.  
 Fletcher, John, poet, portrait, iii. 444.  
 Floors of rooms, plaister, &c., used for, i. 97 and n.  
 Florence, account of the city of, i. 104-109, 222-227; bridges of, 104; palaces of Strozzi and Pitti, 105; church of Santo Spirito, 106; Palazzo Vecchio, Florence—*continued*.  
*ibid.*; Hanging Tower, *ibid.*; the Duke's Repository of Curiosities, *ibid.*, 108, 224; Church of the Annunciata, 109, 223; Duke's Cavalerizzo, and Menagerie, 109; Poggio Imperiale, 223; collections of Prince Leopold and Sign. Gaddi, Academy de la Crusca, 226; Church of St. Lawrence, *ibid.*; arsenal, artists, &c., 227.  
 — agent of the Duke of, Parliament offers an affront to, iv. 139.  
 Florival, Mons., of Geneva, iii. 142.  
 Fog, remarkable, 1670, ii. 254; 1699, iii. 146.  
 Fondi, i. 175.  
 Fondigo, Tedeschi at Venice, i. 237.  
 Fontaine, Mrs., ii. 84.  
 Fontainebleau, palace and gardens, i. 62-64; ii. 66.  
 Fontana, Annibal, carving by, i. 271.  
 — della Therme, at Rome, i. 129.  
 — di Specchio, i. 215.  
 — Domenico-Maria, architect, works of, i. 132, 133, 139, 140, 148, 166, 199, 203, 271.  
 — Lavinia, painting by, i. 168, 195.  
 Fonts, remarkable, i. 27, 102.  
 Forbes, Mr., ii. 422.  
 Force, Duchess de la, iii. 80.  
 Forests, notices of various, i. 59, 62, 74, 77.  
 Formiana, i. 176.  
 Forster, Sir H., house at Aldermaston, ii. 53.  
 Fortifications, notices of various, i. 16, 17, 23, 27, 28, 32, 37, 66, 67, 78, 82, 83, 85, 110, 111,



Fortifications—*continued.*

114, 229, 268, 269, 274, 278 ;  
ii. 7, 12, 29, 62, 66, 219, 277,  
280.

Forum Boarium, at Rome, i. 124.  
— Trajanum, 205.

Fossa Nuova, monastery at, i.  
173.

Foster, Sir Richard, iv. 267, 272,  
280, 282, 287.

Fotherbee, Sir John, i. 20.

Fountains of Lepidus. *See*  
Waterworks, i. 131.

Fowler, Dr. Edward, Bishop of  
Gloucester, iii. 93 n.

— Sir Thomas, his aviary, ii.  
51.

Fox, Dr. Edward, Bishop of  
Hereford, portrait, iii. 444.

— Colonel, iv. 176.

— Sir Stephen and Lady, ii.  
199, 349, 355, 357 ; a Lord  
Commissioner of the Treasury,  
360 ; account of him, 371 ;  
proposals for his daughter,  
382 ; directed by the King to  
form regulations, &c., for Hos-  
pital at Chelsea, 385, 390, 394,  
397 ; his great interest with  
bankers, 388 ; his house at  
Chiswick, 398, 405 ; allusions  
to him, 420, 425, 435, 458,  
475 ; iii. 58 ; grand dinner  
given by, iii. 7 ; subscription  
to Greenwich Hospital, 132 n.

Foy, Dr., iii. 140.

Frampton, Dr. Robert (after-  
wards Bishop of Gloucester),  
ii. 274, 287 ; sermon, 1686,  
iii. 18 ; deprived, iii. 93 n.

Franc, Mons. le, notice of, ii.  
83 ; ordained of the Church of  
England, *ibid.*

France, iv. 244 n, 269 n, 298,  
330 ; Scotch forces serving in,  
1643, 331 ; fleet sent to Naples,

France—*continued.*

1648, 338, 340, 341, 342 ; pro-  
ceedings of Court and Parlia-  
ment, 324, 337, 339, 340, 344 ;  
peace made with, 1649, ii. 4 ;  
parties in, 1652, 253 n ; de-  
sirous to conclude a treaty with  
Cromwell, 1653, 302 and n ;  
temporising policy of about  
Cromwell's ambassador, 1656,  
315 ; persecution of Protes-  
tants, 1685, ii. 467 ; *The State*  
*of*, 1652, iii. 195.

Francesco, Signior, his skill on  
the harpsichord, ii. 304, 391.

Francis I., King of France, tomb  
of, i. 43 ; his palace, called  
Madrid, i. 59 ; ii. 11 ; his re-  
gard for L. da Vinci, i. 272 ;  
portrait of, ii. 2.

— a Paula, St., epitaph, i. 81.  
Franciscan monastery at Sienna,  
i. 115.

Franco, John Baptist, manufac-  
turer of fire-arms, i. 268.

Frascati, description of, i. 213,  
214.

Fraser, or Frisoll, Mr., 1641, iv.  
87, 224.

— Sir Alexander, ii. 196.

— Dr., ii. 157 ; iv. 259 and n,  
271 n.

— Mr., books purchased by,  
ii. 412.

Frato, — del, paintings by, i.  
225.

Freart, Roland, treatise of, trans-  
lated by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 168 n ;  
iii. 196.

Frederick, Sir John, his pageant,  
&c., when Lord Mayor, ii. 137  
and n.

Freeman, Sir Ralph, of Betch-  
worth, ii. 154.

Freind, Sir John, judicial sen-  
tence upon, iii. 128 ; absolved

- Freind, Sir John—*continued*.  
by three non-juring clergymen,  
129.
- French Church in the Savoy, ii. 87.  
— refugees at Greenwich,  
1687, iii. 36.  
— Dr., ii. 54, 161.
- French Gardener and English  
Vineyard*, 1658, published, i.  
xl, ci; ii. 105 and n; iii.  
189, 195.
- French Intelligencer*, 1656, quoted  
iv. 314 n.
- Frêne, M., of Paris, his collec-  
tion, i. 61.
- Frey, Hans, famous for his lutes,  
i. 233.
- Frier, Mr., schoolmaster, i. 4.
- Frigates, peculiar advantages of,  
ii. 160 n; iii. 83, 84.
- Frobisher, Martin, his Journal,  
iii. 409.
- Frognall, Sir Philip Warwick's  
house at, ii. 314.
- Fromantil, curious clock by, ii.  
119, 131.
- Frost, remarkable, 1649, ii. 1.
- Frowde, Mr., clerk to Mr. Locke,  
ii. 287.
- Fuel, scarcity, &c., of, ii. 220, 221.
- Fuensaldague, General under the  
Prince of Condé, iv. 290 n.
- Fuente, Marquis de la, pass  
granted by, i. 262.
- Fulgosi, Rodolphus, tomb of, i.  
248.
- Fulham, Dr., sermon by, iii. 138.
- Fuller, Isaac, paintings by, ii.  
170, 171.
- Fullerton, Colonel in the French  
King's service, 1643, iv. 331*bis*.
- Fumifugium*, 1661, by Mr. Eve-  
lyn, notice of, i. 127 n; ii.  
203; publication of, i. xlv,  
cii; ii. 134 and n, 135; iii.  
190, 195.
- GADDI, SIGN. of Florence, collec-  
tion of, i. 226.
- Gaetano. *See* Pulsone.
- Gaieta, city of, i. 176.
- Gale, Dr. Thomas, Master of St.  
Paul's School, ii. 399; MSS.  
possessed by, iii. 121, 124.
- Galicano, Prince, of Rome, i.  
211.
- Gallant, The Wild*, by Dryden, ii.  
158.
- Galleries in the Vatican, i. 164.
- Galley-slaves at Marseilles, ac-  
count of, i. 91; slaves at Leg-  
horn, 103.
- Galloway, Thomas Sysderf,  
Bishop of, 1650, ii. 30 n;  
ordination by, 14.  
— Lord, 1658, ii. 106.
- Galway, Henry de Ruvigné, Earl  
of, 1701, account of, iii. 158,  
and 159 n, 458.
- Gamboo, Castle of, taken by the  
French, iii. 113.
- Gaming at Leghorn, i. 104; at  
Venice, 259; at Court, ii. 140,  
229.
- Gardens — *Abroad*: at the  
Prince's Court at the Hague, i.  
18; at Leyden, 24; Prince's  
Court at Brussels, 34; Jardine  
Royale at Paris, 52; of the  
Tuilleries, 54; of the Arch-  
bishop of Paris at St. Cloes, 55;  
of Cardinal Richelieu at Ruell,  
56; ditto at Richelieu, 84; at  
St. Germain's, 58, 59, 60; Fon-  
tainebleau, 63; M. Essling's at  
Paris, 64; at Caen, 69; of the  
Luxembourg Palace, 70; M.  
Morine's at Paris, 72; ii. 23;  
of the Palace of Negroes at  
Genoa, i. 97; of the Prince  
d'Orias' at Genoa, 97, 98; of  
the Marquess Spinola, 99; of  
the palace of Pitti at Florence,



*Gardens, abroad—continued.*

105 ; Palazzo de Medici at Rome, 125, 126 ; Prince Ludovisio's, 127 ; Villa Borghesi, 136, 212 ; Cardinal Borghese's at Rome, 156 ; Pope's palace at Monte Cavallo, 128, 158 ; Vatican, 167 ; Horti Mathæi, 196 ; garden of Justinian, 203, 208 ; Cardinal Bentivoglio's, 206 ; Frascati (Cardinal Aldobrandini's), 213 ; Mondragone, 214 ; Palace d'Este at Tivoli, 215 ; Garden of Simples at Sienna, 221 ; at Padua, 254 ; of Mantua, *ibid.* ; at Grand Duke's, near Bologna, 228 ; Count Ulmarini's at Vincenza, 265 ; Count Giusti's at Verona, 267 ; at Geneva, 289, 292 ; Gardens of Palais Cardinal at Paris, ii. 10, 28. *In England* : at Wotton, i. 3, 40 ; ii. 37 ; at Says Court, 46 ; Lady Brook's at Hackney, 51 ; Mr. Tombs's, *ibid.* ; Spring and Mulberry gardens, 51, 132 ; Physic-garden at Oxford, 57, 171, 311 ; Earl of Pembroke's at Wilton, 59 ; Orangery, &c., at Beddington, 103 ; iii. 154 ; at Audley End, ii. 72 ; at New Hall, 86 ; at Hampton Court, 147 ; Mr. Pett's at Chatham, 160 ; at the Earl of Norwich's, Epping Forest, 242 ; at Albury, 253 ; Lord Arlington's at Euston, 268 ; at Berkeley House, London, 285, 433 ; Lord Lauderdale's at Ham, 339 ; Sir Henry Capel's at Kew, 339, 422 ; iii. 45 ; Countess of Bristol's at Chelsea, ii. 347 ; Earl of Essex's at Cashiobury, 363 ; Apothecaries' Garden at Chelsea, 474 ; Lady Claren-

*Gardens, in England—continued.*

don's at Swallowfield, iii. 6 ; Sir William Temple's at Sheen, 45 ; Mr. Evelyn's plan for a Royal Garden, iii. 192. Gardiner, Sir Thomas, iv. 147 n. Gardner, Mrs., ii. 19 ; marriage of, 32. Garland, Sir Patrick, iv. 305 and n. Garmus, Mr., Hamburgh Resident in England, entertainment given by, ii. 132. Garrarde, — iv. 159. Garret, Lady, iii. 452 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, 201. Garrick, David, ii. 174 n. Garro, arrest of Mr. Evelyn by, i. 82. Garter, Order of the, celebration of St. George's Day, 1667, ii. 216 ; offerings of the Knights of, 251 ; installation of the, 216. Gascoigne, Sir Bernard, ii. 248, 271, 335. Gassendus, Peter, translation of his *Vita Peiresci*, edit. 1657, ii. 90. Gassion, — (soldier), monument for at Charenton, ii. 9. Gauden, Sir Denis, ii. 353 ; iii. 104. Gaudy, Sir John, account of, ii. 325. Gaunt, John of, i. 36 ; hospital of, ii. 64. Gaurus, Mount, i. 188. Gaywood, Robert, engraver, iii. 222. Geere, Sir R., present to St. James's Church, Piccadilly, ii. 437. Genappe on the Waal, siege of, i. 14, 16. General Pardon issued by Charles I., 1641, iv. 76 and n, 86 ; dislike of, 77.



- Geneva, account of, i. 287-292 ;  
 Booksellers of, 290 ; the Town-  
 house, 292 ; sports in the Cam-  
 pus Martius, 290 ; religion,  
 291 ; Church of St. Peter, *ibid.* ;  
 College, 293.
- Genner (Jenner), Sir Thomas,  
 Recorder of London, ii. 419.
- Genoa, 1644, i. 93 ; account of,  
 95-100 ; palace of Hieronymo  
 del Negros, 96 ; of the Prince  
 d'Orias, 97 ; Armoury, 98 ;  
 Strada Nova, Churches, 99 ;  
 the Mole, and Walls, 95, 96,  
 99 ; dress of the inhabitants,  
 100 n ; besieged by the French,  
 ii. 432.
- Gens d'armes of Paris, muster  
 of, i. 73.
- Gentileschi (Orazio Lomi), paint-  
 ing by, i. 198.
- Gentleman's Magazine* referred to,  
 ii. 137 n, 150 n, 153 n, 172  
 n.
- Georgia, &c., women of, ii. 369.
- Gerard, General, his accusation  
 of Lord Digby, 1645, iv. 175  
 n.
- Lord, iv. 199, 219, 259  
 n.
- Charles, Lord, ii. 25, 157,  
 215.
- Lady, i. 393 ; ii. 51, 64, 67,  
 69.
- Gerbier, Sir Balth., conduct at  
 Paris, 1643, iv. 333.
- Germaine, Lord, ii. 8.
- Sir John, iii. 150.
- Germany, method of perfuming  
 rooms in, ii. 80.
- Gerrard, Sir Gilbert, iii. 17.
- Ghent, account of, i. 35.
- Ghetto, at Rome, i. 161 ; at  
 Venice, 261.
- Ghisi, Palace of, i. 156, 194 ;  
 chapel of, 203.
- Gibbon, Grinling, carver, disco-  
 vered by Mr. Evelyn, and in-  
 troduced to the King, &c., ii.  
 254-256, 258 ; carvings by,  
 254, 255 n, 257, 259 n, 335,  
 355, 365, 397, 406, 437 ; iii.  
 30, 32 ; Walpole's account of  
 him, ii. 254 n, 255 n ; letter of  
 to Mr. Evelyn, soliciting his  
 recommendation, 255 n.
- Gibbons, Christopher, musician,  
 ii. 57.
- Gibbs, Dr. James Alban, account  
 of, i. 117 and n, 171.
- Gibson, Dr. Edmund, Bishop of  
 London, communication to, by  
 Mr. Evelyn, for *Camden's Bri-  
 tannia*, iii. 475 and n.
- Gifford, Captain, misfortune of,  
 iii. 124.
- Gilbert, lapidary of Venice, i.  
 263.
- Dr. William, portrait of, ii.  
 152.
- Gildron, paintings possessed by,  
 ii. 4.
- Gilpin, Bernard, iii. 28 n.
- Giolio, the painted Prince, iii.  
 140 and n.
- Giorgione (Giorgio Barbarelli),  
 painting by, ii. 101.
- Giotto (Ambrogiotto), mosaic by,  
 i. 145.
- Giovanni, Sign., of Florence, i.  
 228.
- Giuseppe, Cavaliero, marbles  
 by, i. 146.
- Giusti, Count, of Verona, his  
 villa, i. 267.
- Gladiators, celebrated statues of,  
 i. 119, 128, 157, 169.
- Glanvil, Dr. Joseph, letter of Mr.  
 Evelyn to, respecting his *Plus  
 ultra*, iii. 356.
- Glanville, George (brother-in-law  
 of Mr. Evelyn), i. 296 ; ii. 47 ;

- Glanville, George—*continued*.  
 iii. 94; his death, and burial in the sea, 161; descendants, 161 n.  
 — William (nephew of Mr. Evelyn), iii. 94, 149, 161.  
 — Sir John (Speaker), ii. 58.  
 — William (son of Speaker), ii. 47, 58.
- Glass manufacture, i. 255; ii. 292; painting, remarks relative to, 393.
- Glemham, Sir Thomas, appointed Governor of Oxford, iv. 173 n, 174; King Charles I.'s directions respecting the siege of Oxford, 176; directs him to facilitate his breaking through the rebels to Oxford, 179, 180; Fairfax refuses to allow him to send to the King, 184 n.
- Glencairn, William Cunningham, eleventh Earl of, Lord Commissioner of the Treasury for Scotland, iv. 97 n.
- Gloucester Cathedral, ii. 61; castle, &c., 62.  
 — Henry Stuart, Duke of, iv. 222, 223, 284 n; Queen Henrietta endeavours to pervert his religion, 207 and n, 216 n, 218, 219 and n; letter of King Charles II. to 1654, on that subject, 206, 207; 1660, death of, ii. 117, 253.
- Gloves, custom of presenting, iii. 176 and n.
- Glow-worms, flying, called *Luciola*, i. 233.
- Glynne, Serjeant —, a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.
- Godfrey, Sir Edmundbury, murder of, ii. 345, 353.
- Godolphin, Francis (son of Lord), birth, ii. 340, 342 n; alluded to, 345, 467, 474; marriage of, iii. 139, 164.  
 — Dr. Henry, ii. 355; iii. 50, 129; sermon of, ii. 430.  
 — Sidney (afterwards Lord Godolphin), his marriage, ii. 284 n, 309; Mr. Evelyn builds him a house, 322; alluded to, 315, 322, 324, 340, 342 n, 345; made a Lord Commissioner of the Treasury, 348, 351, 355, 434; created Baron Godolphin, 434, 450, 458, 461, 467; iii. 31, 60, 91, 104, 109, 119, 122; his house, Cranbourn, in Windsor Park, 28, 104; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 132 and n; retires from the Treasury, 135; his return to it, 155, 162; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, iv. 3.  
 — Mrs., wife of the preceding, (formerly Mrs. Blagg, ii. 237, 284 n, 305 n); her marriage, 309; allusions to her, 316, 319, 322, 323, 333; birth of her son, 340; her death, 341; character, &c., 342, 343; funeral papers, &c., *ibid.*; life of, prepared by Mr. Evelyn, 341; iii. 194.  
 — Sir William, ii. 340, 343, 346, 349, 435, 458, 467; iii. 50, 109.
- Godstone, Surrey, descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedigree*; Sir John Evelyn's house at, ii. 6, 102; monument of Sir John Evelyn at, 332.
- Godwin, William, his *Lives of Edward and John Philips*, 1815, ii. 162 n.
- Goffe, Dr. Stephen, a Romish priest, i. 16; ii. 160; Mr. Eve-



- Goffe, Dr. Stephen—*continued*.  
lyn's conversation with, respecting Cressy's answer to Pierce, iii. 387, 392.  
— Col., ii. 95.
- Golding, Capt., killed in engagement with the Dutch, ii. 181 n.
- Gondolas of Venice, description of, i. 236 ; ii. 145.
- Goode, Dr., minister of St. Martin's, iii. 112.
- Good Friday, ceremonies at Rome on, i. 209.
- Goodman, Dr. Godfrey, Bishop of Gloucester, impeached by Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n, 135 n.  
— Dr., sermon of, ii. 435.
- Goodrick, Sir Henry, a subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Goose, unnatural one, ii. 50.
- Gore, Mrs., married George Evelyn, iii. 145.
- Gorges, Sir Arthur, ii. 143.  
— Mr., ii. 264.
- Goring, Col., i. 16, 26, 39 ; Parliament examines him, 1641, iv. 75 n, 93 n, 144 ; their suspicions of, 142.  
— General George, Earl of Norwich, iv. 160 n, 165 and n, 172, 173, 178, 179, 195 m, 213, 221 n ; account of, 144 n ; King Charles's directions to before battle of Naseby (June, 1645), 159 n ; defeated by the Parliament, 1645, 165 n.
- Goring House, ii. 179, 236, 245, 290 ; burned, 303.
- Gosling, his fine bass voice, ii. 441.
- Gospel, ancient copy of St. John's, i. 106.
- Goteфриди, Sign., collection of medals, i. 213.
- Governè, Madame de, iii. 24.
- Gouge, Dr. —, iv. 89 and n.
- Goutière, near Colombière, caves so called, i. 81.
- Grafton, Henry Fitz-Roy, Duke of (natural son of Charles II.), marriage of, ii. 284 ; re-marriage, 357 ; alluded to, 322 n, 396, 474 ; iii. 19, 89 ; duel fought by, 17 ; death, 89, 90 ; birth of his son, ii. 422.  
— Duchess of (daughter of Lord Arlington), marriage, ii. 284, 356 ; character and notices of, 356 ; allusions to, ii. 327, 416, 420, 422 ; iii. 109 ; appeal to the House of Lords, 111.
- Graham, Colonel James, in love with Mrs. Dorothy Howard, ii. 312 ; married, 313 n, 333 ; Mrs. Graham, their house at Bagshot, &c., 476 ; iii. 5.  
— Captain, ii. 321.  
— Mr., absconded, iii. 92 ; in the Fleet, 128.
- Grammont, Anthony Hamilton, Marshal de, ii. 259 ; iv. 340 ; his *Memoires* cited, 135 n.
- Granada, Conquest, or Siege of*, a play by Dryden, ii. 257 ; iv. 57.
- Granado shot, of glass, ii. 163 ; trial of, 218.
- Grand Signior, letters of, to the Popes, i. 273.
- Grange, ceremony of the Prince de la, at Lincoln's Inn, 1662, ii. 140.
- Granger, Rev. James, his *Biographical History of England* cited, ii. 93 n.
- Grantham, notice of the town, ii. 69.
- Graunt, Mr., his remarks on the Bills of Mortality, ii. 309.



- Grave, Robert, his print of Rose, gardener to Charles II., ii. 133 n.
- Gray, Andrew, eighth Lord, a leader for the French King, 1643, iv. 331.
- Greatorex, Mr. —, mathematical instrument maker, ii. 84.
- Grebner, Ezekiel, his *Visions and Prophecies concerning England*, &c., ii. 71; iv. 80 n, 98 n, 122 n, 228 n.
- Greek Church, ceremonies of, i. 208, 218, 251.
- historians, &c., iii. 313.
- Green, Anne, restored after hanging, ii. 306 and n.
- Greenborrow, painting by, ii. 171.
- Greene, Mr., iv. 128, 129.
- Greenwich, Italian Glass-house at, ii. 292.
- Hospital, commission for endowing, &c., and proceedings in relation to it, iii. 119, 122, 123, 124, 129; agreement with workmen, 130; first stone laid, 132; subscriptions, 132, 133 notes; want of money for, in 1696, 134 n; hall and chapel of, 139; lottery for, 143; Mr. Evelyn's accounts as Treasurer, 136 n, 156, 157 and notes, 161, 166; seamen first received there, 170.
- Palace at, possessed by the rebels, i. 298; ii. 39; design of building a new palace at, ii. 137, 143.
- Park, elms planted in, ii. 164; observatory built, 322.
- Gregory XIII., Pope, Cardinal Hugo Buoncompagno, palace built by, i. 129; chapel, 142; his hall in the Vatican, 162.
- Gregory XIV., Pope, Cardinal Niccolo Sfrondati, bridge built by, i. 115.
- Mr. Justice, a subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Grenadiers, first introduction of, ii. 336.
- Grenville, Bernard, house at Abs Court, ii. 298.
- Sir Richard, and John, afterwards Earl of Bath, discontented with the Royalists, 1645, iv. 165; imprisoned by them, 165 n; letters of Charles II. to procure arms and men, &c., 1650, 201; to hold himself ready for his service, 202.
- Gresham, Sir Thomas, statue of, preserved in the fire of London, ii. 206.
- College, meetings of Royal Society at, i. xlix; ii. 122, 123, 221, 298. (*See* Royal Society); enquiry into Revenues of, ii. 148, 149, 151.
- Gressy, Mons. de, iv. 332.
- Grew, Dr. Nehemiah, ii. 333.
- Grey, Forde, Lord, proclamation against, ii. 409; defeated with the Duke of Monmouth, and taken, 468; condemned and pardoned, iii. 11; heavily fined, 31.
- Lady Mary, iv. 26.
- Mr. (son of Lord Grey), ii. 261.
- Griffin, Mr., engaged in service of Charles II. in exile, iv. 303.
- Griffith, Prince, ii. 13.
- Captain, ii. 35.
- Lord, his chapel, 1693, iii. 109.
- Sir John, ii. 188.
- Grimaldi family, i. 93.
- Giovanni Francesco (Il Bolognese), i. 199.

- Grimani Palace, i. 251.  
 Grimstone, Sir Harbottle, a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.  
 Grindal, Edmund, Archbishop of Canterbury, monument of, iii. 153.  
 Groombridge (Kent), house and chapel, ii. 43, 301.  
 Grotius, Hugo, his escape from Fort Lovestine, i. 17.  
 — Mons. (son of Hugo), i. 261.  
 Grotto del Cane, Naples, account of, i. 184.  
 Guarda-Damas, office of, ii. 145.  
 Guarino, Battista, portrait of, i. 198.  
 Guercino, Giovanni Francisco Barbiero, called, painting by, i. 232.  
 Guesclin, Bertrand du, his sepulchre, i. 43.  
 Guicciardini, Francisco, portrait of, ii. 323.  
 Guido. *See* Reni.  
 Guildford, Surrey, ii. 48.  
 — Elizabeth, Countess of, ii. 120.  
 — Francis North, Lord, his lady, and character, iii. 147.  
 Guildhall, London, paintings in, ii. 152, 294; Lord Mayor's feast in, 1664, 172.  
 Guillotine, in Naples, Venice, and France, similar to one in England, i. 218, 250.  
 Guise, Duke of, i. 90, 92; ii. 259; his death, iv. 219 n.  
 Gunman, Captain, ii. 317; account of him, 459.  
 Gunning, Dr. Peter, Bishop of Ely, sermons of, and allusions to, ii. 95, 100, 108, 109, 489 and n, 290, 317; character, &c., of, 289; opinion on the Test, 346; death, 436.  
 Guns first used at Genoa, i. 99.  
 Gunson, Treasurer of the Navy, ii. 401; iv. 35.  
 Gurney, Sir Richard, Alderman, Lord Mayor of London, 1641, iv. 98, 120, 140.  
 Gustavus Adolphus II., King of Sweden, i. 288.  
 Gustavus X., King of Sweden, successor to Christina, 1654-5, iv. 221 and n; invades Poland, 223, 224 and n, 307, 316.  
 Guthrie, William, his *General History of Scotland* referred to, iv. 98 n.  
 Guttemberg, John, i. 25.  
 Guzman, Don Gaspar de Teves y, Spanish Ambassador at Venice, i. 262.  
 Gwynn, Nell, ii. 211 n, 259, 389, 444.  
 HACKER, Col. Francis, regicide, executed, ii. 118.  
 Hacket, Dr. John, Bishop of Lichfield, sermon of, ii. 103.  
 Haddock, Sir Richard, lottery prize gained by, iii. 111.  
 Haerlem, church, &c., of, i. 23; perspective model of, ii. 81.  
 Hague, the Hoff, or Prince's Court at, i. 18; Hoff van Hounslers Dyck, 26.  
 Hale, Sir Matthew, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, ii. 262.  
 Hales, John, of Eton, portrait, iii. 444; library, 451.  
 — Edward, of Chilston (cousin of Mr. Evelyn), ii. 194.  
 — Mr. ii. 349.  
 — Sir Edward, 1655, ii. 77, 79.  
 — Sir Edward, Governor of Dover Castle, 1686, iii. 19 and n; Lieutenant of the Tower, 49.  
 Halford, Sir Henry, College of Physicians opened by, ii. 403 n.



- Halifax, Sir George Savile, Marquis of, ii. 231, 265, 321, 450 ; iii. 57, 60, 71, 80 ; death of, 121.  
 Hall, Mr., patent of King's printer refused to, iii. 18.  
 — Dr. Joseph, Bishop of Exeter, translated to Norwich, ii. 402 ; iv. 99 n ; questioned by Parliament, 114 and n.  
 — Dr., sermon of, ii. 104, 240.  
 Halle, —, iv. 225.  
 Halls and Exchanges, notices of various, i. 18, 34, 50, 252, 264.  
 Ham, Duke of Lauderdale's house, &c., at, ii. 339.  
 Hamburgh, siege of, 1686, iii. 27 ; succoured, 27.  
 Hamilton, James, second Marquis and first Duke, ii. 32 ; flies from the Court and Scotch Parliament, 1641, iv. 107, 112, 125 ; his letters to King Charles alluded to, 118, 125 ; speech of, published, 134 ; his envy of Marquis of Montrose, 147 n ; estates in France, 331 ; tried and executed, 1648, ii. 2, 3 and n ; iv. 119 n ; references to, 86, 121 ; portrait, iii. 443.  
 — William Douglas, Duke, 1660, ii. 116 ; 1682, 398 ; taken, 1690, iii. 89 ; marriage of his son, iii. 42.  
 — Lieut.-Col., iv. 173.  
 — Lady, and George her husband, ii. 317.  
 — Rev. Mr., ii. 30 n.  
 Hamlet, Prince of Denmark, performed, ii. 139.  
 Hammond, Col. Robert, his promise to Charles I., iv. 183 n.  
 Hammond, Dr. Henry, ii. 55.  
 — Mr., founder of a fellowship, &c., iii. 476.  
 Hampden, John, ii. 376 ; committed to the Tower, 409, 434 ; tried, 428.  
 — Mr., 1693, iii. 110.  
 Hampstead, Lord Wotton's house at, ii. 320.  
 Hampton Court, Charles I. at, i. 296 ; Court held there, 1665, ii. 185 ; palace at, 145, 146 ; iii. 78 ; noticed, iv. 143, 144, 191.  
 Hanging, woman restored after, ii. 306 and n.  
 Hanging Tower at Pisa, i. 101, 221 ; at Florence, 106 ; at Bologna, 229.  
 Hanmer, Sir Thomas, ii. 90 ; portrait of, 440.  
 Hanover, Duke of, excluded from the British throne, 1689, iii. 79.  
 Harbord, Sir Charles, ii. 132 ; his son's death, 281.  
 — Ambassador, his death, iii. 105.  
 Harby, Sir Job, employed by King Charles I. in confidential service, iv. 91, 99, 101, 106, 113, 186 ; his family, 91 n.  
 Harcourt, Count d', Grand Ecuyer de France, ii. 27 ; iv. 255.  
 — Earl of, iii. 78 n.  
 — Sir Simon, iii. 159.  
 Harding, Mr. Richard, allusions to, by Queen of Bohemia, iv. 213, 215, 219, 220, 221.  
 Hardwick Hall, plaster floor at, i. 97 n.  
 Hardwick State Papers cited, iv. 107 n, 146 n, 217 n.  
 Harlakenton, Mr., ii. 79.  
 Harleian Manuscripts referred to, iv. 145 n, 146 n, 153.



- Harley, Col. Edward, ii. 344 n.  
 — Robert, Earl of Oxford,  
 Speaker of House of Commons,  
 iii. 156 and n.  
 Harman, Captain, ii. 195.  
 Harrison, Sir John, house near  
 Hertford, i. 40.  
 — Henry, executed, iii. 100 n.  
 Hartlib, Samuel, visit to, by Mr.  
 Evelyn, ii. 80; alluded to, iii.  
 260, 261; iv. 31, 33.  
 Hartlip, Kent, prisoners of war  
 at, ii. 278.  
 Hartogen, iv. 171.  
 Harvey, Sir Daniel, ii. 195.  
 — Dr., statue of, ii. 152; anni-  
 versary oration, 168.  
 — Mr., of Combe, iii. 171.  
 Harwood, Dr., iv. 27.  
 Hasted, Edward, his *History of*  
*Kent* referred to, ii. 43 n, 159 n,  
 160 n.  
 Hatfield, palace at, i. 39.  
 Hatton, Christopher, Lord, ii. 6,  
 8, 12, 19, 91, 132; iv. 147 n,  
 162, 178, 195 m; house of, at  
 Kirby, ii. 69.  
 — Lady, ii. 6, 95.  
 — Serjeant Richard (cousin of  
 Mr. Evelyn), i. 296.  
 — Edward, his *New View of*  
*London*, ii. 286 n.  
 Hatton Garden, built over, ii. 107;  
 exhibition in, 298.  
 Havannah, Governor of, his mis-  
 fortunes, ii. 89.  
 Havre de Grace, citadel, &c., of,  
 i. 67; bombarded, iii. 117.  
 Hausse, M. de, his library, &c.,  
 i. 61.  
 Hawkins, Sir John, letters of, iv.  
 26.  
 Hawley, Lord, ii. 271.  
 Hayes, Sir James, ii. 284.  
 Hay-hill Farm, notice of, ii.  
 285 n.  
 Hay-market, paving of, 1662, ii.  
 148.  
 Haywood, Sir William, ii. 272.  
 Headache, cure for, ii. 4.  
 Headley, Thomas, servant of Mr.  
 Evelyn, ii. 51.  
 Heard, Sir Isaac, Garter King of  
 Arms, great age of, ii. 463 n.  
 Hearth Tax, abolition of, iii. 71.  
 Heath, Mr. and Mrs., ii. 35, 65,  
 228.  
 Heaviside, Mr., ii. 123 n.  
 Heber, Dr. Reginald, Bishop of  
 Calcutta, his *Life of Bishop*  
*Taylor* referred to, iii. 208 n,  
 211 n.  
 Hebert, Mr. Evelyn's valet, robs  
 him, i. 295.  
 Hebrew manuscript, i. 165.  
 Hedges, Sir Charles, iii. 155.  
 Heinsius, Daniel, notice of, i. 24;  
 library, ii. 412.  
 Helen, St., statue of, i. 144;  
 monument, 147; chapel, 206.  
 Helmsley, Yorkshire, estate of  
 Duke of Buckingham, iii. 131  
 and n.  
 Hemly Hall, Staffordshire, iv.  
 156.  
 Henchman, Dr. Humphrey,  
 Bishop of London, ii. 109, 115,  
 178, 199, 200, 274,  
 — Mr., ii. 115.  
 Henrietta Maria, Queen of  
 Charles I., references to, ii.  
 7, 113, 118, 120, 121, 143,  
 148 n, 151, 153, 154, 184; iv.  
 70 *bis*, 71 m, 72, 76, 77, 81,  
 82 m, 84 m, 86 m and n, 87  
 and m, 90 and m, 91 and m,  
 92 and m, 93 and m, 94, 96,  
 97, 99, 100, 101, 103, 105,  
 106, 108, 110, 111, 113, 117,  
 118, 119 and n, 122, 125 and  
 m, 127 m, 132, 133, 135, 137,  
 140, 144, 157 n, 161 n, 162,

Henrietta Maria—*continued.*

- 171, 172, 173, 178, 179, 239, 253 n, 261 n, 262 n, 270 n, 273 n, 284 n, 300 n, 301 n, 305 n, 308 n, 318, 324 n, 344 ; her order of Capuchins, 71 n, 90 and n, 122, 123, 234 and n ; summons of Lords and Bishops by, 99, 100 ; claim for remainder of her dowry, 232 and n ; letter on reception of Charles I. at Edinburgh, 70 ; directions to Sir Edward Nicholas about King Charles's free pardon, 77 ; answer to Parliament concerning the education of the Prince, 119 n ; intercedes with the Lords for Father Phillips, 127 n ; letters to Sir Edward Nicholas, to direct attendance of Earl Caernarvon in Parliament, 128 ; to forward her dispatch, 131 ; to direct the attendance of certain Lords in Parliament, &c., 136 ; to inform Earl of Essex, as Lord Chamberlain, to prepare for the King's return from Scotland, 143 ; attempts to pervert religion of Duke of Gloucester, 207 and n, 216 and n, 218 and n ; her reception at Tours, 1644, i. 82 ; residing at Bourbon l'Archambaut, 86 ; averse to the Duke of York's marriage, ii. 118 ; arrival in England, 1660, 119 ; visits Mr. Evelyn, 149 ; compliment to him, 173.
- Henrietta, Princess (daughter of Charles I.), ii. 9, 19, 119 ; condescension to Mrs. Evelyn, &c., 121 ; married to Duke of Orleans, 253 n.
- Henry IV., King of France, statutes of, i. 46, 63, 147 ; book of drawings belonging to, ii.

Henry IV.—*continued.*

- 15 ; letters of, iv. 26 ; attentive to his maritime interests, iii. 414.
- Henry VII., Emperor, i. 221.
- Henry VII., King of England, picture of, at Whitehall, ii. 82 ; referred to, 86 ; breviary of, at Whitehall, 370.
- Henry VIII., King of England, his book against Luther, i. 166 ; portrait of, ii. 2 ; an "Office" of, ii. 56 ; chimney-piece belonging to, 77 ; referred to, 86.
- Henry, Prince of Wales, son of James I., his palace at Charlton, ii. 40 ; collection of coins, &c., 449.
- Henshaw, Thomas, with Mr. Evelyn abroad, i. xxiv. 101, 195, 206, 212, 217, 256, 257, 259 ; allusions to, after his return, ii. 1, 6, 48, 83, 88, 102, 117, 321 ; recommended for an Embassy by Mr. Evelyn, 114 ; and as French Secretary to the King, 133 ; his *History of Salt-petre*, *ibid.* ; return from Denmark, &c., 315, 364 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, iv. 21 ; etchings dedicated to, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 196.
- Heralds' College, part of the Arundel library presented to, ii. 340.
- Herbert, Richard, Lord, ii. 51.
- Sir Edward, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, bold speech, iii. 24 ; a commissioner for ecclesiastical affairs, 25 ; his house at Oatlands, 41 and n ; attainted, &c., *ibid.*
- Lord Edward, of Cherbury, ii. 36, 178.
- Sir Henry, ii. 36, 177.



- Herbert, Sir Edward, Attorney-General and Lord Keeper, 1641, ii. 11; iv. 77, 82, 114 m, 130, 132 m, 134, 137, 141, 179, 244 n, 259 n, 270, 271 *bis*, 277 n, 280, 288 n, 323 n; King Charles I.'s observations on the conduct of, 178.  
 — Lady, wife of the preceding, 1650, ii. 11, 19; iv. 211, 214, 260.  
 — Sir Thomas, his *Memoirs of King Charles I.* referred to, iv. 184 n, 190 n.  
 — Admiral, defeated by the French, iii. 77.  
 — Mr. (nephew of Lord Herbert), ii. 392; iii. 95.  
*Hercules in Lydia*, an opera, i. 246.  
 Hercules, i. 185, 188; temple of, at Milan, 272.  
 Hereford, Lord Viscount, his house at Ipswich, ii. 326.  
 Hermit of the Colosseum at Rome, i. 136.  
 Hertford, William Seymour, Marquis of, iv. 117 and n, 119 n, 147 n, 149, 155, 165 n, 187, 198.  
 Hertfordshire, gentlemen of, desirous of attending King Charles on his return from Scotland, 1641, iv. 139, 143; remarkable robbery in, 1692, iii. 106.  
 Hervey, John, ii. 81, 341.  
 — Mr., of Betchworth, iii. 160.  
 Hewer, Dr., ii. 49; condemned, 100; and executed, 102.  
 — Mr., house at Clapham, iii. 104; account of him, *ibid.*  
 Hewson, regicide, executed, ii. 118.  
 Heylin, Dr. Peter, sermon by, ii. 125.  
 Hicks, Sir William, his house and family at Ruckholt, ii. 106 and n.  
 Hieroglyphics, stone inscribed with, communicated by Mr. Evelyn to Kircher, i. 256.  
 Higgins, Sir Thomas, his daughter, iii. 28.  
 Higham, Rev. Mr., ii. 324; sermons by, 48, 74; his death, 431.  
 Highland dragoons, 1694, iii. 113; two Dutchmen killed by one of them, *ibid.*  
 Hill, Abraham, F.R.S., ii. 392, 399; iv. 27.  
 Hinton, Mr. William, letter of Charles II. to, about bills of exchange, &c., for his use, 1650, iv. 200.  
 Hippodrome at Rome, i. 196.  
*Histoire Critique* of Father Simon, strictures on, iii. 410.  
 Historiographer, Royal, recommended, iii. 368, 369.  
 History, advice for the study of, iii. 313.  
 Hoare, Richard, an excellent penman, ii. 6; strange sickness of, 47.  
 Hobbes, Thomas, ii. 347; visited by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 26, 80; book against his *Leviathan*, 47.  
 Hobson, Mr., of Venice, merchant, i. 261.  
 — the Cambridge carrier, ii. 72.  
 Hoefnagle, George, print by, ii. 190 n.  
 Hoff van Hounslers Dyck, account of, i. 26.  
 Holbein, Hans, portraits, &c., by, ii. 2, 51, 77, 120, 338, 339, 371, 421; iii. 34; alluded to, 438.  
 Holborne, Mr., supports King Charles's right to election of officers, iv. 116.



- Holden, Dr., vicar of Deptford, ii. 10, 318; character of, 289; sermon of, 458.
- Holder, Dr., iii. 430.
- Mr., iv. 246 n, 247, 266, 271, 274, 277; Sir Edward Hyde's opinion of, 264 and n, 269, 273.
- Holland, Henry Rich, first Earl of, iv. 78 n; 119, account of, 332, 119 n; commission appointing him Lord General beyond Trent, 141; execution of, 1649, ii. 3 and n; portrait, iii. 444.
- Sir John, ii. 209.
- Holland, Cromwell's dissimulation with, iv. 212; certain places in Ireland and Scotland proposed to be given to, to engage its assistance to Charles II., 1652, 257, 261; politics of, 1652, 255; 1653, iv. 290; war with, ii. 40, 41; fleet defeated, iv. 284 n; concludes peace with Cromwell, 1653, ii. 223; iv. 302; letter of States of, to Princess Dowager of Orange, on a report of Charles II. being at Tilling, 1655, 227; present of the States of, to Charles II., ii. 146; embassy from, to William III. on his accession, iii. 77. See Dutch War.
- Hollandia Illustrata* referred to, i. 17.
- Hollar, Wenceslaus, engravings by, ii. 78 n, 114 n, 209 n; plan for rebuilding London, iii. 212 n.
- Holles, Denzil, a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n; created Baron, &c., ii. 126; iii. 394.
- Mr. Jarvis, his message to the Lords against the Bishops, 1641, iv. 112.
- Holloway, Sir Richard, Justice of the King's Bench, iii. 49, 50, 75.
- Holmby House, ruins of, ii. 312.
- Holmes, Mr., iv. 285.
- Sir Robert, ii. 237, 274, 286, 300, 481.
- Holt, Sir John, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, a subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Holy Island, stores taken from by the Parliament, iv. 82.
- Holy Thursday, ceremonies on, at Rome, i. 209.
- Holy-well, near Malvern Hills, ii. 62.
- Homer, ancient edition of, iii. 142.
- Hondius, William, of Amsterdam, i. 22.
- Honfleur, in Normandy, notice of, i. 67.
- Honson Grange, Staffordshire, sale of, ii. 449.
- Honywood, Lieut., i. 16.
- Hooke, Dr. Robert, ii. 164, 186; built Montagu House, 319, 356, 421.
- Hooper, Dr. George, Chaplain to Charles II., 1681, sermon of, ii. 385.
- Bishop of Gloucester, 1550, letters of, iv. 26.
- Hope, Thomas, his seat called Deepden, ii. 77 n.
- Hopkins, William, engraving by, ii. 152 n.
- Hops, cultivation, &c., of, iv. 44 and n.
- Hopton, Sir Arthur (brother of Sir Ralph, Lord Hopton), ii. 5, 476 n; iv. 108 and n, 195 m.
- Sir Ralph (afterwards Lord Hopton), iv. 108 n.
- Horace, Mrs. Phillips's tragedy of, ii. 229, 235.
- Horatii and Curatii, tomb of, i. 196.

- Horneck, Dr. Anthony, character of, ii. 403 and n; sermon by his son, iii. 147.
- Horninghold, Leicestershire, ii. 63, 69.
- Horns at Hampton Court, ii. 146.
- Horse baited to death, ii. 223.
- Horseheath, Lord Allington's house at, ii. 247 and n.
- Horsemanship, Duke of Newcastle on, ii. 216; iii. 397.
- Horses, fine sculptures of, i. 121, 128; racing of Barbary, at Rome, 207; regard of a woman for one, 268; Turkish or Asian, brought over, 1684, ii. 437; Charles II.'s, sold, 1650, iv. 203.
- Horticulture, Spanish, letter respecting, ii. 233; iii. 355.
- Hortus Malabaricus*, iii. 405.
- Hoskins, Sir John, ii. 368; President of Royal Society, 399; iv. 27.
- Hospital called Christ's Hospital, at Rome, i. 171, 172.
- Hospitals, various notices of, *abroad*, i. 19, 20, 52, 87, 171, 172, 199, 271, 293; ii. 12, 19; *in England*, ii. 64.
- Hôtel Dieu, and Hôtel de la Charité, i. 52.
- Hotham, Sir John, commander of Hull, ii. 68.
- Houblon, Mr., merchant, ii. 347; iii. 1; his house on Epping Forest, ii. 402.
- Sir John, a subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Hough, Dr. John, made Bishop of Worcester, iii. 91 and n.
- Houllies, a species of fuel, ii. 221.
- Hounslow Heath, camp on, 1678, ii. 335; 1686, iii. 22, 38.
- Household, Comptroller of the, public dinners of, ii. 161.
- Royal, purveyors of the, regulated, ii. 401 and n.
- How, John, complained of Bishop Burnet's Book, 1693, iii. 107; made a Baron, 158.
- Howard, Anne, wife of Sir G. Silvius, ii. 313 and n, 333.
- Bernard, ii. 148, 440.
- Charles, ii. 148, 166, 167; house at Dorking, 77, 252.
- Craven, lawsuit against his mother, ii. 313 and n, 314; account of him, *ibid.* n.
- Dorothy, ii. 292; married to Colonel Graham, ii. 312, 313 n, 333, 475; iii. 5.
- Edward, ii. 148.
- Lord George (son of sixth Duke of Norfolk, by Mrs. Bickerton), ii. 338 n.
- Henry, Lord, grandson of the Earl of Arundel (afterwards sixth Duke of Norfolk), at Padua, i. lxi. 259, 263; villa at Albury, pictures, &c., ii. 77, 225; procures the dukedom to be restored, and compounds a debt of his grandfather's of £200,000, &c., 147; Mr. Croone recommended by Mr. Evelyn to travel with his sons, iii. 286; permitted the Royal Society to meet at Arundel House, and gave them the Arundelian library, i. lxi; iii. 214, 236; presented the Arundelian marbles to Oxford University, at Mr. Evelyn's request, i. lxi; ii. 225, 226, 227, 240; iii. 352; created Lord on his embassy to Morocco, ii. 227, 237; conversation with Mr. Evelyn respecting marriage of his son, his own connection



- Howard, Henry, Lord—*continued*.  
with Mrs. Bickerton, his house  
at Norwich, &c., 268, 269, 270,  
271; alluded to, ii. 107, 148,  
231, 236, 240, 254, 286. *See*  
Norfolk.
- Howard, Henry (son of the  
preceding, afterwards seventh  
Duke of Norfolk), ii. 148, 166,  
218, 240. *See* Norfolk.
- Philip (afterwards Cardinal),  
i. 263; ii. 148, 245.
- Sir Robert (son of the Earl  
of Berks), play by, ii. 155;  
alluded to, 163 n, 211, 237;  
impeached Sir W. Pen, 229;  
an universal pretender, 405,  
450; his house at Ashstead,  
431.
- Mr. Thomas (son of Sir  
Robert), iii. 95; his death,  
158.
- Thomas, Earl of Arundel,  
Earl Marshal, iv. 76, 80, 85,  
99, 108.
- Lord Thomas (son of  
Henry, sixth Duke of Norfolk),  
ii. 148, 166, 218, 240, 338;  
iii. 286; his children alluded  
to, iii. 150.
- Lord, of Escrick, concerned  
in the Rye House Plot, and dis-  
covered his associates, ii. 409;  
Algernon Sidney executed on  
his single witness, 423.
- Mrs. (widow of William,  
fourth son of first Earl of  
Berkshire), and her daughters,  
ii. 237, 310, 313, 333; lawsuit  
against, by her son, 313.
- Earls of Berkshire, mansion  
of, ii. 213 n.
- Hoy, Dr., Mr. Evelyn's opinion  
of his talents, iv. 21.
- Huddleston, Father, a Popish  
priest, administered the sacra-  
ment to King Charles II. in  
*extremis*, ii. 443 n.
- Hudibras (Samuel Butler), por-  
trait, iii. 444.
- Hughes, Margaret, mistress of  
Charles II., ii. 211 n.
- Huguenots, zealous for Cromwell,  
iv. 316; persecution of, in  
France, iii. 8, 9, 11, 16, 18, 20,  
21, 22, 23, 41, 43, 44, 46; brief  
in England for relieving, 19, 20;  
book exposing the persecution  
burnt, &c., 21; released and  
driven out of France, 43; re-  
morse, and massacre of those  
who had conformed to the  
Romish faith, 43, 44.
- Hull, town of, noticed, ii. 68.
- Hume, Colonel Alexander, as-  
sumed the name of Evelyn, i.  
*Pedig.*; iii. 161 n.
- David, his *History of Eng-  
land* referred to, iv. 165 n.
- Humourists, academy of, at  
Rome, i. 198; iii. 454.
- Hungate, Sir Henry, and Sir  
Philip, iv. 130 and n, 131,  
133, 143.
- Hungerford, Edward, of Caden-  
ham, ii. 53, 60, 63.
- town of, ii. 54.
- Hunter, Dr. A., editor of Eve-  
lyn's *Sylva*, iii. 196; references  
to that work, i. l, cix.
- Huntercomb, Bucks, descent of  
the Evelyns of, i. *Pedig.*
- Huntingdon, Mayor of, addresses  
King Charles I. on his return  
from Scotland, 1641, iv. 145  
n; custom at, ii. 70.
- Theophilus Hastings, Earl  
and Countess of, ii. 246, 265.
- Henry Hastings, Earl of,  
summoned by the Queen,  
1641, iv. 100.



- Huntingtoure, Lord, ii. 326.  
 Hurcott, manor of (Worcester), i. 297, 298.  
 Hurt, Mr., purchased Warley Magna, 1655, ii. 79.  
 Husbandry and gardening of the ancients, iv. 12; observations relative to husbandry, 43-45.  
 Huss, John, medal of his martyrdom, ii. 437; iii. 441.  
 Hussey, Peter, of Sutton, ii. 252; his attention to husbandry, &c., 384.  
 — Mr., his attachment to Mr. Evelyn's daughter, and death, ii. 470.  
 — Mr., married daughter of George Evelyn, iii. 119.  
 Hutcheson, Lady, ii. 247.  
 Huygens, Constantine, ii. 167; notice of, 263; his wax taper for studying by, iii. 363.  
 Hyde, Dr., brother of Sir Henry, &c., ii. 170, 239.  
 Hyde, Sir Edward (afterwards Earl of Clarendon), ii. 355; supports King Charles's right to election of officers, iv. 116; with the Prince of Wales, 1645, 239; correspondence with Sir R. Browne (1646-1659) on affairs of Charles II. and of Europe, 243-325; dissatisfied with Charles's leaving Jersey for Paris, 1646, 243; on a servant of Sir R. Browne, 248; his distress in exile, 263, 264, 266 n, 269, 276, 295, 300; his opinion of Mr. Taylor, Charles II.'s agent with Emperor of Germany, 256 and n; of Mr. Holder, 247, 264 and n, 269; illness, 272; see Carteret, charges brought against, 300 n; present sent to by Sir R. Browne, 294, 299, 300, 301;  
 Hyde, Sir Edward—*continued*.  
 sickness, 306; borrows money of Sir R. Browne, 308; at Antwerp, 1656, 314, 321, 322; made Lord Chancellor, and envy on his appointment, 1658, 241, 323 and n; his daughter privately married to Duke of York, *ibid.* n; interests himself about a person imprisoned, 324 and n; referred to, 146 n, 152, 204 and n, 209, 217, 225, 239, 241, 271, 285 n, 288 n, 290 n, 292 n, 300 n, 319 n.  
 — Anne (afterwards Duchess of York), Sir S. Compton in love with, iv. 211 n; at a Masquerade at Tilling, 1654-5, 217, 225; privately married to James, Duke of York, 323 n; ii. 118, 120; her desertion of the Church of England misrepresented, iii. 401, 402; alluded to, ii. 143; iv. 211.  
 — Lady Frances, ii. 292.  
 — Lady Harrietta, ii. 198.  
 Hyde Park, toll at, 1653, ii. 47; coach race in, 1658, 100; referred to, 1660, 114; 1661, 130; 1667, 217; review in, 1663, 159; 1686, iii. 19.  
 Hyldiard, Henry, of East Horseley, ii. 48, 74; iii. 21, 95; his sons, ii. 3, 33.  
 Hysdune, town and fort of, i. 27.  
 ICE, blue and transparent, ii. 321.  
*Icon Animarum*, 1614, notice of that work, ii. 45 and n.  
 Il Ponte, notice of, i. 229.  
 Imperati, Ferdinando, exotic plants, &c., of, i. 180.  
*Impostors, Three, History of*, 1669, by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxiv, cxiv; ii. 235 and n; iii. 190, 196.

- Inchiquin, Marquess, ii. 20.  
 — Lord, Governor of Tangiers, ii. 365.  
 —, Murrrough O'Bryen, Lord, iv. 261 n, 272.  
 Incident, The, 1641, account of that affair, iv. 107, 109, 110, 112, 118, 121, 125.  
 Indian ambassadors, 1682, account of, ii. 395 and n, 396.  
*Indian Queen*, a play, ii. 163.  
 Infirmary for sick and wounded, Mr. Evelyn's plan for, ii. 192; iii. 329-340.  
 English, Esther, beautiful writing of, ii. 55 and n.  
 Ingoldsby, Sir —, house at York, ii. 68.  
 Inks, for copying, ii. 80.  
 Innisboffin, iv. 247; besieged by the Parliament, 1653, and captured, 273, 274 n, 276, 289.  
 Innocent X., Cardinal Giovanni-Battista Pamphilio, Pope; his election to the papal chair, i. 113; procession to St. John de Lateran, *ibid.*, 152-155.  
 Inquisition, references to the, i. 159, 269, 276, 277.  
 Inscriptions and epitaphs, notices and copies of various, i. xcvi, 15, 31, 42, 68, 75, 77, 81, 113, 115, 116, 130, 133, 135, 136, 139, 140, 143, 144, 147, 148, 149, 163, 166, 168, 170, 174, 175, 179, 183 and n, 187, 196, 203, 221, 225, 247, 251 n, 253, 262, 264, 266, 272, 290, 298; ii. 43 n.  
 Insensati, Society of, iii. 54.  
 Interest, lawfulness of, considered, iii. 249.  
 Ipswich, account of, ii. 86, 326.  
 Ireland, ships kept back from, 1641, iv. 81; rebellion in the North of, 112 and n, 120, 121, Ireland—*continued*.  
 122 and n; discoverer of rewarded, 122; Parliament treats with the City of London for pay of soldiers in, 121; progress of the Rebels in, 124; troops sent to, *ibid.*, 125; Commons order Lord Lieutenant to raise Volunteers, 132; Rebels give out that they are instigated by the King, *ibid.*, 122, 139, 141, 171; progress of the Rebellion in, 134, 170; Scotch troops employed to quell, 134, 137; committees of Parliament prepare instructions for Lord Lieutenant, 140; arms, &c., sent to, 1642, 330; remark of King Charles I. respecting, 112 n; intrigues of Spain with, 121; envoys sent by the usurped authority of, 1642, 233 and n; proceedings in, 1653, for Charles II., 282; 1654, 303, 304; nomination of bishops for, ii. 116; remarks respecting its natural history, 138; map of, by Sir W. Petty, 307; critical state of, 1689, iii. 71, 72, 76; parliamentary proceedings respecting forfeited estates, 1700, 148, 151; Lord Galway removed from Lord Lieutenancy, 158; paper relating to, 1587, iii. 409.  
 Ireton, Henry, regicide, murders by, at Colchester, ii. 36, 85; death, 33; funeral, 36; disinterment, &c., 122.  
 Irish Parliament prorogued, 1641, iv. 103.  
 — rebellion breaks out, i. 38.  
 — regiments, France and Spain apply to Parliament for,



Irish regiments—*continued.*

iv. 72 n; King Charles engages, to grant to Spain, 73; Lords and Commons hold a conference concerning, *ibid.*; refuse them, 74 and n, 84.

Iron Crown at Milan, i. 274.

— ovens, portable, ii. 198.

— work of England, ii. 58.

Ironmongers' Hall, dinner at, 1671, ii. 265.

Isaac, Mons., dancing master, ii. 391, 454.

Isaacson, Henry, historical work of, iii. 315 n.

Isabella, Island of, i. 278.

— Queen of Castile, iii. 396.

Isis, statue of, in Palazzo Farnese, i. 170.

Islands about Venice, i. 243, 252, 255.

Isle Bouchard, i. 83.

— of Wight, debate on its government, 1641, iv. 123, 141; the King's farewell speech there, 192.

Italian opera, introduction of, into England, ii. 106, 299.

— singer, female, encouragement given to, in 1703, iii. 165.

Italy, various notices concerning, i. 95-278; Mount Vesuvius, 181-183; measures of churches in, 232; etchings of views in, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 196.

JACKSON, Mr., heir to Mr. Pepys, iii. 166.

Jacomb, Dr., ii. 300.

Jamaica, ii. 117, 262-273; design of the Dutch upon, 1673, 287; earthquake at, 1692, iii. 470, 471; profanely mimicked at the Southwark Fair, iii. 105.

James, Duke of York, after King James II., letters to Sir Ed-

## ward Nicholas and Lord Cul-

pepper, for money to prevent sale of the King's horses, &c., iv. 203; 1651, on the King's esteem for Sir Edward, 204; gallantry of, in an engagement with the Prince of Condé, 1651, 246 and n; in favour at the French Court, 1561, 344; 1652, 269 n; with the army of Turenne, 1653, 273 n, 298 and n; quarrels with Charles II., 1658, 323 n; discourse with Mr. Evelyn, 1662, ii. 139; visits him at Deptford, &c., 142; Life of, written by himself, quoted, 125 n, 180 n, 220 n, 275 n; iii. 423 n; sailing-match with Charles II., i. xlvii; ii. 134; letter to Mr. Evelyn, and account of engagement with the Dutch, 1665, 180 and n, 183; kind reception of Mr. Evelyn, 191; opposed laying-up men-of-war, 1667, 220 n; forbears receiving the sacrament, 275 n, 290; his marriage with Mary of Modena, 298 and n; neglects thenceforward to attend the Protestant worship, 318; Commons vote against, for recusancy, 348; libellous papers, &c., against, 349; his case as to the succession, 381; remarkable escape of, from shipwreck, 394; iii. 400; office of admiral, &c., restored to, ii. 431; his account of the last hours of Charles II., 443 n; speech in council on his accession, and his own account of, 445-448 and notes; proclaimed, 447, 448; goes publicly to mass, and opens a popish oratory at Whitehall, 451; lets to farm,



James, Duke of York—*continued.*

duties of excise, customs, &c., 450; coronation, 462; his first speech to Parliament, 464; discourse respecting miracles, second sight, reliques, &c., 476; reception at Portsmouth, 1685, 480; remarks on his character, 481; celebration of his birthday, 1685, iii. 5; improvements at Whitehall, *ibid.*; speech to Parliament, 11; anniversary of his accession, 16; birthday, 1686, 27; speech to a deputation from Coventry, thanking him for liberty of conscience, 39; alarm at the Dutch fleet, 46; enjoins the reading of his declaration for liberty of conscience, and threatens the six bishops, 46, 47; his consternation at the landing of the Prince of Orange, and proceedings thereupon, 54, 55, 56, 59; his flight, return to Whitehall, and second flight, 61; account of his proceedings, from his return to Whitehall, till his second flight, 427-430; compared to Maxentius, 65; protest, &c., against his having vacated the government, 68, 72, 75; assisted by France in his Irish expedition, 71; in Ireland, 74; Scot's reasons for setting him aside, *ibid.*; surprised Londonderry, 76, 79; declaration of pardon, 77; defeat at the Boyne, 88; letter to Privy Council and the Queen, respecting the pregnancy of his Queen, 102; declaration of pardon, and submitting all differences to Parliament, 109; intended invasion of England, 1696, 127; Oates's book against

James, Duke of York—*continued.*

him, 129; his death, 159; various allusions to, ii. 8, 29, 101, 113, 128, 142, 184, 185, 192, 197, 209, 219, 230, 251, 266, 267, 275 n, 279, 283, 284, 295, 300, 302, 305, 319, 332, 339, 346, 355, 359, 438, 462; iv. 159, 172, 173, 178, 199, 207 n, 211 n, 246 and n, 271, 273 and n, 283, 284 n, 285 n, 292, 299, 304, 306 n, 310, 312, 319, 320, 321, 324.

James, Dr., probable origin of his fever powder, ii. 21 n.

— Mr., iii. 95.

Janicius, Dr., physician, i. 256.

January 30th first kept as a fast, ii. 122.

Janus, Quadrifrons, temple of, i. 124; ii. 64.

Jardine Royale, at Paris, i. 52.

Jefferies, George, made Lord Chief Justice, ii. 419, 423; Baron of Wem, 466; likely to be Lord Keeper, *ibid.*, 476; made Lord Chancellor, character of him, iii. 8; a commissioner for ecclesiastical affairs, 25; alluded to, ii. 433 n.

Jeffries, Dr., minister of Althorp, iii. 51.

Jenkins, Sir Leoline, ii. 226.

Jennings, Sarah, Duchess of Marlborough, ii. 305 n.

Jermyn, Henry, Lord, pension granted to by Charles I., iv. 335; influence in Court of Charles II. in exile, 270 n; conduct as Treasurer to Charles II., 294 n; allusions and various references to, 239, 245 and n, 259 n, 262 n, 270 and n, 271, 300 n, 315, 316, 318, 324 and n, 340, 341; letters to, 335, 336.

- Jermyn, Mr. Henry, ii. 218, 266.  
 — Mr., iv. 259; proceedings against, 1641, 71 n, 75 and n.
- Jerome of Prague, medal of his martyrdom, iii. 441.
- Jeronimo, painting by, i. 60.
- Jersey, Edward Villiers, Earl of, Lord Chamberlain, iii. 152.
- Jerusalem, Church at Antwerp, i. 31; earth of, carried to Pisa, 102.
- Jesuitism, Mystery of*, in three volumes, the second translated and published by Mr. Evelyn, 1664, i. lvii, cxii; ii. 174 and n, 176; iii. 189, 196, 299; Mr. Evelyn thanked by Charles II. for it, ii. 176; presented to ditto, 192.
- Jesuits, their church, schools, &c., at Antwerp, i. 30, 31; church and convent of, at Paris, 49; ii. 24; church, &c., at Tours, i. 82; ditto at Tournon, 89; at Aix, 90; at Rome, 125, 155, 211; English college at Rome, 160, 198; other notices of, 278; iii. 210; Mr. Evelyn's books against the, ii. 192. *See above.*
- Jesus College, Cambridge, ii. 72, 365.
- Jewels, Crown, order of Parliament on report of their being pawned, iv. 86 n; notices of various, i. 44, 72, 98, 99, 107, 108, 127, 128, 132, 164, 170, 225, 227, 239, 241, 257, 258; ii. 15.
- Jews, in Holland, ceremonies, &c., of, i. 19, 25; in France, 90; at Rome, 124, 154, 160, 218; ceremony of circumcision, &c., 161, 204; Jews at Venice, marriage, 261; in England, ii. 78, 80.
- John Casimir, King of Poland, 1654, iv. 221.
- John the Baptist, his arm preserved, i. 112; baptistery of, 146.
- of Udine, paintings of, i. 162 n.
- Johnson, Sir —, executed at Tyburn, iii. 92.
- Mr., author of *Julian*, ii. 428.
- Jones, Sir Henry, ii. 265.
- Inigo, ii. 137.
- Sir William, 1680, ii. 375.
- Mr. of Gray's Inn, lawyer, ii. 262.
- regicide, executed, ii. 118.
- Jonson, Dr., iv. 245.
- Josephus, Flavius, history of, on the bark of trees, i. 274.
- Jovius Paulus, museum of, i. 106; sepulchre, 226.
- Joyce, Cornet, iv. 191 n.
- Joyliffe, Dr., physician, ii. 3, 89, 94.
- Julio Romano, paintings by, i. 61.
- Julius II., Cardinal Julian della Rovere, Pope, his sepulchre, i. 152.
- Junius, Patricius, his description of Prince Henry's collection, iii. 449, 450; his son Francis, *ibid.*
- Jupiter, temples of, at Rome, i. 120; at Terracina, 174.
- Just and Tournament at Rome, 1645, i. 211.
- Justel, Monsieur, ii. 426 n, 428, 437; iii. 443; arranged the library at St. James's, 441.
- Justice, statue of, at Florence, i. 225.
- Justin, corrected by Isaac Vossius, iii. 346.



- Justinian, gardens of, i. 203 ; statue, 208.
- Justiniani, Venetian Ambassador, iii. 12, 14.
- Juxon, Dr. William, Bishop of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, King Charles consults him about the vacant Bishoprics, 1641, iv. 89 m, 96, 99 and m, 113 m ; referred to, 128 ; ii. 124, 129 ; portrait, iii. 444.
- KAISER'S Graft, at Amsterdam, i. 21.
- Kalendarium Hortense*, 1664, &c., by Mr. Evelyn, i. lii, cxi ; iii. 190, 196, 463.
- Keepe, Henry, pamphlet by, under the name of Taylour, ii. 479 n ; iii. 184.
- Keffler, Dr., ii. 198.
- Keightly, Thomas, cousin of Mr. Evelyn, i. 39 ; ii. 47.
- Mrs., her green old age, ii. 380.
- Kello, Rev. Bartholomew, ii. 55 n.
- Kemp, Mr., Impropiator of South Malling, i. 297.
- Kendal, Dr., Oxford Act performed by, ii. 54.
- Kendrick, Alderman John, a fanatic Lord Mayor, ii. 39.
- Kenn, Dr. Thomas, Bishop of Bath and Wells, his attendance on Charles II. in his sickness, ii. 433 and n ; sermons by, against Roman Catholics, &c., 1686-87, iii. 18 and n, 33, 35, 45 ; one of the six Bishops who petitioned against reading Declaration of Liberty of Conscience, 46 ; sent to the Tower, 48 ; tried and acquitted, 49 ; his scruples on King William's accession, 72 n ; deprived, 93 ;
- Kenn, Dr. Thomas—*continued*.  
much beloved in his diocese, 94 ; alluded to, ii. 476 ; iii. 62.
- Kensington Palace, purchased by King William, iii. 83 ; fire at, 98 ; pictures, &c., 129.
- Kensington, Mr. Wise's house and gardens at, iii. 159 and n.
- Kent, Anthony Grey, Earl of, ii. 164.
- Countess of, ii. 242.
- Kent, rising in, 1648, i. 297 ; Kentish men imprisoned for petition to Parliament, 1701, iii. 158 and n.
- Kepley, William, iv. 211.
- Keppel, Arnold Joost Van, Earl of Albemarle, made Commander of the King's Guard, iii. 142 and n.
- Ker, William, Lord, of Cessford, iv. 82, 87 and n *bis*.
- Kew, Sir H. Capel's house, &c., at, ii. 339, 421 ; iii. 45.
- Keys, Thomas, executed for high treason, iii. 128 and n.
- Keysler, John George, Distich on Virgil, from his *Travels*, i. 183 n ; references to, 247 n, 275 n.
- Kidd, Captain, pirate, iii. 148 and n.
- Kidder, Dr. Richard, Bishop of Bath and Wells, iii. 106 and n.
- Kildare, Lord, ii. 255 n, 383.
- Killigrew, Thomas, various references to, iv. 121, 134, 135, 216, 217, 225, 226, 292 *bis*, 299 ; his family, 117 and n ; witticism by, 225 n ; complaint against him as King Charles II.'s Envoy to Venice, 1652, 258 and n.
- Mrs. Catharine, iv. 209 and n, 211.
- Killing no Murder*, by Colonel Titus, ii. 236.



- Kilmorey, Lord, ii. 102.
- Kilsythe, Marquis Montrose defeats Covenanters at, 1645, iv. 177 n.
- Kimbolton, Henry Montague, Lord, protests against an order in the Commons, 1641, iv. 75 n; account of, 92 n; faction meets at his house, 93.
- King of England, speech in 1686, asserting him to be absolute, iii. 24.
- King, Dr. Henry, made Bishop of Chichester, 1641, iv. 99 n; licensed to be absent from Parliament, 120 and n.
- Dr., relieved Charles II. in apoplexy, iii. 441, 442 and n.
- Dr. Archbishop of Dublin, iii. 169.
- Edward, executed for high treason, iii. 128 and n.
- Rev. Mr., of Ashsted, ii. 103.
- King-Killers*, *History of the*, character of Pym in, iv. 138 n.
- King's College Chapel, Cambridge, ii. 71.
- King's Evil, Royal Touch for, 1660, ii. 115; great pressure at the, 1684, 430.
- King's Household, ancient supply of, ii. 120 n.
- King Street, Westminster, design of King Charles II. respecting, iii. 119.
- Kings, precedents for the murder of, iv. 193 n.
- Kingston, Earl of, portrait, iii. 444.
- Evelyn Pierrepont, Earl of, ii. 6, 386; iii. 38, 141.
- Henry Pierrepont, Earl of, iv. 147 n.
- Kinsale, surrender of, iii. 91.
- Kirby, seat of Lord Hatton, ii. 69.
- Kirby, Captain, court-martial on, and execution of, iii. 164 n.
- Kircher, Father Athanasius, his attentions to Mr. Evelyn at Rome, i. 125; communication by Mr. Evelyn to his *Obeliscus Pamphilius*, 1650-54, 256; ii. 83; alluded to, i. 147, 155, 203; ii. 78.
- Kiviet, Sir John, account of, ii. 213; his proposal to wharf the Thames with brick, *ibid.*, i. lxiii; ii. 215, 224; project relative to draining, 249.
- Knatchbull, Sir Norton, sermon, &c., by, ii. 160.
- Sir Thomas, Commissioner of Privy Seal, iii. 83.
- Kneller, Sir Godfrey, his portrait of Mr. Evelyn, ii. *Frontispiece*; iii. 5 and n, 78, 436; of Bishop Burnet, iii. 77.
- Knife-swallowers, i. 24; ii. 139 and n, 318.
- Knight, Mr., of Northamptonshire, ii. 48.
- Sergeant-Surgeon, ii. 277.
- Mrs., singer, and mistress of Charles II., ii. 106 and n, 211 n, 305 n; compass of her voice, 304.
- Knowle, Kent, Duke of Dorset's house at, ii. 293.
- Knox, Dr. Vicesimus, and Rev. Thomas, Masters of Tunbridge School, ii. 182 n.
- Koningsmark, Count, procures Mr. Thynn's murder, ii. 392.
- LABULLA, boiling fountain of, i. 181.
- Lac Tigridis, drug so called, ii. 166.
- Lacy, John, comedian, portraits, ii. 152 and n; performance of, 155.

- Ladies, learned, enumeration of, iii. 396, 397.
- La Doree, Mons., ii. 39.
- Lago di Agnano, Naples, i. 184.
- di Garda, i. 268.
- Maggiore, &c., i. 277.
- Lake, Dr. John, Bishop of Chester, petitioned James II., against reading the Declaration of Liberty of Conscience, iii. 47; sent to the Tower, 48; tried and acquitted, 49; alluded to, 62; absents himself from Parliament, 1689, 72 n.
- Mr., a Commissioner of Greenwich Hospital, iii. 132 n.
- Lakin, Daniel, pamphlet by, ii. 139 n.
- Lambard, Mr., estate at Westram, ii. 49.
- Lambert, Major-Gen. John, besieges Pomfret Castle, 1649, iv. 346, 347.
- Lambeth Palace assaulted by a mob, 1640, i. 11; library, iii. 451.
- Lamedrati, sea-horses sculptured by, i. 108.
- Lamot, Mons., sermon of, iii. 38.
- Lamplugh, Dr., sermon of, ii. 291.
- Lamps of Licetus, iii. 242.
- Lancaster, Dr., vicar of St. Martin's, iii. 105, 148, 149.
- Lance of St. Longinus, i. 143; letter concerning, 273.
- Lane, Sir Richard, iv. 147 n.
- Sir Thomas, ii. 132 n; subscriber to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Mrs., loyalty of, ii. 33.
- Lanerick, Lord, flies from Court and Scotch Parliament, 1641, iv. 107 and n, 125.
- Laney, Dr. Benjamin, Bishop of Ely, ii. 232.
- Lanfranco, Giovanni, works of, i. 129, 168, 200, 204.
- Langdale, Sir Marmaduke, afterwards Lord, ii. 9; iv. 179, 205 and n.
- Langham, Lady, a kinswoman of Mr. Evelyn, ii. 74.
- Langton, Mr., iv. 338.
- Languages, modern, Mr. Evelyn's Discourse, showing how far a gentleman may become learned by their assistance, iii. 408.
- Lansdown, Lord, Count of the Holy Roman Empire, ii. 439; suicide of, 160.
- Laocoon and his sons, statue of, i. 167.
- Lapidaries at Venice, i. 263.
- Lashford, Sir Richard, kinsman of Mr. Evelyn, ii. 252.
- Lassells, Richard, his *Voyage through Italy*, 1670, quoted, i. 98 n, 99 n, 100 n, 103 n, 115 n, 248 n, 249 n, 263 n.
- "Last Supper," by Leonardo da Vinci, i. 272; in waxwork, ii. 278.
- "Last Judgment," by Michael Angelo, i. 163.
- Latin historians, list of, iii. 313.
- Lavaran, Madame, singer, ii. 24.
- Lavinia, painting by, i. 168.
- Laud, William, Archbishop of Canterbury, Chancellor of Oxford, i. 9; his palace attacked, 11; gift to St. John's College, Oxford, ii. 56; portrait, iii. 444; Mr. Wharton's Life of, 477 and n; jubilee of the Jesuits on his death, 477.
- Lauderdale, Duke, ii. 158, 164, 261, 310; his house at Ham, 399; libels against, 349; historical letters and papers lent to, by Mr. Evelyn, and lost, iv. 26; his library, iii. 453.



- Laura, her tomb at Avignon, i. 90.
- Laurentius Jansen Coster (Koster), of Harlaem, supposed inventor of Printing, his effigy, i. 25.
- Lauretto, Cavalier, of Rome, singer, i. 218.
- Law against Lovers*, a tragi-comedy, ii. 156 and n.
- Lawrence, Sir John, his pageant as Lord Mayor, ii. 172 and n.
- Dr., master of Balliol College, i. 9.
- president of Oliver's council, ii. 91.
- Laws, Mr., a Scotchman, duel fought by, iii. 113, 114.
- Laws, municipal, study of, recommended, iv. 23.
- Lawyers, &c., required to renounce James II., iii. 130.
- Lazzari (called Bramante), palaces built by, i. 199, 205; church built by, 271.
- Lea, Kent, Mr. Bohun's house, &c., at, iii. 355, 397, 416.
- League and Covenant, abjured, ii. 149.
- Leake, Dr., his daughter, ii. 320.
- Leaning Towers, i. 102, 106, 221, 230.
- Leatherhead, picture at the Swan Inn at, ii. 214 n.
- Le Chat, Mons., physician, i. 289, 293.
- Lechmere, Mr. Baron, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Lectures in Parish Churches sanctioned by Parliament, 1641, iv. 84 n.
- Lee, Lady, and Sir Henry, ii. 169; Sir Thomas, 376.
- Leech, Mr. and Mrs., ii. 49, 102.
- Leeds, Duke of, iii. 135 n; commissioner of Greenwich Hospital, 122; subscription to it, 133 n.
- Castle, Kent, prisoners kept at, ii. 188, 194, 211, 223.
- Leeward Islands, Sir C. Wheeler's indiscreet government at, his removal recommended, ii. 271; danger of, 274.
- Le Febure, Mons., chemist, i. 295.
- Legate of Bologna, his palace, i. 231.
- Legend of the Pearle*, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 194.
- Legg, George, Master of the Ordnance, ii. 405.
- Mr. W., of the Bedchamber, ii. 224.
- Colonel, ii. 481.
- Legge, Capt. William (ancestor of the Dartmouth family), King Charles orders him to be apprehended, 1645, iv. 173 and n, 177; alluded to, 140 and n.
- Leghorn, account of, i. 103, 104, 219, 221; consular of, ii. 288.
- Leicester, County and City of, ii. 63; capture of, iv. 163 n.
- Robert Sidney, Earl of, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 1641, iv. 101 n, 120, 121, 122, 132, 230 and n.
- Robert Dudley (the great), Earl of, vase once belonging to, ii. 74; portrait of, iii. 443; alluded to, ii. 401; letters and papers of, iv. 26.
- Earl of, house at Penshurst, ii. 43.
- House, London, notice of, ii. 286 and n.
- Leighton, Sir Elias, project of, ii. 232.
- Leith Hill, Surrey, i. 3.



- Lely, Sir Peter, portraits by, ii. 101, 221 n; alluded to, 254 n, 405.
- Le Neve, painter, ii. 2.
- Lennier, Jerome, paintings possessed by, ii. 44.
- Lennox, Duke of, ii. 141.
- portrait of the Duchess of, ii. 119.
- Lent, ceremonies of, in Rome, i. 208-210; in Venice, 260; preaching in London during, ii. 289; 1665, observance of, recommended, and closing the theatres, iii. 300-303.
- Lenthall, William, Speaker of the House of Peers, iv. 190.
- Leonænas, Dr. John Athelsteinus, anatomical preparations by, i. 261.
- Leopold, Prince, his collection of paintings, i. 226.
- Lepanto, picture of the battle, i. 163; battle of, iii. 408.
- Lepers in Holland, notice of, i. 15.
- Lepidus, fountains of, at Rome, i. 131.
- Lerici, procession at, i. 101.
- Leslie, Lady Jane (afterwards Countess of Rothes), her marriage and issue, iii. 161 n.
- L'Estrange, Sir Roger, ii. 82, 300; some account of him, his *Observator*, &c., 462 and n.
- Letters, ambition of printing, iv. 55; difficulty of their conveyance, 254, 260, 275, 277.
- Lewen, Samuel, and Sir William, ii. 460 n.
- Leyden, account of, i. 23-25.
- Lucas Van, painting by, i. 60; prints of, 72.
- Liancourt, Count de, his palace, garden, and pictures, i. 59-61.
- Liberty and Servitude*, 1644-49, a translation by Mr. Evelyn, i. xxxi, cv; ii. 1; iii. 189, 194.
- Libraries, various notices of, i. 9, 24, 69, 76, 165, 166, 227, 231, 243, 273, 293; ii. 55, 57, 62, 63, 70, 71, 72; in Paris and England, iii. 448-454.
- Licola, in Italy, account of, i. 189.
- Light, contrivance for reflecting, i. 60.
- Ligne, Prince de, Ambassador from Spain, ii. 117.
- Ligon, Captain, ii. 231.
- Lilburn, Col. John, iv. 210 n.
- Lillo, fort of, i. 29.
- Lilly, William, astrologer, iii. 144.
- Lima, earthquake at, 1688, iii. 48.
- Linch, Sir Thomas, Governor of Jamaica, ii. 259, 287, 318.
- Lincoln, City and Cathedral of, ii. 68.
- Lincolnshire, fens of, ii. 70.
- Lincoln's Inn, revels at, 1661, ii. 140.
- Lincoln's Inn Fields, theatre in, ii. 122; Mr. Povey's house in, 166; Lord Bristol's house in, 260, 265.
- Lindsey, Earl of, portrait, iii. 444.
- Lord, i. 6; iv. 81 n.
- Lion, gentleness of one, ii. 50.
- Lionberg, Mons., Swedish Resident, ii. 398.
- Lisle, Sir George, put to death by Ireton, ii. 36, 85.
- Lord (son of Earl of Leicester), ii. 81; his house at Sheen, 339.
- Litchfield, Lady, daughter of Charles II., ii. 389.
- Littler, Mr., vicar of Deptford, ii. 105.

- Littleton, Sir Charles (brother of Sir Henry), and his house at Sheen, iii. 44.
- Livius, Titus, reliques of, i. 179, 253.
- Livorno, i. 103, 104.
- Lloyd, Sir Richard, ii. 7, 35.
- Dr. William, afterwards Bishop of St. Asaph, Chaplain with Charles II. in exile, 1653, iv. 271 n; attended the English Court in France, ii. 30 n; Sermons of, 318, 358; reflections on a sermon by, 358; Bishop of St. Asaph, 374, 381; petitioned against reading Declaration of Liberty of Conscience, iii. 47; sent to the Tower, 48; tried and acquitted, 49; his interpretation of prophecies, 73, 75, 87, 88; sermon, 1689, on the deliverance of the Church of England, 80; alluded to, ii. 226, 350 n, 364, 367, 470; iii. 11, 62, 73, 87, 90, 139.
- Lloyd, Mr., ii. 287.
- Loadstone, a remarkable one, i. 108.
- Locke, John, Secretary to Council of Trade and Plantations, ii. 287 and n, 298.
- Lockhart, Lord, Ambassador to France, ii. 299; iv. 313-316, 319, 320.
- Locks, notices of curious, ii. 58.
- on river Brenta in Italy, i. 246.
- Lodge, Edmund, Norroy King of Arms, his *Illustrations of British History* cited, ii. 145 n.
- Lodi, victory of the French at, i. 269 n.
- Loftus, Mr., 364.
- Loggan, R., his portrait of Bobart, ii. 171 n.
- Lombardus, Tullius, sculptor, i. 248.
- Lombart, Peter, engraver, ii. 48, 221 n.
- Lomellini, church built by the, i. 99 n.
- London, pestilence in, 1625 and 1636, i. 4, 8; processions of Charles I. on opening the Parliament, &c., 1640, 10, 12; tumults, &c., in, 11; 1643, 40; 1648, 297; dispute about right of electing Sheriffs, 1641, iv. 75 n; sickness in, 78, 88, 103; forfeiture of Londonderry from, 79, 80 and n; tumults of the apprentices, 93 n, 138 n; King Charles grants the allowance to merchants by Act of Tonnage and Poundage, &c., omitted by Parliament, 1641, 81, 82, 95; Lord Mayor, &c., desire to attend the King through London on return from Scotland, 95, 102, 124 and m, 136, 137; purpose giving an entertainment to him, 144; proceedings at election of Lord Mayor, 1641, 98; guards doubled by Parliament, 107; Parliament treats with, for money to pay soldiers in Ireland, 121; treaty with, on the Militia, 148; proclamation of peace in, 1642, i. 38; Cross at Cheap destroyed, 1643, 40; ii. 63; compared with Paris, 1644, i. 71; pulpits of the churches filled by mechanics, &c., 1649, 1656; ii. 3, 87; forcibly entered by General Monk, 110; triumphal entry of Charles II. at, 112; visit of Charles II. to, 114; Lord Mayor's Show, &c., 1660, 118; 1661, 137; 1662, 153 and n; 1664, 172 and n; 1686, iii. 29; the King's pro-



London—*continued*.

gress through, before his coronation, ii. 125 ; draft of an Act against the nuisance of smoke in, 135, 141 ; fast on Jan. 15th, 1662, 142 ; commission for regulating buildings, &c., 1662, 144, 148, 159 ; present of the City to the Queen of Charles II., 145 ; tumults expected in, from Nonconformists, 149, 153 ; plague, 1665, 186 ; fast on account of, *ibid.* ; dreadful increase of, 188 ; abates, 189 ; Mayor, &c., congratulates Charles II. after the plague, 191 ; account of the great fire in 1666, 200–207 ; iii. 343 ; alarm in, of the Dutch having landed, ii. 207 ; survey of the ruins, and plans for rebuilding the city by Dr. Wren and Mr. Evelyn, 209 and n, 345 and n ; iii. 194 ; fast on occasion of the conflagration, the plague, and war, ii. 209 ; alarm on the Dutch entering the Thames, 218 ; re-building of the city begun, 241 ; youths burn the Pope in effigy, 1673, 298 ; petition of the Corporation to his Majesty on the Quo Warranto against their charter, and submission to his pleasure, 407 ; their privileges diminished, *ibid.* ; and judgment entered against them, 419 ; inscription on the Monument against the Papists erased, 1685, 468 ; rejoicings, &c., on James II.'s birthday, 1686, forbidden, iii. 27 ; proceedings of Common Council on the approach of William III., 428, 429 ; rejoicings on the accession of William and Mary, 68, 69 ; charter of the city restored, 86 ; earth-

London—*continued*.

quake felt at, 471 ; increase of, 1696, reprobated, iv. 5.  
 " London " frigate blown up, ii. 179, 182, 220 ; iii. 304 and n ; a new frigate so called, launched, ii. 196.  
 London Institution, house of, in Old Jewry, ii. 285 n ; mansion erected for, in Moorfields, *ibid.*  
 London, Mr. George, gardener to Sir Christopher Wren, iii. 139.  
 — William, letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on his proposed Natural History of Barbadoes, &c., iii. 402.  
 Londonderry, forfeiture of, to King Charles II., proceedings upon, 1641, iv. 79, 102 ; surprised by James II., iii. 76 ; Schomberg sent to its relief, 79.  
 Long, Mr. Robert, Secretary to Charles II. in exile, iv. 197 and n, 198 ; brings charge against Sir Edward Hyde, 300 and n.  
 Long-Ditton, Surrey, descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedig.*  
 Longevity, remarkable instances of, ii. 68.  
 Longford, Lord, Treasurer of Ireland, ii. 336, 348.  
 Longinus, St., holy lance of, i. 143 ; letter concerning it, 273.  
 Longueville, Duke of, ii. 259.  
 Lords, protest of the House of, against the Commons, 1641, iv. 85 and n ; choose their own Speaker, 113, 131 ; proceedings of, on the Irish Rebellion, 122 ; debate of, on excluding the Popish Peers, 132 ; letters from Charles I. to the Speaker, of the 6th March, 1646–47, 189.  
 Lorraine, Duke of, 1652, iv. 247 n, 262 and n, 321 n.



- Lort, Mr., at Lincoln's Inn, ii. 140.
- Lothian, Lord, alluded to, ii. 84, 116; iv. 97 n.
- Lottery, in 1664, ii. 166; in 1693, iii. 111; State lottery, 1694, 114, 118; frequency of lotteries, 1696, 131; suppression of, 1699, 143.
- Loudoun, Sir John Campbell, Earl of, 1641, iv. 95 and m; in France, 1642, 331, 332 *bis*.
- Loudune, Nuns of, impostures practised by, ii. 251.
- Louis XII., King of France, equestrian statue of at Blois, i. 77.
- XIII., his sepulchre, i. 43.
- XIV. performs in a masque, 1651, ii. 23; procession to Parliament when out of his minority, 26; his ambitious career, 413, 432; iii. 107; the King and Dauphin alluded to, ii. 10, 253; iii. 24.
- Louvre, at Paris, described, i. 53; referred to, ii. 9.
- Louyr, —, a painter at the Hague, 1654, iv. 213.
- Love, its excellencies and advantages considered, iii. 267.
- Love and Honour*, a tragi-comedy, ii. 138.
- Love in a Tub*, a play, ii. 164.
- Love, Captain, duel fought by, ii. 469.
- Lovestine, fort of, i. 17.
- Lower, Dr., physician, iii. 119.
- Lowman, Mr., of the Marshalsea, ii. 188.
- Lowndes, Mr., Secretary to the Treasury, iii. 122, 134 n.
- Lowther, Sir John, ii. 333, 392; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Loyola, Ignatius, his burial-place, i. 125.
- Lubicer, his skill on the violin, ii. 82.
- Lubnam, Leicestershire, iv. 162.
- Lucas, Sir Charles, put to death by Ireton, ii. 36, 85.
- Lord, Lieutenant of the Tower, ii. 217; iii. 83, 92, 210.
- Rev. Mr., iii. 121.
- Sir Gervas, iv. 268, 294 and n, 297, 298, 300, 301.
- Lady, iv. 294, 295, 300.
- Lucca, City of, account of, &c., i. 221.
- Lucretia, Signoria, a Greek lady, ii. 5.
- Lucretius, first book of, translated into English verse by Mr. Evelyn, 1656, i. xxxvii, cvi; ii. 84; iii. 189, 212 n; his own remarks upon it, ii. 84 n; iii. 215, 398; observations on it by Dr. Jeremy Taylor, 212, 216, 218.
- Lucrine, lake of, i. 188.
- Ludi Circenses*, colours worn by combatants, iii. 420.
- Ludivisio, Prince, his villa at Rome, i. 127, 213.
- Luke, St., pictures said to have been painted by, i. 109, 123, 132, 147; reliques of, 249.
- Lumley, Lord, ii. 250, 468, 469; iii. 37.
- family of, ii. 103.
- Lundy, James Campbell, Lord, in the French King's service, 1643, iv. 331 *bis*.
- Lutes made at Bologna, i. 233.
- Lutterell, Mr., painting by, iii. 117.
- Luxembourg, palace and gardens, i. 68-70.
- Luxemburg, surrender of, to the French, ii. 432; iii. 37.
- Lynn Regis, notice of, ii. 330.
- Lyon, Mons., iv. 318.

- Lyons, City of, account of, i. 86, 87, 293.
- Lyra, Don Emanuel de, ii. 335.
- Lysons's *Environs of London*, &c., referred to, ii. 190 n, 247 n.
- Lyttelton, Sir Edward, Lord Keeper, notices of, iv. 70 and n, 71 m, 72, 73 and n, 74, 76, 77 *bis*, 113 n.
- MACCLESFIELD, LORD, his death, 1693, iii. 112.
- Macguire, Lord, rebellion and execution of, 1641, iv. 120 and n.
- Mackenzie, Sir George, his Essay *On Solitude* answered by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxii, cxiii; ii. 214 and n; iii. 85 and n, 190, 196; Lord Advocate of Scotland, 62, 63; particulars respecting Scotland by, 86.
- Mackworth, Sir Humphrey, ii. 451 n; iv. 244 and n.
- Macmahon, Hugh, discovery of the Irish Rebellion by, 1641, iv. 122 n.
- Maddox, Mr., letter of Mr. Evelyn to, containing hints for his travels, iii. 224.
- Madrid, a palace of the French King, i. 59; ii. 11.
- Maestricht, siege of, represented at Windsor, ii. 302.
- Maffonett, —, iv. 281.
- Magdalen College and Chapel, Oxford, ii. 57, 171.
- Magniani, Marquis, of Bologna, i. 232.
- Maimbourg, Father, pretended letter of Duchess of York, on her desertion of the Church, published by, ii. 395; iii. 401.
- Maison, President, his palace near Paris, ii. 8.
- Maison Rouge*, near Paris, i. 64.
- Maitland (ancestor of the Duke of Lauderdale), letters of, iv. 26.
- Lord, library of, iii. 453.
- Makins, Mrs. Bathshua, school of, ii. 5.
- Mal Albergo, i. 233.
- Malata, or Mela, Gatta, effigy and notice of, i. 248 n.
- Malcolm, James Peller, his *Londinium Redivivum* referred to, ii. 51.
- Malling, South, Church consecrated, i. 5; impropriations, *ibid.*, 297.
- Malomocco, notice of, i. 234.
- Malpighi, Signior, presents a treatise to the Royal Society, ii. 235.
- Malta, earthquake at, 1693, iii. 107.
- Malvern Hills, view from, ii. 62.
- Manchester, Edward Montague, Earl of, Lord Chamberlain, ii. 121, 172.
- Henry Montague, Earl of, Lord Privy Seal, chosen Speaker of the House of Lords, 1641, iv. 113; portrait, iii. 444.
- Edward Montague, Earl of, joins the Scottish army, iv. 153 n; mentioned, 214 n.
- Mancini, Signior, of Rome, i. 198.
- Mander, Dr. Roger, Master of Balliol College, iii. 141 and n, 155.
- Mandeville, Henry Montague, Lord, notices of, iv. 92 and n, 93.
- Mann, Mr., Recorder of Ipswich, ii. 326.
- Manna at Naples, i. 192.
- Manners, general depravity of, 1690, iii. 83, 147; Society for Reformation of, 1699, 147, 150.



- Manning, Captain, his treachery to King Charles II., &c., iv. 221 n.
- Mantegna, Andrea, paintings by, i. 60 ; ii. 146.
- Manton, Dr., presbyterian, sermon of, ii. 100.
- Manufactures, notices of various, i. 80, 85, 88, 233, 268.
- Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library, ii. 55, 56.
- Essay on by Mr. Evelyn, i. cxvii ; iii. 190 and n.
- Manwaring, Dr. Roger, Bishop of St. David's, Parliament sequesters, 1641, iv. 24 n.
- Maple tree, marbling in the wood of, iii. 279.
- Marble, magazine for, at Lambeth, ii. 322.
- Marcarino, inlaid pavement by, i. 220.
- Marcello, Dr., of Verona, i. 267.
- Marcus, Mons., Charles II. discharges a debt to, iv. 307, 310.
- Marchand, Florian, the water-spouter, ii. 21 and n.
- Marcus, Emilius, statue of, i. 267.
- Marden, Surrey, Sir Robert Clayton's seat at, ii. 331 ; iii. 79 n, 153.
- Margaret, eminent women of that name, iii. 396.
- Margate, Kent, notice of town of, ii. 280.
- Marias du Temple, Paris, account of, i. 52.
- Marine Laws of France, paper on the severity of the, iii. 408.
- Marinella, Lucretia, book by, in praise of Women, iii. 397.
- Marius, Caius, victory of, i. 206, 266, 268.
- Mark, St., Piazza of, at Venice, i. 238.
- Markets, various notices of, i. 20, 34, 37 ; ii. 72.
- Marlborough, town of, ii. 52.
- Marlborough, John Churchill, Lord (afterwards Duke), dismissed from office for extortion, &c., 1692, iii. 100 ; deserted James II., who had advanced him, *ibid.* ; Master of Ordnance 1701, 155 ; his honours and emoluments, and reflections on his character, 163 ; marriage of his daughters, 139, 164 ; death of his son, 164 ; instance of his attention to Mr. Evelyn, 171 ; his brother referred to, 172.
- Sarah Jennings, Duchess of, ii. 143 n, 305 n ; iii. 101.
- Marmora Oxoniensia Arundeliana*, ii. 226, 319. See Arundel, Evelyn, Howard.
- Marmoustier, Abbey of, i. 81.
- Marne, famous bridge over, i. 62.
- Marriages, extraordinary number of, in one person, i. 23 ; of a Jew at Venice, 262 ; Burials, &c., tax on, iii. 123.
- Marseilles, account of, i. 90 ; slaves there, *ibid.*, 91, 92 ; referred to, iii. 224.
- Marshall, William, portrait by, ii. 5 n ; book of flowers painted by, 397.
- Marsham, Sir John, ii. 108 ; his *Chronicus Canon*, &c., iii. 412 and n.
- Marston Moor, battle of, King Charles's commands to Prince Rupert respecting, iv. 153 n.
- Marsys, Mons., publishes a libel against Charles I., 1649, iv. 194, 195.
- Martin, Mr., iii. 160.
- Martyn, Capt., iv. 314, 317 ; offers himself for Spanish service, 1656, 312.



- Mary Beatrice D'Este, Princess of Modena, Duchess of York, ii. 298.
- Mary Magdalen, her place of penance, i. 92.
- Mary, Queen of Scots, her burial-place, ii. 70.
- Mary, Queen (consort of William III.), ii. 320; married to the Prince of Orange, 332; her conduct on her accession to the crown, iii. 69; her cabinets and collection of China, &c., 110; her death and funeral, 119, 120; behaviour in her sickness, particulars of her character, 120.
- Maseres, Baron, tracts respecting the Civil War published by, iii. 138 n.
- Mason, Dr., his house, ii. 45.
- Rev. John, account of him, iii. 114 n.
- Masques, at Court in France, ii. 23; at Lincoln's Inn, 140; at Charles II.'s Court, 159, 177, 215.
- Massey, William, his *Origin and Progress of Letters* referred to, ii. 55 n.
- Massonet, —, iv. 300 n.
- Massy, Sir Edward, Governor of Jamaica, ii. 117.
- Masters, Captain, in the Dutch Fleet, ii. 181 n.
- Mastiff dogs draw pedlars' carts in Holland, i. 35.
- Mathematical College, Mr. Evelyn's scheme for one, iii. 261–267.
- Matthæi Horti, at Rome, i. 196.
- Maurice, Prince, i. 15; iv. 155, 175, 223, 274 n.
- Mausoleum Augusti, at Rome, i. 204.
- Maximilian II., Emperor, letters of, iv. 26.
- Maxwell, Mr., ii. 337 n.
- May, Thomas, *History of the Long Parliament*, 1647, referred to, iv. 93 n, 110 n, 113 n.
- Hugh, and Baptist, architects, works of, ii. 168, 254 n, 255 n, 258, 285, 362, 398; a Commissioner for repair of Old St. Paul's, London, ii. 199.
- May 29th, festival on, ii. 132.
- Maynard, Mr. Sergeant, ii. 375.
- Lord, comptroller of household, ii. 450.
- Maynwaring, Sir Arthur, notice of, iv. 78 and n, 82.
- Sir Philip, iv. 74 and n.
- Mazarin, Cardinal Julius, proscribed, ii. 20; death, 125; alluded to, ii. 11, 47; iii. 143; iv. 183, 245, 246 n, 250 n, 268 n, 288 n, 302 n, 305 and n, 321, 333, 342; Mazarin Library, iii. 448.
- Duchess of, mistress of Charles II., ii. 321, 448; her death, and account of her, ii. 448.
- Mazzotti, an artist in Pietra Comessa, i. 227.
- Meadows, Sir Philip, marriage of, iii. 134.
- Meath, Bishop of, 1656, poverty of, ii. 83.
- Mechanism, various pieces of, i. 138, 158, 171, 214, 239; ii. 58, 131, 141, 186, 232, 249.
- Medals, ancient, observations on Roman, i. 217; utility of as historical records, iii. 439; authors and others skilled on the subject, ii. 316; iii. 441; various collections of, noticed, i. 128,

Medals—*continued*.

193, 213, 257; ii. 153; iii. 442, 443.

— *Discourse of*, by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxxix, cxvi; iii. 190, 196, 465; letter to his bookseller respecting, 478; to Lord Godolphin, enclosing that part of the work which relates to clipping and debasing the coin, iv. 3.

Mede, Joseph, his interpretation of prophecy, iii. 76–88.

Medici, palace of, at Rome, i. 125, 156.

— Cosmo di, Duke, statue of Justice erected by, i. 106, 225; equestrian statue of, 109.

— Cosmo II. improved the Palace of Pitti, i. 105; statue of, 225.

— Cardinal, Ambassador from the Duke of Florence to Rome, i. 212; fireworks at his palace, *ibid*.

— Maria de, Queen Mother, portrait, i. 19; her reception in Holland, 1641, i. 26, 27; notices of, 80; ii. 8.

Mediterranean Sea, Evelyn's account of his voyage in the, 1644, i. 93–95.

Meeres, Sir Thomas, ii. 221, 349.

Meggot, Dr., Dean of Winchester, ii. 475; sermons of, 197, 429; iii. 24, 32.

Meldrum, Captain for Charles II., 1654, iv. 303 n, 312 n.

Melford, Lord, pictures belonging to, sold, iii. 109.

Mell, Mr., musician, ii. 44, 82.

Melleray, Marshal, political intrigues of, iv. 265, 268 and n, 283, 285, 286, 287, 289, 292 *bis*, 293, 298; seizes on English

Melleray, Marshal—*continued*.

ships, 1652, 267; claims a fee from prizes taken for Charles II. in exile, 288, 296.

Melos, Don Francisco de, ii. 217, 288.

Menageries (*vide* Aviaries), notices of, i. 31, 55, 137, 254; ii. 50.

Mennes, Sir John, his verses on the Duchess of Chevreux, iv. 242 n; loyalty to King Charles I., 252 and n.

Mentz, Elector of, 1654, iv. 225.

Mercator, Nicholas, mathematical instruments by, ii. 200.

Merceria, at Venice, i. 237.

Mercers' Company (London), ii. 149; Italian sermon at their chapel, i. 298; chapel of, burned, ii. 205.

Mercure, Mons., performer on the lute, i. 295.

*Mercurius Politicus*, a journal cited, iv. 251 n, 272 n, 303 n, 321 n.

*Mercurius Rusticus*, quoted, iv. 148 n.

Mercury, transit of, 1664, ii. 170; a ring said to be a projection of, 218.

Meret, Dr., of the College of Physicians, ii. 152.

Mersey, Mons., i. 80.

Merick, Sir William, ii. 161.

Merode, —, iv. 213.

Merrick, Mr., of Parson's Green, ii. 123 n.

— Sergeant-Major, Parliament sends to Ireland, 1641, iv. 124 and n.

Merton College, election to the Wardenship of, 1661, ii. 124.

Merwell, Dr., i. 7.

Messeray, Mons., Judge Advocate of Jersey, ii. 115.



- Meta-Sudente, ruins of, i. 135.  
 Metellus, sepulchre of, at Rome, i. 197.  
 Meteor, one which appeared in 1642-43, i. 39; 1680, ii. 380.  
 Mewes, Dr., of St. John's College, Oxford, ii. 241.  
 Michell, Robert, estate at North Stoke, iii. 155.  
 Mickleham, notice of, ii. 78.  
 Middlesex, James Cranfield, Earl of, a Commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.  
 Middleton, Lord, ii. 219; Secretary of State, 435; iii. 37.  
 — General, ii. 220.  
 — Colonel, ii. 263, 264.  
 — Sir Hugh, New River of, iii. 23.  
 — Mrs., daughter of R. Needham, ii. 414.  
 — Dr., Italian sermon by, i. 299.  
 — Lieut.-General, transports arms, &c., to Scotland for Charles II.'s service, 1653, iv. 298 and n.  
 Milan, description of, i. 269-277; Cathedral, 270; Church of the Jesuits and St. Celso, 271; the Great Hospital, Temple of Hercules, Monastery of Madonna della Gratia, and picture of Leonardo da Vinci, 271, 272; Ambrosian library, 273; Church of St. Ambrose, *ibid.*; Citadel, &c., 274; Signior Septalla's curiosities, 275; civilities of a Scots colonel, and his melancholy accident, 276, 277.  
 Militia, various notices concerning the, 1664, iv. 148, 149, 150 *bis*, 151, 152.  
 Millennium, delusion respecting the, iii. 115.  
 Miller, Rev. Mr., vicar of Effingham, &c., iii. 106 n.  
 Millington, Sir Thomas, ii. 403.  
 Milton, John, allusions to, ii. 142 n, 162; iii. 24.  
 — Christopher, brother of John, iii. 23.  
 Mingrelia, women of, ii. 369.  
 Mint, Committee for regulating the, ii. 161, 164, 194.  
 Mirandula, John Picus, ii. 351; portrait of, 342.  
*Miscellanea Aulica* referred to iv. 201 n, 205 n, 207 n, 224 n.  
 Misenus, ruins of the city of, i. 190.  
 Misson, François Maximilien, his *New Voyage to Italy*, i. 181 n.  
 Mochi, Fra., statue by, i. 143.  
 Models, notices of various, i. 23, 60.  
 Modena, Duchess of, ii. 298.  
 — Duke of, iv. 321 n.  
*Moderate Publisher*, 1653, a journal cited, iv. 276 n.  
 Modiford, Sir Thomas, Governor of Jamaica, ii. 262, 263, 264, 303.  
 Mohun, Lord, tried and acquitted, iii. 106.  
 — Mrs. Philippa, iv. 214.  
 Mole and Pharos at Genoa, i. 95, 96, 99; at Naples, 178.  
 Molino, Signior, Doge of Venice, i. 259.  
 — Condé de, Spanish Ambassador, ii. 184.  
 Mollen, famous for making lutes, i. 233.  
 Monconys, Mons. Balthazar, ii. 251.  
 Mondragone, Palace of, i. 214.  
 Money, scarcity of in England in 1696, iii. 131.  
 Monk, George, afterwards Duke of Albemarle, his army, 1654, iv. 210 and n, 211; his march



- Monk, George—*continued*.  
 from Scotland, ii. 110; breaks down the gates of the City, *ibid.*; marches to Whitehall, *ibid.*; and convenes the old Parliament, *ibid.*; allusions to his conduct at this juncture, iii. 179, 182, 183; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, 306. *See* Albemarle.
- Dr. Nicholas, Bishop of Hereford, consecration of, ii. 121; funeral, 140.
- Monkeys, feats of, at Southwark fair, ii. 117.
- Monmouth, Sir James Scott, Duke of, ii. 7, 178, 251, 302, 305 n, 322, 355, 386, 444; his unexpected return from Holland, and great popularity, 359; proclamation against, 409; surrenders himself, 422; pardoned, and banished Whitehall, 424; lands in England and sets up his standard as King, &c., 467; proclaimed traitor, *ibid.*; defeated and taken prisoner, 468; committed to the Tower and executed, 471; acknowledged his base extraction, *ibid.*; character of him, 472; account of his mother, ii. 7; iii. 472 and n.
- Duchess of, ii. 289, 321, 386, 471; iii. 17; sermon by her chaplain, 82.
- Earl of, iii. 122.
- Monro, Sir George, iv. 214.
- Montague, Walter, Abbot of Pontoise; iv. 92 n, 324 and n; attempts to pervert religion of Duke of Gloucester, 1654, 206, 218 n.
- Henry, Lord, employed to purchase arms, &c., for Charles I., 1643, iv. 334 *bis*.
- Montague, Lord Viscount, ii. 90 n, 109, 187.
- Lord, trial, 1693–1696, concerning estate left by Duke of Albemarle, iii. 112, 131, 160; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n.
- Mr., Chancellor of the Exchequer, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Ralph, Duke of, his palace at Bloomsbury (now the British Museum), ii. 319, 356; description of it, 421; burnt to the ground, iii. 15.
- Mr. Attorney, his son married to Mary Evelyn of Woodcot, ii. 246; her death, iii. 43.
- Montalbano, Dr., discoverer of phosphorus, i. 231.
- Monte-Alto, villa of, i. 130.
- Monte Cavallo, at Rome, i. 128, 158.
- Monte Feltre, Count and Countess, iii. 415.
- Montefiascone, notice of, i. 115.
- Monte Pientio, or Mantumiato, i. 113.
- Monte Pieta, i. 199; in Padua, 253.
- Montford, the player, murder of, iii. 106.
- Lord, ii. 247 n.
- Montgomery Castle declares for the King, iv. 157.
- Montgomeryshire, fiery exhalation in, 1694, iii. 113.
- Mont Louis, dwellings of the inhabitants of, i. 79.
- Montpelier, celebrated for perfumes, &c., iii. 225.
- Montreuil, description of, i. 42.

- Montreuil, Mons., iv. 183; deceived by Mazarin, 183, 184 n.
- Montrose, James Graham, Marquis of, trial, 1641, iv. 98; Charles I. determines not to treat without him, 147, 150, 151; account of, 147 n; defeats the Covenanters at Kilsyth, 177 n; state of, Dec. 1646, 189; alluded to, ii. 26; iv. 26; portrait, iii. 444.
- Monument (London), building of, iii. 381; words on, against the Papists erased, 468.
- Moody, Rev. Mr., recommended for a living, ii. 92.
- Moon, argument on the nature of its light, i. 30.
- Moore, Dr. John, Bishop of Ely, his fine library, iii. 143 and n.
- Moorfields, manufactory of camlets, &c., in, ii. 39.
- Morant, Rev. Philip, his *History of Essex* cited, ii. 106 n.
- Mordaunt, Mr., acquitted, 1658, ii. 100.
- Lord Viscount, ii. 90, 112, 120, 123, 127, 139, 158; case between him and Captain Taylor investigated by the House of Commons, 212; Mr. Evelyn a trustee for, to pay debts, 324.
- Lady, her charity, &c., ii. 317, 318, 324, 337; Mr. Evelyn a trustee for her children, and executor, 351, 359, 364.
- Lady Mary, ii. 305 n, 325.
- Lady, house at Ashted, ii. 189; iii. 40.
- More, Sir Thomas, portrait of, ii. 2; iii. 444.
- Morgan, Mr., botanist, ii. 102.
- Dr. Robert, Bishop of Bangor, ii. 116.
- Morgan, Col., exploits at Panama, ii. 263, 303.
- Mr. —, iv. 210 n.
- Capt., iv. 226.
- Morghen, Raffaele, fine engraving by, i. 272 n.
- Morice, Mr. Secretary, ii. 136, 185, 215; had a good library, 162, 215.
- Mons., professor at Geneva, i. 291, 293.
- Mr., iv. 289.
- Col., Governor of Pomfret Castle for Charles I., 1648, account of, iv. 346-348.
- Morine, Mons., his garden and collection of insects, &c., i. 72; ii. 23.
- Morison, Dr., Professor of Botany, ii. 311.
- Morland, Sir Samuel, his inventions, ii. 221 and n, 268, 328, 406; account of him and his father, 221 n; his house at Lambeth, 385; inventions to assist his blindness, &c., 125.
- Morley, Agnes, school founded by, i. 5.
- Dr. George (afterwards Bishop of Winchester), with Charles II. in exile, iv. 208, 210, 213; allusions to, ii. 9, 30 n, 160, 162, 168, 178, 197, 317; coronation sermon by, 129; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the charge against him respecting the Duchess of York's deserting the Church of England, iii. 395, 401; the Bishop's vindication, 402 and n; portrait, 444.
- Col., a friend of Mr. Evelyn, and one of the Council of State, 1652, ii. 39, 40, 76; Mr. Evelyn attempts to bring him over to the King, 109, 110;



- Morley, Colonel—*continued*.  
 the Colonel hesitates, and loses the honour of restoring the King, 110; procures pardon, 112; account of Mr. Evelyn's negotiations with, respecting the King's restoration, iii. 178–183 n.
- Morocco, Ambassador, Nahmed Hamet, account and audience of, 1682, ii. 387 and n; entertainment given to, 389; admitted of the Royal Society, 395; Lord Howard made Ambassador to, 227.
- Morosini, Ambassador from Venice to France, ii. 28.
- Morris, Mr., scrivener, ii. 332 n.
- Morton, Countess, allusions to, ii. 9, 19; iv. 222.
- Morus, Mons. (probably Alexander Morus), an eloquent French preacher, ii. 142.
- Mosaics, *vide* Pietra Comessa, i. 145, 158, 159, 168, 206, 239.
- Moscow burnt, 1699, iii. 144.
- Moulins, brief account of, i. 85.  
 — M., surgeon, ii. 4 *bis*.
- Mountains, Evelyn's account of travelling in the, i. xxviii. 114, 229, 278–283.
- Mountebanks at Rome, i. 203, 217; at Venice, 260.
- Mowbray, Lord (son of Earl of Arundel), i. 257.
- Muccinigo, Sign., Venetian Ambassador, entertained by Mr. Evelyn, 1688, ii. 231; his entry into London, *ibid.*; with Venetian Ambassadors, 1685, iii. 12; alluded to, ii. 241, 253.
- Mulberry garden, ii. 51.
- Mulgrave, Lord, ii. 286, 355; iii. 109, 110.
- Mummies, fragments of, given to Evelyn, i. 256.
- Mundanus, philosophers' elixir projected by, iii. 170.
- Mundus Muliebris*, 1690, a poem by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxxiv, cxv; ii. 455 and n; iii. 196.
- Murano, near Venice, account of, i. 255.
- Murillo, painting by, iii. 110.
- Muro torto at Rome, i. 203.
- Murray, Col. Charles, iv. 244 and n.  
 — Mr. Mungo, iv. 104, 105; notice of, *ibid.* n.  
 — Mr. William, in the confidence of Charles I., iv. 73, 81, 87, 90, 95 m, 111, 121, 123, 131, 142 n, 344.  
 — Col. William, iv. 177.  
 — Sir Robert, one of the institutors of the Royal Society, ii. 124, 131, 150, 164, 176, 247, 293; iii. 191 and n, 481; funeral of, ii. 293.
- Muschamp, Mr., ii. 47.
- Musgrave, Sir Philip, ii. 9.
- Music, singing, &c., various particulars relating to, i. 10, 17, 18, 19, 21, 22, 23, 31, 34, 62, 80, 91, 126, 127, 129, 138, 151, 158, 160, 218, 245, 259, 260, 276; ii. 5, 11, 20, 50, 55, 57, 74, 82, 88, 93, 106, 132, 133, 140, 141, 146, 156, 164, 167, 168, 214, 233, 239, 246.
- Musical instrument, a new invention, ii. 167.
- Muscovy, Ambassador, audience of, 1662, ii. 156.  
 — Czar of, his conduct to the English Ambassador (Earl of Carlisle), ii. 157 n.
- Mustapha*, a tragedy, by Earl of Orrery, ii. 180, 210.
- Mutiano, Girolamo, painting by, i. 126.
- Mynne, Geo., of Woodcote, i. 298.



- Naked Truth*, pamphlet so called, ii. 317.
- Nantes, Edict of, revocation of, and consequent persecution, iii. 8. *See* Huguenots.
- Nanteuil, portraits of Mr. Evelyn, &c., by, ii. 14 and n.
- Naples, state of, 1648, iv. 341, 342; inscription over the gate of the Kingdom, i. 175; account of the city and its environs, 177-193; Castle of St. Elmo, &c., 177; the Mole, *ibid.*, 178; cathedral and churches, 178, 179; Monastery and Church of the Carthusians, 179; Viceroy's Cavalerizzo and Imperati's Museum, 180; Carnival, 181; Vesuvius, 181-183; Paulsilippo, 183; Lago di Agnano, Grotto del Cane, 184; Court of Vulcan, 185; Puteoli, &c., 187, 191; Lake Avernus and Cave, 188; Cuma, 190; Baiæ, 183, 190, 191; Misenus, 190; Elysian Fields, *ibid.*; Arsenal, and general observations on the City and the manners of the people, 192, 193; execution at, 218; etchings of views near, iii. 196; on the geology of, 468.
- Narbrough, Sir John, journal of, iii. 476 and n.
- Naseby, battle of, iv. 159 n; King Charles holds a Council of War before, 163 n.
- Nassau, Prince William of, and his son the Graf Maurice, monuments, &c., i. 18; iii. 409.
- Nassau-Dietz, William Frederick, Prince of, 1654, iv. 217, 223.
- Naudæus, Gaspar, *On Libraries*, translated by Mr. Evelyn, 1661, i. xlvii, cviii; ii. 138; iii. 189, Naudæus, Gaspar—*continued*.  
195, 465; noticed by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 139; iii. 446; iv. 16.
- Navigation and Commerce, their Original and Progress*, 1674, by Mr. Evelyn (part of his History of the Dutch War), i. cxv; ii. 301 and n, 302; iii. 196. *See* Dutch War.
- Navy, provided for by Act of Tonnage and Poundage, 1641, iv. 71 n, 79 and n; state of, 1648, 240; of Charles II. in exile, 1656, 274 n, 275 n, 276 n, 277 n, 284 n, 311.
- Neale, Sir P., optician, ii. 84.  
— Mr., lotteries set up by, iii. 111, 118; built the Seven Dials, &c., 118 n.
- Neapolitano, Carlo, painter, i. 122, 134.
- Needham, Dr. Jasper, ii. 88, 111; funeral and eulogy, 356; iii. 224.  
— Sir Robert, and Lady, ii. 94, 102, 162.
- Needlework, landscape of, ii. 119.
- Negroes, James II. resolved to have them christened, ii. 479; revolt of, in Barbadoes, 1692, 107.
- Negros, Hieronymo del, Palace at Genoa, i. 96, 97.
- Neile, Sir Paul, ii. 131.
- Neptune, Temple of, i. 187; rock of, 289.
- "Neptune," launching of the, ii. 404.
- Nero, Emperor of Rome, vestiges, &c., of, i. 159, 189, 190, 191, 194.
- Neuborg, Marquis de, enterprise against Ushant, 1653, iv. 278.
- Nevers, brief notice of, i. 294.
- Newburgh, Lord, ii. 439.
- Newcastle, William Cavendish, first Marquis of, iv. 340; sum-

Newcastle, William—*continued.*

moned by the Queen, 1641, 100 ; leaves England, 154 n ; tutor to Prince Charles, 165 n ; seat at Welbeck, ii. 66.

— Duke and Duchess of, Mr. Evelyn visits them at Clerkenwell, ii. 216–218 ; fanciful dress of the Duchess, 216 and n, 217 ; visits the Royal Society, 218 ; the Duke's book on Horsemanship, 216 n ; iii. 397 ; marriage of his daughter, 119 ; portrait of the Duke, 444 ; collection of letters and poems to the Duke and Duchess, 395 n ; panegyric letter of Mr. Evelyn, on the Duchess sending him her Works, 395.

New Hall (the great Duke of Buckingham's), ii. 86.

Newmarket, Charles II.'s house at, ii. 248 and n ; stables and heath, 249 ; court at, and races 1671, 266, 271 ; revelling, &c., at, 271 ; collection for rebuilding Newmarket after fire, 419.

Newport, King's farewell speech and Commissioners at, 1648, iv. 192 and n.

Newport, Andrew, ii. 359.

— Montjoy Blount, first Earl of, protests against an order in the Commons, 1641, iv. 85 n ; ii. 126 ; pictures in his possession, 440 ; Treasurer of the Household, 1685, 450 ; 1689, iii. 70 ; alluded to, ii. 466, 477.

— Viscountess, ii. 349.

*News from Brussels unmasked*, 1660, by Mr. Evelyn, i. xlii, cvii ; ii. 111 and n ; iii. 195.

Newstead Abbey, notice of, ii. 66.

Newton, Sir Adam, monument of, ii. 39.

— Sir Henry, allusions to, ii. 40, 79, 87 ; his house at Charlton, 48, 167.

— Mr., married Mr. Evelyn's grandmother, i. 5 ; her death, ii. 20.

Nice, in Savoy, notice of, i. 93.

— Daniel, his collection of coins, iii. 442.

Nicholai, of Rome, bass singer, i. 218.

Nicholao, excellence on the violin, ii. 304, 358.

Nicholao del Abati, painting by, i. 60.

Nicholas, Sir Edward, Secretary of State, letters to and from King Charles I., 1641–48, iv. 69–192 ; Charles I.'s testimony to his worth, 96 m ; desires to remove to the country, 78, 88 ; directions about Collar of Rubies, 86 m, 91, 99, 101, 106, 113, 117 ; urges the importance of Charles I.'s return from Scotland, 85, 94, 98, 102, 103, 104, 105, 110, 117, 120, 123, 124, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 134 ; advises the King about vacant Bishoprics, 89 and m, 96, 129 ; advises him of treacherous counsellors about his person, 94, 109, 111 ; advises him concerning his officers, and the trial of the Marquis of Montrose, 98 ; zeal in the King's service, 105, 106, 126 ; anxiety about the " Incident," 107, 109, 110, 112, 118, 125 ; his letters disclosed, 117 ; thanks the King for destroying his letters, 118, 140 ; advises him to require attendance of all Members in Parliament, 123 ; King



Nicholas, Sir Edward—*continued*.

Charles promises to protect him, 126 m; letters of Queen Henrietta to, 70, 100; ditto to direct Earl of Caernarvon to attend in Parliament, 128; ditto to forward dispatches, 131; desires the King to destroy or return his letters for his greater safety, 128, 130; advises him to defer signing the 13 Bishops' pardon, 135; his illness, 136, 137; advises the King to receive the gentry of Hertfordshire, 139, 143; knighted by King Charles I., 145 n; letters of Sir R. Browne to, 1642 and 1643, 329-335; his opinion in a Council of War held Dec., 1644, about sending to the Parliament, 156; King Charles I. thankful for his services, 1645, 157 n; directed to put Oxford upon short allowance, 159; letter by the King's command sent Sir Harry Vane the younger (Mar., 1646), for his interest, that he might come to London, 181; the King again acknowledges his services, and recommends him to the Prince, 1648, 191, 192; letter concerning Marsys' translation of the *Eikon Basilike*, 1649, 193-195; letter to King Charles II., 1649, on his counsellors, 195-197; Charles II.'s promise to, 197; letters of James, Duke of York to, for money, 203; of the same, on Charles II.'s esteem for Sir Edward, 204; of King Charles II. to, 1652, *ibid.*; of Mary, Princess Dowager of Orange, to, on Charles II.'s affairs, 1653, 205; of Charles II. to

Nicholas, Sir Edward—*continued*.

keep together his friends, *ibid.*; of Elizabeth, Queen of Bohemia, to, 1654-55, 205-227; De Larrey's character of, 196 n; referred to, ii. 7, 300; iv. 146 n, 155, 239, 261 n, 266 n, 277 n, 285 n, 314, 321, 324, 338; arrived at Aix-la-Chapelle, 208; handwriting of, 197 n; West Horseley purchased by, ii. 187.

— Mr. John, son of Secretary Nicholas, allusion to, i. 74, 85.

— Friar, of Paris, chemist. &c., ii. 21.

Nichols, John, his *Progresses of Queen Elizabeth* referred to, ii. 190 n; *Literary Anecdotes*, iv. 194 n.

— Colonel, ii. 263, 392.

— Mr. Anthony, Parliament sends him to Edinburgh, 1641, iv. 78; his charges, *ibid.* n.

Nicholson, Dr. William, Bishop of Gloucester, ii. 140.

Nicols, Mr., iv. 244 and n, 245.

Nicolson, Dr. William, Bishop of Carlisle, iii. 162; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, while publishing his *Historical Libraries*, iv. 23.

Nieuport, Dutch Ambassador, notices of, ii. 84; his account of the Dutch East India Company, 89; alluded to, 94, 104, 106; policy of his nation, 108.

Nineveh, remains, &c., of, ii. 299, 369.

Niobe and her family, statues of, i. 126.

Nismes, City of, &c., iii. 224.

"Noah's Ark," shop at Paris so called, i. 51.



- Nonesuch House, Surrey, account of, ii. 190 and n.
- Norden, John, accuracy of his map, ii. 400.
- Norfolk, Thomas Howard, fourth Duke of, letters of, iv. 26.
- Thomas Howard, fifth Duke of, restored to the title, ii. 139, 147; his death, 334.
- Henry Howard, sixth Duke of, copy of *Marmora Oxoniensia* presented to, by the University, ii. 319; married to his concubine, Mrs. Bickerton, 334 and n, 337 n; his house and pictures at Weybridge, ii. 337, 338; iii. 42; presents the Arundelian Library (except Heraldic books for the Heralds' College) to the Royal Society, i. lxi; ii. 340; collection of pictures, 404; his skill in horsemanship, 439; alluded to, 254, 339; iii. 40. See Howard.
- Henry Howard, seventh Duke of, bill for his divorce thrown out, 1692, iii. 101, 106; his kindness to the Evelyn family, 112; succeeds in obtaining his divorce, 1700, 150; his death, 158; alluded to, 137. See Howard.
- Duchess of (Mrs. Bickerton), ii. 334, 337 n; iii. 42.
- Palace of the Dukes of, 1671, ii. 269, 270.
- Normanby, Marquis of, conversations with, respecting death of Charles II., &c., iii. 118, 119.
- Normandy, excursion into, i. 64-68; tomb of Robert, Duke of, ii. 62 n.
- North, Lord, ii. 318, 321, 399.
- Sir Francis, ii. 279; Lord Chief Justice, 353 n; Lord North, Lord—*continued*.
- Keeper, 399; character of, &c., *ibid.*, 428; his death, 476.
- Sir Dudley, and his brother Roger, ii. 476.
- Dr. (son of Lord), sermon of, ii. 318, 321.
- North Foreland Lighthouse, Kent, ii. 280.
- Northampton, Earl of, 1658-60, ii. 105, 114; 1669, 239, 291; 1676, 321; Earl and Countess, 1688, iii. 51; his seat, *ibid.*
- Northampton, town of, ii. 312; iii. 51, 53.
- North West Passage, attempt to discover, ii. 321.
- Northumberland, Earl of, portrait of, iii. 444.
- Henry Percy, eighth Earl, suicide of, ii. 410 n.
- Algernon Percy, tenth Earl of, his pictures at Suffolk House, ii. 101; his house at Sion, 185; alluded to, 126; iii. 249; iv. 192 n, 306 n.
- Joceline, eleventh Earl of, his daughter's marriage to Mr. Thynne, ii. 386.
- Countess of (Lady Elizabeth Howard, wife of tenth Earl), ii. 121; marriage of her granddaughter, 386; her death, iii. 171.
- Countess of (widow of eleventh Earl), ii. 420 and n.
- George Fitz-Roy, Duke of (natural son of King Charles II.), ii. 322, 430; account of him, 435; his skill in horsemanship, 439; attempted to spirit away his wife, iii. 19.
- Norton, Colonel, ii. 481.
- Lady, infamous conduct of to Charles I., ii. 49.
- Norwich, brief account of, ii. 270.

- Norwich, George Goring, Earl of, Ambassador to France, i. 46 ; at the head of the rising in Kent, 1648, 297 ; tried before the rebels, ii. 2 ; his house in Epping Forest, 342, 403 ; alluded to, ii. 7, 31, 35.
- Norwood, Colonel, ii. 289.
- Notre Dame, Cathedral of, at Antwerp, i. 30 ; at Paris, 48 ; at Rouen, 65 ; at Marseilles, 92.
- Nottingham, town of, ii. 65.
- Nottingham, Earl of, refused to sit in Council with Papists, 1688, iii. 57 ; protests against the abdication of James II., 68 ; sells Kensington to King William, 83 ; quarrel with Admiral Russel, 106 ; resigns Secretary of State, 110 ; fire at his house at Burleigh, 171 ; alluded to, ii. 350 n ; iii. 60.
- November, Fifth of, forbidden to be kept, iii. 10.
- Nowel, Dr. Alexander, portrait of, iii. 444.
- Nulls, Sir John, iv. 91.
- Nuncio of the Pope at the French Court, 1649, ii. 9.
- Nutfield, Surrey, descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedig.*
- Nutmegs, jealousy of the Dutch respecting, iii. 404.
- Nuts found by swine, &c., i. 88.
- OAKHAM, tenure of the Barons Ferrers at, ii. 64.
- Oakwood Chapel, endowment and repair of, iii. 123 n, 162.
- Oates, Titus, conspiracy discovered by, ii. 343 ; character of, 344 ; accuses the Queen, and several Popish peers, 345 ; evidence against Sir George Wake-man, 351 ; reflections on his conduct, 378, 461 ; a witness against Lord Stafford, 376 ; Lord Stafford's remarks on his evidence, *ibid.* ; his knavery and impudence, 408 ; tried for perjury, 462 ; his punishment, 463, 466, 468 ; writ of error, in the judgment of, iii. 75 ; acquitted of perjury, 78 ; his reviling book against King James 129.
- Oatlands, mansion at, referred to, iv. 70 n, 78, 88, 92, 106, 111, 114, 120, 128, 135, 191 n ; Queen Henrietta resides at, 70, 77, 119 n.
- O'Beirne, Sullivan, Col., active in service of Charles II. in exile, 1653, iv. 282 and n, 283 ; 1654, 303, 304.
- Obeliscus Pamphilus, et Ægyptiacus, 1650-54, i. 256.
- Obelisk, of Octavius Cæsar, i. 139 ; of Constantine, 147 ; in Circus Caracalla, 197 ; brought from Egypt by Augustus, 133, 203.
- Obligations and tests, dispensed with, 1687, iii. 36.
- Oblivion, Act of, proceedings upon the, 1641, iv. 75.
- O'Brian, Mortagh, iv. 304.
- O'Brien, Lord, ii. 301, 333 ; his widow, 301 and n.
- Octavius Cæsar, obelisk of, i. 139, 140.
- Odart, Mr., Latin Secretary, ii. 199.
- Æconomis*, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 194.
- Oesters House, at Antwerp, i. 32.
- Offices and Meditations*, by Mr. Evelyn, i. cxxii ; iii. 194.
- Offley, Mr. Thomas, Groom-porter, i. 298 ; ii. 47, 102, 204.



- Offley, Dr., Rector of Abinger, ii. 204 ; sermon of, iii. 123 ; his gift to Oakwood Chapel, *ibid.* n. — family, iii. 146.
- Ogilby, John, his account of the Progress of Charles II., 1661, ii. 127 n.
- Ogle, Thomas, of Pinchbeck, his daughter Anne, ii. 313 and n. — Lady, widow of Lord, remarriage to Mr. Thynne, ii. 386, 388, 392.
- Oglethorpe, Mr., duel fought by, iii. 164.
- Ogniati, Count, ii. 248.
- Old Bailey, man pressed to death at the, ii. 44.
- Old Jewry, Sir Robert Clayton's house in the, ii. 286 n.
- Oldenburg, Anne, Countess of, letters of, iv. 26. — Henry, Secretary to Royal Society, confined in the Tower, ii. 222 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, 208 n ; alluded to, 318 ; iii. 191 and n, 360.
- Oleine, Count, his palace at Vincenza, i. 265.
- Oliva, Padre, General of the Jesuits, ii. 352 and n.
- Oliver, Peter, miniatures of, i. 297 ; ii. 77, 119, 131.
- Olivetani, Padri, church of, i. 252.
- Olonne, Count d', ii. 27.
- O'Neale, Captain Daniel, iv. 120. n, 271 n ; his danger from Parliament, 93 and n ; arrested, 95 and n ; committed to the Gatehouse, 109 ; Parliament examines, 109 n, 139, 141. — Mr. built Belsize House, ii. 320.
- Onion, Spanish, iii. 360.
- Onocratylus, or Pelican, account of, ii. 177.
- Onslow, Arthur, his seat at West Clandon, ii. 91 n, 252 ; iii. 222 n. — Denzil, his house at Purford, ii. 383. — Sir Richard, iii. 95, 137, 141 ; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n ; contested elections for Surrey, 160, 171 n ; duel with Mr. Oglethorpe, 164. — Earl of, ii. 91 n, 387 n.
- Onufrio, Cardinal, of Rome, i. 200.
- Opdam, Admiral, iv. 213.
- Opera, at Venice, 1645, i. 245 ; at Milan, 275 ; at the Court in Paris, ii. 23 ; in England, 106, 299.
- Optics, letter on, iii. 360.
- Orange, town and principality of, i. 89.
- Orange, Henry Frederick, Prince of, ii. 329. — Prince of, 1641, his protection of the Queen Mother, iv. 85 ; referred to, 198, 199, 202 n, 203, 228 n, 229 ; his death, 1650, ii. 20. — William, Prince of, ii. 253, 332, 333 ; iv. 223 ; marries Princess Mary, 332 ; accusation of Deputies of Amsterdam, 428 ; forces sent by, to James II., 1685, 473. *See* William III. — Princess of, sister of Charles II., i. 26 ; ii. 118, 121, 146 ; her death, 121. — Mary, Princess Dowager of, letter to Sir E. Nicholas on Charles's affairs, 1653, iv. 205 ; letter of the States to, on a report of King Charles II. being at Tilling, 1655, 227 ; references to, 209, 216 n, 223, 225, 227.



- Oranges raised in England, ii. 347, 355; iii. 154 and n.
- Ordination of Ministers in France, 1650, ii. 14.
- Organs, notices of various, i. 23, 112, 171, 205, 270; ii. 57, 156.
- Orias, Prince d', palace and garden of, i. 97.
- Orleans, Mons., iv. 318.
- Orleans, account of, i. 74, 294.
- Orleans, Duke of (prisoner temp. Hen, V.), ii. 43 and n, 301.
- Duke of, 1651, ii. 28; iv. 253, 337, 340, 341; governed by De Retz, 1654, 321 n.
- Gaston Jean Baptiste, Duke of, his palace, &c., i. 69, 70; iii. 30.
- Henrietta, Duchess of, iv. 208, 253 n.
- Ormond, James Butler, Marquess, afterwards Duke of, his estates restored, ii. 116; remarks of, on the natural history of Ireland, 138; Chancellor of Oxford, and created Doctor, 240; anecdote respecting, 308; lays down his commission, iii. 142; restored, *ibid.*; conduct in the attempt to pervert the religion of the Duke of Gloucester, iv. 218, 219 n; alluded to, ii. 11, 20, 102, 115, 130, 140, 142, 145, 147, 167, 168, 172, 179, 231, 289, 310, 366; iv. 324 n, 340, 341, 342.
- Duchess of, ii. 324.
- Orrery, Richard Broghill, Earl of, plays by, ii. 180, 210 and n.
- Osborn, Sir Thomas (afterwards Earl of Danby, Marquess Carmarthen, and Duke of Leeds), Lord Treasurer, ii. 292; strictures on, 295; remarks on his administration, 388; his imprisonment, 424; released, 428;
- Osborn, Sir Thomas—*continued.*  
alluded to, ii. 19, 334; iii. 82 and n.
- Osiris, inscriptions concerning, i. 116; remarkable statue of, 125.
- Ossory, Thomas Butler (Earl of), Lord, his and his brother Richard's horsemanship, ii. 11; adventure of, 12, 13; averse to the attack on the Smyrna fleet, 274, 367; a Younger Brother of the Trinity House, ii. 289; Master, 309; goes to command forces in Holland, 336; deeply affected at being appointed to the impracticable expedition to Tangier, 366; his sickness and death, 367; character of him, *ibid.*; Mr. Evelyn's letter of consolation to the Countess, iii. 399; alluded to, ii. 25, 115, 319, 332, 358, 360; his daughter, 322.
- James Butler, Earl of (son of the great Earl), ii. 396; his marriage, 399; iii. 7; his mansion destroyed, 91.
- Ostend, notice of, i. 37.
- Otter-hunting, ii. 140.
- Ottoboni, Cardinal Pietro, elected Pope (Alexander VIII.), iii. 80 and n.
- Oudart, Mr., confidence of the Kings Charles I. and II. in, ii. 167; iv. 191 and n, 199.
- Oughtred, Rev. William, mathematician, ii. 48; iii. 205 n; conversation with Mr. Evelyn, ii. 78; iii. 205.
- Ouseley, Sir Gore, i. 106 n.
- Sir Charles, ii. 81.
- Outram, Dr., Vicar of St. Margaret's, ii. 359.
- Ovens of portable iron, ii. 198.
- Ovid, *Metamorphoses* of, in mezzo-relievo, i. 216.

Owen, Sir John, ii. 5.

Owen, Dr. Richard, a sequestered minister, and friend of Mr. Evelyn, notices and sermons of, ii. 2, 3, 37, 45, 46, 49, 50, 74, 102, 167.

— Dr. John, the famous Independent, ii. 54.

— Dr. John, Bishop of St. Asaph, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.

— Dr. Morgan, Bishop of Llandaff, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.

Ox, remarkable one, ii. 4.

Oxford, Aubrey de Vere, Earl of, his mistress, ii. 141, 211; alluded to, 157, 161, 251.

Oxford, Parliament resolved to besiege, 1645, iv. 157 n; King Charles I. designs to relieve, 159, 161 n; directs the removing of all the disaffected, 176; design of breaking through rebel troops to, 179; his escape from, 183 n; his directions for the surrender of, 184 and n, 185; visit of Mr. Evelyn to, 1654, ii. 54; the Act, 54; Bodleian Library, 55; Anatomical School, St. John's, 56; Christ Church, Magdalen, Physic-garden, 57; visit to, in 1664, 170; the Theatre, All Souls, Magdalen, 170; Ashmolean Museum given to, ii. 94 and n, 102, 336 and n; Court and Parliament held at, 1665, 189; gift from, to sick and wounded sailors, 197; the Arundelian Marbles procured for, by Mr. Evelyn, 225, 240; Mr. Evelyn thanked by the University, 226; Decree of Convocation, formally returning him thanks, and letter of Dr. Walker, 226.

Oxford—*continued.*

thanks to Mr. Howard, afterwards Duke of Norfolk, 227. (See Arundel, Howard.) Encænna at, 1669, on the completion of the Theatre, 237–239; Terræ filius, 238; the Act, 237, 239, 240; Doctor's degree conferred on Duke of Ormond, Earl of Chesterfield, Mr. Spencer, and Mr. Evelyn, 240; visit of Mr. Evelyn to, 1675, 311; Dr. Plot's curiosities, *ibid.*; Parliament at, 1681, 381; reception of William III. at, 1695, 124.

PACKER, Mr., his seat and chapel at Groomsbridge, ii. 43, 190, 301, 421; his daughter's fine voice, 441.

Paddy, Sir William, portrait of, ii. 152.

Padua, description of, i. 246–248, 252, 253, 258, 259, 260, 263; inscription over a gate, 247; tomb at St. Lorenzo, *ibid.*; St. Antony's Church, 248; Convent of St. Justina, *ibid.*; Great Hall, 252; Monte Pieta, schools, 253; Garden of simples, 254; nocturnal disorders at, 258; Anatomical Lectures, hospitals, 260, 261.

Pageant, at the Lord Mayor's show, 1660, ii. 118; on the Thames, 1662, 150 and n. See London.

Paget, Lord, Ambassador, iii. 105.

Paine, Captain, ii. 35.

Painters and Sculptors, in Rome, i. 218; in Florence, 227; custom of adding their own names to portraits, and not those of the persons represented, blamed, iii. 436–439; avarice of English painters, iv. 25.



- Painters' Hall, ii. 173, 197.  
*Painter's Voyage of Italy*, 1679, cited, i. 162 n, 272 n, 275 n.  
 Painting, old Roman described, i. 156.  
*Painting, Perfection of*, 1668, by Mr. Evelyn, i. lxiv, cxiv; ii. 231 and n; iii. 189, 196, 465.  
 Painting on the face, first used by females, ii. 52.  
 Palace of the Pope at Monte Cavallo, i. 128, 129, 158.  
 Palais Cardinal at Paris, account of, i. 73; royal masque at, ii. 23.  
 Palais (Exchange), at Paris, notice of, i. 50.  
 Palais Royale, Paris, i. 52.  
 Palais, Isle du, Paris, i. 51.  
 Palazzo, Barberini, at Rome, i. 124; Medici, at Rome, 125; Maggiore, at Rome, 151; Ghisi, at Rome, 158; Caraffa, at Naples, 180; Vecchio, at Florence, 106-108; della Cancelleria, at Rome, 199.  
 Palladio, Andrea, works of, i. 248, 252, 264-266.  
 Pallavicini, Cardinal Sforza, works of, iii. 257.  
 Palma, Jacopo, paintings by, i. 61; ii. 2.  
 Palmer, Sir James, ii. 2.  
 — Jeffrey, portrait of, iii. 444; alluded to, iv. 147 n.  
 — Dudley, of Gray's Inn, curious clocks, &c., in his possession, ii. 133; member of Royal Society, iii. 191 and n.  
 Pamphili, Giovanni, Batista elected Pope (Innocent X.), i. 112, 113; palaces of his family, 200.  
 Pamphilio, Cardinal, i. 138, 211.  
 Panama, expedition of Colonel Morgan to, ii. 264.  
 Pancirollus, Guido, account of a Roman corpse, i. 174.  
*Panegyric*, poetical, on King Charles II.'s Coronation, 1661, by Mr. Evelyn, i. xliv, cviii; ii. 130; iii. 189, 195.  
 Panmure, George Maule, second Earl of, remark on Charles I. being delivered up by the Scots iv. 190 n.  
 Pantheon at Rome, i. 201.  
 Paolo Veronese. *See* Cagliari.  
 Paper, from China, ii. 165; process of manufacturing, 338.  
 Paper Office, ravages committed in, iv. 25.  
 Papillion, Mr., ii. 84.  
 Papillon, Mr., ii. 407.  
 Papin, Denys, account of his Digestors, ii. 393.  
 Papists, conspiracy of, 1696, banished ten miles from London, iii. 126, 127; law to dispossess of estates after 18 years of age, 1700, 151; laws against enforced, iv. 138, 234 and n. *See* Roman Catholics.  
 Papplewick, view from, ii. 66.  
 Paradise, banqueting house so called, ii. 147; an exhibition of animals, 298.  
 Paris, description of, 1643, 1644, i. 45-64, 68-74; 1646-47, 295; 1649, ii. 7-16; 1650, 19-35; Parliament of, proceedings of, July, 1648, iv. 337, 339, 340, 342; Pont Neuf, i. 46; Cathedral of Notre Dame, 48; Jesuits' Church and College, 49; the Sorbonne, 49; the Exchange and Palais, 50; St. Chapelle and Isle du Palais, 51; Marais du Temple, St. Genevieve, Palais Royale, 52; Hôtel de la Charité, &c., 52; ii. 12; Jardin Royale, i. 52; Bois de Vincennes, 53; the Louvre, *ibid.*; the Palace



Paris—*continued*.

of the Tuileries, *ibid.* ; its gardens, 54 ; St. Germain en Lay, 55, 58 ; Count de Liancourt's palace and pictures, 59-61 ; Fontainebleau, 62-64 ; palace of Luxembourg, 68 ; gardens, 69 ; view of, from St. Jacques' steeple, 71 ; St. Innocents' Churchyard, *ibid.* ; Mons. Morine's garden, 72 ; Palais Cardinal, 73 ; muster of the gens d'armes of, *ibid.* ; President Maison's Palace, ii. 8 ; audience of the English Ambassador, 1649, 9 ; St. Stephen's Church, 10 ; Masquerades at, 11 ; Madrid, i. 59 ; ii. 11 ; ordination of English Divines at, 1650, 14 ; Samaritan or Pump at Pont Neuf, 15 ; Convent of Bonnes Hommes, 20 ; Friar Nicholas, 21 ; Torture at the Châtelet, *ibid.* ; Opera at the Palais Cardinal, 23 ; ceremonies on Corpus Christi day, 24 ; procession of Louis XIV. to Parliament, 26-28 ; audience of English Ambassador, King's gardens, 28, 29 ; Mark Antonio the enameller, 33 ; besieged in 1649 and 1652 by Prince of Condé, 3, 40 ; rejoicings in, on the reported death of William III., 1690, iii. 90.

— Archbishop of, house at St. Cloes, i. 55.

Park, at Brussels, i. 34 ; at Pisa, 103 ; at Hampton Court, ii. 146.

Park, John James, his *History of Hampstead* referred to, ii. 166 n.

Parker, Dr. Samuel, Bishop of Oxford, iii. 25 ; his death and character, 43.

— Matthew, Archbishop of Canterbury, iv. 26.

Parker, William, works of, iii. 254.

Parkhurst, Sir Robert, ii. 384.

— Dr., Master of Balliol College, Oxford, i. 9.

Parliament, opening and dissolution of, 1640, i. 10, 11 ; proceedings of, 1641, iv. 69 n, 71 and n, 72 n, 73, 74, 75 n, 85, 86 ; respecting the garrison of the Tower, 71 ; orders Recusants to be disarmed, &c., 71, 78, 122, 132, 138, 234 n ; refuses Irish regiments to Spain, 72 n, 74 n, 84 ; sequesters Dr. Roger Manwaring, 72 n ; sequesters pay of Col. Wilmot, &c., 75 ; House of Peers orders ballad against Queen Mother to be burnt, *ibid.* ; takes exception at the King's pardon, 76, 77 ; adjournment of, 77, 78, 80, 83, 85, 104, 105 ; proceedings on King Charles's answer to the Parliamentary Commission, 78 and n ; on the Act of Tonnage and Poundage, 71 n, 79 and n, 81, 82, 91, 104 ; on forfeiture of Londonderry, 79 and n, 102 ; House of Peers orders Sir J. Pennington to delay going to Ireland, 81 ; Committees of both Houses meet, 82, 83 ; order garrisons of Carlisle and Berwick to be paid, 83 ; directions to Lord Admiral, *ibid.* ; declaration of, against superstitious rites, &c., *ibid.* ; proceedings of the Committees, 83, 84 ; difference between both Houses respecting the Church, &c., 85 and n ; order concerning the Crown jewels in 1646, 86 n ; inquiry of into the Royal revenue, 91 ; unpopularity of, 92 ; proceedings at a conference of the

Parliament—*continued*.

Committees of, 99; idea of adjourning or removing from London on account of the plague, 104, 105; proceedings of, on news of the "Incident," 107, 112; meets, 108 n; orders of, concerning Berwick, 109 and n; proceedings against Sir J. Berkeley, &c., 109; corresponds with the Commissioners in Scotland, 110; proceedings concerning Bishops' votes, 110, 112 and n, 116; endeavours to keep alive the popular apprehension, 113; House of Peers makes order about jurisdiction of Archbishop of Canterbury, 113; examines Judge Berkeley, 114; chooses Speaker, 113, 131; debate in the Commons about Counsellors, &c., 97, 105, 115, 127, 132; holds a conference about the Prince's education, 119 and n, dislikes the creation of new Bishops, 114 and n, 116, 120; members of, commanded to attend, 114, 123, 130, 132, 137; proceedings of, on the Irish Rebellion, 120, 122, 124, 125, 127; treats with the City of London about payment of soldiers in Ireland, 121; considers of dissolving Capuchin convent, &c., 90, 123; sends troops, &c., against the Irish, 125; King Charles sends letters on Irish Rebellion to the Committee, *ibid.*; considers of Instructions to English Commissioners at Edinburgh, 127, 129, 133; proceedings upon the Remonstrance on state of the Kingdom, 130, 134, 137, 141, 144; orders Lord Lieutenant of

Parliament—*continued*.

Ireland to raise Volunteers, 132; proceedings respecting Irish Rebellion, 134, 137, 139; plot against, 138, 141; affronts the Venetian Ambassador, and agent of Duke of Florence, 139; proceedings about the impeached Bishops, 135 and n, 140; intercepts letters of Mr. Crofts and Duchess of Chevereux, 142; examines Colonel Goring, 142; march of the army under Sir William Waller, 148; agrees to a safe conduct for the Duke of Richmond and Earl of Southampton to Oxford, 155; persons sitting at Westminster not fit to be considered a Parliament, 156; besieges Oxford, 1645, 157 n, 161 n; Fairfax defeats Goring at Suttonfield, and takes Bridgewater, 165; the King's contempt for the, 167; successes of their armies, 1646, 187-189; 1648, sat up the whole night to conclude the Isle of Wight treaty, but were surprised by the Rebel army, i. 298; Marshal Melleray seizes English ships, 1652, iv. 265, 267; besieges Innisboffin, 1653, 273, 274 and n; captures it, 276; Cromwell dissolves the Long Parliament, 210 n, 281 and n; summoned by Oliver Cromwell in 1656, ii. 87; opened by King Charles II., 1661, 131; fast held by the, 142; prorogation of by Charles II. in person, 1665, 179; subsidy granted by, to the King, 1671, 260; Roman Catholic Lords excluded, 1678, 346; elections, 1685, influenced by the Court, 451,



- Parliament—*continued*.  
 460, 465 ; speech of King James II. to, on his accession, 464, 465 ; proceedings of, 1685, iii. 10 ; steadfastness of members on behalf of the Protestant faith, prorogued, 1687, 33, 35 ; debate in house of Lords respecting Regency, 66 ; precipitate conduct of the Commons, 1689, 71 ; prorogued and dissolved, 1690, 81 ; proceedings on discovery of conspiracy against William III., 1695, 126 ; Parliament, 1705, 172 ; Mr. Evelyn's sentiments on Parliamentary Reform, iv. 6.  
*Parliamentary Debates* referred to, iv. 106 n.  
*Parliamentary History* referred to, iv. 83 n, 91 n, 94 n, 107 n, 110 n, 116 n, 133 n.  
 Parma, Duke of, triumphal arch of the, i. 154 ; his collection, 170 ; his palace Caprarola, 219.  
 Parmensis, Battista, i. 61 ; drawings of, 267.  
 Parquion, letters of, iv. 26.  
 Parr, Dr. Richard, of Camberwell, funeral sermon on Dr. Breton, ii. 273 ; iv. 62 and n ; alluded to, ii. 385 ; visit of Mr. Evelyn to, iii. 20.  
 Parson's Green, Lord Mordaunt's house at, ii. 123 and n, 364.  
 Parsons, Mr. —, iv. 181.  
 Pasquin, remains of the statue of, i. 200.  
 Passignano, Domenico Cresti, painting by, i. 61.  
 Passion, remarkable instance of, i. 96.  
 Passports, i. 28, 29, 262, 279 ; ii. 17.  
 Paston, Sir Robert (Earl of Yar-mouth), ii. 83, 88, 184.  
 Patriarchs, Eastern, subscriptions to our Confessions, ii. 153.  
 Patrick, Dr. Simon, Dean of Peterborough, iii. 11 ; Bishop of Ely, 93 ; sermons of, ii. 233, 242, 243 ; iii. 27.  
 — Rev. Father, letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the Eucharist of the English Church, iii. 381.  
 Paul, St., his burial place, i. 144 ; reliques of, 161, 168 ; port of, 196 ; effigy of, 201.  
 Paul III., Pope, statue of, i. 145 ; shrine of, 203.  
 Paul V., Pope, chapel of, i. 132 ; fountain of, 173.  
 Paul, Chevalier, ii. 27.  
 Paule, Mr., agent of the Elector Palatine in France, ii. 10.  
 Paullo, Jul., bust of, i. 253.  
 Pausilippo, &c., near Naples, i. 183.  
 Pawell, Mons., iv. 145, 252.  
 Pawlett, John, Marquis of Winchester, summoned by the Queen, 1641, iv. 100.  
 Peace with Holland, &c., proclaimed, ii. 223.  
 Peake, Sir John, Lord Mayor, 1687, iii. 41 n.  
 Pearl, notices of large ones, i. 106 and n, 202 and n.  
 Pearson, Dr. John, Bishop of Chester, his *Biblia Polyglotta*, ii. 46 ; alluded to, 76, 132, 289, 299, 309 n.  
 Peat, or Turf, use of, proposed, 1667, ii. 220.  
 Peckham, Sir Henry, feast at the Temple, ii. 241.  
 Peckham, Sir T. Bond's house at, ii. 320, 385.  
 Peiresk, Nicholas Claude Fabricius, Lord of, *Life of*, &c., i. xxxviii ; iii. 226 and n.  
 Pelican, account of one, ii. 177.



- Pellisson, his *History of the French Academy*, ii. 218 n.
- Pemberton, Lord Chief Justice, ii. 353 n, 419.
- Pembroke, Philip Herbert, Earl of, made Governor of the Isle of Wight, iv. 123 n; father of the Countess of Caernarvon, 129 n; a Commissioner at Newport, 1648, 192 n; seat near Aldermaston, ii. 53; seat at Wilton, 59; fire at, iii. 171; 1696, Lord Privy Seal, 131; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n; alluded to, ii. 56, 178; iii. 37.
- Penitents, procession of, on Good Friday, i. 209.
- Penn, Sir William, impeached, ii. 229; blasphemous book by his son, 235.
- Admiral William, ii. 75; iv. 274 n.
- Pennant, Thomas, his *Journey to the Isle of Wight* cited, iv. 142 n.
- Pennington, Sir John, iv. 252 n; House of Peers stops his voyage to Ireland, 81 and n.
- Isaac, iv. 81 n.
- Penshurst, brief notice of, ii. 43.
- Pentangle, note by Sir George Birdwood, K.C.I.E. on the history of the Symbol, i. cxxiv.
- Pepper, Guinea, iii. 359; Jamaica, 405.
- Pepys, Samuel, Secretary to the Admiralty, cut for the stone, ii. 237; Clerk of the Acts, 257; twice Master of the Trinity House, 319, 474; committed to the Tower, 348; accused of being a Papist, and of treachery, 1684, 348 n; possessed Deane's *Art of Shipbuilding*, 391; accompanies the King to Portsmouth, 1685, 476; impostures of the Saluadores confessed to, 477 n; his account of his conversation with James II. respecting Charles II. being a Catholic, &c., iii. 1, 4, 423; portrait of Mr. Evelyn painted for, 78, 436; his remonstrance against suspicions entertained of him, 87; sent to the Gatehouse, 88; enlarged, 89; his house at Clapham, 154, 165; his death, account and character of him, 165, 166; his library, 166 and n, 448 and n; allusions to him, ii. 257, 303, 321, 347, 392; iii. 11, 64, 83, 91, 95, 139; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, ii. 234 n; iii. 329, 331, 332-339, 406, 414, 435, 458; letters of Pepys to Mr. Evelyn, iii. 1, 422, 457; on his escape from shipwreck, 400; his *Diary and Memoirs* referred to, ii. 184 n. See Evelyn.
- Percy, Henry, Lord, Lord Chamberlain to Charles II. in exile, iv. 300, 301 and n.
- Henry (brother to Earl of Northumberland), proceedings in Parliament concerning, 1641, iv. 71 n, 75, 76 n, 78, 120 and n.
- Lord, ii. 371; iii. 249, 252.
- Lady Elizabeth, iii. 171 n.
- Perelle, engraver, ii. 12.
- Perfect Passages*, 1652, a journal cited, iv. 250 n, 264 n, 265 n.
- Perfumes, &c., Montpellier famous for, iii. 225.
- Perfuming rooms, singular method of, in Germany, ii. 80.
- Perigeux, City of, account of, i. 92.
- Perishot, Mons., collection of, i. 61.

- Perkins, Sir William, executed, iii. 128 ; absolved at Tyburn, 129.
- Pernée, notice of, ii. 34.
- Perpetual motion, ii. 231.
- Perrier, Francis, errors in his book of *Antique Statues*, ii. 15.
- Persepolis, ruins of, ii. 368.
- Persian habit, i. 231 ; adopted at Court, 1666, i. lx ; ii. 210, 211.
- Perspectives, remarks on, by Honorati Fabri, iii. 361.
- Perugino, Pietro, paintings by, i. 107, 122, 205, 220.
- Peruzzi, Baldassare (called Baldassare da Sienna), i. 159.
- Peter, St., his burial-place, i. 144, 168 ; reliques of, 144, 161.
- Peter the Great occupied Mr. Evelyn's house while in England, i. lxxvii-lxxix and notes ; iii. 138, 139 and n.
- Peterborough, notice of, ii. 70.
- Henry Mordaunt, Earl of, ii. 123 n, 139, 450 ; sale of lands to pay debts, 1676, 324, 325 ; marriage of his daughter, 325.
- Countess of, house at Rygate, ii. 77 ; alluded to, 90, 100, 139.
- Peterhouse, Cambridge, ii. 72.
- Peters, Hugh, incites the Rebels to murder King Charles I., ii. 1 ; iv. 298 ; executed, ii. 118.
- Petit, Mons., of Rome, i. 117.
- Old, paintings of, ii. 2.
- Petitot, John, enamel by, ii. 119.
- Petra Glossa*, found at Sheerness, ii. 230.
- Petrarch, Francisco, MS. of, i. 165.
- Petre, Lord, committed for Popish plot, ii. 348.
- Petrifications, i. 257.
- Petrified Human Body, i. 128, 213.
- Petrifying spring, i. 81.
- Pett, Commissioner, his skill in shipbuilding, ii. 160 ; built the first frigate, iii. 83 ; epitaph at Deptford, ii. 160 n.
- Petty, Sir William, improvements of shipping, ii. 138 ; ship with two keels, 163, 174, 307 ; account and character of him, 305-309 ; alluded to, 186, 306, 318, 399.
- Peyton, Sir Thomas, ii. 17.
- Phidias and Praxiteles, horses of, i. 128.
- Philip IV., King of Spain, rumour of his death, iv. 260.
- Phillips, Father, iv. 92 n, 207 n ; committed by Parliament for refusing to be sworn on English Bible, 122 and n ; Queen Henrietta intercedes for him, 127 n.
- Edward, preceptor of Mr. Evelyn's son, &c., ii. 162, 178 ; preferred by his recommendation, 433 ; *Lives of John and Edward*, by Mr. Godwin, 162 n.
- Mrs. Catherine, her tragedy of *Horace*, ii. 229, 235 ; iii. 438.
- Philosophic Society. *See* Gresham College, Royal Society.
- Philosophers' Elixir, projection of, iii. 170 and n.
- Philosophy, discoveries in, by Mr. Boyle, iii. 481, 482.
- Phipps, Sir Wm., Governor of New England, iii. 106 n.
- Phlægrean Fields, i. 185.
- Phosphorus, various kinds of, i. 231.
- Physicians, College of, ii. 152, 403 and n.
- Piacentino, Giulio, painting by, i. 199.



- Piazza, Navona, i. 200, 217 ; of St. Mark, at Venice, 238 ; of St. Anthony, at Padua, 248 ; at Brescia, 269 ; at Milan, 270 ; at Leghorn, 103 ; Piazza Judea at Rome, 161.
- Picardy, the regiment of, 1650, ii. 19.
- Pichini, Signor, his collection, i. 119.
- Pictures, numerous at Rotterdam Fair, i. 18 ; auction of, at the Banqueting-house, iii. 109 ; Pictures, paintings, and drawings, notices of various, i. 4, 13, 15, 18, 19, 26, 30, 34, 37, 39, 45, 54, 56, 57, 58, 60, 61, 62, 64, 68, 72, 73, 97, 104, 106, 107, 109, 118, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126-128, 130, 132, 146, 147, 150, 156, 158, 162-165, 170, 194, 198, 200, 203, 205, 207, 214, 220, 223, 224, 226, 231, 232, 240, 241, 242, 249, 251, 252, 253, 254, 265, 267, 271, 272, 273, 275, 292, 297 ; ii. 2, 4, 7, 10, 14, 15, 38, 51, 59, 71, 77, 81, 82, 86, 101, 105, 119, 131, 133, 139, 146, 152, 165, 166, 169, 170, 173, 174 n, 189, 214 n, 242, 286, 293, 298, 323, 337, 339, 347, 368, 371, 404, 405, 420, 421, 432 ; iii. 5, 78, 117, 129, 131, 436, 437, 438, 439, 443, 444, 447.
- Pierce, Edward, paintings by, ii. 59.
- Dr., President of Magdalen College, Oxford, ii. 88, 160 n ; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, respecting Cressy's reply to his sermon, &c., 160 ; iii. 287, 291 ; sermons at Whitehall, ii. 335, 348.
- Pierpoint, Mr. Evelyn, iii. 38.
- Pierpoint, a Commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.
- Pierrepoint, Hon. William, his wife, Lady Pierrepoint, daughter of Sir John Evelyn, ii. 6 ; iii. 38 ; her death, 141.
- Pierrepoint, Mrs., married to Mr. Cheny, iii. 83, 103.
- Mr., house at Nottingham, ii. 65 ; near Pontefract, 66.
- Piers, Dr. William, Bishop of Bath and Wells, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.
- Pietra Comessa (inlaid marble), i. 107, 112, 138, 144, 145, 158, 169, 215, 223, 225, 248 ; artists in, at Florence, 227.
- Pietra Mala, a burning mountain, i. 229.
- Pietro, Signor, musician, ii. 372, 453, 457.
- Pilgrims, lodging of, in Rome, i. 198.
- Pine, Queen, from Barbadoes, ii. 133 ; King Pine, 231.
- Pintado, room hung with, ii. 189.
- Piquedello (Piccadilly), paving of, 1662, ii. 148.
- Pirates about Scilly and Jersey, 1650, iv. 240.
- Pisa, City of, account of, i. 101-103, 222.
- Pisano, Pietro, paintings by, i. 149.
- Piscina Mirabile, account of the i. 191.
- Pismire, memory of, iii. 231.
- Pistoja, notice of, i. 222.
- Piten, a Jesuit, iii. 60.
- Pitti, Palace of, at Florence, i. 105.
- Place, Mr., bookseller, letter of Mr. Evelyn to, iv. 8.



- Plaet, dangerous passage of the, i. 28.
- Plague, in London, &c., ravages of, 1625, 1636, i. 4, 8; 1641, iv. 103, 105; 1665, ii. 185, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 198, 199, 208; iii. 317; facts in consequence of, ii. 186.
- Plantations, Foreign Council for, appointed, 1671, ii. 257, 259, 261; proceedings of, &c., 260, 262, 263, 264, 265, 271, 272, 273, 274, 278, 284, 288, 293, 298; constituted a Council of Trade also, 284, 287, 303, 304.
- Plantine, Christopher, shop of, i. 32.
- Plants, &c., Spanish, iii. 358-360.
- Plaster used for floors, i. 97 and n.
- Platts, Sir Hugh, Treatise of Metals, iv. 13.
- Plays, and Theatres, various notices of, at Rome, i. 207, 211; at Venice, 245; in Milan, 270; in Paris, ii. 23; in England, i. 297; ii. 106, 122, 138, 141, 143, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 163, 164, 180, 210, 215, 223, 229, 230, 233, 235, 257, 272 and n, 292, 299.
- Plessis, Du, house of the French King, i. 81.
- Mons. Du, Riding-school of, i. 73.
- Pliny, references to, i. 101, 115, 126, 128, 151, 167, 182, 202 n; death of, 182; statue of, 267.
- Plot, Dr. Robert, his natural curiosities, ii. 311; intended to write the *History of Staffordshire*, as he had done of *Oxfordshire*, *ibid.*; Secretary of Royal Society, 387; applied to Mr. Evelyn for an account of
- Plot, Dr. Robert—*continued.*  
himself for Wood's *Athen. Oxon.*, iii. 466; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, 189, 473; letter of, in answer, 473; *History of Oxfordshire*, cited, ii. 169 n.
- Plots, notices and references to various, iv. 107, 113, 120 and n, 138, 141.
- Plume, Mr., sermon of, ii. 209.
- Pluto, Temple of, i. 189.
- Plymouth, Breakwater at, i. 99 n.
- Charles Fitz-Charles, Earl of, ii. 355.
- Po, River, notice of the, i. 234.
- Poggio Imperiale at Florence, i. 223.
- Poignant, Mons., of Paris, his collection, ii. 25.
- Poland, incursion of the Swedes into, alluded to, ii. 79; state of, 1654, iv. 221, 222, 224 n, 307.
- King of, Embassy to Charles II., 1660, ii. 116; raises the siege of Vienna, 418.
- Polemborg, Cornelius, paintings of, i. 60.
- Political Discourses, &c.*, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 194.
- Pollaivola, Antonio, sculpture by, i. 141.
- Pollard, Sir Hugh, ii. 154; iv. 165 n; death of, ii. 213, 294.
- Poll Tax, ii. 118; iii. 77.
- Polydore, paintings by, ii. 44, 153.
- Polythore, a musical instrument, ii. 133.
- Pomegranate, a hardy tree, iii. 359.
- Pomfret, Mr., his *Life of the Countess of Devonshire*, ii. 148 n.
- Pons Milvius, i. 208.
- Pont Neuf at Paris, i. 46; ii. 15, 16.

- Pont St. Anne, Paris, i. 47.  
 Pont St. Esprit at Valence, i. 89.  
 Pontanus, Joh. Jov., chapel of, i. 179.  
 Pontaq, Mons., account of, ii. 412.  
 Ponte, Francisco da (the elder Bassano), paintings by, i. 60, 127, 194; ii. 347.  
 — Giacomo da (Il Bassano), paintings by, i. 194, 242; iii. 109, 129.  
 Pontefract Castle, siege of, 1648, iv. 346; notice of, ii. 66.  
 Ponte Sisto, sermon at, i. 160.  
 Pontius Pilate, Palace of, i. 88.  
 Pontoise, in Normandy, i. 64.  
 Pontorno, or Pontorno, paintings of, i. 107, 226.  
 Pope, Palaces of, Monte Cavallo, i. 129, 158; Vatican, 149, 162; Chapel in the Vatican, 163; Armoury of, 166; procession of the Pope to St. John de Lateran, 124, 152-155; his alms, 165; his tribute from Naples, 192; procession on the Annunciation, 205; on Lady Day, &c., 208; various ceremonies of the, 209, 210, 213.  
 Pope, Walter, verses by, ii. 306 n.  
 Popery, Charles I. suspected of encouraging, 1641, iv. 88, 89, 171.  
 Popham, Colonel, house of, ii. 52.  
 Porcelain, chimes of, i. 21.  
 Porcupine, description of one, ii. 104.  
 Pordage, Mr., his excellent voice, ii. 440.  
 Pordenone, Giovanni Antonio Licinio, paintings of, i. 225.  
 Porphyry, remarkable statue in, i. 104.  
 Porta, Baccio della (called Frà Bartolomeo di San Marco), famous painting by, i. 224.  
 — Giacomo de la, works of, i. 125, 214.  
 Porter, Endymion, ii. 4.  
 Portland, Jerome Weston, Earl of, 1641, iv. 87, 123 n, 141, 157.  
 — Richard Weston, Earl of, Lord Treasurer, 1639, iv. 232 and n; ii. 271.  
 — Earl of, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.  
 — Dorsetshire, earthquake at, iii. 126.  
 Portman, Sir William, Duke of Monmouth taken by, ii. 468.  
 Portmore, David Colyer, Earl of, ii. 337 n; iii. 15 n.  
 Portraits, collected by Lord Clarendon, ii. 233; iii. 436, 443.  
 Portsmouth, siege of, 1642, i. 38; James II.'s visit to, 1685, ii. 476-481.  
 — Duchess of (Mlle. Querouaille), account of, ii. 253 and n; her apartments and furniture at Whitehall, 314, 419; Morocco Ambassador entertained there, 389; visited in her dressing-room by the King, 419; her apartments burnt, iii. 93; alluded to, ii. 266, 267, 310, 444, 448.  
 Portugal, John IV., King of, iv. 148.  
 — King of, 1683, death of, ii. 423.  
 — earthquake in, 1699, iii. 148.  
 Portugallo, Areo, in Rome, i. 201.  
 Portuguese Ambassador, 1661, ii. 132; entry into London, 1679, 348.  
 Portus Herculis, i. 93; Julius, 188.



- Postage of letters, curious particulars of, iv. 249 and n, 266 n.
- Potatoes, remarks on, iv. 44.
- Pott, Sir George, his son, ii. 107.
- Potts, John, a Commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.
- Poule, Henry, manager against Viscount Stafford, ii. 376.
- Poultney, Sir P. William, ii. 237 ; iii. 83.
- Poussin, Nicholas, i. 60, 218 ; ii. 15, 440.
- Povey, Mr., his house in Lincoln's Inn Fields, &c., ii. 166 and n ; near Brentford, 198 ; alluded to, 156, 228, 317.
- Powell, Sir John, Justice of the King's Bench, displaced, iii. 49, 50 ; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Capt., i. 246 ; present to Mr. Evelyn, 255 ; ii. 83.
- Power, Essays on the Balance of*, iii. 157 n.
- Powis, Mr. Baron, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Pozzo, account of his collection, i. 151.
- Pozzuolo, i. 187, 188, 191.
- Pratoline, villa of Duke of Florence, i. 228.
- Pratt, Mr., architect, ii. 77 ; a commissioner for repair of Old St. Paul's, 199, 200 ; built Lord Allington's house at Horseheath, 247 ; Clarendon House, iii. 340 n.
- Praxiteles, sculptures by, i. 252.
- Prayer, Common, disused in the English churches, ii. 4 ; prohibited, 74 ; restricted allowance of, 76 ; used again in England, 116, 244 ; Reformation of, and order for, 149.
- Prerogative Office, writing of Mr. Hoare at, ii. 7.
- Presbyterians, in<sup>t</sup>Holland, notice of, i. 19 ; of<sup>t</sup>Scotland, <sup>w</sup>character of, iii. 86 ; Charles II.'s dislike of the, iv. 199 and n.
- Pressing to death, inflicted for refusing to plead, ii. 44.
- Preston, Lord, iii. 37 ; Secretary of State, 58 ; tried and condemned, 92 ; released, 95.
- Preston Beckhelvyn, Manor of, i. 298 ; ii. 76.
- Pretyman, Sir John, house at Dryfield, ii. 61.
- Mr., uncle of Mrs. Evelyn, i. 296 ; ii. 3, 54, 61, 76 ; iii. 23 ; iv. 335.
- Price, Sir Herbert, ii. 128.
- Dr. John, *History and Mystery of Charles II.'s restoration*, iii. 183 n.
- Prideaux, Dr. Humphrey, ii. 296 ; editor of *Marmora Oxoniensia*, 319.
- Dr. John, 1641, iv. 89 ; made Bishop of Worcester, 99 n.
- Priestman, Mr., subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Primaticcio, Francisco, paintings by, i. 60, 62.
- "Prince," of 90 guns, ii. 184, 281.
- "Prince," frigate, burned, ii. 195, 196.
- Printing House, the King's, at Paris, i. 54.
- Printing-types procured by Sir Henry Savile for his *Chrysostom*, iii. 443.
- Prints, collection of, recommended by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 447, 448 and n.
- Pritchard, Dr. John, Bishop of Gloucester, sermon of, ii. 317.
- Privateer of Charles II., 1649, ii. 6.
- Privy Council, various proceedings of, and notices relating to the, 1641, iv. 79 m, 93, 94, 97.



Privy Council—*continued.*

103, 105, 117, 120, 121, 125, 139;  
at Oxford, 155, 156, 161; im-  
provement of, recommended  
to Charles II., 195, 196;  
adopted, 197.

Privy Seal, commission for exe-  
cuting the office of, 1685, ii.  
13; proceedings of, 1686-7, iii.  
13, 15, 16, 18, 19, 20, 22, 25,  
31, 32.

Prizes, Royal, taken by cruisers  
of Charles II. while in exile,  
proceedings respecting, &c., iv.  
240, 246 m, 264 n, 265 and n,  
267, 268, 269, 271, 272, 274 n,  
275 n, 277 n, 278 n, 280 n,  
284 n, 285 and n, 287, 288,  
290, 292, 296, 297, 306 n, 310,  
345.

Procession, of the Pope to St.  
John de Lateran, i. 112, 152-  
154; of the Conservatori, 160;  
of the Zitelle, 161, 208; of the  
Viceroy of Naples, 181; of the  
Pope on the Annunciation, 205;  
of ditto in Lent, 209; of Peni-  
tents at Rome on Good Friday,  
209; of Louis XIV. to Parlia-  
ment, ii. 26-28; funeral of  
Ireton, 36; of Cromwell, 104;  
Coronation, &c., of Charles II.,  
125-129; aquatic procession in  
honour of Catherine, Queen of  
Charles II., 150.

Proger, Mr., notice of, iv. 135 n.

Prophecies, interpretations of, iii.  
74, 76, 87, 88.

Prosdocimus, St., Bishop of  
Padua, i. 249 and n.

Protestant French Church at  
Charenton, i. 61.

Protestants of France, i. 288;  
ii. 29; persecution of, *see*  
Huguenots, Savoy, Vaudois,  
Waldenses.

Proverb on the women of Venice,  
i. 244.

Proverbs, beautiful MS. of the,  
ii. 55.

Prujeau, Sir Francis, account of,  
ii. 133.

Pryce, Sir John, Governor of  
Montgomery Castle, 1645, iv.  
157.

Prynne, William, review of Dr.  
Cosin's offices, ii. 29 and n; his  
speech on evil counsellors, iv.  
133 n.

Puckering, Sir Henry, his seat at  
Warwick, ii. 63.

Pule, Mr., his fine voice, iii. 139.

Pulestone, Judge, 1649, iv. 348.

Pulsone, Scipione (called Gaetano),  
paintings by, i. 147.

Punteus, Jo., mountebank, ii.  
133.

Purford, Mr. Denzil Onslow's  
house at, ii. 383.

Purgatory, gates of, i. 186.

Puteoli (Puzzolo), i. 187, 188,  
191.

Putney, schools at, ii. 4, 5; draw-  
ings about, by Mr. Evelyn, 6;  
etchings of, iii. 197.

Putti (boys' heads), paintings of,  
ii. 2, 8, 15.

Pye, Sir Walter, ii. 6; seat of,  
58.

— Sir Robert, iv. 102.

Pym, John, mentioned, iv. 92 n,  
93, 94 n, 122 n; suspected of  
instigating the London appren-  
tices, 93 n; opposes the punish-  
ment of, 138 n; opposes the  
removal of Parliament from  
London on account of the  
plague, 105; plot against, 138;  
character of, in the *History of*  
*the King-killers*, 138 n.

QUAKERS, the new sect of, ii. 86.

- Queen Mother, Maria de Medicis, Dowager of France, satirical ballad on, burned, 1641, iv. 75; her leaving England, 75, 80 and n, 85; referred to, 171.
- Queensberry, Duke of, ii. 463.
- Quercei, Jacopo, sculpture by, i. 111.
- Querico, St., notice of, i. 113.
- Querouaille, Mons., and his lady, ii. 310. *See* Portsmouth.
- Question given in the Châtelet at Paris, 1650, ii. 21, 22.
- Quinquina, brought into use by Mr. Tudor, iii. 118.
- Quintin Matsys, the Blacksmith, a painting by, ii. 2.
- Quintinye, Mons. de la, *Treatise on Orange Trees*, 1693, translated by Mr. Evelyn, i. cxvi; iii. 196.
- Quinze-Vingts, Hospital of the, at Paris, i. 52.
- RABINIERE, Admiral, his death and funeral, ii. 283.
- Racing at Rome, i. 207.
- Radcliffe, Sir George, ii. 9, 11.
- Radicofana, notice of, i. 113, 220.
- Raffaelle (Raffaelle Sanzio, di Urbino), paintings by, i. 60, 63, 64, 107, 112, 124, 156, 162, 194, 203, 220, 224, 226, 232, 267, 271; ii. 15, 44, 119, 131, 146, 323, 371, 404; iii. 129; architecture of, i. 227; his burial-place, 202.
- Ragny, Mr., iv. 338.
- Rainbow, Dr., sermon by, ii. 120.
- Rains, remarkable, ii. 92, 142.
- Rainsborough, Colonel, Cromwell sends him against Pontefract Castle, 1648-9, iv. 347; killed, *ibid.*
- Rainsford, —, trial alluded to, iv. 178.
- Raleigh, Mr. Carew, son of Sir Walter, ii. 102.
- Sir Walter, ii. 48 and n; his cordial, 152; portrait, iii. 439, 443.
- Rand, Dr., notice of, i. 7; ii. 90.
- Randolf, letters of, iv. 26.
- Ranelagh, Earl of, his subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Lady, iii. 88; her death, 100, 486.
- Rapinus, Renatus, translation of his book on Gardens, ii. 288 n.
- Rasp-house at Antwerp, i. 20.
- Ratcliffe, Sir George, account of, iv. 306 n.
- Mr., ii. 20.
- Rattle-snakes, Virginian, account of two, ii. 94.
- Raven, a white one, ii. 104.
- Ravensbourn Mills, Deptford, ii. 230.
- Ray, Dr., his book on Fishes, iii. 18.
- Mr. (Rea), on the culture of Flowers, iii. 192.
- Reading, Sir Robert, ii. 337, 426.
- Reason in Brute Animals*, Treatise on, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 190 and n.
- Rebellion, breaking out of the Irish, i. 38.
- Reccii, Andrea, mezzo-relievo by, i. 248.
- Recusants, Parliament orders the disarming of, &c., 1641, iv. 71 and n, 78, 122, 132, 138, 234 and n.
- Red Lion Inn, at Guildford, ii. 48.
- Reeves, Dr., sermon by, 1662, ii. 142.
- Reeves, famous for perspective and turning, ii. 39.



- Regalia of the Pope, i. 164.  
 Regency, debate respecting, 1689, iii. 66.  
 Reggio, Sign. Pietro, musician, ii. 434.  
*Rehearsal*, by Duke of Buckingham, ii. 272.  
*Religion, History of the True*, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 194.  
 Reliques, Legends, and Traditions, notices of various, i. 44, 81, 86, 92, 99 n, 106, 109, 111, 120, 123, 125, 132, 133, 134, 136, 141, 143, 144, 146, 149, 150, 159, 161, 168, 179, 194, 197, 200, 209, 222, 223, 224, 230, 240, 241, 249.  
 Remonstrances of the House of Commons, 1641, proceedings upon, iv. 130, 132, 137, 141, 144.  
 Rencia, Anna, singer, i. 246, 260.  
 Reni Guido, paintings by, i. 126, 151, 169, 206, 231, 232; ii. 44.  
 Rennes, Parliament of, arrests a servant of Charles II., 1659, iv. 324.  
 Retz, John Francis Paul de Gondi, Cardinal de, intrigues of, iv. 321 n.  
 Revels in the Middle Temple, i. 38; ii. 228; Inner Temple, 1697, iii. 138; at Lincoln's Inn, 1661, ii. 140; at Court, 1661, *ibid.*, 1668, 228.  
 Revenue, Royal, examined by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 91.  
 Review of the Gens d'Armes at Paris, i. 73; in Hyde Park, 1663, ii. 159.  
 Revolution of, 1688, distracted councils at, iii. 63.  
 Reymes, Col. Bullein, ii. 172, 283.  
 Reynaldo, Prince, ii. 299.  
 Reynolds, Dr., Bishop of Norwich, sermon before East India Company, 1657, ii. 95; his consecration, 121.  
 Rheni, Caval. Giuseppe, i. 132, 146.  
 Rhinoceros, the first in England, ii. 435.  
*Rhodes, Siege of*, an opera, ii. 141.  
 Rhodomante, Signor Paulo, of Venice, i. 235.  
 Rhyswyck, seat of the Prince of Orange, i. 18.  
 Rialto at Venice, i. 237.  
 Rich, Sir Robert, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.  
 — Mr., feast at Lincoln's Inn, ii. 178.  
 — a Rebel, ii. 83.  
 Richard, St., an English King, epitaph at Lucca, i. 222.  
 Richard III., King of England, tomb of, ii. 64.  
 Richards, Mr., iv. 268, 294, 296, 299 *bis*.  
 Richardson, Sir Thomas, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, account of, i. 6 n.  
 — the fire-eater, feats of, ii. 286.  
 Richelieu, town of, i. 83.  
 — Armand du Plessis, Cardinal Duc de, his villa at Ruell, i. 56; at Richelieu, 84; Palais Cardinal, ii. 10; allusion to, iv. 283 n; prophecy respecting the Stuarts, 314 n; *Life of*, mentioned, 314, 317.  
 Richett, Mr., engraver, ii. 47.  
 Richmond, James Stuart, Duke of, funeral, 1641, i. 13.  
 — James Stuart, Duke of, and Duke of Lenox, 1641, referred to, iv. 69 n, 97 m, 103 m, 105,



Richmond, James—*continued*.

107 m, 111, 126, 128, 136, 140, 147 n, 152, 155, 156, 195 m; sketch of his character, 87 n.

— Charles Stuart, Duke of, 1663, ii. 158, 301; dies ambassador to Denmark, 301 n, 315.

— Duke of, natural son of Charles II., ii. 389, 430, 435.

— Countess of, mother to Henry VII., ii. 71.

Riding-schools at Paris, i. 73; ii. 11.

Rilie, Sir Hugh, ii. 11.

Ringborough, Colonel, iv. 189.

Rings, inflammable, i. 217.

Roane, notice of, i. 86, 293.

Roberts, Dr. William, Bishop of Bangor, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.

Robin Hood's Well, ii. 66.

Robinson, Alderman Sir John, ii. 84, 158; pageant of, 153 n.

Roche Corb , castle at, i. 82.

Roches, of Poitiers, Catharine de, iii. 396.

Rochester, John Willmot, Earl of, a profane wit, ii. 254.

— Laurence Hyde, Earl of, Commissioner of the Treasury, &c., ii. 359; a favourite at Court, 398; made Earl, 399; his daughter married, *ibid.*; President of the Council, 434; alluded to, 441; Lord Treasurer, 450; his opposition to William and Mary, iii. 70; Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 155.

— Countess of, 1664-1686, ii. 169, 457; iii. 24.

— City of, bequests to the, ii. 174 n.

Rochester, Deanery of, vacated, 1641, iv. 99 m.

Rogers, Dr., Consul in Padua University, i. 253; account of, ii. 397; Harveian oration of, 398.

Rohan, Mademoiselle de, account of, iv. 146 n.

Rokeby, Mr. Justice, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.

Rolsies, notice of the, i. 93.

Roman Catholics, machinations of, 1686-7, iii. 21, 31, 32, 33.

— Medals found near Banstead, ii. 103.

— Money, observations on, i. 217.

— Painting at Cardinal Borghese's, i. 156.

— Temple at Leicester, ii. 64.

Romano, Giulio, paintings by, i. 164; ii. 44; iii. 129.

— Paris, i. 132.

Roma Soterranea, account of, i. 210.

— Triumphans, at Tivoli, i. 215.

Rome, description of, and events in, 1644-5; i. 116-172, 194-219; Farnese Palace, 118, 169, 194; Temples of Peace, Jupiter, Romulus, Faustina, &c., 119, 120; Arch of S. Severus, the Capitol, 120-122; Ara C eli, 123; Barbarini Palace, 124; Jesuits' Church, 125; Medici Palace and Gardens, 125, 157; Chiesa Nova, 126, 156, 160; Prince Ludovisio's villa, 127; Sign. Angeloni's study, 128, 193; Monte Cavallo, and the Pope's Summer Palace, 128, 158; Diocletian's baths, Fontana della Terme, and Church of St. Susanna,

Rome—*continued.*

129 ; Church of Maria della Vittoria, and Mont Alto's Villa, 130 ; Churches of SS. Agnes and Constanza, 131 ; Via Felix, *ibid.* ; St. Maria Maggiore, 131-133 ; St. Prudentia, and Praxedeis, 133 ; Arch of Titus, 134 ; Sta. Maria Nova, and Amphitheatre of Vespasian, 135 ; Arch of Constantine, 136 ; St. Gregorio, and Villa Borghesi, 136-138, 156, 212 ; St. Peter's, and Obelisk dedicated to Julius Cæsar, 138-146 ; Crypt of St. Peter's, 159 ; Baptistery of St. John, &c., 146 ; Scala Sancta, and Obelisk, 147 ; St. John de Lateran, 146-151 ; collection of Cavaliero Pozzo, 151 ; St. Pietro in Vincoli, 152 ; procession of the Pope to St. John de Lateran, 152 ; fireworks, 154 ; Jesuits' College, 155 ; collection of H. Vitellesco, *ibid.* ; Ghisi Palace, 158, 194 ; St. Mary's, 159 ; ceremonies on Christmas Eve, *ibid.* ; the Jews, 160 ; Zitelle, Ghetto, and ceremony of Circumcision, 161 ; the Vatican, &c., i. 138, 162-167 ; St. Paul's, 168 ; Tre Fontana, 169 ; Christ's Hospital, 171, 172 ; Fountain of Aqua Paula, 172 ; St. Cecilia's, 194 ; Temple and Mons Testacæus, 195 ; tomb of Cestius, 196 ; St. Maria in Navicula, Horti Mathæi, Egyptian Obelisk, 196 ; St. Sebastian's, and Academy of Humourists, 197 ; English Jesuits, Hospital of Pellerini della S. Trinita, 199 ; Palace of Cardinal Spada, Palace della Cancellaria, *ibid.* ; Piazza Navona, St. Giacomo di Spag-

Rome—*continued.*

noli, Pasquin, 200 ; Church of the Capuchins, Column of Antoninus, *ibid.* ; Pantheon, or S. Maria della Rotonda, 201 ; Monastery of Trinita del Monte, 202 ; St. Augustine's, 203 ; Obelisk, Muro torto, Mausoleum Augusti, and Sapienza, 204 ; St. Andrea della valle, and St. Maria sopra la Minerva, *ibid.* ; Trajan's Column, 205 ; St. Cross of Jerusalem, 206 ; St. Lawrence, 207 ; Carnival, Greek Church, Garden of Justinian, 208 ; ceremonies on Lady Day, Pope's portions to the Zitelle, 161, 208 ; ceremonies on Holy Thursday, Good Friday, and Easter Day, 209 ; Roma Subterranea, 210 ; Opera by Prince Gallicano, tournament, 211 ; Ambassador from Lucca, 213 ; benediction of the Pope, *ibid.* ; Frascati, formerly Tusculanum, *ibid.* ; Card. Scipio Borghese's house on Mondragone, 214 ; Palace de Este at Tivoli, 215 ; models of Rome when in its beauty, 216 ; cascade of the Anio, &c., *ibid.* ; mountebank in the Piazza Navona, 217 ; observations on Roman coins and medals, *ibid.* ; ceremonies of the Greek Church, celebrated artists, 218 ; executions, *ibid.* ; extent, &c., of Rome, *ibid.* ; drawings made between Rome and Naples by Mr. Evelyn, and etched by him, iii. 196 ; earthquake at, 1703, 165. Romney, Lord, offices held by, iii. 125, 155 ; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n.



- Ronquillos, Don Pietro, visit of Mr. Evelyn to, ii. 381.
- Ronsard, Pierre de, his burial-place, i. 81.
- Rooke, Admiral Sir George, squadron of, iii. 127, 128; Spanish galleon taken by, 163; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n.
- Mr., pendulum invented by, ii. 200.
- Rookwood, at Low Layton, Essex, ii. 106 and n.
- Sir T., ii. 268.
- Rose, Mr. (King Charles's gardener), painting of, ii. 133 n.; his *English Vineyard vindicated*, iii. 195.
- Roses, remarkable instances of dislike to, ii. 246; essence and oils of, iii. 255, 256.
- Ross, tutor to Duke of Monmouth, ii. 472 n.
- Rosse, Lord, divorce of, ii. 244 and n.
- Alexander, divine and poet, ii. 6, 47.
- Rosso (old), gallery painted by, i. 64.
- Rotenhamer, painting by, ii. 2.
- Rotheram, Sir John, Serjeant, a trustee for Boyle's Lectures, iii. 106, 111, 129.
- Rotherhithe, dreadful fire at (1699), iii. 143.
- Rotière, Mons., his excellence in graving, ii. 336.
- Rotterdam, the fair at, 1641, i. 18.
- Rouen, account of, Cathedral, Chapel d'Amboise, i. 65; Church of St. Ouen, &c., 66.
- Abp. of, palace at Gaillon, i. 64.
- Roupel, Mons., of Paris, ii. 48.
- Roxalana, an actress so called, ii. 141.
- Royal Exchange, London, built, ii. 298.
- Royal Slave*, a play, iii. 176.
- Royal Society, i. l, lvi; origin of, iii. 481; shows Charles II. an eclipse of Saturn, ii. 131; incorporated, 134, 149; mace and arms, 150, 151; addresses the King, 151; first anniversary, 163; the King's present to the, 164; statutes prepared, 173; allusions to the Society in 1665, 183; met at Arundel House after the Fire, 1666, 214, 298; Mr. Evelyn on the usefulness of the Society, and recommending Cowley to write his poem on, iii. 349; Arundel Library presented by Mr. Howard at Mr. Evelyn's suggestion, ii. 236, 340; iii. 450; requests to exchange some of the MSS. with the University of Oxford for mathematical books, &c., 369; visit of the Duchess of Newcastle, ii. 218; Mr. Evelyn presents Tables of Veins, Arteries, and Nerves, i. 261; ii. 227; iii. 160; college for, designed at Arundel House, ii. 229; Mr. Evelyn's gift to the building of, 230; History of the Silkworm given to the, 236; Dr. Glanville's *Ne plus Ultra* in defence of, and Stubb's book against, iii. 356; Chelsea College given to, by Charles II., ii. 225, 236; (*see* Chelsea); Mr. Evelyn chosen Secretary, 288; meets again at Gresham College, 298; allusions to, 1679, ii. 361; regulations respecting electing Fellows, 389; Roman urn presented to, iii. 7; experiments relative to earthquakes, 467; transac-



Royal Society—*continued.*

tions of the Society, ii. 122, 123, 138, 139, 144, 153, 154, 173, 183, 193, 200, 218, 230, 236, 243, 309, 374, 393, 395, 397, 398; iii. 18, 142.

Royalty, or Masquerade, at Tilling, 1654-55, iv. 225.

Royston, Richard, iii. 207, 216 and n; 259.

Rubens, Sir Peter Paul, paintings by, i. 30, 34; iii. 109; his views in Genoa, i. 96.

Rubies, King Charles I.'s collar of, his directions about disposal of, 1641, iv. 86 m, 91, 99, 101, 106, 113, 117, 186.

Rudyard, Sir Benjamin, iv. 144 n; opposes sending the Irish regiments to Spain, 1641, 74 n.

Ruell, Richelieu's palace, &c., at, i. 56.

Rugini, Signior, of Venice, his collection, i. 257.

Ruins, notices of various, i. 92, 93, 119, 124, 129, 135, 161, 173, 174, 176, 186, 187, 189, 190, 195, 196, 206, 208, 217, 234, 267, 272; ii. 64.

Rump Parliament, dispersed by the Army, ii. 107; dissolved by Monk, 110.

Rupert, Prince, various references to, iv. 146 n, 148, 152, 155, 240, 247 n, 265, 274, 275 n, 282 n, 286, 343; King Charles I.'s directions to, before the battle of Marston Moor, 152-154 and notes; letters, to Earl of Essex, about pass for Royal Commissioners to the Parliament, 1644, 155, 156; to Sir Edward Nicholas, on the royal cause, 1645, 164; forced to quit Bath, 164, 166; surrenders Bristol, 172, 173, 174 and n;

Rupert, Prince—*continued.*

Charles I.'s proceedings against in consequence, 173, 174; quarrels with Lord Digby about defeat at Sherbourne, 175 n; petition in consequence, *ibid.*; naval proceedings for Charles II., 1651, 345; 1652, 248 and n, 264, 265 n; 1653, 274 n, 275 n; governed by Sir E. Herbert, 277 n; Master of the Horse, 1653, 280 n, 301 n; is nearly drowned in the Seine, 288 n; allusions to, concerning prizes to Charles II. in exile, 264 n, 265 n, 274 n, 280 n, 285, 287, 288, 292, 296, 297, 298, 300; he explains to Mr. Evelyn the process of mezzotinto engraving, ii. 123, 124; arranges the firearms at Windsor Castle, his apartments, 252; other allusions to him, 144, 151, 159, 185, 194, 195, 196, 211, 219, 251.

Rushworth, John, his *Historical Collections* referred to, iv. 80 n, 85 n, 91 n.

Russell, Lord William, apprehended, ii. 409; tried and condemned, 410, 411; beheaded, 414, 422, 471.

— Colonel (uncle of Lord), ii. 414.

— William, embalming practised by, ii. 393.

— Admiral, Edward, Earl of Oxford, quarrel with Lord Nottingham, iii. 106; put aside, 107; restored, 111.

— Catholic Bishop of Cape Verde, ii. 139.

— family possessions of, in Bloomsbury, ii. 177 n.

Russian Ambassador, entrance of, 1662, ii. 154; audience of,

- Russian Ambassador—*continued*.  
 156 ; takes leave, 159 ; curious waterfowl presented by to Charles II., 177 ; audience of, 1667, ii. 224 ; 1681, 386.
- Rustate, Tobias, benefactions of, ii. 365 and n.
- Rutland, John Manners, Earl of, iv. 188 n.
- Ruvigné, Henry de, Marquis, Earl of Galway, account of, iii. 26 ; alluded to, 336 ; his son, 26 n.
- Rycaut, Sir Paul, iii. 11.
- Rye, Sussex, embargo at, 1652, ii. 40.
- Rye-house Plot detected, ii. 408 ; declaration concerning, 415 ; thanksgiving, *ibid.*
- Rygate, Lady Peterborough's house at, ii. 77.
- SACHEVERELL, Mr., manager on Lord Stafford's trial, ii. 376.
- Sacraments, disused in the English churches, ii. 3.
- Sacristy at St. Denis, i. 43.
- Sadlington, Captain, iv. 282 and n.
- Saffron brought from Greece, iii. 405.
- Saffron Walden, Essex, famous for saffron, ii. 73, 250.
- Sailor, fortitude of, under amputation, ii. 277.
- St. Adrian at Rome, i. 120.
- St. Agnes at Rome, i. 131.
- St. Alban's, Henry Jermyn, Earl of, ii. 115, 136, 149, 158, 191 ; house at Byfleet, 338 ; account of him, 1683, 416 ; portrait, iii. 444.
- Duke of (son of Charles II.), ii. 430, 435.
- St. Ambrose at Milan, i. 273.
- St. Ambrosio at Genoa, i. 99.
- St. Angelo, notices of, i. 194 ; ii. 2.
- St. Anne, London, iii. 35.
- St. Anthony at Padua, i. 248.
- St. Bartholomew at Rome, i. 195.
- St. Baume, i. 92.
- St. Bernard at Rome, i. 129.
- St. Carlo at Rome, i. 131.
- St. Catherine of Sienna, i. 111.
- St. Catherine's cell at Sienna, i. 220.
- Sta. Cecilia, church and bath, at Rome, i. 194, 195.
- St. Chapelle, Paris, i. 51 ; at Bourges, 85 ; at Bourbon l'Archambault, 86.
- St. Christopher, colossal statue of, i. 48.
- St. Clement's Church, London, ii. 435.
- St. Clere, Kent, descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedigree*.
- St. Clere, Mons., of Paris, collections of, ii. 15.
- St. Cloes, house of Archbishop of Paris, i. 55.
- St. Cloud, Paris, referred to, ii. 8.
- Sta. Constanza at Rome, i. 131.
- St. Croix at Orleans, i. 76.
- St. Cross at Rome described, i. 206 ; at Lucca, 222.
- St. Denys, Paris, i. 43-45 ; ii. 7, 19.
- St. Dominic at Naples, i. 179 ; at Florence, 230.
- St. Francis, Genoa, i. 99 ; at Sienna, 112.
- St. Geneviève, Paris, i. 52.
- St. George's, Hanover Square, iii. 96 n.
- St. Germain, Naples, natural stoves of, i. 185.
- St. Germain, Mons., ii. 13.
- St. Germain's, English court at, i. 295 ; referred to, ii. 25.
- St. Germain's en Laye, i. 55, 58, 59 ; ii. 13.



- St. Giovanni, Baptistery of, i. 102.  
 St. Giovanni è Paula, i. 151.  
 St. Gratian, Tours, i. 80.  
 St. Gregorio in Monte Celio, i. 136.  
 St. Honorè, Island of, i. 93.  
 St. Innocents, Paris, i. 71.  
 St. James's Chapel, ii. 141.  
 St. James's Church, Piccadilly, ii. 437.  
 St. James's, library at, iii. 125, 449.  
 St. James's Park, skating in, ii. 155; collection of rare beasts and fowls in, 177, 178; iii. 283; library in, iv. 14.  
 St. James's possessed by the rebels, 1650, ii. 17; improvement of, 1662, ii. 148.  
 St. Jean, Lyons, i. 87.  
 St. John, Church of, at Genoa, i. 99; at Bologna, 231.  
 St. John's College, Oxford, ii. 56.  
 — Cambridge, ii. 70.  
 St. John di Lateran, Church of, at Rome, description of, i. 146-150; procession of the Pope to, &c., 152-154, 210.  
 St. John, Lord, ii. 237.  
 — Sir Walter, ii. 169.  
 — son of Sir Walter, murder by, ii. 439.  
 — Regicide, ii. 70.  
 Sta. Justina, Church of, at Padua, i. 248.  
 St. Laurence at Rome, i. 207.  
 St. Lawrence at Genoa, i. 99; at Florence, 226.  
 St. Leger, Lady, antipathy to roses, ii. 246.  
 St. Lorenzo at Padua, i. 247.  
 Sta. Margaret, Island of, i. 93.  
 Sta. Maria Maggiore at Rome, i. 131, 159.  
 Sta. Maria sopra la Minerva at Rome, i. 160, 204.  
 Sta. Maria at Venice, i. 251.  
 Sta. Maria in Navicula, i. 196.  
 Sta. Maria della Pietà nel Colisseo, i. 136.  
 Sta. Maria Schola Greca, i. 195.  
 Sta. Maria della Rotunda, i. 201.  
 Sta. Maria della Vittoria at Rome, i. 130.  
 Sta. Maria Nova at Rome, i. 135.  
 St. Mark at Rome, i. 205; at Venice, Piazza, Church, 238; Tower, 243.  
 St. Martin, Tours, i. 79.  
 St. Mary's, Oxford, ii. 237.  
 St. Maurice in Switzerland, i. 286, 287.  
 St. Michael, Island of, near Venice, i. 255.  
 St. Michael in Bosco at Bologna, i. 231.  
 St. Nicholas in Carcere, i. 198.  
 St. Paul's Cathedral (old), Deanery of, vacated, 1641, iv. 99 m; King's statue at thrown down, 1649, ii. 5; surveyed for repairs, ii. 199; destruction of by the great fire of London, 200, 202, 205.  
 St. Paul's Cathedral (rebuilt by Sir Christopher Wren), carving of Gibbon in, ii. 258 n; choir finished, iii. 117; opened for public service, 137; public library recommended at, 454.  
 St. Paul's, Church of, near Rome, i. 168, 169.  
 St. Peter's at Rome, piazza before, i. 138; description of, 141-146; chapels in, 142; ecclesiastical members of, 146; measures of, 232; crypt, 159; service at, on Good Friday and Easter Day, 208, 209.  
 St. Peter's at Geneva, i. 291.



- St. Pietro d'Arena, i. 100.  
 St. Pietro in Vincoli at Rome, i. 123, 152.  
 St. Praxedes at Rome, i. 133.  
 St. Prudentia at Rome, 133.  
 St. Ruth, General, slain, iii. 97.  
 St. Sabina at Rome, i. 195.  
 St. Saviour at Aix, i. 90.  
 St. Sebastian's at Rome, i. 151, 197.  
 St. Sebastian's, English, Scotch, and Irish, turned out of, 1656, iv. 318, 320.  
 Sto. Spirito at Florence, i. 106.  
 St. Stephen's at Bourges, i. 85 ; at Pisa, 101 ; Paris, ii. 10.  
 St. Susanna, Church of, at Rome, i. 130.  
 St. Thomas's Hospital, Southwark, part reserved for sick and wounded seamen, 1664, ii. 173.  
 St. Victoire at Aix, i. 92.  
 St. Vincent's Rock, Bristol, ii. 53.  
 Sala del Conclave, i. 163.  
 Saladine, Mons., i. 288, 289, 291, 293.  
 Salisbury Cathedral, ii. 59 ; Plain and City, 60 ; Stonehenge, *ibid.*  
 Salisbury, Earls of, their palace at Hatfield, i. 39.  
 — William Cecil, Earl of, a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 192 n.  
 Sallust, Caius Crispus, his viridarium and gardens, i. 130.  
 Salt-houses at Rome, i. 195.  
 Saltpetre, Commission for regulating, &c., ii. 197, 198 ; mine of, Parliament considers about preserving, 1641, iv. 79.  
 Salt water, rivulet of, at Pistoja, i. 222.  
 Saludadors of Spain, impostures of, ii. 477 and n.  
 Salutation, remarkable picture of the, i. 224.  
 Salvatico, Dr., of Padua, i. 258, 263.  
 Salviati, Francisco Rossi, called Il Salviati, works of, i. 118, 199.  
 Samaritan fountain at Paris, ii. 15.  
 Samuel, Mr., architect, ii. 248.  
 San Bernardo, mountain of, i. 278.  
 Sancroft, Dr. William, Abp. of Canterbury, iii. 10, 22, 24, 25, 41, 77, 118 ; sermon of, ii. 192 ; a Commissioner for repair of Old St. Paul's, 199 ; a Commissioner for Ecclesiastical Affairs, iii. 25 ; refuses to sit, 26 ; sent for by King James on the Prince of Orange coming over, and required to publish a declaration of abhorrence of the invasion, 59 ; meeting of Bishops at Lambeth on the Revolution, 62 ; Mr. Evelyn's letter to, 55 n, 63 ; protests against the crown being given to William III., 69 ; refuses to attend Parliament, 1689, 72 ; conversation with, 1689, 74 ; suspended, 80 ; deprived for refusing the oaths to William and Mary, 93, 95 ; advice to Dr. Beveridge, 94.  
 Sanctuary, man enters St. Martin's church for, iii. 35.  
 Sanders, Captain, iii. 122.  
 Sanderson, Sir William, funeral of, ii. 320.  
 — Dr. Robert, Bishop of Lincoln, sermon of, ii. 109 ; portrait, iii. 444.  
 Sands, travelling, account of, ii. 330.  
 Sandwich, Edward Montague, Lord Admiral, Earl of, ii. 184, 185, 187, 245 ; iii. 392, in-

- Sandwich, Edward—*continued*.  
 sinuations against, respecting East India Prizes, and his courage, ii. 196, 230; his observations whilst at Madrid, &c., 233; President of Commission of Trade, 261, 263, 264; death at battle of Solebay, 281; particulars and character of, his courage asserted, 281, 282; funeral, 284; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, respecting his communications about Spanish horticulture, iii. 355; portrait of, 444.
- Sandwich, Town of, ii. 176.
- Sandys, Edwin, Archbishop of York, letter of, iv. 26.  
 — Rev. Mr., iii. 148.
- Sansovino, Jacopo, sculpture by, i. 200, 203, 242, 248; Piazza of St. Mark by, 238; his burial-place, *ibid.*
- Santa Clara, Frá de, miracle related by, ii. 478.
- Sapienza at Rome, i. 204.
- Saracin, Mons., goldsmith of Paris, i. 54.
- Sarto, Del (Andrea Vannucchi), paintings by, i. 64, 107, 224, 226; ii. 101; burial-place, i. 224.
- Saturn, eclipse of, &c., 1660, ii. 131.
- Saumeurs, Mons., ii. 8.
- Savile, Sir George (Marquis of Halifax), son of Sir Henry, ii. 152.  
 — Sir Henry, ii. 152; types procured by, for his edition of *Chrysostom*, destroyed, iii. 443; MSS. of, 451.  
 — Mr. Henry, Vice-chamberlain, ii. 245, 450.  
 — (Countess of Monte Feltre), ii. 415.
- Savona, town, cape, and passage of, i. 94.
- Savoy, persecuted Christians of, collections for, ii. 76; iii. 81.  
 — Duke of, his persecution of Protestants, iii. 21, 81; remits his cruelties, 87.
- Savoy Hospital, sick and wounded lodged at, ii. 183, 199, 203, 204; French Church of the, 244.
- Saxe-Gotha, Duke of, iii. 27.
- Say and Sele, William Fiennes, Viscount, a commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.
- Sayers, John, iv. 225.
- Says Court, Deptford, Sir R. Browne's house at, afterwards Mr. Evelyn's, i. xxxvi, xlix, lxxvii; ii. 1, 3, 38, 44, 46, 73, 120 and n, 123, 130, 132, 158, 164, 174, 271, 278; garden at, 46, 57, 404 n, 427; iv. 43, 44; a mole for ships designed at, ii. 79, 142; let to Peter the Great during his residence in England, i. lxxvii-lxxix and notes; iii. 138; to Lord Carmarthen, 157.
- Scala Sancta at Rome, i. 147.
- Scaliger, Joseph, ii. 405; his burial-place, i. 24.  
 — Julius Cæsar, statue of, i. 267; his eulogy of Verona, *ibid.*, 268.
- Scaligeri, Princess of Verona, monument of, i. 266.
- Scaramuccio, Italian, performance at Whitehall, ii. 314.
- Scarborough, Dr. Sir Charles, ii. 45, 245; library, iii. 120.
- Scawen, Sir William, M.P. for Surrey, iii. 171 n.
- Scheld, curious notices of the, i. 32.



- Schomberg, Frederick, Duke of, Marshal, expedition to Ireland, iii. 78 ; death, 89 ; alluded to, iv. 259.
- Schools (*vide* University), various notices of, *abroad*, i. 24, 31, 90, 203, 229, 253, 293 ; *in England*, ii. 5, 54, 72.
- Schotti, Gaspar, a scholar of Father Kircher, i. 125.
- Scipio, Publius Cornelius Africanus, statue of, i. 84.
- Sclater, Edward, apostate curate of Putney, iii. 20 n.
- Sconvelt, Nicholas, famous for his lutes, i. 233.
- Scornful Lady*, performance of, ii. 122.
- Scot, Sir Thomas, and his seat Scotshall, ii. 159.
- Lady Catherine (daughter of Earl of Norwich), ii. 7, 17.
- Major, ii. 112.
- regicide, executed, ii. 118.
- Scotch army, employed against Irish rebels, 1641, iv. 134, 137 ; enters England, 1644, 146 n, 148 ; besieges York, 153 n ; in Wales, 1645, 166 ; promise given by the King regarding those who should go with him to the, 183 ; exacted by King Charles on going to the, 191.
- Scotland, King Charles I.'s expedition to, for arranging with the Parliament there, 1641, iv. 69 n ; his reception there, 70 ; negotiations with the Parliament of, 71 n ; Parliamentary commissioners sent to, 75, 78 n, 83, 84, 92 n, 107 ; various notices concerning the kingdom and Parliament of, 88, 95, 96, 97 and n ; treaty for, 147 ; proceedings concerning, 151 ;
- Scotland—*continued*.  
intrigues of France with, 181 ; dispute with the English Independents, 243, 245 ; King Charles II.'s expedition to, 1650, 198 n ; various tidings from, 1651, 344, 345 ; commissioners for the Union of, ii. 257 ; conduct of the Bishops of, 1689, iii. 62 ; declares for William and Mary, 75 ; Scots Commissioners offer the crown on conditions, 77 ; Episcopacy again voted down in, 79 ; Presbyterians of, 85.
- Scots troops in France, 1648, iv. 331 ; 1650, ii. 16 ; Parliament against their settling in Darien, iii. 149.
- Scotus de la Marca, painting by, ii. 153.
- Scribes in St. Innocent's churchyard, i. 71.
- Scriptures, notices of ancient copies of the, i. 106, 165, 293 ; ii. 77 ; iii. 197.
- illustrations, references, and allusions to the (*see* Reliques), i. 173, 187 ; ii. 4, 10, 20, 29, 31, 37, 38, 49, 54, 55, 69, 75, 76, 77, 79, 81, 88, 92, 95, 100, 103, 104, 105, 108, 109, 115, 120, 121, 123, 132, 138, 142, 174, 178, 186, 192, 197, 202, 210, 233, 235, 243, 273, 285, 286, 287, 289, 291, 304, 309, 317, 318, 320, 321, 324, 325, 335, 347, 348, 358, 360, 361, 373, 374, 385, 394, 403, 415, 425, 430, 436, 437, 440, 458, 461, 475 ; iii. 13, 16, 18, 19, 28, 29, 31, 35, 38, 43, 45, 50, 54, 60, 71, 76, 85, 96, 97, 99, 121, 137, 167, 211, 221, 236, 243, 245, 257.
- Scriveners, company of, ii. 332 n.



- Scroope, Sir Andrew, ii. 157.  
 — Adrian, regicide, executed, ii. 118.  
 — Lady, ii. 421.  
 Scudamore, Mr., ii. 6, 47.  
 Sculptors in Rome, i. 216; in Florence, 227.  
*Sculptura*, by Mr. Evelyn, 1662, i. xlviii, cix; ii. 122, 124, 147 and n; iii. 190, 195, 465.  
 Sea, destruction by, in Holland, i. 15.  
 Sea-coal, project of charring, ii. 87.  
 Seas, dominion of, and fishery, Mr. Evelyn's thoughts on those subjects, iii. 414.  
 Second sight, instance of, ii. 478.  
 Sedans introduced into England, i. 192.  
 Sedley, Sir Charles, iii. 15 n; his daughter Catharine, Countess of Dorchester, *ibid.* n; ii. 292 and n.  
*Sedum Arborescens*, ii. 385.  
 Selden, John, his *Titles of Honour*, ii. 78; executor of, 223; portrait, 444; library, 450; Act of Oblivion, interpreted by, 1641, iv. 75.  
 Seleniscope, ii. 48.  
 Self-denying Act, contest about, iii. 106.  
 Sembrador, brought out of Spain, ii. 233.  
 Senate, or State House, at Delft, i. 18; at Amsterdam, 19; at Antwerp, 31; at Brussels, 33; at Sienna, 110; at Lucca, 221; at Venice, 241; at Brescia, 268.  
 Senetan, Mons., of Paris, ii. 21.  
 Sensitive Plant, experiments on, ii. 133.  
 Senten, Bastian, gallantry of, iii. 392.  
 Septalla, Signior, collection of, i. 274.  
 Septuagint scriptures noticed, ii. 77.  
 Sepulchral monuments (*vide* Inscriptions), various notices of, in England, i. xcvi–ci, 6 n, 12; ii. 39, 40, 45, 50, 52, 59, 62, 63, 64, 68, 70, 99, 100, 222, 244, 271, 283; abroad, i. 18, 19, 23, 24, 27, 39, 43, 66, 67, 77, 85, 90, 102, 111, 115, 116, 120, 125, 126, 132, 133, 134, 142, 144, 145, 152, 159, 174, 179, 183, 190, 191, 194, 196, 197, 200, 204, 205, 207, 211, 215, 221, 224, 226, 230, 234, 248, 249, 251, 263 n, 266, 270, 272; ii. 9; iii. 153.  
*Seraphic Love*, remarks on Mr. Boyle's, iii. 268.  
 Sermon, in blank verse, ii. 178; accounts of sermons, i. 19, 31, 160, 208, 298; ii. 4, 5, 8, 9, 14, 17, 18, 20, 24, 29, 31, 33, 37, 38, 39, 40, 43, 46, 48, 49, 50, 54, 69, 74, 75, 76, 79, 81 and n, 87, 88, 92, 95, 100, 103, 104, 105, 108, 115, 120, 121, 123, 129, 132, 137, 138, 140, 142, 156, 158, 160, 162, 167, 174, 178, 186, 192, 193, 197, 209, 210, 232, 233, 235, 243, 272, 273, 278, 279, 284, 286, 287, 290, 291, 304, 309, 317, 318, 320, 324, 325, 335, 347, 348, 358, 361, 374, 385, 394, 403, 404, 415, 425, 430, 435, 436, 437, 440, 450, 458, 461, 475; iii. 13, 16, 18, 19, 28, 29, 31, 35, 36, 38, 42, 43, 45, 50, 54, 60, 71, 85, 96, 97, 99, 137, 167, 172; an hour and a half long, ii. 361; old-fashioned sermon contrasted with those of 1683, 412.

- Sermoneta, Da (Girolamo Siculo-lante), painting by, i. 150.
- Seven Dials, building of, iii. 118.
- Severall Proceedings*, journal so called, 1652, iv. 261 n, 266 n, 282 n.
- Severus, Lucius Septimius, Emperor of Rome, arch of, i. 120 ; baths, 195.
- Sewers, Commission of, ii. 104, 158.
- Sextons, remarkable instance of longevity in, ii. 68.
- Sextus, Empiricus, iii. 230.
- Seymour, Francis, Lord, summoned by the Queen, 1641, iv. 100 ; notice of the family, 117 n ; house at Marlborough, ii. 52 ; referred to, iv. 147 n, 155.
- Mr., ii. 77.
- Mr. Conyers (son of Sir Edward), killed in a duel, iii. 144.
- Mr., impeaches Earl of Clarendon, ii. 227.
- Mr., speech on elections, 1685, ii. 466.
- Sir Edward, iii. 109 ; notice of, 160.
- Sfrondati, Cardinal Francisco, church built by, i. 194.
- Shaen, Sir James, ii. 318.
- Shaftesbury, Anthony Ashley Cooper, Earl of, ii. 233, 275 n, 287 n, 293 n, 294 ; president of Council for Plantations, 284, 287 ; anecdote of Lord Clifford related by, 296 ; crafty conduct of, 411.
- Shakespeare, William, illustration from, i. 102 n ; portrait of, iii. 444.
- Sharp, Mr. Samuel, surgeon, ii. 285 n.
- Dr. John (afterwards Archbishop of York), attempt to
- Sharp, Dr. John—*continued*.  
silence, for preaching against Roman Catholics, iii. 23, 26 ; sermon before the Commons, 1689, 67 ; other sermons of, 113, 129.
- Shaw, Sir John, house at Eltham, ii. 166.
- Shawsey Island, iv. 278 n.
- Sheen, Abbey of, Lord Brounker's, Sir William Temple's, and Lord Lisle's, ii. 339 ; iii. 44.
- Sheep, remarkable one, ii. 50.
- Sheerness, arsenal at, ii. 196 ; fortified, 220, 277 ; curiosities dug up at, 230.
- Shelden, Dr. Gilbert, Archbishop of Canterbury, translated from London to Canterbury, ii. 161 ; theatre, &c., at Oxford, built by, 170, 237 ; alluded to, 129, 151, 154, 160, 178, 187, 197, 232, 237, 241, 279, 284 ; monument, iii. 153, 154 n ; portrait of, 444 ; sermon of, ii. 123.
- Mr. Edward, iii. 112.
- Ralph, collection of coins, ii. 437 ; iii. 443.
- Mr. (nephew of Archbishop), his house, ii. 338.
- Mrs. Mary, iii. 252.
- Sherard, Lord, ii. 246.
- Shere, Mr. Duncomb's house at, ii. 324.
- Sheriffs of Counties, their retinue, i. 6.
- Sheriffs of London, dispute on the choice of, 1641, iv. 74 n ; bill for, 125 and m.
- Sherlock, Dr. William, iii. 11.
- Sherwin, Mr., trial with Sir Walter Clarges, iii. 152.
- Sherwood Forest, account of, ii. 66.
- Ship of 96 guns built by Cromwell, ii. 76.



- Ship-building, art of, by Sir Anthony Deane, ii. 391; plans for improving, 138, 150, 163, 174, 291, 306.
- Ships, for protecting commerce ordered by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 79 n; curious models of, i. 23; at Venice, 249; captured, 1665, ii. 185; destroyed in war, &c., ii. 179, 182, 195, 197, 220.
- Shipwreck, wonderful story of a, i. 95.
- Shirley, James, his *Young Admiral*, ii. 154 and n.
- Mrs., ii. 106.
- Shish, Mr., vessel built by, ii. 229; account of, 364; vessel built by his son, 404.
- Shoes, various fashions of, ii. 243.
- Shooter's Hill, mineral waters at, iii. 144.
- Shore, Sir Bartholomew, ii. 451 n.
- Short, Dr., consulted by Charles II., iii. 118.
- Shotover, Sir Timothy Tyrrell's house at, ii. 169, 311.
- Shrewsbury, Charles Talbot, Earl of, ii. 355; portrait of, iii. 444.
- the abandoned Countess of, ii. 271, 353 n.
- Duke of, a Commissioner for Greenwich Hospital, iii. 122; his subscription, 133 n; retires from Lord Chamberlainship, 152.
- Shute, Mr. —, 1641, iv. 79 and n; *Sidney Papers* referred to, 207 n.
- Sibbald, Sir Robert, account of, iii. 23 n.
- Sibylla of Cuma, i. 189.
- Siciliano, Giacomo, painting by, i. 130.
- Sick and Wounded, and Prisoners of War, Commissioners appointed, 1664, ii. 172; their seal, &c., 173; proceedings of the Commissioners, 1664–1673, 173, 176, 179, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 191, 192, 193, 194, 196, 197, 198, 199, 203, 204, 211, 212, 217, 218, 221, 223, 229, 273, 277, 278, 280, 281, 283, 284, 285, 297; iii. 318, 321, 322, 323, 325, 326, 327–340.
- Sidney, Lord, offices held by, in Ireland, iii. 90, 92, 110.
- Algernon, apprehended, ii. 409; beheaded, 423; character of, 411, 424; alluded to, 428; story of, 472 n.
- Sir Philip, ii. 44; portrait, iii. 444.
- Lady Dorothy (Waller's Sacharissa), ii. 44 and n.
- Colonel Robert, alleged father of the Duke of Monmouth, ii. 472 and n.
- Sienna, Baltazzar di, arch by, i. 110.
- Sienna, account of, i. 109–112, 220; towers of, 110; courts of, *ibid.*; university, 111; church and cathedral, *ibid.*, 112, 220; hospital, 112; St. Francis' church, &c., *ibid.*
- Sightsman at Rome, i. 118 and n.
- Silhon, M., work of, mentioned, iii. 213.
- Silk stockings, engine for weaving, ii. 130.
- Silver, bells, i. 23; bedsteads and tables, 98; lamps, 109.
- Simon, Father Richard, his *Histoire Critique*, iii. 410.
- Simons, Abraham, medal engraver, &c., ii. 47.
- Simplon, Mount, i. 281, 284, 286.
- Simson, Mr., agate cup in his possession, ii. 75.



- Singers in Rome, i. 218.  
 Sion, Switzerland, i. 284.  
 Sion, Earl of Northumberland's seat, ii. 185.  
 Sirana, Elisabetta, painter, i. 232.  
 Sissac, Marquis de, loss of, at play, ii. 321.  
 Sixtus IV., Pope, his statue, i. 145.  
 Sixtus V., horses on Monte Cavallo repaired by, i. 128; aqueduct, 130; chapel, 132; Constantine's pillar re-erected by, 147; Vatican partly built by, 162; destroys the Septizonium, 196; Augustine obelisk set up by, 203; statue of St. Peter on Trajan's column, 205.  
 Skates, introduction of, into England, ii. 155.  
 Skinner, Dr. Robert, Bishop of Bristol, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.  
 Skippon, Sir Philip, his account of Wotton's early talents, ii. 350 n.  
 — Serjeant - Major - General Philip, iv. 124 n.  
 Skipwith, Sir Fulmar, iv. 147 and n.  
 Sky, remarkable appearance in, 1643, i. 39.  
 Slaning, Sir Nicholas, his marriage, ii. 154.  
 Slaves, at Marseilles, i. 91, 92; at Leghorn, 103.  
 Slayer, Dr., chemical experiment by, iii. 11.  
 Slingsby, Sir Arthur, goes to Paris, ii. 7; his lottery, 166 *bis*; character of, *ibid.*; governor of Portsmouth, 481.  
 Slingsby, Mr., Master of the Mint, ii. 151; Commissioner for repair of Old St. Paul's, 199; his house at Burrow Green, 247; Secretary to Council for Trade, Slingsby, Mr.—*continued.*  
 &c., 261; a lover of music, 304, 358; alluded to, 154, 222, 248, 336, 355, 437; his decayed circumstances, iii. 42.  
 Sloane, Sir Hans, Secretary to Royal Society, iii. 140; his collection, 93.  
 Small pox, ravages of, 1646, i. 287, 288, 289; 1660, ii. 117, 121; 1685, 452, 456; 1694, 119.  
 Smith, Mr., speech in House of Commons about election of officers, &c., iv. 115 and n.  
 — Capt., iv. 133; his gallantry at battle of Edgehill, 1642, 118 and n.  
 — Sir Jer., bravery of, ii. 291.  
 — Mr. Robert, marriage of, ii. 44.  
 — Mr. (Commissioner of Treasury), his subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.  
 — Mr. John, Speaker of House of Commons, iii. 172.  
 — "Dog," benefactor to Surrey, iii. 476.  
 Smithfield, woman burned in, 1652, ii. 39.  
 Smyrna Fleet, attack on, 1672, ii. 274, 281; earthquake at Smyrna, 1688, iii. 54.  
 Smyth, Capt., iv. 278, 303, 312; taken prisoner by the rebels, 1656, 312 n.  
 Snake, Virginian rattle, ii. 94.  
 Snape, Andrew, King's farrier, father of Dr. Snape, ii. 404 and n.  
 Snatt, Edward, schoolmaster at Southover, i. 5; his son a non-juring clergyman, 1696, iii. 129 n.  
 Sneider, paintings by, i. 61.  
 Snows in the Alps, i. 282.

- Snow-water, its effects on the people of the Alps, i. 280.
- Soames, Sir William, Ambassador to Constantinople, ii. 476.
- Society for Propagating the Gospel, allowance to Missionaries, 1702, iii. 162.
- Soiret, Mons., iv. 221, 224.
- Solan Geese, notice of, ii. 178.
- Soldiers, spoliations of the Parliamentary, ii. 69; quartering of, in private houses prevented, in 1685, by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 473.
- Solitude, Essay on*, by Sir George Mackenzie, answered, ii. 214 and n; iii. 85, 190, 196.
- Solomon, Proverbs of, exquisitely written, ii. 55.
- Somers, John, Lord, made Lord Keeper, iii. 108; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n; elected, when Lord Chancellor, President of the Royal Society, 140; charge brought by Parliament against, 148 and n; seals taken from him, 152; his talents, *ibid.*; continued President of Royal Society, 155; trial of, 158; his *Collection of Tracts* referred to, iv. 121 n.
- Somerset, Lord John, i. 117, 199.
- Duke of, estate left to, 1705, iii. 171.
- Duchess of, letter of, iv. 26.
- Lady Anne, ii. 269.
- Sorbiere, Samuel, account of, and remarks on his *Voyage to England*, iii. 294-298.
- Sorbonne, Paris, account of, i. 49.
- Soul, remarks on its immortality, iii. 241-244.
- Sourdiac, Marquis de, iv. 278.
- South, Dr. Robert, University Orator, ii. 238; alluded to, South, Dr. Robert—*continued*.  
iii. 25; sermons of, ii. 162, 335.
- Southampton, Thomas Wriothesley, Earl of, Lord Treasurer, ii. 84, 167, 177, 295; iv. 110 m, 114, 130, 147 n, 149, 154, 155 *bis*, 156, 160, 164, 187, 195 m; King Charles I. requires his attendance in Parliament, 1641, 137; portrait, iii. 444.
- Duke of, ii. 322 n.
- Southampton House Chapel, ii. 246.
- Southcott, Sir John, ii. 25.
- Southover, Sussex, Free-school at, i. xviii, 5.
- Southwark Fair, 1660, ii. 117; iii. 105; suppressed, 1692, iii. 105.
- Southwell, Sir Robert, on *Water*, ii. 309; Envoy to Brandenburg, &c., 364; Secretary of State in Ireland, iii. 91; President, &c., of Royal Society, 91, 111, 140; iv. 27.
- Soutman, Peter, engraving by, i. 272 n.
- Souvray, Commandeur de, Ambassador for Knights of Malta, 1648, iv. 342.
- "Sovereign," Ship of War, built by the tax called Ship-money, i. 14; burned, *ibid.*, n; iii. 126.
- Spa Wells, Islington, iii. 23.
- Spada, Cardinal, palace of, i. 199.
- Spain, expected war with England, 1656, iv. 319 n.
- Queen of, catafalco of, 1645, i. 200.
- Spain and Portugal, umpirage between, 1666, ii. 193.
- Spanheim, Ezekiel, author of *Treatise on Medals*, ii. 316; iv. 17.
- Spanish Ambassador at Venice, i. 262; in England, 1665, ii. 184.



- Spanish Galleon, weighed up near Hispaniola, 1687, iii. 38 ; taken at Vigo, 1702, 163.
- Spanish Plants and Trees, iii. 355, 358-360.
- Sparrow, Dr. Anthony, Bishop of Exeter, sermon of, ii. 290.
- Speed, John, his *Map of Surrey* referred to, ii. 190 n.
- Spelman, Mr. (grandson of Sir Henry), ii. 120.
- Spencer, George John, Earl, his house at Wimbledon, ii. 143 n.
- Lord (son of Earl of Sunderland), intended marriage of, ii. 382 ; character, *ibid.* ; iii. 53 ; alluded to, 91 ; his marriage, 119 ; library, 142 ; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, on collections of familiar letters, 434 ; on his Lordship making a tour, 475.
- Mr. (brother of the Earl of Sunderland), ii. 44, 84 ; sons of, 25.
- Lady Anne, marriage to the Earl of Arran, iii. 42, 53 ; alluded to, 424 ; death of, 461.
- Charles, younger son of Earl of Sunderland (afterwards Earl), iii. 53, 164.
- Martha, married Mr. Evelyn's son, ii. 361.
- Robert, ii. 240, 311.
- Colonel, ii. 116.
- Mr., iv. 338.
- Spenser, Edmund, his portrait, iii. 444.
- Spilbergh, J., view by, ii. 213 n.
- Spin-house at Amsterdam, i. 19.
- Spinola, Marquis, river cut by, i. 36 ; gardens, 99 ; letters, iv. 26.
- Sports of Geneva in Switzerland, i. 290, 292.
- Spragge, Admiral, his expedition against Smyrna Fleet, ii. 274.
- Sprat, Dr. Thomas, Bishop of Rochester, ii. 239 ; his preaching, 314, 359, 374, 404, 424, 461 ; Dean of Royal Chapel, iii. 15 ; a Commissioner for ecclesiastical affairs, 25, 26 ; resigns, 53 ; his form of prayer, 1688, on the young Prince's birth, 49 ; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, respecting his observations on Sorbiere, 294.
- Spring Garden, 1649, ii. 5 ; 1654, 51 ; 1658, 100 ; Spring Garden at Lambeth, 132.
- Springs at Tours, i. 82.
- Spy Park, Sir Ed. Baynton's, ii. 58.
- Squirries, at Westerham in Kent, ii. 102.
- Stafford, William Howard, Viscount, ii. 24, 246 ; antipathy to roses, *ibid.* ; committed for Popish plot, 348 ; trial and condemnation, 246 n, 374-379 ; behaviour on his trial, 379 ; beheaded, 246 n, 380.
- P., Superior of English Jesuits at Rome, i. 198.
- Stag, remains of a gigantic one, i. 79.
- Staircase, at Chambourg, i. 76 ; in the Vatican, 166.
- Staly executed, ii. 345.
- Stamford, Mayor of, addresses King Charles I. on his return from Scotland, iv. 145 n.
- Standish, Dr., ii. 475.
- Standfield, John and Eleanor, i. *Pedig.*, 4, 5 ; ii. 49.
- Stanhope, Lord, ii. 14, 19.
- Lady, ii. 320.
- Dr. George, Dean of Canterbury, discourses of, iii. 113, 125.
- Mr., Gentleman Usher, ii. 246.



- Stanley, Mr., ii. 108 ; killed in a duel, iii. 17.
- Stapleton, Sir Robert, translator of Juvenal, ii. 52.
- Col., Governor of St. Christopher's, ii. 278.
- Star Chamber, proceedings of, against London, iv. 80 n ; suspension of Bishop Williams by, 99 n.
- Starkey, —, Lord Clarendon's estimate of, iv. 256.
- Stationers' Company, their great loss in the fire of London, ii. 205 ; iii. 258.
- Statues and Sculptures, names and notices of various, i. 15, 25, 30, 32, 34, 36, 43-47, 48, 52, 54, 56, 63, 74, 77, 84, 90, 97-100, 101, 102, 104-112, 114, 118-123, 126, 127-145, 147, 151, 152, 156, 157, 167, 169, 170, 173, 178, 179, 180, 196, 199, 200-203, 205, 208, 212, 214, 216, 220, 223, 224, 225-229, 230, 234, 239, 243, 248, 251-254, 258, 267, 270, 271, 292 ; ii. 10, 12, 33, 67, 85, 146, 152, 190, 255 n, 256, 257, 258 and n ; iii. 30, 42, 153.
- Staves, Mr. Evelyn's correspondence with M. Casaubon respecting his father's Treatise on, iii. 371, 372, 374, 398 ; fragment by Mr. Evelyn on this subject, 190 n, 374 n.
- Stawell, Sir Edward, ii. 25.
- Stenwick, Henry, paintings by, i. 34, 60 ; ii. 1, 2.
- Stephen, King of England, his tomb at Gloucester, ii. 62 and n.
- Stephen, Mr., attorney, ii. 311.
- Stephens, William, sermon on 30th of January censured, iii. 149 ; notice of him, 149 n.
- Stephens, Mr., iv. 241, 242.
- Mr., cousin of Mr. Evelyn, ii. 6, 8, 61, 88.
- Sterne, Dr. Richard, Archbishop of York, iii. 105.
- Stewart, Dr., Dean of St. Paul's, ii. 25, 31 n ; iv. 147 n ; his illness, 253 and n ; his death, ii. 31.
- Stidolph, Sir F., house at Mickleham, ii. 78.
- Lady, ii. 336.
- Stiles, Rev. Dr., his *History of Three of the Judges of Charles I.*, iv. 193 n.
- Stillington, Dr. Edward, Bishop of Worcester, iii. 45, 101 ; his library, 143.
- Stoake, North, Sussex, estate at, iii. 156.
- Stokes, Dr., ii. 74, 85 ; perpetual motion, 231.
- dancing-master, book by, i. 9 and n.
- Stola Tybertina at Rome, i. 195.
- Stone, Sir Robert, i. 17.
- Stone, operation for the, ii. 12.
- Stonehenge, description of, ii. 60.
- Stonehouse, Sir John, his daughter-in-law married to Mr. Evelyn's son, ii. 359, 360, 361 ; her portion, 360 ; Lady Stonehouse, 103.
- Stones, *Discourse on*, by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 190.
- Stooper, Monsieur, speech of, ii. 114.
- Storm, in 1652, ii. 43 ; 1662, 144 ; 1687, iii. 37 ; 1689, 77 ; 1690, 81.
- Stoves, of St. Germain, i. 185 ; of Germany, ii. 80.
- Strada del Corso, i. 200, 202.
- Famianus, i. 155.
- Nova, at Genoa, i. 99.

- Strada Pontificia, i. 200.  
 — Romana, at Sienna, i. 111.  
 Strade, Count de la, liberal conduct of, ii. 35, 38.  
 Stradling, Sir William, i. 17.  
 — Dr., ii. 161.  
 Strafford, Thomas Wentworth, Earl of, ii. 9; iv. 133 n; Lord Bristol's hostility to, 110 n; referred to, 122 n, 229 n; his trial and execution, i. 13.  
 — Lord, son of preceding, ii. 25.  
 Strangeways, Sir John, supports King Charles I.'s right to elect his Counsellors, &c., iv. 116 and n.  
 Straw, for brick-making, ii. 369.  
 Strawberry Hill, curious painting at, ii. 133 n.  
 Streeter, Robert, paintings by, ii. 166, 257, 286, 355, 397; tormented with the stone, ii. 305 and n.  
 Streets, &c., of London, Commission for regulating, &c., ii. 144, 148, 159.  
 Strickland, Sir Thomas, ii. 265.  
 — Mr. Walter, iv. 233.  
 Stringfellow, Mr., minister of Trinity Chapel, sermons by, iii. 97, 112, 118, 148.  
 Strood, Sir Nicholas, ii. 168.  
 Stroode, Col., Lieutenant of Dover Castle, ii. 176.  
 Stuart, Lady Catherine, ii. 301 n.  
 — Mrs. Frances, the celebrated beauty, ii. 301 n.  
 — James, Regent of Scotland, iv. 26.  
 Stubbe, Henry, hostile to Royal Society, iii. 357 n.  
 Sturbridge Fair, ii. 71.  
 Subterranean rivers, i. 289.  
 Suburbs of Paris, i. 47.  
 Suckling, Sir John, proceedings of the Parliament against, 1641, iv. 71.  
 Sudarium of St. Veronica, i. 143, 209.  
 Suffolk, Thomas Howard, Earl of, his palace at Audley End, ii. 73.  
 —, Countess of, 1674, ii. 305.  
 Suffolk House, near Charing Cross, ii. 73, 101.  
 Suidas, ancient MS. of, iii. 142.  
 Sulphur, manufactory of, i. 186.  
 Sun, eclipse of 1652, ii. 39; 1699, iii. 144; transit of Mercury before, 1664, ii. 170.  
 Sunderland, Earl of, his widow, 1652, ii. 44.  
 — Lord, Ambassador to Spain, 1671, ii. 265; and France, 1672, 286; his seat at Althorp, 312; Vorsterman's view of it, 334; Secretary of State, 355; his unfeeling conduct respecting Lord Ossory, 365, 366; sunk by gaming, and out of favour at Court, 1681, 382; President of the Council and Secretary of State, 1685, iii. 11, 17; a commissioner for ecclesiastical affairs, 25; Knight of the Garter, 37; marriage of his daughter, 42; the Seals taken away from, &c., 1688, 57; meditates flight, 61, 62; kisses the King's hand on his return from Holland, 1691, 94; his library 120; entertains William III. at Althorp, 125; a favourite, and obnoxious to the people, 126; alluded to, ii. 84, 406, 440, 476; iii. 140, 172 and n.  
 — (Lady Anne Spencer), Countess of, 1671, ii. 266, 286, 317, 318, 346, 356, 365; (match



- Sunderland, Countess of—*continued*.  
 for her son proposed by, 382), 414, 440, 458, 461; iii. 27, 29, 57, 78, 94, 130; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, inclosing a catalogue of religious books for her use, 424; on the advantages of virtue in youth, 421; consoling her on the death of her daughter, Countess of Arran, 460; on his own publications, 463.
- Superstition, instances of, 1641, iv. 80 n, 116 n, 125 n; 1656, 314.
- Superstitious Rites, &c., prohibited by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 83 n.
- Supper, Paschal, represented in wax-work, ii. 278; of Leonardo da Vinci, i. 272.
- Surrey, address to the Parliament, 1648, i. 297; to the King, 1681, ii. 383; 1697, iii. 137.
- Sussex, separate sheriff given to, i. 2 n; address to the King, 1660, ii. 114.
- Thomas Sackville, Earl of, iv. 155, 167 n.
- Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of (temp. Q. Eliz.), ii. 86.
- James Saville, Earl of, ii. 126.
- Countess of, daughter of Charles II., ii. 305 n, 322 and n, 389.
- Sutton, Sir Edward, his skill on the Irish harp, ii. 233.
- Sutton in Shere, Mr. Hussey's house, ii. 252, 384.
- Swallowfield, Berkshire, Lady Clarendon's house and gardens, iii. 5.
- Swann, Sir William iv. 218.
- Lady, iv. 220.
- Swart, Capt., in navy of Charles II., 1653, iv. 279.
- Swearing, declaration against, set forth, iii. 150.
- Sweate, Dr., Dean of the Arches, ii. 161.
- Sweden, Cecilia, Princess of, iv. 26.
- Swiss Guards of France, ii. 27.
- Switzerland, travelling in, i. 278–292; vexatious adventure in, 281; snow in the mountains of, 282, 283; fertility of, 284; the Rhone and Rhine, 283, 287, 289, 292, 293; Chamois goats, 284; Martigni, 285; persons, manners, and language of the Swiss, *ibid.*, 286, 289, 291, 293; St. Maurice, 286; Lake of Geneva, 287, 289, 292; sports of the Campus Martius, 290, 291.
- Sydenham, wells at, ii. 314.
- Sylva, or Discourse of Forest Trees*, 1664, &c., by Mr. Evelyn, publication of, i. l, cix; ii. 153, 154, 163; 2nd edition, 243; 3rd edition, iii. 191; other editions, 190, 195; allusions to the work in a letter of Mr. Evelyn to Lady Sunderland, 463; thanked for it by Charles II., ii. 171; referred to, 220.
- Sylvius, Sir Gabriel, ii. 214, 333, 404; his mission to Denmark, 467.
- Synagogue at Amsterdam, i. 19.
- See* Jews.
- TAAFE, Theobald, 2nd Viscount, Charles II.'s Envoy to Duke of Lorraine, 1652, iv. 262 and n.
- Taberna Meritoria of the Romans, i. 159.
- Tacca, Pietro, statue by, i. 109.
- Ταχυπλοία, Περὶ, by Isaac Vossius, iii. 421.



- Talbot, Sir Gilbert, Master of the Jewel-house, ii. 150 ; alluded to, 286 ; iii. 393, 394.
- Sherrington (son of Sir John), killed in a duel, ii. 469.
- Tangiers given to the English, 1661, ii. 139 ; expedition to, 365, 366.
- Tapestry, at Hampton Court, ii. 146 ; at Duchess of Portsmouth's, 420.
- Tarente, Henry Charles de la Tremouille, Prince of, 1654, iv. 208 and n.
- Emilia, of Hesse Cassel, Princess of, 1654, iv. 208 and n ; portrait, 213.
- Targoni, altar by, i. 150.
- Tarrare, notice of, i. 86.
- Tatham, John, pageants by, ii. 137 n, 150 n, 153 n, 172 n.
- Taunton, siege of, iv. 159 n.
- Tax money from Scotland, robbery of, 1692, iii. 105.
- Taxes during the Usurpation, ii. 79.
- Taxus, or Deadly Yew, i. 221.
- Taylor, Dr. Jeremy, Bishop of Down and Connor, Mr. Evelyn's spiritual adviser, ii. 76 ; his work on *Original Sin*, 83 ; iii. 216 ; disputes with M. le Franc, and procures his Ordination, ii. 83 ; his *Cases of Conscience*, 90 ; iii. 211 ; Sermons of, ii. 46, 76, 100 ; various allusions to, 83, 92, 100, 361 ; iii. 203 n, 207 n, 211 n ; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, on his imprisonment, 1654, 203, 205 ; on the depressed state of the Church, 1655, 205-207 ; on retiring from the world, and his *Lucretius*, 1656, 214-216 ; to the Lieutenant of the Tower on his behalf, 227 ; with a pre-
- Taylor, Dr. Jeremy—*continued*, sent, 1657, 236 ; to christen his son, 238 ; letters of, to Mr. Evelyn commending his piety and noticing one of his own works, 1655, 208 ; on the state of the Church, &c., 209-211 ; thanking him for his hospitality, and remarking on his *Lucretius*, 1656, 212 ; on his own circumstances and publications, 215 ; on his literary works, and the translation of *Lucretius*, 217 ; on the loss of his children, 1657, 233 ; thanking him for a present, 237 ; on christening his son, 239 ; on the immortality of the soul, 240 ; on the loss of his son Richard, 1658, 245 ; on the offer of a lectureship, 248 ; on literary subjects, 253, 256 ; on *Essence of Roses*, 1656, 255 ; on the state of the Church, 274 ; on Mr. Evelyn's writings, 1660, 275 ; on the same, 1661, 281.
- Taylor, Capt., case against Lord Mordaunt, ii. 212.
- Charles II.'s agent in Germany, 1652, Sir Edward Hyde's opinion of, iv. 256.
- Teignmouth, French troops landed at, 1690, iii. 89.
- Tempesta, Antonio, work of, i. 146.
- Temple, Sir Purbeck, iii. 123 ; death of, 124, 150.
- Lady Purbeck, trial with her nephew, Mr. Temple, iii. 132 ; her funeral and property, 150.
- Sir William, his house at Sheene, ii. 339 ; iii. 45 ; alluded to, ii. 350 n, 388.
- Mrs., iii. 45.

- Temple Bar, human quarters set up at, iii. 128.
- Temple, Inner, revels at, iii. 138.
- Middle, revels at, i. 38 ; ii. 228.
- Temple, Marais de, at Paris, notice of, i. 52.
- Temples, notices of various, i. 106, 110, 120, 124, 174, 186, 189, 190, 195, 206, 208, 216, 272 ; ii. 64.
- Tendring, John, works of, iii. 254.
- Teneriffe, Peak of, Relation of the*, by Mr. Evelyn, ii. 124.
- Tenison, Dr. Thomas (Archbishop of Canterbury), Vicar of St. Martin's, ii. 374 ; character, &c., of, *ibid.*, 403 ; iii. 96, 97 ; library founded by, at St. Martin's, ii. 428, 470 ; iii. 451 ; sermons of, ii. 430, 450, 461 ; iii. 19, 35, 54, 96, 108 ; chapel in Conduit-street opened by, which he intended for a parish church, 96 ; Bp. of Lincoln, 100 ; a Trustee for the Boyle Lecture, 101, 111, 169 ; on the author of *Whole Duty of Man*, 104 ; tabernacle near Golden-square, set up by, 107 ; Abp. of Canterbury, 119 ; a Commissioner for Greenwich Hospital, 122 ; visit of Mr. Evelyn at Lambeth, 123 ; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 133 n ; opinion respecting proceedings against Bp. Watson, 134 ; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, 467, 476 ; alluded to, ii. 430, 460, 470, 471 ; iii. 35, 51, 100, 108, 118, 125, 142.
- Terra*, by Mr. Evelyn, 1675, i. lxix, cxv ; ii. 309 ; iii. 190, 196.
- Terracina, formerly Anxur, i. 174.
- Terra di Lavoro, i. 176.
- Terrasso, Marco, lapidary, i. 263.
- Terrella, notice of, ii. 76.
- Terringham, Colonel, iv. 164.
- Test, sacramental, &c., 1673, ii. 291, 293 ; 1678, doubts respecting taking it, ii. 346 ; 1685, iii. 10 ; remarks on, 1689, 74, 76.
- Testacæus, Mons, at Rome, i. 195.
- Testament, New, in vulgar Latin MS., iii. 121.
- Teviot, Earl of, ii. 164.
- Teviot, Lord, a Commissioner of Privy Seal, iii. 14, 426.
- Teviotdale, Lord, a Scotch nobleman, ii. 356.
- Thames, river, frozen over, 1648, ii. 1 ; triumphant pageant on the, in honour of the Queen of Charles II., 1662, ii. 150 and n ; fog on the, 254 ; design of wharfing from the Temple to the Tower, 214, 215, 224 ; frozen over, 1662, 155 ; streets of booths, coaches, &c., and amusements, upon it, 1684, ii. 425-428 ; frozen over, 1695, 119.
- Thanet, Countess of, iii. 480.
- Thea Root, iii. 86.
- Theatre, curious model of one, i. 60 ; Marcellus at Rome, i. 124 ; at Vincenza, 264.
- Theatres recommended by Mr. Evelyn to be closed during Lent, iii. 301, 302. *See* Plays.
- Theobaldi, building by, i. 270.
- Theobald's Palace in Hertfordshire, King Charles I. at, 1641, iv. 143, 144.
- Thetford, town of, ii. 325.
- Thicknesse, James, of Balliol College, a friend of Mr. Evelyn, i. 9 ; travels with him, 41, 84, 257.



- Thistlethwaite, Dr., sermon of, ii. 286.
- Thistleworth, seat of Sir Clepesby Crewe, i. 297.
- Thomas, Dr. William, Bp. of Worcester, conscientious scruples of, iii. 72 n.
- Thomond, Lord, house at Newmarket, ii. 248.
- Thomson, —, his report of a battle in Scotland, iv. 214.
- Thornhill, Mr., ii. 79.
- Thorp, Baron, 1649, iv. 348.
- Thorpe, seat of the regicide St. John, ii. 70.
- Thou, President François Auguste de, ii. 13.
- Thrisco, Mr., ii. 109.
- Throckmorton, Sir William, letters of, iv. 26.
- Thurland, Sir Edward, ii. 230, 313 ; iii. 216 and n, 233 and n ; a trustee for the sale of Albury, 203 n ; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, 202 ; on his *Treatise on Prayer*, 228 ; about a travelling tutor for Lord Percy, 249.
- Thurnheuser, a German chemist, i. 108.
- Thynne, Lady Isabella, painting of, ii. 2.
- Mr., his marriage with the widow of Lord Ogle, ii. 386 ; murder of, 392 ; his monument in Westminster Abbey, *ibid.* n.
- Mr., iii. 11.
- Thyrsander, a dramatic piece by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 194.
- Tickenhall, notice of, iv. 152 and n.
- Tilbury Fort, built, ii. 277.
- Tillotson, Dr. John, ii. 232 ; sermon of, on the Papists, 345 ; iii. 29, 71 ; Archbishop of Canterbury, 93, 94, 95 ; his *Rule of Faith*, 342 ; allusions to, ii. 239, 403 n ; iii. 99.
- Tintoretto, Il (Giacomo Robusti), paintings by, i. 242, 252 ; ii. 44, 255 n ; iii. 129.
- Tippin, Mr., sermon by, iii. 110.
- Tirel, Colonel, iv. 330.
- Tithe Ale, ii. 69.
- Titian (Tiziano Vecelli da Cadore), paintings by, i. 34, 60, 61, 107, 156, 194, 224, 225, 226, 237, 251 ; ii. 18, 101, 119, 347, 371, 441 ; iii. 129 ; tomb of, i. 252.
- Titles of Honour*, by Selden, ii. 78.
- Titus, triumphal arch of, i. 134 ; baths and statues from, 152 ; drawings of his Amphitheatre, ii. 15.
- Titus, Col. Silas, author of *Killing no Murder*, ii. 236, 261, 376 ; iii. 50.
- Tivoli, i. 215.
- Todd, Rev. H. J., his edition of *Milton* referred to, ii. 80 n, 279 n.
- Toledo, Peter di, i. 185 ; palace of, 187.
- Toleration, universal declaration of, 1672, ii. 276.
- Tombs, Mr., his garden, ii. 51.
- Tomson, M., a merchant of Genoa, i. 96.
- Jesuit, curiosities consigned to his care from China, ii. 165.
- Tong, Dr. Ezrael, Popish conspiracy discovered by him and Oates, ii. 343 ; account of him, *ibid.* n ; his *Modern Practice of the Jesuits*, 175 n.
- Tonnage and Poundage, Bill of, passed, 1641, ii. 116 ; iv. 71 n, 91 ; Act of, Navy provided for by, 79 and n ; allowance to merchants by, omitted by Parliament, supplied by Charles I.,



- Tonnage and Poundage, *continued*.  
81, 82; necessity of, for the exigencies of the King, 104.
- Tooke, Benjamin, letter of Mr. Evelyn to, transmitting Discourse of Medals for publication, iii. 478; admitted to a share in the *Sylva*, iv. 14.
- Torre d'Asinello, account of the, i. 229; measure of the, 232.
- della Pallada, i. 269.
- Torrington, Earl of, imprisonment of, 1690, iii. 89.
- Torso of Amphion and Dirce, i. 119.
- Torture, account of a malefactor undergoing the punishment of, ii. 21, 22.
- Totes, in Normandy, notice of, i. 66.
- Tournon, Castle at, i. 88.
- Tours, account of the city of, i. 79-82; ii. 65.
- Tower of London, garrison reinforced, 1641, iv. 71; danger of the, in the great fire, ii. 205.
- Towers, Dr. John, Bishop of Peterborough, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 n.
- Townshend, Lord, seat of, i. 40 n; creation of, ii. 126.
- Trade, Council of, recommended, iv. 4. *See* Plantations.
- Tradescant, John, Museum and family portraits of, ii. 94, 337 and n.
- Trained bands keep guard over London, night and day, iv. 107; guard the Parliament, 113.
- Trajan, Column of, at Rome, i. 205; iii. 408.
- Transubstantiation, Mr. Evelyn's sentiments on, iii. 381.
- Travels in France and Italy, hints for, iii. 224, 251.
- Travers, Mr., King's surveyor, iii. 122.
- Treacle, &c., drugs used in manufacture of, ii. 108.
- Trean, merchant, his collection of pictures, ii. 2.
- Treaty at Uxbridge, Charles I.'s Memorial concerning, iv. 152.
- Treby, Sir George (Lord Chief Justice), Recorder of London, ii. 375, 419; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n; his death, 155.
- Tredagh prepares against Irish Rebels, 1641, iv. 134.
- Tree in the centre of France, i. 85.
- Trees, their anatomy and vegetative motion, iii. 278-280.
- Trelawney, Sir John, Bp. of Bristol, one of the petitioners against James II.'s Declaration of Liberty of Conscience, iii. 47 n; sent to the Tower, 48; acquitted, 49.
- Tremellius, Emanuel, letters of, iv. 26.
- Trenchard, Sir John, Secretary of State, iii. 108 and n.
- Mr., apprehended for the plot, 1683, ii. 409; enlarged, 424.
- Tresoro di San Marco, i. 241.
- Tres Tabernæ, i. 173.
- Trevor, Sir John, ii. 261; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Tria Fontana, Church of, i. 168.
- Tribuna, a splendid cabinet so called, i. 106.
- Trinita del Monte at Rome, i. 202.
- Trinity, Platonists MSS. concerning the, iii. 125.
- Trinity Chapel, Conduit Street, account of, iii. 96 and n; first sermon in, *ibid.*, 97.

- Trinity College, Cambridge, ii. 71.
- House, incorporated, ii. 143; great dinner at, 1665, 180; Corporation of, re-assembles after the plague, 196; land for their alms-houses given by Sir R. Browne, 260; Mr. Evelyn, Lord Ossory, and Mr. Evelyn's son chosen younger brothers (Sir R. Browne and Sir Jer. Smith, masters), 289, 291; annual festival of the, 263; account of a meeting, 1685, 474.
- Triplet, Dr., ii. 84 and n.
- Triumphal Arches in Rome, i. 154.
- Trollop, Mrs., marriage of, ii. 372.
- Trout, excellent in the Rhone, i. 287; at Hungerford, ii. 54; spearing of, 60.
- Truffles, earth-nuts, i. 88.
- Trumball, Sir William, subscribes to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Tudor, Mr., Quinquina introduced by, iii. 118.
- Tufton, Sir John, ii. 77.
- Tuileries, Palace, account of, i. 53; gardens, *ibid.*, 55.
- Tuke, Sir Brian, portrait of, by Holbein, ii. 339.
- Sir Charles (son of Sir Samuel), birth, ii. 264; death, and character of, iii. 90, 252.
- George, marriage, ii. 84; alluded to, 91, 105; play by, 156, 157; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on his brother's turning Roman Catholic, iii. 252.
- Col. Sir Samuel, his proselytism to the Church of Rome, and account of him, iii. 252 n; at Paris, ii. 8; harangue
- Tuke, Col. Sir Samuel—*continued.* on behalf of Papists, and transaction at Colchester, 114; sent to break the marriage of the Duke to the Queen Mother, 118; sent to Paris to condole on the death of Card. Mazarin, 125; his marriage, 165, 230; christening of his son, 264; speech in the House of Lords on behalf of the Papists, 289; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the Fire of London, and on the death of his wife, 208 n; iii. 343; his death, iv. 59; alluded to, ii. 112, 163, 269.
- Lady, ii. 290, 300, 429, 457, 461; letter of Mrs. Evelyn to, on death of Sir Samuel, iv. 59.
- Tulliola, daughter of Cicero, supposed corpse of, discovered, i. 174.
- Tully, Dr., suspended from his cure, iii. 23.
- Tully's Offices*, an early printed book, iii. 142.
- Tunbridge Free School, ii. 182 and n.
- Tunbridge Wells, beauties of, ii. 41, 43, 134.
- Turberville, evidence against Visc. Stafford, ii. 376.
- Turenne, Marshal, iv. 273 n, 298 n.
- Turgu, Marshal, iv. 286.
- Turk christened at Rome, i. 204.
- Turk, a rope-dancer so called, ii. 93 and n.
- Turkey Fleet destroyed by storm, 1693, iii. 112.
- Turks, costly equipments of, in the field, ii. 438.
- Turner, Dr. Francis (Bp. of Ely), Dean of Windsor, ii. 406;



- Turner, Dr. Francis—*continued*.  
 sermon by, when Bp. of Rochester, 430; other sermons, 436; iii. 16; petitions James II. against Declaration of Liberty of Conscience, 47; sent to the Tower, 48; tried and acquitted, 49; at a meeting of Bishops in 1689, respecting the Succession, 62; deprived for not taking the oaths to William and Mary, 92 and n, 93; at Bp. White's funeral, 139; alluded to, ii. 429; iii. 11.
- Dr. Thomas (brother of Bp. of Ely), sermon by, iii. 13.
- Mr., a friend of Mr. Slingsby, ii. 247.
- Turnham Green, Sir John Chardine's house at, iii. 171.
- Turquoise, a remarkable one, i. 108, 225.
- Tuscany, Prince of, visit to Royal Society, ii. 236.
- Duke of, his singular trade, i. 105.
- Twickenham Park, Lord Berkeley's seat, ii. 318.
- Twisden, Sir Roger, ii. 188.
- Mrs. Letter of Charles II. about the George and Seals of Charles I., iv. 200.
- Typography, invention of, i. 25.
- Tyrannus, or the Mode*, 1661, a pamphlet by Mr. Evelyn, i. xlvii, cviii; ii. 140; iii. 190, 195; anecdote relative to, ii. 210.
- Tyrconnell, Earl of, powers given to in Ireland, 1686, iii. 23, 27; appointed Lord Lieutenant, 31; Ireland endangered by his army, 1689, 68, 72; alluded to, 89, 90, 425 n.
- Tyrrill, Sir Timothy, and Mr., ii. 35; iii. 453; house at Shotover, ii. 169, 311.
- Tyson, Dr. Edward, anatomist, ii. 415 and n.
- UBALDINO, letters of, iv. 26.
- Udiné, Da' (Giovanni Nanni), painting by, i. 162 n.
- Ulefield Oxenstiern, Count Cornelius, iii. 297 and n.
- Ulmarini, Count, of Vincenza, his garden, i. 265.
- Union, a fine sort of pearl, i. 202 and n.
- University of Leyden, i. 23; of Paris, 47; of Orleans, 75; of Bourges, 84; of Valence, 89; of Aix, 90; of Sienna, 111; of Padua, 253; of Oxford, visits to, ii. 54-58.
- College, Oxon, repair of, ii. 312.
- Upman, Mr., ii. 321.
- Upnor Castle, fortified, ii. 219, 283.
- Uppingham, Rutland, notice of, ii. 63.
- Urban VIII., Pope, public works, &c., of, i. 143, 163, 166, 201; his monument, 145; statue, 173.
- Ursino, Fulvio, museum of, i. 118.
- Ushant, Isle of, enterprise against, 1653, iv. 279.
- Usher, Dr. James, Archbishop of Armagh, ii. 273; iv. 99 n; sermons of, ii. 4, 5, 38, 385; conversation with Mr. Evelyn, on various subjects, 77; his Annals, iii. 315; library, 452; his daughter, ii. 169; prophecy of, alluded to, iii. 10; Life and Letters, 20; Dr. Parr his chaplain, ii. 273, 385.
- Uxbridge, Treaty of, 1644, Royal Commissioners for, iv. 147 n; fast on occasion of, 148 and n;



Uxbridge—*continued*.

- Common Prayer refused to be read in the Church of, *ibid.*; Charles I.'s remarks and directions concerning, 149, 150, 152; his memorial concerning Religion and the Militia, *ibid.*.
- VAGA, Pierino del, paintings by, i. 64; ii. 15; his burial place, i. 202.
- Valence, City of, i. 89.
- Valenciennes, proceedings against, alluded to, 1656, iv. 317.
- Valois, Marguerite of, novels of, iii. 396.
- Vambre, near Paris, i. xxxiii; ii. 12, 13.
- Vanbeck, Barbara, a hairy woman, ii. 93 and n.
- Vanbrugh, John, secretary to the Commission for Greenwich Hospital, iii. 122.
- Vandall, painting by, i. 19.
- Vanderborcht, portrait of Mr. Evelyn by, i. xxi, 13.
- Vander Douse, Mr., ii. 405; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on translating his account of China, i. 1; iii. 285.
- Vandervoort, Mr., of Venice, his books, i. 261.
- Vandyke, Sir Anthony, paintings by, ii. 2, 51, 101, 234 n, 347, 440, 441; iii. 45, 109, 129; full-length portrait of himself, ii. 323.
- Vane, Sir Harry, Secretary to Charles I., iv. 107, 108; his confidence in, 80 m and n; confined in Carisbrook Castle, ii. 88; referred to, as Mr. Treasurer, iv. 74, 84, 85, 86 and n, 97, 103, 105, 111, 113 m, 115, 117, 118, 121, 125, 126, 129.
- Vane, Sir Henry, the younger, a Privy Councillor, iii. 50; iv. 46, 86, 193 n; letters to (March, 1645-6), for his interest that King Charles I. might come to London, 181, 182; alluded to, iii. 110.
- Sir Walter, iii. 392.
- Vanni, Francisco, picture by, i. 195.
- Curtius, i. 150.
- Van Tromp, Admiral Martin Happertz, ii. 213; iv. 282 n.
- Varennnes, Mons. de, intendant Marquis de Castlenau, iv. 296, 297 *bis*.
- Vasari, Giorgio, paintings by, i. 199, 225.
- Vatican, ceremony there of conferring Cardinal's hat, i. 138; description of, 162-167; library, 165, 166; ceremonies at, 208, 209.
- Vaubecour, —, iv. 341.
- Vauchluse, notice of, i. 90.
- Vaudois, persecuted Protestants of the, collection for, ii. 76; iii. 81; restored to their country, 87; received by German Princes, 141.
- Vaughan, John, Lord Chief Justice, ii. 223; portrait of, iii. 444.
- Vauxhall, Sir Samuel Morland's house at, ii. 221 n, 385 n.
- Vavator, Monsieur, iv. 154.
- Veau, M. de, his academy of horsemanship, i. 73.
- Veins, Arteries, and Nerves, Tables of, purchased by Mr. Evelyn at Padua, i. xxvii and n, 261; ii. 4; lent to College of Physicians to lecture upon, i. xxi; ii. 45; presented to the Royal Society, i. xxvii n, 261; ii. 227; iii. 160.
- Velletri, town of, i. 173.

- Vendôme, Duke of, a brother of, ii. 406; iv. 265, 286.
- Venetian Ambassador, Parliament offers an affront to, 1641, iv. 139; entry into London, 1696, iii. 129.
- Venice, description, &c., of (1645-6), i. 234-245, 249-252, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259-262; the bagnios, 235; origin of Venice, ceremony of the Espousal of the Adriatic, 236; Gondolas, Rialto, 236, 237; taking the air on the canal, Fondigo de Todeschi, Merceria, *ibid.*; Piazza of St. Mark and Clock over the Arch, 238; Church of St. Mark, &c., *ibid.*; Tesoro di San Marco, or Reliquary, 241; Exchange, Senate-hall, &c., *ibid.*; Zecca, or Mint, 243; Tower of St. Mark, *ibid.*; Mart in Ascension week, Costume of Venetian ladies, courtézans, citizens, &c., 243, 245; the Opera, Chetto de San Felice, &c., 245; the Arsenal, 249, 250; execution, 250; Church of St. Johanne and Paulo, St. George's (a Greek church), &c., 251; other churches, Island of St. Georgio Maggiore and church, 252; other islands, &c., *ibid.*; Island of Murano and glass manufactory, Island of St. Michael, and church, &c., 255; Sign. Rugini's collection, 257, 258; the Carnival, 259; Operas, &c., 260; the Ghetto, a Jewish marriage, 261; lapidaries, 263; policy of Venice with respect to Vincenza, 265; gondola sent from, to Charles II., ii. 145; consulage of, 288.
- States of, Envoy of Charles, Venice, States of—*continued.*
- II. ill-treated by, 1652, iv. 258 n.
- Venipont, John, Campanile built by, i. 101.
- Venn, Capt., suppresses tumults of the London apprentices, 1641, iv. 93 n.
- Venus, statues of, i. 157, 202, 226.
- of Coreggio, iii. 110.
- Venuti, Marcello, paintings by, i. 205.
- Vere, Sir Horace, and Francis, portraits of, iii. 443.
- Verneuille, Henri, Duke of, ii. 184.
- Verney, Mr., a cousin of Mr. Evelyn, ii. 433.
- Sir Edward, killed at battle of Edgehill, iv. 118 n.
- Vernon, Mr., Secretary of State, iii. 152.
- Verona, description of, 1646, i. 266, 267; amphitheatre, 266; remains of former magnificence, 267; Count Giusti's villa, Scaliger's praises of, *ibid.*
- Veronica, St., altar, i. 143, 144; her sudarium, 143, 209.
- Verrio, Sign. Antonio, ii. 355; his garden, 353; fresco paintings by, at Euston, ii. 268; at Windsor, 335, 353, 405, 475; at Cashiobury, 362; Chiswick, 405; Montague House, 420; Ashted, 431; Whitehall, iii. 30; character of his paintings, 405, 406; settled at St. James's, iii. 25.
- Verrochio, Andrea, statue by, i. 251.
- Verulam, Francis Bacon, Lord, ii. 165; iii. 482.
- Veslingius, Dr. John, of Padua, i. 258, 261; ii. 228.



- Vespasian, Titus Flavius, Emperor of Rome, Temple of Peace built by, i. 119; amphitheatre of, 135; sepulchre, 196.
- Vesuvius, Mount, account of, i. 181-183; eruption of, 1696, iii. 128; views of, etched by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 197.
- Via Felix at Rome, i. 131.
- Pia at Rome, i. 131.
- Vicfort, —, iv. 225.
- Vienna, siege of, raised, 1683, ii. 418.
- Vienne, account of, i. 88.
- Vignola, Giovanni Barozzio de, architect, i. 125, 219; his works, iv. 10.
- Villa-Franca, notice of, i. 93.
- Ville-frow, in Flanders, i. 33.
- Villiers, Lord Francis, slain, i. 297.
- Vincennes, Bois de, i. 53.
- Vincent, Sir Francis, iii. 95.
- Vincenza, account of, 1646, i. 264, 265; Hall of Justice, Theatre, 264; Piazza, Palaces, *ibid.*; Count Ulmarini's garden, &c., 265.
- Vinci, Leonardo da, paintings by, i. 60, 64, 107, 131, 271; ii. 101, 323; his *Cœna Domini* at Milan, i. 272; his death, *ibid.*
- Viner, Sir George, carving by Gibbon purchased by, ii. 258.
- Sir Robert, banker, ii. 349.
- Vineyards, various notices of, i. 43, 65, 81, 177, 183, 267; ii. 79.
- Viol d'Amore, a musical instrument, ii. 358.
- Virgilius Evangelizans*, by Alexander Ross, ii. 47.
- Virgilius, Maro, Publ., ancient MSS. of, i. 165; his Tomb, 183.
- Virgin Queen* by Dryden, ii. 215.
- Virginian rattle-snake, ii. 94.
- Visse, Mons., concert at his house, ii. 20.
- Vitellesco, Hippolito, his collection of statues, i. 155.
- Viterbo, account of, i. 116, 220.
- Vitruvius, statue of, i. 267.
- Voiture, Vincent, his merit as a writer, iv. 55.
- Volaterra, F., church built by, i. 203.
- Volpone*, a play, ii. 153.
- Volterra, Di (Daniele Ricciabelli), paintings by, i. 199, 202.
- Volumes, ancient form of making, i. 165.
- Vorsterman, Lucas, painting by, ii. 334.
- Vossius, Isaac, ii. 289, 316, 319; Justin corrected by, iii. 346; notes and treatises of, alluded to, 421, 422; his library, 450, 453.
- Vrats, Col., assassin of Mr. Thynne, executed, ii. 392; his body embalmed, 393.
- Vulcan, Court of, i. 185; temple of, 186.
- Vulpone, references to, under this name, iv. 149, 162 *bis*.
- WADE, Capt., court-martial on, iii. 164 n.
- Waggons drawn by dogs, i. 36.
- Wainsford, Mr., ii. 20.
- Wake, Dr. William (afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury), iii. 158 and n; sermons of, 31, 35.
- Wakeman, Sir George, his trial, ii. 351, 461.
- Waldenses, destruction of, iii. 75.
- Waldron, Dr., ii. 277.
- Wales, James, Prince of, son of James II., birth of, iii. 48, 49, 54; James II. calls council to



- Wales, Prince of—*continued*.  
testify his birth, 57; sent to  
Portsmouth with treasure, 61;  
portrait of, 102.
- Walgrave, Sir Henry, created a  
peer, iii. 16.
- Walker, Sir Edward, Garter King  
of Arms, anecdote of Lord  
Clifford told by, ii. 297; al-  
luded to, 126, 127 n, 151; iv.  
122 n, 152 n.
- portrait of Mr. Evelyn by, i.  
xxxi, 297; alluded to, ii. 18.
- Dr. Obadiah, tutor to Mr.  
Hildyard's sons, ii. 3 and n,  
32; in commission with others  
from Oxford to thank Mr. Eve-  
lyn for procuring Arundelian  
Marbles, 226; letter on that  
subject, 227; University Col-  
lege repaired by, 311; dispen-  
sation granted to hold his  
Mastership of University Col-  
lege, iii. 20; perverted several  
young gentlemen to the Ro-  
mish faith, 21; licence to print  
Popish books refused, 22; his  
Treatise on Medals, 136 n.
- Mr., additions to medals in  
Camden, iv. 3.
- Dr. (of Londonderry), death  
of, iii. 89.
- Clement, *History of Inde-  
pendency*, 1648, cited, iv. 148 n,  
233 n.
- Wall, John, account of, i. 49,  
50.
- Waller, Edmund, in Italy and  
France after his escape from  
Parliament, 1646, i. 262, 263,  
294, 296; ii. 10; child of, 19,  
25 *bis*; his return to England,  
34; a commissioner of trade,  
&c., 261; portrait of, iii. 444;  
alluded to, ii. 10, 44 n, 90 n;  
iv. 91 n, 92 n, 102 n.
- Waller, Sir Hardress, his daugh-  
ter, ii. 306.
- Richard, of Groomsbridge,  
ii. 43 n.
- Edward, supports King's  
right to elect his Counsellors,  
iv. 116.
- Sir William, his army, 1644,  
iv. 148 *bis* and n; pursues  
King Charles I. from Oxford,  
and is defeated at Cropredy  
Bridge, i. 39 n, 153.
- Mr., extraordinary talents  
of, iii. 114.
- Mr., of the Royal Society,  
iv. 27.
- Wallgrave, Dr., physician, his  
skill on the lute, ii. 304, 429,  
440.
- Wallis, Dr. John, Mathematical  
Professor, ii. 131, 170, 239.
- Wallops, —, iv. 158.
- Walls of Genoa, i. 100.
- Walnut Tree, marbling in the  
Wood of, iii. 279.
- Walpole, Horace, Earl of Orford,  
his *Anecdotes of Painting* refer-  
red to, ii. 105 n, 254 n, 255 n;  
iii. 222 n.
- Walsh, Peter, Romish Priest,  
notice of, iii. 15.
- Walsingham, Sir Francis, portrait  
of, iii. 439, 443; letters, iv. 26.
- Walter, Sir William, ii. 383.
- Walters, Mrs. Lucy, ii. 322 n.  
*See* Barlow.
- Walton, Brian, Bp. of Chester,  
his *Biblia Polyglotta*, ii. 46.
- Walton Heath, Roman antiquities  
found on, ii. 103 n.
- Wanstead House, Sir Josiah  
Child's, ii. 402.
- War, Prisoners of, Treaty for ex-  
changing, 1665, ii. 182; ex-  
pense of, *ibid.* *See* Dutch  
War.

- Ward, Sir Patience, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Dr. Seth, afterwards Bishop of Salisbury, ii. 54, 232, 299, 406.
- Lord Chief Baron, subscription to Greenwich Hospital, iii. 133 n.
- Mrs., solicits an Order of Jesuitesses, i. 218.
- Warley Magna, Essex, Manor of, i. xxxii; ii. 4, 79; iii. 202.
- Warner, —, officiated at Touching for the Evil, 1688, iii. 60.
- Warner, Dr. John, Bishop of Rochester, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 n; his controversy with Dr. Taylor, iii. 203 n.
- Warren, Dr., sermon of, iii. 28.
- Warrington, Lord, death of, 1693, iii. 112.
- Warwick, Guy, Earl of, Arms, Grot, Chapel, &c. of, ii. 63.
- Charles Rich, Earl of, 1661, ii. 126.
- Robert Rich, Earl of, made Commander of the Fleet, iv. 81 n; protests against an order of the Commons, 1641, 85 n; character of, 119 n; referred to, 252 n.
- Warwick, Sir Philip, instance of Charles I.'s indulgence to Sir H. Vane, mentioned by, iv. 80 n; alluded to, ii. 116, 161, 162, 163, 314; iv. 184 n, 191 n, 211 n; letter to Mr. Evelyn on his wants as Commissioner for Sick and Wounded, and distribution of the Royal Aid, iii. 321; Mr. Evelyn's answer to, 324.
- Warwick, Castle and Town of, ii. 62, 63.
- "Warwick, The Constant," frigate so called, iii. 83.
- Warwickshire address to Charles II. 1660, ii. 114.
- Wase, Christopher, account of, ii. 34; recommended by Mr. Evelyn, 35 n, 39, 236.
- Washing of head, &c., benefit from, iii. 362.
- Water-works, by Mr. Winstanley, at Chelsea, iii. 132 and n.
- Water-works and Fountains, notices of various, i. 21, 34, 47, 55, 57, 58, 59, 63, 64, 65, 69, 73, 77, 98, 101, 105, 108, 109, 111, 114, 116, 120, 123, 126, 129, 130, 131, 137, 139, 158, 159, 168, 169, 172, 178, 190, 191, 194, 197, 199, 208, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 220, 228, 229, 292; ii. 9, 10, 15, 20, 29, 38 and n, 59, 62, 66, 68, 71, 72 and n, 146, 185, 221 n, 268.
- Watson, Dr. Thomas, Bishop of St. David's, suspended for simony, iii. 134; deprived, 144.
- Watts, Mr., Keeper of Apothecaries' Garden, ii. 474.
- Way-wiser, description of that instrument, ii. 92.
- Weather, observations on the, 1649, ii. 1, 9; 1652, 43; 1654, 68; 1657, 92; 1658, 100, 102; 1662, 142, 144; 1663, 159; 1666, 211; 1667, 215; 1670, 254; 1672, 272; 1684, 425, 426, 427, 428, 434, 436; 1685, 440, 467, 468; iii. 14; 1686, 22, 23, 25; 1687, 37, 40; 1688, 46; 1689, 62; 1691, 98; 1692, 100, 102, 104, 105; 1693, 107, 108, 110, 111; 1694, 113, 116, 117; 1695, 119, 121, 123, 124, 126; 1696, 126, 132, 133, 134, 135; 1697, 135, 137;



Weather—*continued*.

- 1698, 139, 141; 1699, 141, 142, 143, 144, 146, 147; 1700, 149, 152; 1701, 156, 158, 159; 1703, 166, 167; 1705, 169, 170.
- Weathercocks, fixed on trees, ii. 278.
- Webb, Mr., paintings in his possession, ii. 2.
- John, architect, ii. 137.
- Mr., letter to Parliament intercepted, iv. 128.
- Weese-house, at Amsterdam, i. 20.
- Welbeck, Marquis of Newcastle's seat, ii. 66.
- Welsh, resemblance of Breton language to, ii. 310.
- Wenman, —, a Commissioner at Newport, 1648, iv. 193 n.
- Wens of the inhabitants of the Alps, i. 280.
- Wentworth, William, Lord, 1654, ii. 8, 35; iv. 165 n, 209, 211, 212, 215, 219, 259 and n; sketch of, 221 n.
- Lord, 1663, ii. 159.
- Lady Henrietta, mistress of Duke of Monmouth, ii. 305 n, 471.
- Wessell, Mr., of Bansted, M.P. for Surrey, iii. 160 n.
- West Clandon, Surrey, seat at, ii. 252.
- West Horseley, Surrey, seat at, referred to, ii. 48 and n, 187.
- West, Mr., pardon granted to, 1685, iii. 14.
- Westfield, Dr. Thomas, made Bishop of Bristol, 1641, iv. 99 n.
- Westminster Abbey, burial of Cowley in, ii. 222.
- Westminster Hall, shops formerly in, i. 19 n.
- Westminster School, exercises of boys going to College from, 1661, ii. 131.
- Westminster, Medical Garden at, ii. 102.
- sickness in, 1641, iv. 88; deanery of, vacant, 99 m and n.
- Westmoreland, Lord, death of, 1693, iii. 112.
- Weston, Richard, Lord High Treasurer, portrait of, iii. 443. *See* Portland.
- Elizabeth Joan, a learned lady, ii. 234 n.
- Mr., his contested election for Surrey, iii. 160 and n.
- Westram, estate at, ii. 49.
- Wetherborn, Dr., physician, ii. 111.
- Weybridge, Duke of Norfolk's house at, ii. 337, 338.
- Whale, immense one, taken near Greenwich, 1658, described, ii. 100; another in the Thames, 1699, iii. 142.
- Whaley, Colonel, ii. 95.
- Wharton, Lord, ii. 254.
- Sir George, a famous mathematician, &c., ii. 197.
- Mr. Henry, his intended *Life of Archbishop Laud*, iii. 477.
- Philip, Earl of, protests against an order in the Commons, 1641, iv. 85 n.
- Wharton House, Nottinghamshire, ii. 65.
- Wheeler, Sir Charles, governor of St. Christopher's, desires to resign, ii. 265; his conduct, and removal recommended, 272; an executor of Viscountess Mordaunt, 359.
- Sir George, ii. 426; account of, 425; iii. 28 and n.
- Wheeler, Paul, musician, ii. 82.
- Whips, harmony produced by smacking, iii. 422.



- Whispering Gallery at Gloucester, ii. 61.
- Whistler, Dr., F.R.S., ii. 318, 399, 403.
- Whitbread, Thomas, Jesuit, anecdote of, ii. 344 n.
- White, Bishop, recommends Dr. Cosins to Charles I. for compiling the *Devotions*, ii. 30.
- Dr. Thomas, Bishop of Peterborough, sermon of, iii. 19; one of the Bishops who petitioned against Declaration of Liberty of Conscience, 47; sent to the Tower, 48; tried and acquitted, 49; at a meeting of Bishops on the Revolution, 62.
- Dr., Bishop of Norwich, his funeral, 1698, iii. 139.
- Mr. Thomas, priest and philosopher of Paris, ii. 24.
- Mr., nephew of the preceding, ii. 271.
- Robert, engraver, ii. 404 n; iii. 479.
- Whitefoord, —, iv. 172.
- Whitehall, King Charles I. at, 1641, iv. 143, 144; affray at, 116 n; occupied by the Rebels, 1648, ii. 297, 299; 1650, ii. 17; state of, 1656, 82; goods pillaged from, restored, 1660, 114; paintings at, 152; design for rebuilding, 171; ball and play at the theatre, 1671, 257; Charles II.'s library at, 369, 385; Popish oratory at, 1685, 451; new chapel at, opened for the Popish service, 1687, iii. 30; Queen's apartments, 31; fire at, 1696, 93.
- Whitfield, Sir Ralph, i. 40.
- Whitlocke, Bulstrode, Queen's house at Greenwich given to, by the rebels, ii. 39; his *Me-*
- Whitlocke—continued.*
- morials of English Affairs*, iv. 110 n, 125 n, 144 n, 158 n, 159 n, 163 n, 175 n, 183 n, 184 n, 221 n, 346, 347 n; referred to, 44 n.
- Whitsuntide, neglect of, ii. 52.
- Whittal, Tom, and his brother, anecdote of, iii. 365.
- Whittle, Mr., King's surgeon, his sister, ii. 372.
- Whole Duty of Man*, Dr. Chaplin supposed to be the author of, iii. 104.
- Wiburn, Sir John, governor of Bombay, ii. 462.
- Widow, The*, a lewd play, ii. 143.
- Wight, Isle of, treaty of, i. 298.
- Wilbraham, Mr., ii. 405.
- Wild, Dr. (afterwards Bishop of Londonderry), sermons, &c., ii. 76, 81, 87, 88, 104; account of him, 109 and n.
- Wild beasts, various notices concerning, i. 18, 31, 55, 64, 78, 103, 110, 285; ii. 21, 50, 92, 94, 104, 178.
- Wild House, Spanish Ambassador's residence, 1681, ii. 381.
- Wilkins, Dr. John, Bishop of Chester, ii. 55, 164; his mechanical genius, 57; sermon by, and notice of him, 81 and n; alluded to, 81, 83, 84, 186, 244 n; iii. 191 and n; consecrated Bishop of Chester, ii. 232; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, iii. 277, 342.
- Wilkinson, Dr., iii. 235.
- William I., King of England, tomb of, at Caen, i. 67.
- William, Prince of Orange (afterwards William III., King of England), his landing in England reported, 1688, iii. 54; manifesto of, 59; landing of,

William III.—*continued.*

*ibid.* ; his progress to London, 61 ; James II. invites him to St. James's, *ibid.*, 428 ; proceedings thereupon, 62 ; Convention votes the crown to him and the Princess, 64 ; his morose temper, 67 ; Prince and Princess declared King and Queen, 68 ; proclaimed, *ibid.* ; his conduct on his accession, 72 ; coronation of William and Mary, 73 ; his birthday and anniversary of landing at Torbay, 1689, 80 ; resolves to go in person to Ireland, 81 ; sets out, 86 ; buys Kensington of Lord Nottingham, 83 ; his victory at the Boyne, 88, 89 ; wounded, *ibid.* ; embarks for Holland, 1693, 108 ; progress into the north, 124 ; fireworks on his return, 125 ; entertained at Althorp, 1695, *ibid.* ; conspiracy to assassinate, discovered, and proceedings thereupon, 126 ; subscription to Greenwich Hospital, 132 n ; entry into London, 1697, 137 ; his death, 161 ; allusions to, 90, 91 and n, 93, 94, 97, 101, 105, 119.

Williams, Dr. John, Bishop of Chichester, Boyle Lecturer, iii. 119, 126.

— Dr. John, Bishop of Lincoln, made Archbishop of York, 1641, iv. 99 n, 129, 141 and n ; draws up pardon of the impeached Bishops, 1641, 135 ; portrait of, ii. 71.

— Count, iv. 206 and n.

Williamson, Sir Joseph, F.R.S., offices held by, ii. 214, 236, 254, 272 ; account of him and his advancement, 174 and

Williamson, Sir J.—*continued.*

n, 300 ; alluded to, 222, 255 n, 306 n, 399 ; President of Royal Society, 333.

— Mr., ii. 222.

Williamstadt, brief account of, i. 28.

Willoughby, Lord, of Parham, ii. 102 ; Governor of Barbadoes, 278.

Wilmot, Col., proceedings against, 1641, iv. 75, 76 n.

— Henry, Lord, iv. 262 n ; created Earl of Rochester, 266 n ; ambassador to Germany, 1652, 257 and n, 266 ; alluded to, ii. 7, 33.

Wilson, Mr., killed in a duel, account of, iii. 113.

Wilton, seat of the Earl of Pembroke, ii. 59 ; fire at, iii. 171.

Wimbledon, Earl of Bristol's house at, ii. 143 and n.

Wimmenom, Mons. de, iv. 212.

Winch, Sir Humphry, ii. 174 ; a Commissioner of Trade, &c., 261, 288, 349.

Winchelsea, ruins of, ii. 40.

— Heneage Finch, Earl of, Ambassador to Constantinople, ii. 114 ; alluded to, 79, 241 ; seat at Burleigh, ii. 65 n.

Winchester, Bishop of, 1685, miracles related by, ii. 478.

— John Paulet, Marquis of, 1645, iv. 157.

— Marchioness of, 1680, ii. 375.

Winchester, notice of, i. 39 ; royal palace built at, ii. 418, 479 and n ; cathedral of, *ibid.*

Wind, tempestuous, 1658, ii. 102 ; 1662, 144 ; 1703, iii. 167.

Windham, Mr., office in the exiled Court of Charles II., 1652, iv. 285 and n, 343 ; alluded to, ii. 157, 353 n.



- Windham, Sir Thomas, enjoins his children to be loyal to their King, 1636, iv. 165 n.
- Col., defended Bridgewater for the King, iv. 164 n.
- Windsor Castle and Chapel, notice of, ii. 52; Charles I.'s burial-place, *ibid.*; offering of Knights of the Garter at the chapel, 251; about to be repaired, improvements, &c., by Prince Rupert, 252; installation at, 1671, 262; nearly finished, statue erected at the expense of Rustate, 364; paintings in fresco, &c., carving and improvements about the Castle, 405, 406; church service, 1685, painting in the hall, 475; alluded to, iii. 103.
- Windsor Forest, deer in, attacked, 1641, iv. 78; King Charles's directions respecting, *ibid.* m, 81, 82.
- Windsor, Lord, ii. 254.
- Wine, of Orleans, i. 75; Dutch Bishop killed by, 116; at Caprarola, 219; at Bologna, 233; at Venice, 258, 259.
- Winnington, Sir Francis, ii. 375.
- Winstanley, Henry, waterworks by, iii. 132; built the Eddystone Lighthouse, and perished in it, *ibid.* n.
- Mr., engraving by, ii. 143 n.
- William, his *Loyal Martyrologie* cited, iv. 119 n.
- Winter, Sir John, project of charring sea-coal, ii. 87.
- Winter, a fatal one, 1648, i. 299; ii. 1; severity of, 1658, 100; paper on the effects of the winter of 1683, by Mr. Evelyn, 431 and n.
- Wirttemberg, Prince of, 1646, i. 261.
- Wise, Henry, his house and garden at Brompton Park, iii. 114 and n, 159 and n.
- Wiston, Nottinghamshire, iv. 158 and n.
- Witches, increase of, in New England, iii. 106.
- Withering, —, iv. 84, 88.
- Withers, Mr., an ingenious shipwright, ii. 291.
- Withings, Mr. Justice, ii. 423.
- Woldingham church and parish, ii. 331 and n.
- Wolley, Rev. Dr., ii. 33; attended the English Court in France, 30 n.
- Wolsey, Cardinal Thomas, ii. 56, 234 n; the day of his fall, iv. 125 n; his burial-place, ii. 64; birth-place, 86.
- Wolves in France, i. 65, 78; ii. 34.
- Woman, hairy, ii. 93; gigantic, 69, 235 and n, 280; singular marks on the arm of one, 250.
- Women, in Venice, the dresses of, i. 244, 245; painting first used by, ii. 52; remarks on the duties of, iv. 58.
- Wood, Anthony à, letter of Mr. Evelyn to, communicating particulars for his *Athenæ Oxonienses*, iii. 465; references to that work, ii. 70 n, 153 n, 160, 161 n.
- Sir Henry, his marriage, ii. 32.
- Woodcote, Surrey, descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedig.*; referred to, ii. 189, 244.
- Woodstock, garrisoned, 1644, iv. 148; destruction of the palace, ii. 169.
- Woolwich, battery, &c., erected at, ii. 219.



- Worcester, Henry Somerset, Marquis of, ii. 245, 402.  
 — Edward Somerset, Marquis of, iv. 341.  
 Worcester, battle of, ii. 29; iv. 204.  
 Worcester House in the Strand, ii. 121, 168 and n.  
 Worcester, notice of, ii. 62.  
 — Park, ii. 190.  
 Worksope Abbey, notice of, ii. 66.  
 World, on the Eternity of the, iii. 231.  
 Worsley, Dr., advice respecting the Plantations, ii. 273; death of, 298.  
 Wotton, Sir Henry, his *Elements of Architecture*, iii. 196.  
 — Dr. William (son of Rev. Henry), his extraordinary talents when a child, &c., ii. 350 n; sermon by, iii. 116; alluded to, 136 n; letters of Mr. Evelyn to, communicating particulars of Mr. Boyle, &c., for Mr. Wotton's intended *Life*, 479; iv. 32; on his *Sylva*, and Husbandry, &c., of the Ancients, 11; from Dr. Wotton to Mr. Evelyn, 1, 2, 18, 19, 27, 29, 30, 42. See Evelyn.  
 — Lord, project of draining, ii. 249; his house at Hampstead, 320.  
 Wotton, Surrey, mansion of the Evelyn family, referred to, i. xvii, xviii, xix, xxi, xxii, liv, 297; ii. 3, 6, 20, 167, 186, 187, 191; described, i. 3, 4; improvements at by Mr. Evelyn, 40; ii. 37; iii. 136 n; hospitality of Mr. Geo. Evelyn at Christmas, 136 n, 138; view of, etched by Mr. Evelyn, iii. 197; descent of the Evelyns of, i. *Pedig.*; administration of Sacra-  
 Wotton, Surrey—*continued.*  
 ments neglected, 1694, iii. 115; Dr. Bohun presented to the living, 157; MS. works of Mr. Evelyn there, 190 n, 192, 194.  
 Wray, Captain, afterwards Sir William (son of Sir Christopher, who had been in arms against his Majesty), i. 263, 268, 276, 281, 282, 293.  
 Wren, Sir Christopher, his early talents, ii. 55, 58; Theatre at Oxford built by, 170, 237; a Commissioner for repair of Old St. Paul's, London, 199; his plan for improvement of London after the great fire, iii. 345 and n; verses by, ii. 306 n; Ashmolean Museum built by, 337 n; christening of his son, 349; St. Paul's, Monument, and 50 churches, building by, 381, 382; President of the Royal Society, 387; design of Chelsea College, 394; Commissioner for Greenwich Hospital, iii. 122, 130, 132 and n; letter of Mr. Evelyn to, desiring him to recommend a tutor for his son, and on his going to France, &c., 304; alluded to, ii. 170, 255 n, 257, 258, 318, 333, 368, 429; iii. 139; iv. 14.  
 — Dr. Matthew, Bishop of Ely, ii. 55, 123, 174; iv. 114 n.  
 — Matthew, son of Bishop of Ely, ii. 89, 174.  
 Wrestlers, ancient statues of, i. 157.  
 Wrestling Match before his Majesty, 1661, ii. 215.  
 Wright, Sir Edmund, made Lord Mayor of London by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 75 n.  
 — Chief Justice, iii. 49.

- Wright, Dr. Robert, Bishop of Coventry and Lichfield, questioned by the Parliament, 1641, iv. 114 and n.
- Michael, paintings by, ii. 105 and n, 152, 294; alluded to, 164.
- Sir Nathan, Lord Keeper, iii. 152 and n.
- Wright's *Travels* referred to, i. 181 n.
- Wriothesley, Thomas, Earl of Southampton, daughter of, ii. 420 n.
- Wych, Sir Cyril, President of Royal Society, ii. 423; married a niece of Mr. Evelyn's, iii. 103, 146; Lord Justice in Ireland, 110; alluded to, iv. 15.
- Lady, wife of Sir Cyril, and niece of Mr. Evelyn, iii. 103, 146, 149.
- Wyche, Sir Peter, letter of Mr. Evelyn to, on the corruptions of the English language, and proposing amendments, iii. 309.
- Wye, Mr., rector of Wotton, his death, iii. 157.
- YACHTS first introduced into England, ii. 134.
- Yarborough, Sir Thomas, ii. 409.
- Yarmouth (Sir Robert Paston), Earl of, ii. 184.
- Yew Tree, deadly species of the, i. 221; remarkably large one, ii. 160.
- York, City and Minster, notice of, ii. 67; siege of, iv. 153 n, 154 *bis*; Mayor of, speech to Charles I. on his return from Scotland, 1641, 145 n.
- Frederick, Duke of, pays the fine at Oakham, 1788, ii. 64 n.
- York House, Strand, ii. 79, 278.
- Young Admiral*, a play, ii. 154.
- Young, Captain, capture by, ii. 89; death and character of, iii. 111.
- Youth, advice to, iii. 227.
- ZACHARY, of Genoa, marvellous anecdote of his shipwreck, i. 96.
- Zecca, or Mint at Venice, i. 243.
- "Zeland," a captured vessel, ii. 185.
- Zenno, Signor, Venetian Ambassador, entertained by Charles II., iii. 12; alluded to, 14.
- Zinnar tree, quality of, ii. 416.
- Zinzendorp, Count de, ii. 405.
- Zitelle, procession of, at Rome, i. 161; account of, 208.
- Zollern, Francisca, Princess of, 1654, iv. 218 and n.
- Zuccherro, Frederico, paintings by, i. 118, 202, 220; his burial-place, 202.
- Zulestein, Mons., ii. 254.
- Zulichem, Mons., account of, ii. 125, 167; alluded to, 131 *bis*, 167; iii. 363.

